Here bygynneþ a prologe on matheu

Matheu þat was of iudee · as he is set first in ordre of þe gospelers : so he was root first þe gospel in iudee · and fro þe office of Atolgaderev : he was clepid to god / whanne his matheu hadde prechid first þe gospel in iudee · & wolde go to he pene mè : he wroot first þe gospel in ebreu · & lefte it to myude to cristen men of þe ielbis · fro whiche he departide bodili · þt for as it was nedeful · þat þe gospel were þchid to þe cõfermyng of feiþ : so it was nedeful þat it were writtè alsò Azeyn heretikis / þouz many mè han writte þe gospel : foure oneli þt is · matheu · mark · luk · & iohan þe witnessing of auctorite / for þei telleu þe feiþ of þe trinite · bi foure partis of þe world / And þei ben as foure horsid carte of þe lord : þat berip hym aboute bi þchyng of þe gospel / And mãkinde þat was clayn bi foure depis : schulde be quekenyd bi þe þchyng of hem / And þ for þe gospels of oþe writeris holdẽ doũ · & ben not resseyued : for þe lord wolde þat þe forseid noũbre ber-

desired for þe nertu of sacrament also þe foure gospeleris ben vndurstondè bi foure figuris of goostli þuite matheus vndurstondè bi man : for he dide chiefli þncipali aboute þe mañhed of crist / mark is vndurstõdè bi alioũ : for he tretiþ of cristis risyng Azeu / luk is vndurstõdè bi a calf : & tretiþ of þ sacrifice / iohn is vndurstondè bi an egle : & tretiþ hizlier þe sacramẽtis of þ godhed / for þese gospelers of þe godhed / for þese gospelers of þe godhed for þese gospelers of þe godhed for þese gospelers of þe godhed

Hylde moſt buſili trauele to
kiune & kepe pe holi goſpel and
teche it for pe ableete of her ſa
it · uanely i holi luuyng : as
cloſtom ſeip i his ploge on ma
thew / þat ſeint auſtyn in his
book of kynde & of grace in
lviij · c · ſeip þus / pe ſalue of pe
goſpel : is ſalue of charite &
of parfit fredom wip out wh
ich : noon may be ſauyd / and
þat ſeint ieroun tuſlatide &
ꝯpoluede many bokis of pe
bible to vſyue : as me mon
oppuli ſe i hise ploges on dui
ſe bokis of pe bible

here bigynneþ matheu :

The boke of pe geneſa
cion of ihū crist : pe ſo
ne of dauip · pe ſone
of abraham / abraham bigat
yſaac / yſaac bigat iacob / iacob
bigat iudas & his bretheren / iud
as bigat fares & zaran of
tamar / fares bigat eſroun /
eſroun bigat aram / aram bi
gat aminadab / aminadab bi
gat naaſſon / naaſſon bigat ſal
mon / ſalmon bigat booz of ra
ab / booz bigat obeth of ruth /
obet bigat ieſſe / ieſſe bigat da
uip pe king / dauip pe king bi
gat ſalomon of hir pat was
vries wijf / ſalamon bigat ro
boam / roboam bigat abias /
abias bigat aſa / aſa bigat ioſa
phat / ioſaphat bigat ioram /
ioram bigat ozias / ozias big
at ioathan / ioathan bigat a
chaz / achaz bigat ezechie / eze
chie bigat manaſſes / manaſ
ſes bigat amon / amon bigat
ioſias / ioſias bigat iecconias
& his bretheren i to pe tranſmy gr
acion of babilonie / and aft
pe tranſmygracion of babilo
nie : iecconias bigat ſalatiel /
ſalatiel bigat zorobabel / zoro
babel bigat abiut / abiut bi
gat eliachim / eliachim bi
gat azor / azor bigat ſadoc /
ſadoc bigat achim / achim
bigat eliut / elyiut bigat ele
azar / eleazar bigat mathā
mathan bigat iacob / iacob
bigat ioſeph pe holebonde of
marie : of whom ihc was bor
pat is clepid crist / and ſo alle
generacions fro abraham to
dauip · ben fourtene generā
cions & fro dauip to pe tran
ſmygracion of babilonie : ben
fourtene generacions / & fro pe
tranſmygracion of babilonie
to crist ben fourtene gene
cions / but pe generacion of
crist was pis / whanne mar
ie pe modir of ihū was spo
uſid to ioſeph : bifor pei camē
to gidere : she was fondon

hauyng of pe hooli goost ī pe
wombe/ & ioseph hir hosebonde
for he was riztful & wold not
puplish hir: he wolde ꝑuely ha
ue left hir but while he pouz
te pes pingis: lo pe aungel of
pe lord apperide ī sleep to him
& seide/ ioseph pe sone of dauid:
nyle pou drede to take marie
pi wijf/ for pat ping pat is bo
rn ī hir: is gost pe hooli goost/
and she shal beere a sone: &
pou shalt clepe his name
ihc/ for he shal make his pu
ple saf fro her synnes/ for
al pis ping was done· pat it
shulde be fulfillid pat was
seid of pe lord bi a prfete sepu
ge/ lo a virgin shal haue in
wombe & she shal bere a so
ne & pei shulē clepe his nam
e emanuel pat is to seie god
wip us/ & ioseph ros fro sleep
& dide as pe aungel of pe lord
comaūdide him· & tok mar
ie his wijf/ & he knewe hir not
til she hadde borī hir first bi
gete sone· and clepid his nam
Ver fore whanne ihc/ e ihc
was born ī betleem of iu
da· ī pe dawes of king erou
de: lo astromyenes camen
fro pe eest to ierlm & seiden/
where is he pat is borī king
of iuis/ for we han seyn his
steerre ī pe eest: & we comē to wor
shipe him/ but king erode her
de & was turblid: & al ierlm
wip him/ & he gederide to gide
re alle pe princis of prestis & scri
bis of pe puple: & enquerid
of hem where crist shulde be
borī/ & pei seidē to him/ in bet
leem of iuda/ for so it is writtī
bi a profete/ & pou betleem pe
lond of iuda art not pe leest
among pe princes of iuda/ for
of pe a duke shal go out: pat
shal gouerne my puple of israel/
pānne erode clepide ꝑuelī pe as
tronyenes & lernede bisili of hē
pe tyme of pe steerre pat apperid
to hem/ & he sente hem ī to betle
em: & seide/ goze & axeze bisili
of pe child/ & whanne ze han fou
nd telle ze it to me: pat ꝑ also
come & worshipe hī/ & whanne
pei hadden herde pe king: pei
weenten forp· & lo pe steerre pat
pei sawen ī pe eest· wēte bifore
hem: til it came & stood aboue
where pe child was/ & pei seien
pe steerre: & ioyedē wip a ful gre
et ioye/ and pei entriden ī to pe
hous· & foūden pe child wip ma
rie his modir/ & pei felden
doū: & worshipidē hi/ & whanne
pei haddē openyed her tresours!
pei offeridē to hī ziftis· gold
encēse & myrre/ & whanne pei

hadden take an auſwere i ſleep:
pat pei ſchuldē not turne azen
to erounde: pei turnedē azen bi
a nop weie i to her cūtrey / & whā
ne pei were goon: lo pe aūgel of
pe lord apperide to ioſeph i ſleep
& ſeide / riſe up / & take pe child
& his modir & fle i to egipt / & be
pou pere til pat y ſeie to pee for
it is to come: pat erounde ſeke pe
child to deſtruye hi / & ioſeph roſe
& toke pe childe & his modir bi
niȝt · & wēte i to egipt & he was
pere to pe dep of erounde / pat it
ſchuld be fulfillid pat was of
pe lord bi pe profete ſeiyng / fro
egipt y haue clepide my ſone /
pāne erounde ſeruge · pat he was
diſſeyued of pe aſtrouyenes:
was ful wroop / & he ſente and
ſloȝe alle pe childrē pat werē
i betleem & i alle pe woſtis þ of-
fro two zeer age & wiþ inne · aft
pe tyme pat he hadde enquerī
de of pe aſtrouyenes / pāne it
was fulfillid pat was ſeide
bi ieremye pe profete ſeiyng /
a voice was herd and hiȝ wepi
ng & nych weilyng · rachel bi
weping hir ſonȝ · & ſche wolde
not be cōforted for pei bē not
But whāne erounde was de
ed: lo pe aūgel of pe lord appe
ride to ioſeph i ſleep i egipte &
ſeide riſe up & take pe child &
his modir: & go i to egipt pe lōde
of iſrael for pei pat ſouȝtē pe
liif of pe child bē deed: ioſeph ro
os & tok pe child & his modir · &
cam in to pe londe of iſrael &
he herde pat archilaus regne
de i iude for erounde his fadir · &
dredde to go pidir / & he was war
ned i ſleep: & weute i to pe par
ties of galile / & cam & dwelte i
a citee pat is clepid nazareth /
pat is it ſchulde be fulfillid pt
was ſeid bi profetis · for he
ſchal be clepid a nazarey

In po daies ioon baptiſt cā:
me & preched i pe deſert of
iude & ſeide / do ȝe penaūce:
for pe kingdom of heuenes ſch
al neiȝe / for pis is he of whō
it is ſeid bi iſaye pe profete
ſeiynge a voice of a crier i de
ſert · make ȝe redi pe weies
of pe lord: make ȝe riȝt pe pa
pis of hi & pis ioon hadde clo
pyng of camelis heeris: and
a girdil of ſkyne aboute his
leendis & his mete was hony
coniis & hony of pe wode / pā
ne ierlīū wente out to hym &
al iude · & al pe cūtre aboute
iordan: & pei weren waſchē
of hi i iordan · & knowlechide
her ſynȝ / whit he ſiȝ many of
fariſees & ſadduceis · comyng
to his baptym: & ſeide to he

generacoñis of eddris: whyo schyc
wed to zou · to fle fro wrappe
pat is to come/ þer doze war
ri fruyte of penaūce: & nylle
ze sey wiþ ūne zou: we han abr
aham to fadir/ for þ sey to zou
þat god is mygti to reise vp of
þes stoones þe sonȝ of abrahūm
& now þe ax is put to þe roote
of þe tree/ þer euy tre þat ma
kiþ not good fruit: schal be
kit doū & schal be cast i to fuyr
y wasschyc zou i wat: i to penā
ūce/ but he þat schal come af
tir me · is stronge þāne þ wh
os schoon þ am not worþi to
bere/ he schal baptise zou i þe
hooli goost & fuir/ whos wynn
wyng clope is i his honde · &
he schal fulli clense his corn
flore/ & schal gadere his wheete
i to his berne: but þe chaffe
he schal brēne wiþ fuyr þat m
ay not be quenchid/ þāne ihc
cam fro galile i to iordan to io
on: to be baptisid of hi/ & ioon
forbede hi & seide/ þ owe to be
baptisid of þee: & þou comest
to me: but ihc answeride: &
seide to hi/ suffere now for þ
it fallip to vs to fulfille al ry
tfulnes/ þāne ioon sufferide
hym/ & whāne ihc was bapti
sid: anoon he went up fro þe
wat/ & lo heuenes weren ope
ned to hym: & he sawe þe spirit
of god comynge doū as a dowe.
& comynge on hym/ & lo a voice
fro heuenes: seynge þis is myn
loued sone: in whiche þ haue ple
sid to me

Cap. iij.

Þāne ihc was led of a spirit
in to desert: to be temptid of
þe fend/ & whāne he hadde fa
stid fourti dayes & fourti nyȝ
tis: aftirward he hungride/ & þe
tempter cam nyȝ: & seide to hi
if þou art goddis sone: seie þat
þes stoones ben maad loones/
whiche answeride & seide to hi
it is writtē not onely i breed
lyuep man · but i ech word þat
comep of goddis mouþ/ þāne
þe fende take hym i to þe holy
cite: & settide hi on þe pinacle
of þe temple & seide to hym/ if
þou art goddis sone: sende þee
adoū/ for it is writtē/ þat to his
aūgels he comaūdide of þee: and
þei schulen take þee i hondis · lest
perauenture þou hirte þi foot
at a stoon/ eft ihc seide to
hym/ it is writtē þou schalt not
tempte þi lord god/ eft soone þe
fende take hym i to a ful hiȝ hil ·
& schewede to hi alle þe reumes
of þe world · & þe ioye of hem:
& seide to hym/ alle þees schal
ȝeue to þe: if þou falle doū &
worschipe me/ þāne ihc seide to

hym go Sathanas/ for it is wri
tē thou shalt worshipe yi lord
god & to hī aloue thou shalt ser
ue/ thāne the feend left hym/ and
lo angelis camē nyz: & seruēdē
to hym. But whānne ihc had
de herd that ion was takē:
he wente ī to galilee/ & he lef
te the citee of nazareth: & cam
& dwelte ī the citee of capharnaū
biside the see· ī the coostis of za
bulon & neptalym/ that it sch
ulde fulfillid that was seid bi
saie the profete seiynge/ the lon
de of zabulon & the londe of nep
talym· the weie of the see ouer ior
dan· of galile of hepene men·
the puple that walkidē ī derkne
sis: saye greet liȝt/ and whilē
men satten ī the cōtre of schadowe
of deth: liȝt arood to hem/ fro
that tyme ihc bigan to p̄che and
seie/ do ȝe penaūce: for the kingdō
of heuenes schal come nyz//
And ihc walkide bisidis the see
of galile: & saie tweyn breþren·
symount that is cleped petir and
andrew the his brop̄ castynge ne
ttes ī to the see/ for thei weren
fischeres/ & he seide to hē/ come
ȝe aft'me: & I schal make ȝou
to be maad fischeres of men/
& anoon the lefteu the nettis:
& sueden hym/ & he ȝede forȝ fro
that place: & saye tweyne op̄
breþren· iames of zebede and
ioon his brooper· in a schip
with zebede her fadir· amend
ynge her nettis & he clepide hē/
& anoon thei lefteu the nettis
& the fadir: & sueden hym/ &
ihc ȝede aboute al galile: te
chynge ī the synagogis of hem
& p̄chynge the gospel of the kin
gdom: & helynge euery langu
or & eche seeknesse among the
puple/ and his fame: wente
ī to al syrie/ & thei brouȝten to hī
alle that weren at male es &
that were take with diuerse langu
ores & turmētes/ & hē that ha
dden feendes & lunatike men·
& men ī palesy: & he helide hem/
& thei sueden hym fro the puple
of galile & of decapoly & of ierūm
& of iude & of bizonde iordan
And ihc seynge the puple
wente up· ī to an hil
& whānne he was sett:
his disciplis camē to hī/ & he
openede his moup & tauȝte hē
& seide/ blessid bē pore men in
spirit: for the kingdom of hen
enes is hern/ blessid bē mylde
men: for thei schulē welde the erpe/
blessid ben thei that mornen for
thei schulē be coūfortid/ bless
de bē thei that hūgren & thristen
rigtwisnesse: for thei schulen
be fulfillid/ blessid be mer·cy

ful men: for pei shulē gete
mercy/ blessid be pei pat ben
of clene herte: for pei shulē
se god/ blessid be pesible mē:
for pei shulē be clepid goddis
childrē/ blessid be pei pat suf
fren persecucioū for rightful
nesse: for pe kingdom of he
neues is herus/ ze shulē be
blessid whanne mē shulē cur
se zou· & shulen pursue zou·&
lying for me/ rope ze/ & be ze
glade: for zoure mede is ple
teuouse i heuenes/ for so pei
han pursued also profetis pat
weren bifor zou/ ze bē salt of
pe erpe/ pat if pe salt vanuse
he a were: wher inne shal it be
saltid/ to no ping it is woxp
ouer: no but pat it be cast
out & be defoulid of mē/ ze bē
list of pe world/ a citee seett
on an hil: may not be hid ne
ine teendip not a lauerne and
puttip it vndir a buschel· but
on a candelstike pat it zine
list to alle pat ben i pe hous/
so shyne zoure list bifor mē:
pat pei see zoure gode werk
is & glorifie zoure fadir pat
is i heuenes/ Nuyle ze deme
pat y cam to vndo pe lawe or
pe profetis/ y cam not to vn
do pe lawe: but to fulfille/
forsope y seie to zou til heuen
& erpe passe oon letter or o titil·
shal not passe fro pe lawe: til
alle pingis ben don/ þ for he pt
breki þ oon of pes leste mannde
mētis· & techi þ pus mē: shal be
clepid pe leste i pe reume reuwne
of heuenes/ but he pat dope &
techi þ shal be clepid greet i pe
kingdom of heuenes/ & þ seie
to zou pat but zoure rightfulnes
se be more plēteuous· pan pe of
scribis & of farisees· ze shulen
not entre i to pe kingdom of he
uenes/ ze han herd pat it was
seid to elde mē pou shalt not
sle/ & he pat sleep: shal be gil
ti to doome/ but þ seie to zou pat
ech man pat is wroop to his brop:
shal be gilti to doom/ & he pat
seip to his broper fy: shal be
gilti to pe counsel/ but he pat
seip fool shal be gilti to pe fier
of helle/ per for if pou offrist
pi zifte at pe aut· & per pou bi
penkest· pat pi broper hap ou
what azen pee· leefe þ pi zifte
bifor pe aut· & go first to be re
conciliid to pi brop/ & pan pou
shalt come: & offere pi
zifte/ Be pou consentinge to pi
aduersarie soon whil pou art i
pe weie wip hym: lest per aue
ture pin aduersarie take pe to
pe domesman & pe domesman ta
ke pee to pe mynistre: & pou be

sent i to ꝑlou trewli ꝑ sese to pee. pon shalt not go out fro pēu?: til pon zelde pe last ferping. ¶ Zehā herd pat it was seid to elde men. pon shalt not do lecherie/ but ꝑ sese to zou. pat euiꝑ mā pat seep a wōmā to coueite hir: hap now do lecherie wi hir i his herte/ pat if pi rizt ize sclaūdre pee: pulle hym out. & caste fro pee/ for it spedip to pee. pat oon of pi men bris perishe: pan pat al pi bopi go i to helle/ & if pi rizt honde sclaūdre pe kitte hym a wei & cast fro pee/ for it spedip to pee pat oon of pi membris perishe: pan pat alle pi bodi go i to hel le/ & it hap be seid/ who euere lee uep his wijf: zyue to hir a libel of forsakyng/ but ꝑ sese to zou pat euiꝑ mā pat leenep his wi if. out taku cause of fornicacī on makip hir to do lecherie/ & he pat wedduip pe forsaku wijf: doip auoutrie. ¶ eftsone ze han herde. pat it was seid to elde men. pou shalt not forswere/ but pou shalt zelde pin opis to pe lord/ but ꝑ sese to zou pat ze swe re not for ony pyng/ nep bi hey en: for it is pe trone of god/ ne ꝑ bi pe erpe: for it is pe stole of his feet/ nepir bi ierlū: for it is pe citee of a greet kyng/ nep pou shalt not swere bi pyn heed. for pou shalt maist not make oon heere wijte ne blac ke. but be zour word. yhe yhe nay nay & pt pat is moze pan pees: is of yuel. ¶ yhe han he rd pat it was seid ize for ize & tope for tope/ but ꝑ sese to zou pat ze ageenstode not an yu el man/ but if ony smyte pee i pe rizt cheke: shewe to hym also pe topir & to hym pt wil stryue wip pee i doome. & take awaye pi cote: leeue pon to hī also pi mantil/ & who eu cōstre ynep pee aponsyude pacis: go pou wip hī ovir thre zyne/ zyue pon to hī pat axip of pee: and turne not awaye fro hī pat wo le borowe of pee. ¶ yhe han he rd pat it was seid/ pou shalt loue pi neizbore & hate pin ene mye/ but ꝑ sese to zou/ loue ze zoure enmyes do ze wel to he pat hatedeu zou & ꝑye ze for he pat pursuen & sclaūdre zou. pat ze be pe sonys of zoure fad pat is i heuenes pat makip his sunne to rise vpon good & yuel mē: & veyneꝑ on iust men & vniust/ for if ze loue he pat loueu zou: what meede shulē ze haue: whepꝑ pupli cans doon not pis: & if ze gre teu zoure bripren oonely: what shulē ze do more: ne doue he

pene mẽ pis: ꝑfor be ze parfit: as
zoure heuẽly fadir is parfit

Takep hede pat ze do not
zoure vistibilnesse bifor
men to be seyn of hem
ellis ze schulẽ haue no meede at
zoure fadir pat is i heuenes / per
for vbhãne pon doist almes: nyle
pon trompe to fore pee as ipocrit
is doon i synagogis & stretis · pt
pei be wurschipid of mẽ / sopeli
y seie to zou: pei han receyued
her meede / but vbhãne pou do
ist almes: knowe not pi left
hond · what pi rithond doip pat
pin almes be i hidlis / & pi fa
dir pat seep i hidlis schal quite
pee / & vbhãne ze pien: ze schulẽ
not be as ipocritis / pat louen
to pie stondyng i synagogis and
corneris of stretis to be seyn
of mẽ / treuly y seie to zou pei han
resseyued her mede / but vbha
ne pou schalt pie: entre into pi
couche · & vbhãne pe doore is schit
pie pi fadir i hidlis / & pi fadir
pat seep i hidlis: schal zelde
to pee / but i pyng nyle ze spe
ke myche as heþen mẽ dou /
for pei gessen pat pei bẽ herd
i her myche speche · ꝑfor nyle
ze be maad lyk to hẽ / for zoure
fadir woot what is nede to zo
u / bifor pat ze aske hym / & þ
ze schulẽ pie / oure fadir pat
art i heuenes halewid be pi na
me pi kingdom come to þe / be
pi wille don: i erpe as i heuene /
zyue to us pis day oure breed
oun oþ substaũce / & forzyue to
vs oure dettis: as we forzyue
to oure dettours / & lede us not
i to temptacioũ: but delyue us
from yuel amẽ / for if ze forzyue
to men her synnes: zoure heuene
ly fadir schal forzyue to zou zou
re trespassis / sopeli if ze forzyue
not to mẽ: nei zour fadir sch
al forzyue to zou zoure synnes
but vbhãne ze faste: nyle ze be
maad as ipocritis sorewful
for pei defacẽ hem self to seme
fastyng to mẽ / treuly y seie to
zou: pei han resseyued her me
de / but vbhãne pou fastist anoy
nte pin heed & wassche pi face
pat pou be not seen fastyng
to mẽ but to pi fadir pat is
i hidlis · & pi fadir pat seep in
priey schal zelde to pee / nyle
ze tresore to zou tresoures in
erpe: whereo rust & mouzte
distrieþ · & whereo þeues del
ue out & steleu / but gadere to
zou tresores i heuene: where
neiþer rust ne mouzte distrieþ
& whereo þeues delue not out
ne steleu / for where pi tresore
is pere also pin herte is / pe
lanterne of pi bodye: is pin

ye if yn ye be symple: al yi
bodie shal be liztful / but if yi
ze be wexlward: al yi bodie sh
hal be derk· zif yat̃ue ye lizt
yat is i ꝑ ee· be derkuesse:
how gwete shulē yilke derkuel
sis be / no mā may serue twe
yn lordis / for eyˇ he shal hate
ye tou & loue ye toyˇ· eyˇ he sh
al sustepne ye tou· & despise ye
toyˇ / ze moñ not serue god and
richeis / ꝑfor y seie to zou· pat
ze be not bisi to zoure lyf wh
at ze shulen ete· neper to zour
bodie wiy wlat ze shulen be
clopid wlere lyf is not more
yāue mete: & ye bodie more
yāue clop: biholde ze ye foul
es of ye eire· for yei sowē not
neyˇ repen neyˇ gadren in to
bernes: & zoure fadir of hew
en fedip hē wlere ze ben not
more wurpi yāue yei: but wh
o ofˇ zou penkip· may putte
to his stature· o cubit: and of
clopig wlat bē ze bisi: biho
lde ze ye lilies of ye felde how
yei wexen/ yei trauelē not: ne
yei spynen/ & y seie to zou· salo
mon i al his glorie was not
keuerid as oon of yese/ & if
god clopip yˇ ye hey of ye feld
yat to dai ye is & to morwe is
cast i to an ouene: how muy
che more zou of litil feip:

perfor uple ze be bisi seiynge/
wlat shulē we ete or wlat sh
ulē we drinke: or wip wlat yy
ng shulē we be keuerid: for
hey ben uiē kepen alle yees yin kepen
gis / & zoure fadir wot yat ze
han nede to alle yees pingis/
perfor seke ze first ye kingdō
of god· & his riztfulnesse: and
alle yees pingis shulē be cā
st to zou / ꝑfor uple ze be bisy
i to pe morewe/ for pe morewe
shal be bisy to hi silf/ for it su
ffisip to pe dai pe· his owē malice.

C. vij

Nile ze deme: & ze shulē
not be demed· for wi
wlat doom ze deme:
ze shulen be demed / & i wlat
mesure ze meten: it shal be
meti azen to zou / but wlat
seest pou alitil mote i ye ize of
yi broyˇ: & seest not abeem ni
yin owen ize / or how seist pou
to yi broper· broper suffre y
shal do out a mote fro yin ize·
& lo abeem is i yin owne ize:
ypocrite do out first ye beem
of yin ize: and yāue pou shalt
see· to do out ye mote of peire
of yi broper Uuplezeme
hooli ping to houndis: neyer
caste ze zoure margaritis bi
fore swyne/ leste perauēture
yei defoulē hē wip her feet/
& ye houndis bē turned and

alto tere3ou ¶ aske3e & it shal
be 3ouñ to3ou / seke3e & 3e shu
le fynde· knocke3e & it shal be
opened to 3ou / for ech p^t aske:
takip / & he pat sekip: fyndip /
& it shal be opened to hi^ pat
knockip / what mañ of 3ou is
pat 3if^ his sone aske hi^ breed:
whep^ he whole take hi^ a stone:
or 3if he aske fisshe whep^ he
whole take hi^ an edder: p^ for
if 3e whanne 3e ben yuel mẽ
kunneu 3iue good 3iftis to 3ou
re sou9: hou mychc more 3o
ure fadir pat is i heuenes
shal 3iue good thingis to mẽ
pat axen hi^ / p^ for alle thing
is what eu thingis 3e wolen
pat mẽ do to 3ou: do3e to hem
for pis is pe lawe and pe pro
fetis / ¶ entre3e bi pe streit
3ate for pe 3ate pat ledip to
perdicioñ is large· & pe weie
is broode: & p^ ben many pat
entren bi it / hou streit is pe
3at· & narw3 pe wei pat ledip
to lif: & per ben fewe pat
fyndẽ it ¶ be3e war of fals
profetis pat comẽ to3ou i clo
thingis of sheep: but wip in
ne forp pei bẽ as wolues of
rauepne / of her fruytis 3e
shulẽ knowe hẽ / whep^ mẽ
gaderẽ grapis of pornes: or
figis of brerys: / so euy good
tree: makip good fruytes / but
an yuel tree: makip yuel fruy
tes / a good tre may not make
yuel fruytis: nep^ an yuel tre
make good fruytis / euy tre pat
makip not good fruyt: shal be
kit doñ & shal be cast i to pe fier /
p^ for of her fruytis· 3e shulen
knowe hem ¶ not ech mañ pat
seip to me lord lord: shal entre
i to pe kingdom of heuenes /
but he pat doip pe wille of my
fadir pat is i heuenes· he shal
entre i to pe kingdome of heuen
es / manye shulẽ seie to me i pat
dai· lord lord whep^ we han not
profecied i pi name· & han cast
out feendis i pi name· & han do
ou many vertues i pi name:
& pan̄e y shal knowleche to hẽ
pat y knowe 3ou neuer / depar
te awei fro me: 3e pat worchẽ
wickidnesse ¶ p^ for ech mañ pat
herip pees my wordis & doip hẽ:
shal be maad lyk to a wisp
mañ pat hap bildid his hous on
a stoon· & reyn felle doñ & flood
is comen & wyndis bleewen &
vnsshuden i to pat hous & it fe
lde not doñ for it was foũdid
on a stoon / & euy mañ pat herip
pees my wordis & doip hẽ not:
is lyk to a foolis fool· pat hap
bildid his hous on gravel / &
reyn cam doñ & floodis camẽ·

and þe dis bleibe: and þei hurledeu
azen þat hous and it felde doiñ and
þe fallinge doiñ þof was greet
and it was doon Whenn ihc hadde
endid þees wordis: þe puple wo
ndride on his techinge for he ta
iȝte hem as he þat hadde pow
er: and not as þe scribis of hem and þe
farisees //

Cap. viij.

But Whanne ihc was co
me doiñ fro þe hil: mu
che puple sewed hym
and lo a leprous man cam: and
worschipid hi and seide/ lord if þu
wilt: þou maist make me clene
and ihc held forþ þe honde: and touch
ide hi and seide/ I wole: be þou m
ade clene/ and anoon þe lepir of
hym was cleusid/ and ihc seide to
hi: se seie þou to no mañ: but go
schewe þee to þe prest and offre
þe ȝift þat moyses comaundid
in witnessing to hem/ And Wh
anne he hadde entrid into capar
naum: þe centurien neȝide to hi
and pried hi and seide/ lord my childe
lip in þe hous sike on þe paleste:
and is yuel turmentid/ and ihc seide
to hi/ I schal come and schal hele
hym/ and þe centurien answerd
de: and seide to hi/ lord I am not
worþi þat þou entre vndir my
rook/ but oneli seie þou bi word:
and my child schal be saued/ he lid
for Whi I am a mañ ordeyned
vndir power and I haue knyȝtis
vndir me/ and I seie to þis go: and
he goiþ/ and to an oþer come: and he
comeþ/ and to my seruaunt do þis:
and he doiþ it/ and ihc herde þese þin
gis and wondride and seide to men
þat seweden hym/ treuli I seie
to ȝou: I foond not so greet feiþ
in israel/ and I seie to ȝou/ þat many
schulen come fro þe eest and þe west:
and schulen reste with abraham and
ysaac and iacob in þe kingdom of
heuenes/ but þe sonys of þe reume
schulen be cast out into vttir
derknessis/ þere schal be Wepi
ng and gryntyng of teþe/ and ihc sei
de to þe centurien go: and as þu
hast bileued be it doon to þee/
and þe child was heelid fro þat our
and Whanne ihc was comen in
to þe hous of symoun petre: he
saȝe his wyues modir liggyng
and schakyn with feueris/ and he tou
chid hir honde: and þe feuer lefte
hir/ and sche roos and seruede hem/
and Whanne it was euen þei brou
ȝten to hi manye þat hadden deu
elis/ and he castid out spiritis bi
word and heelide alle þat weren
euel at ese: þat it were fulfil
lid þat was seid bi ysaye þe pro
fete seiyng/ he took oure infir
mytees and bar oure sikenessis and
ihc sai myche puple about hi:
and bad his disciplis go ouer þe wat

And a scribe neȝide: & seide to
hi maistir y schal sue pee wher
euir pou schal go & ihc seide
to hi foxis hauen deuen & bridd
is of heuene haue nestis: but
mannis sone hap not wher he
schal reste his heed Anoy of hise
disciplis seide to hi lord suffer
me to go first & birie my fad
ir but ihc seide to hi sue pou
me: & lete deed men berie her
deed men & whanne he was goo
n vp into a litil schip: his disci
plis sneden hi & lo a gret stiring
was maad in pe see so pat pe schip
up was hilid wip wawes but
he slept & his disciplis camen
to hi: & reisiden hi & seiden lord
sane us: we perischen & ihc
seide to hem what ben ze of lit
il feip agaste panne he roos &
comaundide to pe wyndis & pe
see: & a gret pesibilnesse was
maad & men wondriden & seiden
what maner man is he pis:
for pe wyndis & pe see obeischen
to hi: & whanne ihc was comen
ouer pe watir into pe cuntre of
men of gerasa: two men met
ten hi pat hadden deueles &
camen out of graues ful wood
e so pat no man myzte go bi pt
weie & lo pei criedden &
seiden what to vs & to pee ihu pe so
ne of god: art pou comun hi
dun bifor pe tyme to turmente
us: & not fer fro hem was a flok
e of many swyn leesewyng &
pe deuelis preyeden hi & seiden if
pou castist out us fro hennis se
de us into pe droue of swyne &
he seide to hem goze & peizeden
out & wenten into pe swyne & lo
a gret cure of pe flok hedlyng into pe see: & pei weren
deed in pe watris & pe herdis fle
dden & wenten: & camen into pe cite
& telden alle pese pingis & of hem
pat hadden pe feendis & lo al pe
cite went out azen ihu & and
whanne pei hadden seyn hi pei pre
ieden pt he wolde passe fro hise coostis
And ihc went up into a
boot: & passide ouer pe
watir & cam into his
cite & lo pei brouzten to hi a man
sike in palesie: liggyng in a bed
& ihc siz pe feip of hem: & seide to
pe man sike in palesie sone haue
pou trist: pi synes ben forzouen to
pee & lo cumne of pe scribis: seiden
wip inne hem silf pis blasfemep
& whanne ihc hadde seyn her po
uztis: he seide wherto penke
ze yuel pingis in zoure hertis:
what is it lizter to seie pi synis ben
forzouen to pee: ep to seie: rise pou
& walke: but pat ze wite pat man
us sone hap power to forziue syn
us in erpe panne he seide to pe seke

C. vij.

mkn i palsie: rise vp take yi bed
& go i to yin hous / & he vood: And
weute i to his hous / & pe pople
seing dredde & glorifiede god pt
zaf siche power to mē ¶ And is
hane ihc passide fro pēns: he
say a man mathew bi name sit
ting i a tolbope / & he vood / and
folewede hī / & it was dou pe is
hile he satt at pe mete i pe hous:
lo many pupplicans & synful m
en camē & saten at pe mete wt
ihū & his disciplis / & fariseis
sien: & seiden to his disciplis /
whi etip zoure maist wip pup
plicans & synful mē: ihc herde
& seide / a leche is not needful
to mē pat faren wel: but to m
en pat ben puel at ese / but go
ze & lerne what it is · y wole m
erci & not sacrifice / for y cam
not to clepe rigtful mē: but sy
nful men ¶ pane pe disciplis
of woon camē to hī & seidē / why
we & fariseis fasten ofte: but
yi disciplis fasten not: & ihc
seide to hē / whep pe soug of
pe spouse moū morne: as lon
ge as pe spouse is wip hē: but
dayes schulē comē: whane:
whane pe spouse · schal be ta
kū awei fro hē · & pane pei
schulē faste / & no mā puttip
a clout of buystous clope i to
an oelde clopūg / for it doip a
wei pe fulnes of pe clope and
a wers breking is made / ne
per mē puttē newe wyne i to
oolde botelis / ellis pe botelis
ben to broke & distruped & pe
wyne sched out / but mē puttē
newe wyne i to newe botelis:
& bop bē kept ¶ whiles pt ihū
spak pese pingis to hē: lo a pn
ce cam · & worschipide hī & seide /
lord my dowt is nowis deed: but
com pou & putt pin hond on hir
& sche schal lyne / & ihc roos &
his disciplis: & wentē hī / & lo a
womā pat hadde pe blodi flux
twelue zeer: neizhide bihynde
& touchide pe hem of his clop /
for sche seide wip ine hir silf /
if y touche oonly pe clope of hī:
y schal be saf / & ihc turnede &
say hir: & seide dowt hane pu
trist · pi feip hap made pe saf /
& pe womā was hool fro pat
our / & whane ihc cam i to pe ho
us of pe prince · & say mynystral
les & pe puple makinge noyse:
he seide / go ze awei / for pe da
mysel is not deed: but slepip /
& pei scornidē hī / & whane pe
folk was putt out: he wente
ine & helde hir hond / & pe da
mysel roos: & pis fame wē
te out i to al pat londe ¶ &
whane ihc passide fro pens
two blynde mē crieyng sue

& he seide to hī
sue pou me /
ihc

edeu hi & ſeideu / pou ſone of
dauy haue mcy ou vs / & whā
ne he cam̄ to pe hous: pe blyn
de mē came to hi / & ihc ſeide to
hē / what wolen ze pat y do to
zou / & pei ſeidē lord: pat our e
yen ben opened / & ihc ſeide bile
ueu ze: pat y may do pis þing
to zou: / pei ſeien to hi· zhe lord /
pāne he touchide her yen: And
ſeide / after zoure feip: be it dou
to zou / & pe yen of hē were ope
ned / & ihc preted hē: & ſeide /
ſe ze pat no man wite / but pei ze
don out & diffamede hym pozou
al pat lond ¶ And whāne pei
weren gon out: lo pei brouzten
to hi a doumbe man hauyng a deuel
& whāne pe deuel was cast out:
pe doumbe man ſpak / & pe puple
wondride & ſeide / it hap not be
ſeye pus in iſrl / but pe fariſees
ſeidē / in pe þuce of deuels he ca
ſtiþ out deuels ¶ And ihc wēte
about alle pe catees & caſtels:
techinge in ſynagogis of hem / &
þchinge pe goſpel of pe kingdom:
& heling euy langour· & euy ſe
ekines / & he ſiz pe puple & hadde
reupe on hē: for pei weren trā
neliđ & liggyng as ſchepe not
hauyng a ſchiphirde / pāne he
ſeide to his diſciplis / ſopeli pere
is nyche vipe corne: but feewe
werkmē / þfor þie ze pe lord of
ripe corn: pat he ſende werk
meu in to his vipe corn
¶ And whāne his twelue
diſciplis weren clepid
to gidere: he zaf to hē
power of vnclene ſpiritis: to
caſte hem out of mē· & to hele
euy langnor & ſeekneſſe And
peſe bē pe names of pe twel
ue Apoſtlis / pe firſt ſymoun
pat is ſeid petir & Andrew his
broper / & iames of zebede: &
ioon his broper / filip & bar
tholomeu· thomas & mathew
publican· & iames alfei And
tadee· ſymoun cananee· & iudas
ſcharioth· pat betrayede crſt /
ihc ſente peſe twelue· & comā
ndide hē & ſeide / go ze not i to
pe weie of hepene me· & entre
ze not i to pe catees of ſama
ritans: but rap go ze to pe ſhy
ep of pe hous of iſrl pat ben
pevyſchid / & go ze & þche ze And
ſeie pat pe kingdom of heue
nes ſchal neize / hele ze ſeke mē
en· reiſe ze deed mē· clense ze
meſſels· caſte ze out deuelis
freeli ze han taki· freeli zyue
ze / nyle ze welde gold· neyer
ſilu ne money i zoure girdlis·
not a ſtrippe i pe weie· neyer
twei cotis· ney ſchoon ney yet a
zerde / for a werk man is worpi
his mete / in to what eiþe citee

c. x.

or aftel ze shulē entre: afte ze whō
per in is wapi & pere dwelle ze
til ze go out & whāne ze goon in
to an hous greete ze it & sepu
pees to pis hous & if pilk hous
be wapi: youre pees shal wune
on it but if pat hous be not wa
pi: youre pees shal turne azen
to zou & who eu relleyuep not
zou nep heyep youre wordis: go
ze fro pat hous or cite & shrȳge
of pe dufte of youre feet treuli
y seie to zou it shal be more suf
ferable to pe lond of sodō
& gomor i pe dai of iugement:
pāne to pilke citee lo y sende
zou as sheep i pe mydil of wo
lues pfor be ze slees as serpen
tis: & sȳple as doubues but be ze
war of mē for pei shulē take
zou i councelis: & pei shulē bete
zou i her synagogis & to meir
is or pūdētis & to kingis ze shu
lē be led for me: i witnessing
to hē & to pe hepen mē but wh
ānе pei take zou: uple ze penke
how or what ping ze shulē spe
ke for it shal be zouū to zou i pt
our· what ze shulē speke for
it bē not ze pat speken: but pe
spirit of youre fadir pat spekip
i zou & pe brop shal take pe br
op i to dep: & pe fadir pe sone
& soup shulē rise azeup fadir &
modir: & shulē turne to hem
bi dep & ze shulē be i hate to al
le mē for my name but he pat
shal dwelle stille i to pe ende: sh
al be saaf & whāne pei pursue
zou i pis citee: fle ze i to an oper
treuly y seie to zou ze shulen
not ende pe citees of isrl: to for
pat mañ sone wune pe disciple
is not above pe maist: ne pe ser
uañt above his lord it is y now
to pe disciple: pat he be as his
maist & to pe ser uañt as his lord
if pei han clepid pe hosebonde
man belsabub: how mychе more
his hous shold meyne pfor dreed
ze not hē for no ping is hid: pat
shal not be shewid & no ping
is priy: pat shal not be wist
pat ping pat y seie to zou i derk
nessis: seie ze i pe lizt & pche ze
on hous is pat ping: pat ze heren
i pe ere & uple ze drede hē pat slee
pe bodie: for pei mowe not slee pe
soule but raper dreede ze hī pat
may lese bope soule & bodi i to hel
le whep tuei sparewes beu not
seeld for an halpeny: & oon of hē
shal not falle on pe erpe wip
outen youre fadir: & alle pe heer
is of youre heed bē noumbrid per
for uple ze drede: ze beu bett pā
ne many sparewes pfor euy m
an pat shal knowleche me bifo
re mē: y shal knowleche hym
bifore my fadir pat is i heuenes

bint he pat ſchal deuye me bifoꝛe
men: & y ſchal deuye hym bifoꝛe
my fadir pat is i heuenes ¶ my
leze deme pat y cam to ſende pees
i to erpe / y cam not to ſende pees:
bint ſwerd / foꝛ y cam to departe
am̃ azen̄ his fadir: & pe douz
t azen̄ hir modir · & pe ſonus
wif azen̄ pe hoſeboudes modir
and pe enimyes of am̃: ben pei
pat be̅ homly wip hym ¶ he pt
loueþ fadir oꝛ modir moze pan
me: is not wopi to me / & he pat
taki not his cꝛoos & ſiep me:
is not wopi to me / he pat fyndip
his lif: ſchal leſe it / & he pat le
ſip his lif foꝛ me: ſchal fynde it /
he pat reſſeyuep zou: reſſeyuep
me / & he pat reſſeyuep me: reſ
ſeyuep hym pat ſente me / he pt
reſſeyuep a pꝛofete i pe name of
a pꝛofete: ſchal take pe mede of
a pꝛofete / & he pt reſſeyuep a
iuſt m̃ i pe name of a iuſt m̃:
ſchal take pe mede of a iuſt m̃
& whoeu̓ zeuep dꝛynke to oon of
pees leſte · a cuppe of colde wat̓
oonly · i pe name of a diſciple:
tꝛewly y ſei to zou he ſchal not
leſe his mede //

And it was don whan̄
ihc hadde endid: he tom
m̃ide to his twelue
diſciplis · & paſſide fꝛo penȝ to
teche & pꝛche i pe citees of hem /

bint whan̄ ioon i boondis · hadde
herd pe werkis of crist: he ſente
tweyne of his diſciplis & ſeide to hi /
art pou he pat pt ſchalt come̅ oꝛ we
abiden an opir: & ihc answerde
& ſeide to hem / go ze & telle azen to
ioon po pingis pat ze han herd · &
ſeen / blynde men̄ ſeen · croked men̄ ·
goon · meſels ben̄ maad clene · deſe
men herē · deed men̄ risen azen ·
poꝛe men̄ ben̄ taken to p̄chyng of pe
goſpel / & he is blesſid pat ſchal
not be ſclaundered i me / & whan̄
pei weren goon awei: ihc bigan
to ſei̅ of ioon to pe pꝛple / what
ping wente̅ ze out i to deſert to
ſe: a reed walwed wip wynd: oꝛ
what ping wente̅ ze out to ſe: / a
man clopid wip ſofte clopis: lo pei
pat ben clopid wip ſofte clopis:
ben i houſis of kingis / bint what
ping wente̅ ze out to ſe: / a pꝛofe
te: / zhey ſei̅ to zou: & more pan a p
fete / foꝛ pis is he of whom it is wꝛ
tin̄ / lo y ſende myn aungel bifoꝛ
pi face: pat ſchal make redy pei
wei bifoꝛ pee / tꝛewly y ſei̅ to zou:
per woos woon more pan ioon bap
tiſt among pe childrē of wymmen /
but he pat is leſſe i pe kingdom
of heuenes: is more pan he / and
fꝛo pe dayes of ioon baptiſt til
now: pe kingdom of heuenes
ſuffeꝛip violence & violent me̅
rauyſchē it / foꝛ alle pꝛofetis &

pe laue til to 1oou proſecieden/
& if ze wolen veſſeyue: he is elic
pt is to wnne/ he pat haþe eres
of herinꝫ: heve he ¶ but to is
hou ſchal y gelle þis generacioũ
liyk: it is liyk to children ſitty
ng i cheypng: pat criẽ to her
peeris & ſeien/ we han ſongen
to zou: & ze han not dañſid/ we
han mourned to zou: & ze han not
weilid/ for 1oou cam nep etinꝫ
ne drynkinꝫ: & pei ſeien he haþ
a deuel/ pe ſone of mañ cam ety
ng & drynkinꝫ: & pei ſeien/ lo
a mañ aglotoũ & a drynkere of
wyne & a freende of puplicaũ
& of ſynful mẽ: & wiſdome is
iuſtified of her ſonꝫ/ Þanne
ihc bigan to ſeie repꝛef to cite
es i whiche ful many vertues
of hi were don: for pei diden
not penaũce/ wo to pee corozin
pin· wo to pee bethſaida/ for
if pe vertues pat be don i zou ha
dden be don i tire & ſidon: ſiker
ine pei haddẽ don penaũce i he
pre & aſche/ nepeles y ſeie to
zou it ſchal be leſſe peyne to
tire & ſidon: i pe daie of doome
pan to zou/ & pou carfarnaũ
whep pou ſchal be arered vp i
to heuene: pou ſchalt go doũ
i to helle/ for if pe vertues pat
be done i pee· haddẽ be don in
ſodome: paraũenture pei ſchul
den haue dwellid in to pis
daie/ nepeles y ſeie zou· pat to
pe lond of ſodom it ſchal be ſof
tep i pe daie of doome pan to
pee/ in pilke tyme ihc anſwe
rid & ſeide y knowſleche to pee
fadir of lord of heuen & of er
pe/ for pou haſt hid peſe ping
is fro wiſe men & redy: & haſt
ſchewed hem to litil children/
o fadir: for ſo it was pleſinge
to for pee/ alle pingis be zoũ
to me of my fadir/ and noman
knowe pe ſone: but pe fadir/
nep ony man knowe pe fadir/
but pe ſone· & to whom pe ſone
wolde ſchewe/ alle ze pat trauai
len & be charged· come to me: &
y ſchal fulfille zou/ take ze my
zok on zou & lerne of me for y
am mylde & meke i herte: & ze
ſchulẽ fynde reſte to zoure ſou
lis/ for my zok is ſofte & my ch
arge liyt

In pat tyme ihc went bi cor
nes i pe ſabot daie/ & his
diſciplis hũgride & bigũne
to pluckе pe eris of corn & to ete/
and fariſees ſeynge ſeide to hi/
lo pi diſciplis don pat ping pt
is not leueful to hem to do in
ſabotis/ & he ſeide to hem/ whe
per ze han not red what dauid
dide whanne he hũgride & pei
pat weren wip hi: how he en

terride i to pe hous of god: and
eet lones of propocion / which
lones it was not leueful to hi
to ete· nep to he pat were wip
hi: but to preestis aloone / or
whep ze han not red i pe lawe·
pat i sabotis· pstis i pe tepple
defoulē pe sabotis: ꝛ pei ben
wip oute blame: / ꝛ p seie to zo
u pat here is a gretter pāue pe
tēple / ꝛ if ze wistē what it is
p wille mcy ꝛ not sacrifice·
shuldē neu hane cōdempned
inocentis / for mān̄ lone is
lord· the of pe sabot / ꝛ whān̄e
he passide fro pēu̅: he cam i
to pe synagoge of hē / ꝛ lo amā
pat hadde a drie hond / ꝛ pei ax
idē hi ꝛ seiden / whether it be le
ueful to hele i pe sabot p̄t pei
shuldē accuse hi / ꝛ he seide to
hē / what mā of zou shal be p̄t
hap a shep ꝛ if it falle i to a
dich i pe sabotis: whether he
shal not holde ꝛ lifte it up /
hou mych more is a mā bet
ter pāne a sheep: ꝓfor it is le
ueful to do good i pe sabotis /
pāne he seie to pe mā / strecche
forp pin hond / ꝛ he strauzte
forp: ꝛ it was restored to hel
pe as pe toper / ꝛ pe farisees
wēten out· ꝛ maden a cōsel
azeu̅ hi: how pei shuldē des
troye hi / ꝛ whan knewe it: and
wente a weie fro pēu̅ / ꝛ many
suedē hi: ꝛ he helide hem alle / ꝛ
he comaundide to hē: pat pei
shuldē not make hi knowē / pat p̄t
ping were fulfillid: pat was
seid bi isaye pe prophete seiynge /
lo my child whō y haue chosen:
my derling i whom it hap wel
pleside to my soule / y shal putte
my spirit on hym: ꝛ he shal te
lle doun to hepen mē / he shal
not stryue ne crie: nep ony mā
shal here his vois i stretis / ꝛ
brisid reed he shal not breke /
ꝛ he shal not quenche smokyng
flex· til he caste out doom to vic
torie· ꝛ hepen mē shulē hope i
his name / pāne amā blynde ꝛ
doūbe pat hadde a feend: was
brouzt to hy̆ / ꝛ he heelide hym:
so pat he spak ꝛ say / ꝛ pe puple
wondride ꝛ seide / whep̄ pis be
pe sone of dauip: but pe farise
es herden ꝛ seidē / he pis ca̅stip
not out feendis: but i belsabub
ub· ꝓnce of feendis / ꝛ iesu wit
tyng her pouzt: seide to hem /
eche kyngdom departid azeu̅
it self· shal be desolatid / ꝛ eche
citee or hous departid azeu̅ it
self: shal not stonde / ꝛ zif sa
thanas castip out sathanas:
he is departid azeu̅ hi̅ self / p̄
for how shal pis kyngdom sto
onde: / ꝛ if p i belsabub caste

out denelig: ¶ wythoun zoure lones
caſten out: ¶ for per ſchulē be zoure
dones mē/ but if ¶ ſpūrit of god
caſte out feendis: pānē ye kingdom
of god is comē i to zou/ ep̄ how mai
ony mā entre i to pe hous of a ſtr-
ong mā· ¶ take awei his veſſel
is: but firſt he bynde pe ſtrōge
man· ¶ pānē he ſchal ſpoile his
hous/ he pat is not wip me: is a
zenȝ me/ ¶ he pat gaderip not to
gidere wip me: ſchatterip abro
od/ ¶ for y ſe to zou/ al ſinne ¶ blac
femye ſchal be forzouē to mē: but
pe ſpirit of blaſfemye· ſchal n
ot be forzouē/ ¶ who eni ſeip a wo
ord azenȝ mānes sone: it ſchal
be forzouē to hym/ but who pat
ſeip a word azenȝ pe holi goſt: it
ſchal not be forzouē to hi· nep in
pis world ne i to pe toper/ eper mak
eze pe tree good ¶ his fruyt go
od: ep̄ makeze pe tre yuel ¶ his
fruyt yuel/ for a tree is knowe
of pe fruyt/ ze generacioun of ed
dris: hou moun ze speke good yn
gis wyānēze be yuel: for pe mo
up spekip of pleute of pe herte/
a good mā bringip forp good yn
gis of good treſoure/ ¶ an yuel
mā bringip forp yuel yngis of
yuel treſour/ ¶ y ſeie to zou pt of
eip idil word pat mē speke: pei
ſchulē zelde reſoun p of i pe dai of
doume/ for of pi wordis you ſchalt
be iuſtified: ¶ of pi wordis you ſchalt
be dāpned/ pānē ſinne of pe scribis
¶ farisees: and answeride to hi ¶ seide/
maiſt we wolē ſe a tokene of pee/
which answeride ¶ seide to hē/ an
yuel knowde ¶ aſpouſe breker:
ſekip a tokene/ ¶ a tokene ſchal
not be zouen to it: but pe tokene
of ionas pe profete/ for as ionas
was i pe wombe of a whal pre da
ies ¶ pre nistis: ſo mānis sone
ſchal be i pe herte of pe erpe pre
daies ¶ pre nistis/ mē of nynyne
ſchulē rise i doome pis generacioun·
¶ ſchulē cōdēpne it: for pei diden
penaūce i pe pechyng of ionas/
¶ lo here a gretr pānē ionas/ pe
queene of pe soup ſchal rise i doom
wip pis generacioun ¶ ſchal cōdēpne
it: for ſche cam fro pe endis of
pe erpe to here pe wisdom of ſalo
mon/ ¶ lo here a gretr pānē ſalo
mon/ whānē an vnclene spirit
goip out fro a mā: he goip bi
drie placis ¶ sekip reſte ¶ fyndip
not/ pānē he seip· y ſchal turne
azen i to myn hous: fro whēnus
y weute out/ ¶ he comep ¶ fyndip
it woide: ¶ clensid wip bisymis
¶ maad faire/ pānē he goip ¶ ta
kip wip hi ſeuen opere spiritis
worſe pānē hi ſelf: ¶ pei entrē
¶ dwellē pere/ and pe laſte pyng
is of pat mā· ben maad worſe
pānē pe formere/ ſo it ſchal be

to þis wacke generacioũ / zit whyle he
spak to þe puple: lo his modir and
his bripen stoudeu wip oute forþe
sekinge to speke to hĩ / & a mã seide
to hym / lo þi modir & þi bripe stõ
den wip oute forþ: sekinge pee /
he answeride to þe mã þat spak
to hĩ: & seide / who is my modir:
& who ben myn bripen: & he hol
de forþ his hond ĩ to his disciplis:
& seide / lo my modir & my brip
eu / for who euĩ doiþ þe wille of
my fadir þat is ĩ heuene / he is
my broþer & sister and modir

In þat daye ihc zede out of þe
hous: & satt bisidis þe see / &
myche puple was gederid to
hym: so þat he wente vp ĩ to a bo
te & satt / & al þe puple stood on
þe breuke / & he spake to hem ma
ny þingis ĩ parablis & seide / lo he
þat sowiþ zede out to sowe his se
ed / & while he sowiþ: sume seedis
felden bisidis þe weie / & briddis
of þe eir camen: & eten hem / but
oþ seedis felden ĩ to stony place:
where þei haddẽ not mych ey
þe / & anoon þei sprongen up: for
þei haddẽ not depnesse of eyþe /
but whanne þe sunne was risen:
þei walidẽ / & for þei haddẽ not
roote: þei dridẽ up / & oþ seedis
felden among þornes: & þorn
es woxen vp & strangeleden
hem / but oþe seedis felden ĩ
to good londe: & zauen fruyt:
sum an hundrid fold: an oþ sixti
fold: an oþer pritty fold / he þat
hap eris of heering here he / & pe
disciplis comen nyz: & seide to hĩ /
why spekist þou ĩ parablis to
hem / & he answeride & seide to hẽ
for to zou it is zouen to knowe þe
þingis of þe kingdom of heuen
es: but it is not zouen to hẽ for
it schal be zouen to hym þt hap:
& he schal haue pleute / but if a
man hap not: also þat þing þt
he hap schal be taken awei fro hĩ
þerfor y speke to hẽ ĩ parablis:
for þei seeing seen not: & þei her
ing heren not / ne vndurstõden:
þat þe profecie of ysaie seeing
be fulfillid ĩ hem / þat seiþ herynge
ze schulẽ here: & ze schulẽ not vn
durstonde / & ze seeing schulẽ see:
& ze schulẽ not see / for þe herte
of þis puple is gretely fatti: &
þei herden heuely with eeris: &
þei han closide her izen: lest sum
tyme þei seen with izen & with
eeris heren & vndurstonden
ĩ herte & þei be conuertid and y
heele hẽ / but zoure izen þt seen
ben blessid: & zoure eeris þat
heren / forsoþe y seie to zou þt
many profetis & iust men wol
dẽ to se þo þingis þat ze see:
& þei sayen not / & to here þo
þingis þat ze heren: & þei her

den not/ perfor heve ze pe parable
of pe colbeve/ eche pat herip pe
word of pe reibnne· & vndirstou
dip not: pe yuel spirit wonep &
raueschep pat· pat is sowē i his
herte· pis it is pat is sowē bisid
is pe weie/ but pis pat is sowen
on pe stony lond: pis it is pat he
rip pe word of god· & anoon wip
ioye takip it/ & he hap not roote
i hym self: but is tepreal/ for
whanne tribulacioū & persecu
cioū is maad for pe word: anoon
he is sclaūdrid/ but he pat is
sowen i pornes: is pis pat her
ip pe word· & pe bisynesse of pis
world· & pe fallace of richessis
strangulip pe word· & it is mad
wip outen fruyt/ but hepi
is sowē i to good lond: is pis pat
herip pe word & vndirstondip· &
bryngip forpe fruyt/ & sum makip
an hundrid fold· trewli an oper
sixti fold· & an oper prittī fold
¶ An oper parable ihc puttide
forp to hem: & seide/ pe kingdō
of heuenes is maad lyk to a man
pat sewe good seed i his feld/ and
whanne men slepten: his enmy cam
& sewe a bone tarip i pe myddil
of whete & wente a wei/ but wh
anne pe herbe was growed and
maad fruyt: panne pe tarip
appereden & pe seruantis of
pe hous lbonde man comen & seide

to hym/ lord whep̄ pou hast not
sowē good seed i pi feld: whennes
pan̄e hap it tarip: & he seide to
hem/ pe man enmy hap do pis pig
& pe seruantis seidē to hi/ wolt
pou we gon & gederen hem: & he
seide/ nay lest perauenture ze i
gaderinge tarip drawen up wip
hem pe whete bi pe roote/ suffe
re ze hem bope wexe i to repinge
tyme: & i pe tyme of ripe corne:
p shal seie to pe reperis first
gadir ze to gider pe tarip & bynde
hem to gidere i knytchis to be
brent: but gadere ze whete i to
my berne ¶ And op̄ parable ihc̄
puttide forp to hem: & seide/ pe
kingdom of heuenes is lyk to
a corn of seneuey: which a man̄
toke & sewe i his feld· which is pe
leste of alle seedis/ but whanne it
hap wox̄en: it is moste of alle
wortis: & it is maad a tre/ so pat
briddis of pe eir comen & dwellen
i pe bowis per of ¶ An oper pa
rable ihc̄ spak to hē/ pe kingdom
of heuenes is lyk to sourdowz
which a wom̄ toke & hidde i pre
meſures of mele: til it were al
sourid/ ihc̄ spak alle pese pingis
i parablis to pe puple: & he spac
not to hem wip outen parablis·
pat it shuld be fulfillid pat is
sewd bi pe profete seiyng/ y shal
open my mouþe i parablis: y

wō mā

shal telle out hidde þingis
fro þe makyng of þe world
þãne he lefte þe þuple: &
cam to Anhous/ & his dis
ciplis came to hi: & seide ex
poune to vs þe parable
of taris of þe feld/ which
Anſweride & seide/ he þat
sowiþ good seed: is mãn
sone/ þe feld is þe world/
but þe good seed: þese be
sonȝ of þe kingdom/ but
taris þes ben yuel children/
þe enmy þat sowiþ hem:
is þe fend & þe ripe wen:
is þe ending of þe world/
þe repers be angelis/ þer
as taris be gadered to gidir
& ben brent i fier: so it shal
be i þe endyng of þe world/
mãn sone shal sende his
angelis· & þei shulẽ gadir
fro his reume alle skan-
dris· & hẽ þat don wickednes
se/ & þei shulẽ sende hẽ· i to
þe dyuepe of fier/ þere sh
al be wepyng & betyng to gi
dir of teep/ þãne iust men
shulẽ shyne as þe sunne: in
þe reume of her fadir/ he
þat hap eris of herynge here
he/ the kingdom of heue
nes is lyk to tresoure hid:
i a feld/ which a mã þat fyn
diþ: hidiþ/ & for ioye of it: he
goiþ & sellip alle þingis þat he hap· &
biep pilk feld/ eft sones þe kingdõ
of heuenes is lyk to a marchant:
þat sechip good margaritis/ but wh
ãne he hap foũde o þrious margari
te: he went & selde alle þingis þat
he hadde: & bouzte it/ eft þe kingdõ
of heuenes is lyk to a nette cast in
to þe see & þat gaderip to gidir of alle
kinde of fischis/ which whãne it was
ful· þei drowẽ up & seten bi þe brinke
& cheseu þe good i to her vesselis· but
þe yuel þei kesten out/ so it shal be
i þe eending of þe world/ Angelis
shulẽ gon out· & shulẽ departe yuel
men· fro þe myddil of iust men: & þei
shulẽ sende hem i to þe chymney of
fier/ þ shal be wepyng & gryntyng
of teep/ han he ze vndirstonde alle
þese þingis:/ þei seiyn to hym· ȝe
he seip to hem/ þerfor eiy wise man
of lawe i þe kingdom of heuenes
is lyk to an husbond mã þat bryn
giþ forp of his tresoure· newe þing
is & elde/ and it was doon whãne
ihc hadde eendid þese parablis: he
passide fro þens/ & he cam i to his
cũtre· & tauzte hẽ i her synagogis·
so þat þei wondridẽ & seidẽ/ fro wh
ãnȝ þis wisdome & vertues come
to þis: whei is not þis þe sone of
a carpent: whei his modir be not
seid marie· & his breþren iames &
ioseph· & symont & iudas/ and his
sistris· whei þei alle be not amo

C. xiiij.

ug us: fro whens pane alle pe
se pingis come to pis: & so per we
re schamid ihi but ihc seide to
hem A profete is not wip outè
worschip: but in his owen cuntre.
& in his owne hous & he dide not
pi many vtues for pe vnbilen of hè
u pat tyme eronde thetv3rke
pnce of pe four pe part herde
pe fame of ihū: & seide to his ch
ildrè pis is ioon baptist he is
risen fro deep: & pfor vtues wor
chen in hym for eronde hadde hol
de ioon: & bounde hym & puttid
hi in to pfoū for herodias pe wif
of his brop for ioon seide to hi
it is not leueful to pee: to haue
hir And he willyng to sle hym
dredde pe puple: for pei hadden
hym as A profete but in pe dape
of herodis birpe pe dou3t of
herodias daunsed in pe myddil: &
pleside eronde wherfor with an
oop he bihi3te to 3iue to hir: wh
at euer ping she hadde axid of
hym & she bifor warned of hir
modir: seide 3if pou to me heer
e pe heed of ioon baptist in a dish
¶ And pe king was sorewful
but for pe oop & for hem pat sa
ten to gidir at pe mete: he com
maundide to be 3oue & he sente: &
bihedide ioon in pe pfoū & his he
ed was brou3t in a dishe: And it
was 3oue to pe damysel & she
bare it to hir modir And his
disciplis camè & token his bodie
& buriden it & pei camè & tolden
to ihū & whanne ihc hadde herd
pis ping: he went fro penn in
to A boot in to desert place bisidis
& whanne pe puple hadde herd:
pei folowedè hi on her feet fro
citees & ihc 3ede out & sawe A gret
et puple: & hadde rewpe on hè:
& heelide pe sijk men of hè but
whanne pe eventide was come:
his disciplis camè to hi & seidè
pe place is desert: & pe tyme is
now passid late pe puple go in to
tounes to bie hè mete ihc seide
to hè pei han not nede to go 3yue
we 3e hè sum what to ete pei answ
erdè we han not here: but fyue
loues & twey fischis & he seide
to hè bringe 3e hè hidir to me
& whanne he hadde commaundid pe
puple to sitte to mete on pe heye:
he took fyue loues & twey fischis
& he bihelde in to heuene & blessid
& brak & 3af to his disciplis and
pe disciplis 3auè to pe puple &
alle eten & weren fulfillid And
pei token pe relifs of broken gobe
tis twelue cofynes ful And pe
nounbre of men pat eten was fyue
pousande of men out taken
wythouten wymmen & litil childrè ¶ And a
noon ihc compellide pe disciplis
to go up in to A boot & go bifor hi

oner pe see: wh̄yle he left pe puple
And wh̄ane pe puple was left: he
stede aloone i to an hil for to pie
but wh̄ane pe euenyng was co
me: he was yeve alone & pe boot
i pe myddil of pe see: was chog
gid wip wawes for pe wynd wa
s cōtrarie to hem but i pe four
pe walkyng of pe nyzt: he cā to
hem walkyng aboue pe see &
yei seyng hi walke on pe see:
were distur bid & seide pt it is
a fantū & for dvede yei cryeden
And anoon ihc spac to hē: & seide
hane ze trist y am: uyle ze dre
de & petir answeride & seide
lord if pou art: comaūde me
to come to pe ou pe watis & he
seide come pou & petir zede doū
fro pe boot & walkede on pe wa
teris · to come to ihū but he se
ig pe wynd stroong was afer de
And wh̄ane he bigan to drēche:
he criede & seide lord make me
saaf & anoon ihc held forp his
hond · & tok pet & seide to hym
pou of litil feip: wh̄y hast pou
doutid & wh̄ane he hadde stied
i to pe boot: pe wynde ceesid &
yei pat weren i pe boot: camē
& worshipidē hym & seidē verily
pou art goddis sone And wh̄a
ne yei haddeu passid ouer pe
see: yei camē i to pe loud of ge
nesar & wh̄ane mē of pt place
haddeu knowe hym: yei sentē i to
al pat cūtre & yei brouztē to hym
alle pat haddē sekuesse And yei
prēdē hi pat yei schuldē touche pe
hem of his cloping And who eu
touchedē: were made saaf
C. xv.
Cāne pe scribis & pe farisees
camē to hi fro ierlū: & seidē
wh̄i breken pi disciplis pe tra
dicioūs of eldere men: for yei
wasshen not her hoondis: wh̄ā
ne yei eten bred he answeride
& seide to hem wh̄i breke ze pe m
aūdemēt of god for zoure tradi
cioū: for god seide honoure pi fa
dir & pi modir & he pat curseip fa
dir or modir: die bi deep but ze
seien wh̄o eu seip to fadir or mo
dir wh̄at euy zifte is of me · it
schal profite to pee and he hap not
worschiped his fadir or his modir
And ze han maad pe maūdement
of god voide: for zoure tradicioū
ypocritis y saie pe profete profe
cīede wel of zou & seide pis puple
honourip me wip lippis: but her
hert is fer fro me and yei worschi
pen me wip outē cause: techyng
pe doctrines & maūdemētis of mē
And wh̄ane pe puple were depid
to gidir to hym: he seide to hem
here ze & vndirstonde ze pat ping
pat entrip i to pe mouy: defoulip
not a man but pat ping pat com
ep out of pe mouy: defoulip a

¶ Thane his disciplis camen: & seidē to hī/ pou knowest pat zif pis word be herd pe farisees ben schaūderid: And he answeride & seide/ euy plaūtyng pat my fadir of heuē/ hath not plaūtid: schall be drawen vp bi pe roote/ sufferē ze hē: pei ben blynde · & lederis of blynde me/ & zif a blynde man lede a blynd man: bope fallen doū i to pe diche/ petir answerde: & seide to hī/ expowne to us pis parable/ And he seide/ zit ze ben also wip outen vndirstondyng:/ vndirstondē ze not pat al ping pat entrip i to pe moup: goip in to pe wombe · & is sent out i to pe goyng a wey/ but po pingis pat comē forp fro pe mouy: goon out of pe herte · & po pingis defoulē a man/ for of pe herte goō out euel pouztis · mālesleyngis · aduoutries · fornicacionis · pefte-fals witnessyngis · blasfemyes/ pees pingis it ben: pat defoulē a mā/ but to ete wip houdis not waschen: defoulip not a mā/

¶ And ihc zede out fro pēnes: and wente i to pe coostis of tire & of sidon/ And lo a wōman of canane zede out of pe coostis: & criede & seide to hī/ lord pe sone of dauy: haue merci on me/ my douzt is yuel trauelid of a feend/ And he answeride not to hir a word/ & his disciplis camē: & preiede hī and seide/ leese pou hir: for she criep aft' us/ he answeride: & seide/ I am not sent but to pe scheep of pe hous of isrl: pat perischedē/ And she cam & worschipide hī & seide/ lord help me/ Which answeride & seide/ it is not good to take pe breed of childrē: & caste to houndis/ And she seide/ zhis lord/ for whi eten of pe crūmes: pat fallen doū fro pe bord of her lordis/ pane ihc answeride: & seide to hir/ O wōman: pi feip is grete/ be it dou to pee: as pou wolt & hir douzt' was helid fro pat our ¶ & whane ihc hadde passid fro pēnes: he cam besides pe see of galilee/ and he zede up i to an hil: & sat pere/ & mychel puple cam to hym: & hadde wip hē doūbe men · & crokid · feble & blynde · & many opir: & pei castidē doū hem at his feet/ and he heelide hem/ so pat pe puple wondridē · seynge doū be mē spekyng · & crokid goynge blynde mē seynge · & pei magnifiēdē god of israel/ And ihū whane his disciplis weren clepid to gidir · seide to hē/ I haue reupe of pe puple · for pei han abidē now pre dayes wip me & han no ping to ete/ and I wille not leese hem fastyng: lest pei faylen i pe weie/ And pe disciplis seyden to hī/ wher

of ỹ̃ne to many loaues among
ne i desert to fulfille to gyet a pu
ple/ and ihc̃ seide to hem/ how ma
ny loues han ze:/ and pei seiden
seuen: & a fewe smale fisshis/ &
he comaũdide to pe puple to sit
te to mete on pe erpe/ and he toke
seuen loues & fyue fisshis · & di
de pankynges & brak & zaf to hi
disciplis/ & pe disciplis zamẽ to pe
puple/ & alle eten & weren fulfillid
and pei token pat pat was leeft
of relifs: seuene lepis fulle/ and
pei pat eten · weren foure pou
and of men: wip outẽ litil chil
dren & wymẽ/ and whanne he ha
dde left pe puple: he wente up i
to a boot · and cam in to pe coo
tis of magedan/

And pe farisees & pe sadu
cees camẽ to hi tepting
& piden hi to schewe hẽ
a tokene fro heuene/ and he and
wende & seide to hem/ whanne ve
enẽde is comen ze seyen: it schal
be cleer/ for heuene is redy/ and
pe marewhide: to daye tempest
for heuene schynep heuenli/ pan
ne ze cunne demne pe face of heue
ne: but ze moũ not write pe toke
nes of tymes/ an pnel generacioũ
& auontrese seekip a tokene/ & a
tokene schal not be zoũ to it:
but pe tokene of ionas pe pro
fete/ and whanne he hadde left
hem: he wente forp/ ¶ And whã
ne his disciplis camẽ on pe see:
pei forzaten to take loues/ and he
seide to hẽ/ biholde ze & be waw ·
of pe sourdouz of farisees and
sadducees & pei pouzte among
hẽ: & seidẽ/ for we han not take
loues · but ihc̃ witing: seide to
hẽ/ what penke ze among zou of
litil feip: for ze han not loues:
zit vndirstonde not ze nep̃ han
myndi of fyue loues i to fyue
pousande of mẽ: & hou many cof
fyns ze token/ nep̃ of seuẽ loues
i to foure pousand of mẽ: & hou
many lepis ze token/ whi vndir
stonde ze not · for p seide not to
zou of breed: be ze ware of pe
sourdouz of farisees & sadducees:
panne pei vndirstodẽ · pat he sei
de not to be waar of sourdouz
of loues: but of ye techyng of fa
risees · & sadducees ¶ And ihc̃ cã
i to pe parties of cesarie of filip:
& axide his disciplis & seide/ whõ
seyn men̄ to be mannis sone: & pei
seidẽ/ sũme ioon baptist · op̃ elye:
& op̃ ieremye · or oon of pe propis
tis/ ihc̃ seide to hẽ/ but whõ seie
ze me to be:/ symoñ petir ans
werde & seide/ pou art crist pe so
ne of god lyuynge/ ihc̃ answerde:
& seide to hi/ blisful art pou sy
moñ bariona: for flesch and
blood schewede not to pee · but

my fadir pat is i heuenes/ and y
seie to pee: pat þ" art petre: & on
pis stoon y schal bilde my chirche/
and pe 3atis of helle schulen not
haue mygt a3enus it/ And to pee y
schal 3eue pe keyes of pe kyngdom
of heuenes/ & what euer þ" schalt
bynde on erpe: schal be bounden
also i heuenes/ and what euer þ"
schalt vnbynde on erpe: schal be
vnbounde also i heuenes/ panne
he comaundide to his disciplis·
pat pei schulden seie to no man·
pt he was crist/ fro pat tyme
ihc bigan to schewe to his dis-
ciplis: pat it bihofte hi go to ierlm·
& suffere many pingis: of pe eld
eue men & of scribis & princis of
prestis·& be slayne·& pe pridde
daye to rise a3en/ and petir to
ok hym: & bigan to blame hi & seide
fer be it fro pe lord: pis ping schal
not be to pe/ and he turnede
& seide to petir/ satanas go af
ter me/ þ" art a sclaundre to me·
for þ" canest not po pingis pat
ben of god: but po pingis pt ben
of men/ panne ihc seide to his dis
ciplis/ 3if ony man wole come af
tir me: denye he hi self·& take
his croos & sue me/ for he pat
wole make his lyf saaf· schal le
se it/ And he pat schal lese his
lyf for me: schal fynde it/ for
what profitip it to a man· if he
wynne al pe world·& suffere peryng
of his soule: or what chaungyng
schal a man 3yue for his soule: for
man3 sone schal comme i glorie of
his fadir wip his angelis·& panne
he schal 3elde to euery man after his
werkis/ treuly y seie to 30u þ ben
sum me of hem pat stonden here: which
schulen not taste deep· til pei seen
mannes sone comyng i his kyngdom
And after lyue dayes ihc
took pet & iames & ioon
his brop: & ledde hem
aloone i to an hiz hil·& was turned
i to an op" liknes bifor hem/ and
his face schone as pe sunne·& his
clopis weren maad white as snow
we/ & lo moyses & elye appereden
to hem: & spaken wip hi/ And pet
answerde & seide to ihu/ lord it
is good· us to be here/ if þ" wolt·
make we here pre tabernaclis·
to pee oon· to moyses oon·& oon
to elye/ 3it pe while he spak: lo
a brigt cloude· ouerschadewid
hem/ and lo a voice out of pe clonde
pat seide/ pis is my derworpe son
ne· i whom y haue wel plesid to
me: here 3e hi/ And pe disciplis her
den & felden doun on her faces·&
dreden gretli/ And ihc cam and
touchid hem: & seide to hem· ryse
up: & nile 3e drede/ And pei lifte
up her izen & sayen no man but
ihu alone/ And as pei comen doun

C·xvij

of pe hille: ihc comaũdide to hem
& seide/ seie ze to no mã pe vicoñ:
til mãn3 sone rise azen fro deep
¶ And his disciplis azẽ3 hym:
& seidẽ/ what pãne seien pe scri
bis· pat it bihoued pat elye com
e first/ he answeride: & seide to
hem/ elye schal come: & he schal
restore alle þingis/ and þ seie to
zou· pat elye is now comen· & pei
knewẽ hi not: but pei diden in hi
what eu þingis pei wolden/ and
so mãnes sone schal suffere of
hẽ/ pãne pe disciplis vndirstoden·
pat he seide to hẽ of ioon pe ba
ptist ¶ And whanne he cam to pe
puple: a mã cam to hym and fel
doñ on knees bifor hi & seide/ lord
haue mercy on my sone· for he is
lunatyke· & suffrip yuel· for ofte
tymes he fallip in to pe fier: & oft
e tymes in to watir/ and I brou3t
te hi to pi disciplis: & pei myzten
not heele hym/ ihc answerde: &
seide/ a þ' generacoñ vnbileueful
& weiward: hou long schal I be
fore zou: brynge ze hi hidir to me/
and ihc blamed hi: & pe deuel wen
te out fro hi/ & pe child was
heelid fro pat our ¶ pãne pe dis
ciplis camẽ to ihñ preuely: & seidẽ
to hi/ whi myzten not we caste hi
out: ihc seip to hem/ for 3oure
vnbileue/ treuly I seie to zou· if
ze han feip· as a corne of seneu
eye: ze schulẽ seie to pis hil· passe
hennes & it schal passe· & no
þing schal be vnpossible to zou/
but pis kynde is not cast out:
but bi fy3ing & fastyng/ and whi
les pei weren abidyng to gidir i
galile: ihc seide to hẽ/ mãn3 sone
schal be bitrayed i to pe hondis of
mẽ & pei schulẽ sle hym: and pe
pridde dai he schal rise azen to
lyf/ and pei weren full sori/ and
whanne pei camẽ to cafarnaũ:
pei pat token tribute camen to
petre· & seidẽ to hi/ 3oure maist
er payep not tribute/ And he seide
3hi· & whanne he was comẽ in to
pe hous: ihc preuede cam bifor hym
& seide/ symoñ: what semep to pe:
kyngis of erpe of whom take pei
tribute: of her sonys or of aliens:
and he seide/ of aliens/ ihc seide
to hym/ pãne sonys be free/ but pt
we schandre hem not: go to pe see
& caste an hook· & take pilke fisch
pat first comep up/ & whanne his
moup is opened þ' schalt fynde a
stater & 3yue for pee and for me
¶ pat our· pe disciplis camen
to ihñ· & seidẽ/ who gessist pou
is gretter i pe kyngdome of he
uenes: & ihc clepide a litil child:
& putte hym i pe myddil of hem/
& seide/ þ seie treupe to zou· but
ze be turned· & maad as litil chil
dren: ze schulẽ not entre in to pe

C. xviij.

kyndom of heuenes / þfor who
eu̇ meknip hi as þis litil child: he
is gretter i þe kyngdome of heue
nes / and he þat resseyuep o lidie
litil childe i my name: resseyu
ep me / but who so slaũderip oo
of þes smale þat bileuẽ i me:
it spedip to hi: þat a mylsto
on of assis be hanged vi his
necke· & he be drenchid i þe dep
nesse of þe see. Wo to þe world
for slaũdris / for it is nede: þt
slaũdres come / nepeles wo
to þe ilke mã: bi whõ a slaũd
re comep / and if þin hond or
þi foot slaũdrip þee: kitte it
of & caste awei fro þee / it is be
tt̃ to þee to entre to lif· feble
e̊ or hold: þãne hauyng tweyn
e houdis· or tweye feet to be
sente i to eu̇ lastyng fier / and
if þin ize slaũdre þee: pulle
it out· & caste awei fro þee /
it is bett̃e to þee with oon ize to
entre i to lif: þãne hauyng
tweyne izen to be sent i to þe fi
er of helle / se ze þat ze despise
not oon of þes litle / for I sei
to zou· þat þe aũgels of hem i
heuenes: seen euermore þe face
of my fadir þat is i heuenes /
for mañ̃ schal come to save þat
þing þat perischide / what se
mep to zou· if þer were to hũ
nian an hundrid scheep· & oon
of hem hap erred: whether he lef
al not lene· nynet̃y & nyne i dese
rt· & schal go to seche þat þat er
rede: and if it falle þat he finde
it: treuli I sei to zou· þat he sal
haue more ioie þ̃ on more þan on
nynety & nyne þat erredẽ not
so it is not þe wille bifor zoure
fadir þat is i heuenes: þat oon
of þese litil perische. But if þ
brop̃ sinep azeñ þee· go pou &
reprone hi· bitwixe þee & hym
aloone / if he herip þee: pou hast
wõnen þi brop̃ / and if he herip
þee not: take wip þee oon or twe
yne· þt euery word stonde i þe mo
up of tweyne or þre witnessis /
and if he herip not hem· sei þ̃
to þe chirche / but if he here not
þe chirche: be he as an hepẽ & a
pupplicã to þee / I sei to zou treu
ly· what eu̇ þing ze bynden on
erþe: þo schulẽ be bounde also i
heuẽ / and what eu̇ þing ze vn
bynde ou erþe: þo schulẽ be vn
bouchi also i heuẽ / eft soone I
sei to zou: þat if tweyne of zou
cõsentẽ ou þe erþe: of eu̇y þing
what eu̇ þei aspen· it schal be dõ
to hem· of my fadir þat is i he
uenes / for wher tweyne or þre
ben gederid i my name: þer I
am i þe myddil of hẽ / þãne þe
nir cam to hi & seide / lord how
ofte schal my brop̃ sinne azeñ

me: & y shal forzyue to hym: wh
eper til seuene tymes: yē seyȝ
to yī/ y seye not to pee til seuen
sipis: but til seuenty sipis seu
enesipis/ y for pe kyngdō of
heuenes is lickned to a kyng.
pat wolde reken wip his servā
tis/ and whān he bigan to re
kene: oon pat ouzte ten pousā
nd talentis· was brouzt to yī/
and whān he hadde not wher
of to zelde· his lord comandide yī
to be seld: & his wyf & children·
& alle pingis pat he hadde· & to be
paied/ but pilk seruant felle doun:
& prede yī & seide/ haue pacience
in me: & y shal zelde to pee alle pi
ngis/ and pe lord hadde mercy on
pat seruant: & suffride him go
& forzaf to yī pe dette/ but pilke
seruant zede out & foonde oon
of his euē seruantis· pat ouzte
yī an hundrep pens/ and he held
him· & strangled yī & seide/ zel
de pat pat pou owest/ and his euē
seruant felle doun: & prede yī &
seide/ haue pacience in me: & y
shal quyte alle pingis to pee/
but he wolde not: but wente
out & pitte yī to prisoun til he pa
ide al pe dette/ and his euē ser
uantis seyuge pe pingis· pat
were don: sorewēde gretly/ and
yei camen & teldē to her lord: al
le pe pingis pat were don/ pan

his lord clepide hym: & seide to yī/
wicked seruant: y forzaf to pee al
pe dette· for pou pydest me/ for wher
it bihoued not also pee· to haue
mercy on pin euē seruant· as y had
de mercy on pee:/ and his lord was
wrop· & took yī to turmentours·
til he paiede al pe dette/ so my fadir
of heuen shal do to zou: if ze for
zyuen not euery man to his bro
per of zoure hertis

And it was don whān ihc
hadde endid pese wordis:
he passide fro galile &
cam in to pe coostis of inde ouer ior
dan/ and myche puple suede hym:
& he heelid hē pe/ and fariseis ca
men to yī: tēptyng hym & seide/
wher it leueful to a mā to leue
his wyf for ony cause:/ whiche
answeride & seide to hem/ han
not ze redd for he pat made mē
at pe bigynnyng: made hē male
& female:/ & he seide/ for pis yng
a mā shal leue fadir & modir· &
he shal drawe to his wyf: and
pei shulē be tweyne in o flesch/ &
so pei bē not now tweyne: but
o flesche/ p for a mā departip not
pat pyng pt god hap ioyned/ pei
seiden to yī/ what pānne comandide
dide moyses· to zyue a libel of
forsaking: & to leue of/ and he
seide to hē/ for moyses· for pe
hardnesse of zoure herte· suffride

Cap. xix.

zon lese zoure wynes/ but fro pe
begynnyng· it was not so/ & I seie
to zou· pat who euer leuep his wyf
but for fornycacioũ· & weddip an
op: doip lecherie/ and he pat wed
dip pe forsakũ wyf: doip lecherie
his disciplis seien to hĩ if pe cause
of a mã wip a wyf is so: it spedip
not to be weddid/ & he seide to
hẽ/ not alle mẽ take pis word: but
to whiche ẽ is zouñ/ for þ ben geldĩgis:
which ben þ borñ of pe modris
wombe/ & þ ben geldynge: pat ben
maad of mẽ/ & þ ben geldynge: þt
han geldit hem self for pe kingdõ
of heuenes/ he pat may take: ta
ke he ¶ pane litil childrẽ weren
brouzt to hĩ: þt he schulde putte
hondis to hẽ & pie/ and pe disciplis
blamedẽ hẽ/ but ihc seide to hem/
suffere ze þt littil childrẽ come
to me: & nyle ze forbede hẽ/ for of
suche is pe kyngdome of heuen
es/ & whane he hadde put to hẽ
hondis/ he went fro pẽu? ¶ And
loo oon cam & seide to hĩ/ good m
ayst. what good schal I do: pat I
haue eñ lastyng lyf/ Whiche se
id to hĩ/ what axist þ me of good
þing: þ is oo good god/ but if þ
wilt entre to lyf: kepe pe comu
ñdemẽtis/ he seip to hĩ/ which/
ihc seide/ pou schalt not do man
slepng· þ schalt not do auoutre·
pou schalt not do pefte· þ schalt
not seie fals witnessyng/ worschipe
pi fadir & pi modir: & pou schalt lo
ue pi neizbore as pi self/ pe zonge
mã seip to hĩ/ I haue kept alle pe
se þingis fro my zoupe/ what zit
faili to me/ ihc seip to hĩ/ if pou
wolt be perfyte: go & selle alle þi
ngis pat pou hast· & zine to pore
mẽ· & þ schalt haue tresoure in
heuẽ· & come & sue me/ And whã
ne pe zonge mã hadde herd pees
wordes: he went awey sori
ful: for he hadde many possessio
ñs/ and ihc seide to his disciplis/ I
seie to zou treupe· for a riche mã
of hard schal entre ito pe kingdõ
of heuenes/ and eft soone I seie
to zou it is list a camel to passe
poron a needlis ize: pane a riche
mã to entre ip to pe kingdome
of heuenes/ whane pese þingis
weren herd: pe disciplis wondri
den gretely· & seidẽ/ who panne
may be saaf/ ihc bihelde & seide to
hem/ anentis mẽ pis þing is im
possible: but anentis god· alle
þingis ben possible ¶ pane pe
tir answerde & seide to hĩ/ lo we
han forsake alle þing: & we hã
sued pee/ what pane schal be to
us? ihc seide to hẽ/ treuly I se
ie to zou· pat ze pat han forsake
alle þingis & han sued me: in
regeneracioñ whane mañ of sone
schal sitte in pe sete of his maieste·

ze schulẽ

ze shulen sitte on twelue setis de
nuyng pe twelue kynredis of
israel/ and euy man pat forsakup
hous briþen or sistren fadir
or modir wyf eþ childre or fel
dis for my name he shal take
an hundrid fold & shal welde euer
lastyng lyf/ but many shulē be
pe firste: pe laste/ & pe laste: pe firste

The kyngdoune of heue
nes is lyk to an hous
bondeman: þt wente out
first bi pe morwe to hire werk
men into his vynezerde/ And wha
ne pe wonen anit was maad wiþ
werkmē of a peny for pe daye:
he sente hem into his vynezerde
& hezede out aboute pe pridde
our: & sawe opir stondyng idil
ipe cheping & he seide to hem/
goo ze also into my vynezerd: & þt
pat shal be rigtful y shal zyue
to zou/ And pei wente forp/ eft goo
nes he wente out aboute pe sixte
our & pe nyne: & dide liyk
man/ but aboute pe elleuenep
our he wente out & foond opir
stondyng: & he seide to hem/
what stonde ze idil heue al day:
pei seien to hi/ for no man hap hi
red us/ he seip to hē/ goo ze also
into my vynezerd/ and what-euer
euenyng was comē: pe lord of
pe vynezerd seip to his procura
tour/ clepe pe werkmē: & zelde
to hem hire hyre & bigynne forp at
pe laste til to pe firste/ And so wha
ne pei weren comē pat camē about
pe enleuenep our: also pei token
euych of hē a peny/ but pe firste
comē & demedē pat pei shulden
take more/ but pei token echo on
bi hem self a peny/ And i pe takyng
grutchidē azen pe housebonde m
an: & seidē/ pese laste wrouzten oon
our: & pou hast maad hē euē to
us pt han born pe charge of pe
day & heete:/ And he answeride to
oon of hē & seide/ freend y doo pee
no wrong/ wher pou hast not acor
did wip me for a peny/ take pou
pat pat is pin & go/ for y wole zyue
to pis laste man: as to pee/ wher
it is not leeful to me to do pat
pt y wille: wher pin ize is wicked:
for y am good: so pe laste shulen
be: pe firste/ And pe firste: pe laste/
for many bē clepid: but fewe bē
chosē/ & ihc wente up to ierusalē:
& toke his twelue disciplis i pryue
te & seide to hē/ lo we gon up to
ierusalē: & man? sone shal be
bitakid to princis of prestis & scribis
& pei shulē condēpne hi to deep/ &
pei shulē bitake hi to hepē men:
for to be scorned & scourged and
crucified/ And pe pridde day he
shal ryse azen to lyf ¶ pan pe
modir of pe sonys of zebedee: cā
to hym with hir sones · onourig.

And axing hi ping of hi And
he seide to hir what wilt pou:
she seip to hi / sere pat pese tiwe
pine tuy sones sitte: oon at pi
rizthalf · e oon at pi lefthalf
i pe kingdoune ihc answerde
e seide ze wite not what ze ax
en / moti ze dryuke pe cuppe:
whiche y shal dryuke: pei seid
to hi / we moti we seip to he / ze
shulē dryuke tuy cuppe: but to
sitte at tuy rizthalf or lefthalf
it is not tuyn to ziue to zou · but
to whiche it is maad redy of
tuy fadir / and pe ten herying:
haddē indignacioti of pe twey
briben / but ihc clepide he to hi
e seide ze wite pat princis of he
pen men: ben lordis of he and
pei pat ben gretter: vsen pouw
er on hem it shal not be so a
mong zou / but who eu whole be
maad gretter among zou: be
he zour mynistre / and who eu
among zou whole be pe furste: he
shal be zoure seruant as ma
tuy sone cam not to be serued:
but to serue / e to ziue his lif.
redempcioti for manyp / e whan
ne pei zeden out of ierico: tuy
che puple triede hi / and lo twey
blynde me sitte bisidis pe wie
pe · e herde pat ihc passide · e
pei criedeu e seiden / lord pe so
ne of dauip: haue mercy on us /
and pe puple blamede he: pt pei
shulden be stille / and pei criedē
pe more · e seidē / lord pe sone of
dauip: haue mercy on us / e ihc stu
od e clepide he e seide / what wo
len ze pat y do to zou: pei seien
to hi / lord pat oure izen be ope
ned e ihc hadde mercy on hem
and touchide her izen / and anō
on pei sayen: e suweden hym
ud whanne ihc cam tuyz
to ierlim · e cam to beth
fage at pe mount of
olyuete: pane sente he his twey
disciplis · e seide to he / goze i to
pe castel pat is azeny zou: and
anoon ze shulē fynde an asse
tied · e a colt with hi / vntyeu ze:
e bryngē to me / and if ouy mā
seie to zou ouy thing: seie ze pat
pe lord hap nede to he e anoon
he shal leeue he / al pis was
doon · pat pt thing shulde be
fulfillid pat was seid bi pe pro
fete · seiyng / seie ze to pe douzter
of syon · lo pi king comep to pee
meke sittyng on an asse and a
fole of an asse vndir zok / and
pe disciplis zeden e diden as ihc co
maundide hem / and pei broustē
an asse e pe fole · e leidē her clo
pes on hem: e madē hi sitte a
boue / e ful many pe puple: strewe
den her clopis i pe weie / opir
kittedē braūchis of trees: e

strelbeden i pe were/ and pe pup
le pat wente vifor · & pat suede:
crydē & seidē · osanna to pe sone
of dauip/ blessid is he pat com
ep i pe name of pe lord: osanna
i hix puplis ¶ and whanne he
was entrid i to ierlim: al pe
cite was stirid & seide/ who is
pis: but pe puple seide/ pis is
ihc pe pfete of nazareth of ga
lile/ and ihc entride i to pe tep̄le
of god: & castide out of pe tep̄
le alle pat vouxtē & soldē/ & he
turned vpsodoū pe bordis of
chaungeris · & pe chayris of mē
pat soldē culueris/ and he se
ip to hem/ it is writū/ my ho
us schal be clepid an hous of
pier: but ze han maad it a dē
ne of penes/ & blynde & crokid
camē to hi i pe tēple: & he hee
lide hē/ but pe princis of prestis &
scribis · seyng pe mervelous pingis
pat he dide · & childrē crying i
pe tēple · & seying osanna to pe
sone of dauip: hadde indignacoū
& seiden to hym/ herist pu what
pese seiē/ and ihc seide to hem/
zhe/ whi ze han neu redde pt
of pe mouy of zonge childrē &
of soukyng childrē/ pou hast
maad parfyte heripng/ and
whanne he hadde left hem: he
wente forp out of pe cite in to
betanye/ and per he dwelte: &

tanzte hē of pe kyngdom of god
¶ but on pe morewe · he turn
yng azen i to pe cite: hungride/
& he sawe a fyge tree bisidis pe we
re: & cam to it/ and foond no py
ng per inne: but leeues oonly/
and he seide to it/ nem̄ fruyt of
me forp of pee: i to wip outen
ende/ and anoon pe fyge tre
was dryed up/ & discyplis seyn &
wondride seiyng how anoon
it dried/ and ihc answerde &
seide to hem/ treuly y seie to zou ·
if ze haue feip: & doutē not · not
oonli ze schulē do of pe fyge
tre/ but also if ze seien to pis
hil · take & caste pee i to pe see:
it schal be don so/ & alle pingis
what euer ze bileuyng · schulen
axe i pier: ze schulē take ¶ and
whanne he cam i to pe tēple: pe
princis of prestis · & eldre mē of
pe puple · camē to hym pat ta
nzte & seidē/ in what power dost
pou pese pingis: & who zaf pee
pis power · ihc answerde and
seide to hē/ and y schal axe zou
o word pe which if ze tellen
me · y schal seie to zou i what
power y do pese pingis/ of wh
ēuy was pe baptym of ioon:
of heuene or of mē: & pei pouz
ten with inne hē silf seiyng ·
zif we seien of heuē: he schal
seie to us/ whi pan bileue ze

not to hi: if we seien of me: we
dredē pe puple for alle hadden
woon as apphiete/ and pei anssw
erdē to ihū & seidē/ we witē not
& he seide to hē/ nei þ seiē to zou:
i wlhat power þ do pese þingis
¶ but what seuey zou:/ and
hadde hwey soun̄-& he cam to pe
firste & seide/ sone go worche pis
day i my vyneyerd/ and he answ
erde & seide þ nyle/ but aftirward
he forpouȝte & went forp/ but he
cam to pe toþ̄: & seide on lyk ma
ner/ and he answerde: & seide
lord þ go/ & he went not/ who of
pe tweyne dide pe fadris wille:/
pei seien to hī/ pe firste/ ihc̄ seip
to hē/ treuly þ seiē to zou· for pup
plicans & hoores: schulē go bifor
zou i pe kingdome of god/ for io
hn cam to zou i pe weye of riȝt
wisnes: & ze bileuedē not to hī/
but pupplicans & hoores· bileue
dē to hī/ but ze sayen and haddē
no forpenking aft̄· pat ze bile
uedē to hym ¶ here ze an oper
parable/ þ was an holebonde
mā: pat plaūtid a vniezerd· and
hegged it about· & dalfe a prec
sour þ inne· & bildide a tour/ and
hyride it to erptilieris: & wēte
fer i pilgrimage/ but whanne pe
tyme of fruytis neȝede: he se
ute his seruaūtis to pe erptil-
eris· to take fruytis of it/ and
pe erptilieris token his seruaūtis:/
& beeten pe toon· pei slowē an opr·
& pei stoneden an opr̄/ eft sone
he sente opr̄ ser-uaūtis mo pānе
pe firste: & i lyk maner pei didē
to hē/ and at pe laste he sente his
sone to hem: & seide/ pei schulen
drede my sone/ but pe erptilieris
seyng pe sone: seidē wip inne hem
selfe/ pis is pe eyr/ come ze sle we
hī: & we schulē have his eritage/
& pei token & castidē hī out of pe vy
neyerde: & slowē hī/ þfor whanne pe
lord of pe vineyerd schal come: wh
hat schal he do to vilk erptilieris:
pei seien to hī/ he schal leese yuel
pe yuel men: & he schal sette to hyr
pe his vineyerd to op erpetilieris·
which schulē ȝelde to hī fruyt in
her tymes/ ihc̄ seip to hem/ redde
ze nei i scriptures· pe stoon wh
che bilderis reprouedē: pis is ma
ad i to pe heed of pe corner: of pe
lord pis þing is don: & it is mine
ioye bifor oure yen/ þfor y seiē
to zou pat pe kyngdome of god
schal be takū fro zou: & schal be
zouē to a folc· doyng fruytis of
it/ and he pat schal falle on pis
stoon: schal be brokū/ but on
whom it schal falle: it schal al to
brysle hym/ & whanne pe þuis of
þtis & fariseis hadde herd his
parablis: pei knewē pat he seide
of hē/ & pei souȝtē to holde hym:

but pei dredden pe pnple· for
pei hadden hym as a prophete
Ihc and ihc answerde and
spac eft soone ī parA
blis to hem & seide/ pe
kingdoune of heuenes is maad
lyk to a king pat maad wedd y
ngis to his sone/ and he sente
his seruaūtis to clepe men pat
weren bede to pe weddyngis:
& pei woldē not come/ eft soone
he sente op seruaūtis: & seide/
seie ze to pe mē pat bē bede to
pe feeste/ lo y haue maad redye
my meete my bolis & my vola
tils ben slayne· & alle pingis
ben redy: come ze to pe wedd y
ngis/ but pei despisiden & wēten
forp oon ī to his toū· anop to his
marchaūdise/ but op heldē his
seruaūtis· & turmentidē hem
& slowē/ but pe king whanne he
hadde herd: was wrop/ and he
sente his oostis: & he destruyde
de po mānquellers· & brente
her cite/ panne he seide to his
seruaūtis/ pe weddyngis ben
redy: but pei pat weren clepid
to pe feeste weren not worpi/
perfor go ze to pe endis of we
yes: & whom eue ze fyndē: cle
pe ze to pe weddyngis/ and his
seruaūtis zedē out ī pe to wey
es: & gadridē to gidir alle pat
pei foūden good & yuel/ and pe
bryddale was fulfillid wt mē
sittyng at pe mete/ and pe king
entride to se mē sittyng at pe me
te: & he sigh per amā not clopid wt
bridē clop/ and he seide to hym/
freende how entredist pu hidir:
whi hast bridē clopis/ & he was
doūbe/ pānne pe king bad his my
nistris/ bynde hym bope hondis
& feet: & sende ze hym ī to vtmer
derknessis/ pere shal be wepp
ing: & gryntyng of teep/ for ma
ny mē ben clepid but fewe ben
chosē/ panne farisees zeden awei
& token a cōnsel: to take ihū in
word/ and pei sendē to hī her disci
plis with erodians· & seien maist
re we witen pat pu art sopfast· & pu
techest ī treupe pe weie of god: &
pu chargist not of ony mā/ for
pou biholdest not pe persone of
mē/ perfore seye to us: what it se
mep to pee: is it leeful pat
tribute bezouē to pe emperour
e or nay: & pānne ihc hadde knowe
pe wickidnesse of hem: he seide/
ypocritis what tēptē ze me: sche
we ze to me pe print of pe money/
and pei brouzten to hī a peny/ &
ihc seide to hem/ whos is pis ym
age· & pe writyng aboue:/ pei
seien to hym pe emperoures/
pānne he seide to hē/ perfor zelde ze
to pe emperour: po pingis pat
bē pe emperoures & to god: po
pingis pat ben of good/ and pei
herdē & wondridē & pei leften hī:

whanne

And weute a were in yat dai
sadducei3 yat seien þ is no risy
ng azen to liyf · and to hym:
& axide hi & seide / maist3 moy
es seide / if ony man is deed not
hauyng a sone: yat his broper
wedde his wiyf · & rise seed to
his broper / And seuene bry3
en were at us / & þe firste wed
did a wiyf · & is deed / & he had
de no seed · & lefte his wiyf to
his broy3 / also þe secounde & þe
yridde til to þe seuenþe / but
þe laste of alle: þe woman is de
ed / also i þe risyng azen to liyf.
whos wiyf of þe seuene schal
schee be: for alle haddē hir / ihc
answerde & seide to hem / ze er
ren & ze knowe not scripturis
ne þe vertue of god / for in þe
risyng azen to liyf · nei3 þei sch
ulē wedde nei3 schulē be wedded:
but þei ben as þe aungelis of
god i heuen / And of þe risyng
azen of deed mē ze han not red·
yat is seid of þe lord · yat seiþ
to zou · y am god of abraham
& god of ysaac & god of iacob /
he is not god of deede men:
but of lyuyng mē / & þe puple he
rynge: wondride i his techyng /
& fariseis herdē yat he hadde
put silence to sadducees and
camen to gidir / And oon of hē
a techer of þe lawe axid ihū

And temptid hi / maist3 whiche
is a greet maundement in þe
lawe: ihc seide to hi / þ schalt
loue þi lord god of alle þin her
te · & in al þi soule · & in al þi mynde /
þis is þe firste & þe moste ma
undement / & þe secounde is lyk
to þis / þou schalt loue þi neiz
bore as þi silf / in þese twey in
aundemētis: hangiþ al þe lawe
& þe prophetis ¶ And whanne þe
fariseis were gederid to gidir:
ihc axide hem · & seide / what
semeþ to zou of crist: whos so
ne is he: þei seien to hi of da
uid / he seiþ to hem / hou þanne
dauid in spirit clepiþ hi lord &
seiþ: þe lord seide to my lord:
sitte on my rizthalf / til y putte
þin enmyes · a stool of þi feet /
þanne if dauid clepiþ hym lord:
hou is he his sone: And nouman
myzte answere a word to him:
neiþer ony man was hardy fro þt
dai · to axe him more ¶

Þanne ihc spac to þe puple:
& to his disciplis and seide /
on þe chayr of moyses: scri
bis & fariseis han sete / þfor
kepe ze & do ze alle þingis · what
euer þingis þei seien to zou: but
nyle ze do after her werkis / for
þei seien & do not / and þei byndē
greuous chargis & þat unēn
not be born & puttē on schuld

dris of men: but wip her fyn
ger pei wolè not moue heru/ pfor
pei don alle her werkis: pat pei
ben seen of mè/ for pei drawè
abrood her filateries: and ma
gnifien hēmes/ and pei louè
pe first sittyng placis i soperis·
& pe first chayres i synagogis:
& salutacioūs i chepyng· & to be
clepid of mē maist/ but nyle
ze be clepid maist/ for oon is zo
ure maist/ & alle ze ben bripē/
and nyle ze clepe to zou a fadir
on erpe/ for oon is zoure fadir
pat is i heuenes/ nep ze ne cle
pid maistris: for oon is zour
maist/ he pat is gretteste amo
ng zou: shal be zoure mynistre
for he pat hiep hi selfe: shal be
mekid/ and he pat mekip hi self:
shal be enhaūsid/ but wo to
zou scribis & farisees ipocritis:
pat closen pe kingdome of he
uenes bifore mē/ & ze entren not:
nep suffryn men entrynge to
entre/ wo to zou scribis & fari
sees ypocritis: pat eten pe hou
sis of widewis· & pfyen bi longe
preyer/ for pis ping ze shulen
take more dome/ wo to zou s
bis & farisees ypocritis pt gon
a boute pe see & pe lond: to ma
ke oon prosilite/ and whanne he is
maad: ze maken hi a sone of
helle· double more pan ze be/

whyo to zou blynde lederis pat
seien/ whoeuer swerip bi pe tèple
of god: it is no ping/ but he pat
swerip i pe gold of pe tèple: is det
toure/ ze foolis & blynde for what
is gretter: pe golde or pe tèple pat
halewip pe gold: & whoeu swerip
i pe auter· it is no ping/ but he pat
swerip i pe zifte: pat is on pe au
ter· oiwip/ blynde mē for what is
more pe zifte or pe auter pat hale
wip pe zifte: pfor he pat swerip
i pe aut: swerip in it· & i alle ping
is pat ben pon/ and he pat swer
it i pe tèple: swerip in it· & in hym
pat dwellip i pe tèple/ and he pat
swerip i heuene: swerip i pe tro
ne of god· & in hym pat sittip pon/
wo to zou scribis & farisees ypo
critis: pat tipen myute anete
& cūmyn· & han left po pingis
pat ben more charge of pe lawe·
dome & mercy & feip/ and it bihofte
to do pese pingis: & not to leeue
po/ blynde lederis clensyng a
gnatte· but swolewyng a camel/
wo to zou scribis & farisees ipo
critis· pat cleusen pe cuppe and
plater wip out forp: but wip ine
ze ben ful of rauenyne & vnclē
esse/ pou blynde farisee cleuse
pe cuppe & pe plater wip ine forp:
pat pat· pt is wip out forp· be in
made clene/ wo to zou scribis &
farisees ypocritis: pat bē lyk

to sepulcris whitid / which wip out
forp· semē faire to mē: but wip
ine pei ben ful of bones of ded
mē & of alle filpe / so ze wip out
forp· semē iust to mē: but wip
ine ze bē ful of ypocrisy & wicke
dnesse / wo to zou scribis & farise
es ypocritis: pat bildē sepulcris
of pfetis· & makē faire pe biri
els of iust mē· & seien / if we had
den be i pe daies of oure fadris:
we schuldē not haue be her felo
wes i pe blood of prophetis / & so
ze bē i witnessing to zou self: pt
ze ben pe sonȝ of hem pat slowē
pe pfetis / and fulfille ze pe me
sure of zoure fadris ze edderis
briddis: hou schulē ze fle fro pe
dome of helle: / for lo y sende to
zou· pfetis & wise men· & scribis /
and of hē ze schulē slē· & crucifi
e· & of hē ze schulē scourge in
zoure synagogis· & schulē piw
sue fro cite i to cite: pat alle pe
iust inē blood come on zou· pt
was schedde on pe erpe / fro pe
blood of iust abel· to pe blood of
Zacarie· pe sone of barachie·
whō ze slowē bitwixe pe tēple
& pe aut / trewly y seie to zou·
alle pese pingis schulē come ou
pis gen̄acoñ / ierlīū ierlīū pat
sleest pfetis· & stonest hem pat
bē sent to pee: hou ofte wolde
y gadere to gidir pi children· as

ædificis

an henne gaderip to gidir hir
chikenes· vndir hir wenges &
pou woldist not: lo zoure hous
schal be left to zou desert / And
y seie to zou· ze schulē not se me
fro henn̄ forp: til ze seien blet
sid is he / pt comep i pe name of pelord
Jesus / and iste wente out of pe
temple & his disciplis camē to hī: to schewe
hym pe bildyngis of pe temple /
but he answerde· & seide to hē
seen ze alle pese pingis: / trewly
y seie to zou / a stoon schal not
be left here on a stoon: pat ne
it schal be destroyed / and whā
he satte on pe hille of olyue
te: hise disciplis camē to hym
priuely· & seidē / seie us whanne
pes pingis schulē be: & what to
ken of pi comyng· & of pe endyng
of pe worlde / And iesus answerde
& seide to hē / loke ze pat nou man dis
seyne zou / for many schulē come
in my name & schulē seiē y am crist:
& pei schulē disseyue many / for
ze schulē heere batels: & opyn
ōns of batels / se ze pat ze be not
disturblid / for it bihoueth pese
pingis to be don: but not zit is
pe ende / folk schal rise to gidir
azenȝ folk· & reume azenȝ reu
me· & pestilencis & hungris & pe
erpe mouyngȝ schulē be bi places /
and alle peese: bē bigynnyngis

of seelues / þãne mẽ shulẽ bita
ke zou i to tribulacioñ· & shulẽ
sle zou: & ze shulẽ be i hate to al
le folke for my name / And þãne
many shulẽ be shandrid· And
bitraye eche op / & per shulẽ hate
eche op / & many false ꝓphetis sh
ulẽ rise: & disceyue many / And
for wickednesse shal be pleinte
nouse: pe charite of many shal
were colde / but he þat shal dw
elle stabil i to pe ende· shal be
saf / And þis gospel of pe kyng
dome shal be prechid i alle pe
world· i witnessing to alle folke:
& þãne pe eende shal come / Þ
for whãne ze se pe abhominaca
oñ of distomfort· þat is send of
daniel· pe ꝓfete· stondyng i pe
hooly place: he þat redip vndir
stonde he / þãne pei þat beu in
iudee: fle to mounteyns / & he þt
is i pe hous roof: come not doñ·
to take ony þing of his hous / &
he þat is i pe feld: turne not a
zen to take his cote / but who to
hem þat ben wip childe· And
woe shen i po daies / þye ze þat
zoure fleyng be not maad in
wynt· or i pe sabotli / for þãne
shal be grete tribulacioñ: wh
at man hap not be fro pe bigy
nyng of pe world to nowe· nep
shal be maade / And but po da
ies hadde be abreggide eche
fleisshe· shulde not be maad sa
f / but po daies shulẽ be maad
short for pe chosin mẽ / A þãne
if ony man seie to zou· lo here
is crist or pere: nyle ze bileue
for false cristis & false ꝓfetis· sh
ulẽ rise: & pei shulẽ zyue grete
tokenes and wondris / so þat al
so chosin be ledde i to errour:
if it maie be don / lo y haue bifor
seide to zou / þat if pei seie to zou·
lo he is i desert: nyle ze go out / lo
i þuey plaris: nyle ze troube / for
as leit goip out fro pe eest· & appe
rip i to pe west: so shal be also
pe comyng of mãn9 sone / where
euer pe bodie shal be: Also pe eggl
is shulẽ be gadrid pidir / And
anoon aftir· pe tribulacioñ of po
daies: pe sunne shal be maad derk:
& pe mone shal not zyue hir list·
& pe sterris shulẽ falle fro heuẽ·
& pe vertues of heuenes shulen
be moued / and þãne pe tokene
of mañ9 sone shal appere i heue
ne: & þãne alle kynredis of pe
er pe shulẽ weile / and pei shulẽ
se mañ9 sone comyng i pe cloudis
of heuene: with myche vertu &
maistie / and he shal sende his
aungelis with a trũpe & a grete
voice: & pei shulẽ gedir his
chosin· fro foure wyndis fro pe
hizest pũgris of heuenes to pe
endis of hem / and lernep pe

parable of a fyge tre/ wherfore
his braūche is now tendir· &
ye leeues ben sprongū: ye wit
tē pat sommer is nyz/ so & ye wh
ān̄e ye see alle pees pingis: wit
te ye pat it is nyz ī pe zatis
Treuli y seie to zou· for pis
generacioū shal not passe: til
alle pingis ben don̄/ heuene and
erpe shulē passe: but my wor
dis shulē not passe/ but of pilke
day & our: nouṁ wote· nep aūg
elis of heuenes: but pe fadir alo
one/ but as it was ī pe daies of
noe: so shal be pe comyng of
mān̄ sone/ for as ī pe daies be
for pe grete floode pei were etyn
g & drynkyng· weddyng and
takyng to weddyng to pat dai·
pat noe entrid ī to pe shipe· &
pei knewē not til pe grete flood
cam & took alle mē: so shal be
pe comyng of mān̄ sone/ pān
tweyne shulē be ī o feelde: oon
shal be takū & a nop left/ twey
wymmē shulē be grynd̄yng ī o
queerne: oon shal be takū & pe
top left/ tweyne ī a bedde: pe to
on shal be takū· & pe top left/
pfor wake ze· for ze wotē not ān̄
what our pe lord shal come/
but wite ze pis· pat if pe hosbo
nde man̄ wiste· ī what our pe
pefe were to come: certis he wo
lde wake· & suffere not his hous
to be vndermyned/ and pfor beze
redi: for ī what our ze gessē not·
mān̄ sone shal come Who
gessist pou is a trewe seruāt
& a prudent: whom his lord ord
eyned on his meyne to zyue hem
mete ī tyme: blessid is pt ser
uāt: whom his lord whanne he
shal come: shal fynde so doynge/
treuly y seie to zou· for on alle
his godis· he shal ordeyne hi/
but if pilk yuel seruāt seie ī
his herte· my lord tariep to co
me· & bigynnep to smyte his eme
seruāntis· & ete & drynke wip
dronkē men: pe lord of pat seru
āūt· shal come ī pe daie which
he hopip not & ī pe our pat he
knowep not· & shal departe hī:
& putte his part wip ipocritis/
where shal be wepīg· & gryntyng of tep
Wanne pe kyngdome of heue
nes shal be lyke to ten vir
gyns: which token her lāū
pis & weenten out azen pe ho
sebonde & pe wyf: & fyue of
hem were foolis: & fyue pru
dent/ but pe fyue foolis token
her lāūpis: & token not oyle wt
hem/ but pe prudent: token
oyle ī her vessels wip pe lāū
pis/ & whiles pe hosebonde tari
ede: alle pei nappidē & slepten/
but at mydnyzt· a cry was ma
d: lo pe spousē comep· go ze

out to meete wip hym/ pan̄e
alle yo virgyns risen vp: and
arayeden her lanpis/ And ye
foolis seidē to ye wise/ zyue ze
to us of zour oyle: for oure
lanpis bē quenchid/ ye pru
dent answerdē: & seidē/ lest
parauenture it suffice not
to us & to zou: go ze rap to m
en· pat sellē· & bye to zou/ and
while yei weenten for to bye:
ye spouse cam/ and yo yt we
rē redy: entridē wip hī to wed
dyngis/ & ye zate was shitte/
And at pe laste ye opir virgy
ngis camen & seidē/ lord lord: opy
ne to us/ & he answerde & seide
treuly y seie to zou: y knowe
not zou/ wherfor wakeze: for ze wi
ten not ye daie ne ye our/ for
as mych pat pilgrimage: clepi
de his seruantis & bitook to
hē his goodis/ And to oon he
zaf fyue talentis· to an oy
tweyne: & to an oy oon/ to eche
aft his owne vertu: & weente
forp anoon/ And he pat hadde
fyue besauntis weente forp &
wrouste ī hē: & wan oper fyue/
also & he pat hadde take twe
yne: wan oy tweyne/ but he
pat hadde takē oon· zede forp
& dalf i to pe erpe: & hidde pe
money of his lord/ but aftir
long tyme· pe lord of po seruā
tis cam: & rekened wip hem/
And he pat hadde takē fyue be
sauntis cam: & brouzte oy fyue
& seide/ lord pou bitokest to me
fyue besauntis: lo y haue getē
Aboue fyue oyir/ his lord seidē
to hī/ wel be pou good seruaūt
& feipful/ for on feipe pingis y
hast be treipe: y schal ordeyne
pee on many pingis/ entre yn
ī to ioie of yi lord/ And he pat
hadde takē twey talentis cam·
& seide/ lord pou bitokest to me
two besauntis: lo y haue wōnē
ēn oy tweyne/ his lord seide to
hym/ wel be pou good seruaūt
& treipe: for on feipe pingis yn
hast be treipe y schal ordeyne pee
on many pingis/ entre yn ī to
pe ioie of yi lord/ but he yt had
de takē o besauntē: cam & seide/
lord y wote· pat pou art an ha
rd man/ pou repest wher pou
hast not sowe: & pou gadrest
to gidre: wher pou hast not spre
dde a broode/ & y dredyng wē
te· & hidde yi besauntē i pe erpe/
lo pou hast pt pat is pin/ his
lord answerd & seide to hym/
yuel seruaūt & slowe· wistest
pou pat y repe wher y sewe not·
& gadere to gidir· wher y spred
de not a broode/ wherfor it bihofte
pee to bitake my money to cha
ngeris pt whanne y cam schulde

reſſeyue þat þat ys myn wiþ
vſmyꝛ / þfor take wiþeye fro hi
ye beſaũt: & zme ze to hi þt hap
ten beſkũtiꝛ / for to euy mã yt
hap me ſchal zme / and he ſchal
encreſe / but fro hi þat hap not
Alſo þat þat hym ſemep to ha
ue: ſchal be taki wiþeꝛe of hi /
And caſte ze out ye vnprofita
ble ſeruaũt: i to vtmer derk
neſſiꝛ / þ ſchal be wepyng: &
gryntyng of teep ¶ whãne
mãn9 ſone ſchal come i his
maieſte· & alle his aũgeliꝛ
wiþ hi: þãne he ſchal ſitte on
ye ſege of his maieſte / and al
le folkiꝛ ſchulẽ be gaderid bi
for hym: & he ſchal departe hẽ
atwỹne· as a ſchephird depar
tep ſcheep fro kidiꝛ / and he ſchal
ſette ye ſcheepe on his rizthalf:
& pe kiddiꝛ on pe lefthalf / pan
ne pe kyng ſchal ſeie to hẽ: þat
ſchulẽ be on his rizthalf / come
ze pe bliſſid of my fadir: take
ze i poſſeſſiõ ye kingdome
maad redy to zou fro pe mak
yng of pe world / for þ hũgri
de: & ze zauen me to ete / and
þ pirſtid: & ze zauen me to
drynke / þ was herboreleſ: &
ze herberden me / naki d: & ze
hilidẽ me / ſiyk: & ze viſitiden
me / þ was i þiſoñ: & ze camẽ
to me / þãne ſuſt ſuẽ ſchulen
anſwere to hi: & ſeie / lord whãne
ſizen we pee hũgri: & we fedde
pee: pirſty: & we zaue to pee
drynk: and whãne ſayen we pe
herboreleſ: & we herborden pee:
or naki d & we hilidẽ pee: or whã
ne ſayen we pee ſyk or i þiſoñ:
& ze camẽ to pee: and pe king
anſwering ſchal ſeie to hẽ treu
ly þ ſeie to zou· as longe as ze di
dẽ to oon of peſe my leſte briþẽ:
ze didẽ to me / þãne pe kyng ſchal
ſeie alſo to hẽ: þat ſchulẽ be on
his lefthalf / departe fro me· ze
curſid i to eũlaſtyng fier: þt is
maade redy to pe deuel & his aũ
geliꝛ / for þ hũgride: & ze zaue
not me to drynke ete / þ pirſtide:
& ze zaue not me to drynke / þ was
herboreleſ: & ze herberdẽ not me
naki d & ze keuerdẽ not me / ſyk
& i þiſoñ; & ze viſitidẽ not me /
þãne & þei ſchulẽ anſwere to hi:
& ſchulẽ ſeie / lord whãne ſayen
we pe hũgrynge· or pirſtynge·
or herboreleſ· or naki d· or ſyk
or i þiſoñ: & we ſeruedẽ not to pee.
þãne he ſchal anſwere to hẽ:
& ſeie treuly þ ſeie to zou· hon
longe ze didẽ not to oon of peſe
leſte: nei þ ze didẽ to me & peeſe
ſchulen go in to euerlaſtyng
turmeut / but pe iuſt men
ſchulen go in to euerlaſtyng
lyf

And it was don· whanne
ihc hadde endide alle
pese wordis: he seide
to his disciplis ze witen pat aft
twey daies: pask schal be m
ade: & mañ? sone schal be bitr
eyen to be crucified/ panne pe pu
ris of pstis· & pe elder me of
pe puple weren gaderid i to pe
halle of pe puce of pstis· pat
was seid cayphas: & maden
acounsel to holde ihū wip gile
& sle hym/ but pei seidē not in
pe halidai: lest per auēture no
yse wer? maad i pe puple/ And
whanne ihc was i betanye i pe
hous of symount pe leprous:
a wom̄an pat hadde a box of
alabastre of precious oynemēt
cam to hym & schedde out on
pe heede of hym restyng and
disciplis sepyng hadden dedeyn·
& seiden wher to pis loss: for it
myst be selde for myche· & be
zouī to poor me/ but ihc knewe:
& seide to hem/ what beze heuy
to pis wom̄an/ for sche hap wr
out i me a good werk/ for ze
schulē euere haue poor me wip
zou: but ze schulē not algatis
haue me/ pis wom̄an sendyng
pis oynemēt i to my bodie: di
de to bivie me/ treuly y seie to
zou wher? euere pis gospel schal be
prchid i al pe worlde/ it schal be

seide pat sche dide pis i mynde
of hi/ pānne oon of pe twelue: pt
was clepid iudas scharioth: we
te goen to pe princis of pstis & seide
to hem/ what wolē ze zyue to me:
& y schal bitake hi to zou: & pei
ordeyneden to hi fritty panis of
siluer/ And fro pat tyme he sou3t
opportunite to bitraye hi/ And i
pe firste dai of pe vnleuenid looues:
pe disciplis camen to ihū & seiden/
wher wolt pou we make redy
to pee: to ete pask/ ihc seide/ go
ze i to pe citee to sum̄an: & seie to
hi/ pe maist? seip/ my tyme is
nyz: at pe y make pask wip my
disciplis/ & pe disciplis diden as
ihc comaundide to hem· & pei made
pe pask redi/ And whanne euen
de was come: he satte to mete
wip his disciplis/ & he seide to hem twelue
as pei eten/ treuly y seie to zou:
pat oon of zou schal bitraye me/
And pei full sori bigunen eche bi
hi self to seie/ lord wher? y am:
& he answerd & seide/ he pat put
tip wip me his honde i pe plater:
schal bitraye me/ forsope man?
sone goip· as it is writun of hi/
but wo to pat man: bi whom man
sone schal be bitrayed/ it
were good to hi: if pat man
hadde not be born̄/ but iudas
pat bitrayed hi: answerde seyng/ maist? wher? y am: ihū

seide to hi/ pou hast seide ¶ And
while yei soupeden: ihc took br
eed & blessid & brak & 3af to his
disciplis: & seide take 3e & ete:
pis is my bodie And he toke pe
cuppe·& dide þankyng? & 3af
to hem·& seide dvynk 3e alle
her of/ pis is my blood of pe n
ewe testament: which schal
be schedde for many: i to remis
sioñ of synn? And y seie to 3ou
schal not drynke fro pis tym
e· of pis fruyt of pe vine· i to
pat daie· whanne y schal drink
it newe with 3ou· i pe kingdō
of my fadir/ And whanne pe
ymne was seide: yei wenten
out i to pe mount of olyuete/ pan
ne ihc seide to hem/ alle 3e schule
suffere sclaundir i me i pis nyzt
for it is writtun/ y schal smyte
pe scheepherd: & pe scheep of pe
floc schule be scatered/ but aft'
pat y schal rise azen: y schal go
bifor 3ou· i to galile/ petir an
swerde & seide to hi/ pouz alle
schule be sclaundrid i i pee: y
schal neuer be sclaundrid/ ihc seid
to hi/ treuli y seie to pee· for i
pis nyzt bifor pe cok crowe:
pries pou schalt denye me/ pe
tir seide to hi/ 3he pouz it bihoo
ue pat y die· with pee: y schal
not denye pee/ Also alle pe dis
ciplis seidē ¶ panne ihc cam wt
hem· i to a toun pat is seid gessem
ani· & he seide to his disciplis/
sitte 3e here: pe while y go pidir
& pie/ And whanne he hadde take
& two sones of sebede: he bigan
to be heuy & sori/ panne he seide
to hem/ my soule is sorouful: to
pe deep/ abide 3e here: & wake
3e with me/ & he 3ede forp a litil:
& felde doun on his face· preyng
& seiynge/ my fadir if it is pos
sible: passe pis cuppe fro me/
nepeles not as y wole: but as
pou wolt/ And he cam to his
disciplis: & foonde hem slepy
ng/ and he seide to petir so/
wher 3e myzten not oon our wa
ke with me/ wake 3e & pie 3e:
pat 3e entre not i to temptacioñ
for pe spirit is redi: but pe flesche
is sijk/ eft pe secounde tyme he
went & piede seiynge my fadir
if pis cuppe may not passe but
y drynke hi: pi will be doon/
And eft sone he came: & foonde
hem slepynge for her izen weren
heuyed/ & he left hem & went
eft sone· & piede pe pridde tyme
& seide pe same word/ panne he
cam to his disciplis: & seide to
hem/ slepe 3e nowe: & reste 3e/ lo
pe our hap neized· & mañ? sone
schal be takñ: i to pe houndis
of synneris/ rise 3e go we/ lo he
pat schal take me: is nyz/ zit

ye while he spak: lo iudas oon
of ye twelue cam · & wip him a
grete cūpany · wip swerdis & and
battis sent fro ye p̄uis of prie
tis · & fro ye eldre men of ye pu
ple / And he pat bitrayed him:
3af to hem a tokene · and seide
whom eu̇ y kisse: he it is holde
ze him / and anoon he cam to
ihū & seide / haile maist̄; and
he kisside him / and ihc seide to
him / freende wherto art pou
comū / pan̄e pei camen nyz · &
leiden hoondis on ihū: & heeldē
him / and lo oon of hem pat
weren wip ihū · streizt out his
honde · & drouz out his swerd
and he smote ye seruaūt of ye
p̄uē of prestis & kitte of his
ere / pan̄e ihc seide to him / tur
ne pi swerde ī to his place · for
alle pat taken swerde: schulē
perishe bi swerd / wher gessist
pou pat y may not p̄iē my fa
dir: and he schal 3iue to me
now · moo pan̄e twelue legio
ūs of aūgelis / how pan̄e sch
ulē ye scripturis be fulfillid:
for so it bihoueþ to be doon / ī
pat our ihc seide to ye puple /
as to a þeef 3e han̄ gon out:
wip swerdis and battis to ta
ke me / dai bi dai y sat amo
ng 3ou and taust in ye tēple
and 3e heldeu me not / but al
pis ping was don: pat ye scrip
turis of profetis schuldē be ful
fillid / pan̄e alle disciplis fleddē:
and leftē hi / and peiheldē ihū
& leddē hi to cayfface ye p̄uē
of prestis: wher ye scribis
& farisees & ye elder men of
ye puple weren comē to gidir
but petir siede him afer: ī to
ye halle of ye p̄uē of p̄stis /
and he went̄e in: & satte wip
ye seruaūtis to se ye eende /
And ye p̄uē of p̄stis & al ye coū
sel souȝten fals witnessyng aze
n̄ ihū: pat pei schuldē take hi
to deep / & pei foūdē not: whan̄e
many false witnessis weren
comen / but at ye laste · two fals
witnessis: cam̄e & seidē / pis
seide / y may destrupe ye tēple
of god: & aftir ye pridde dai
bilde it azen / And ye p̄uē of
p̄stis roos & seide to hi / Answe
rist pou no ping to po pingis
pat þese witnessen azen̄ þee:
but ihc was stille / And ye p̄uē
of p̄stis seide to him / y cōiu
re þee bi lyuyng god / pat pou
sei to us if pou art crist ye so
ne of god / ihc seide to hi / pou
hast seide / nepeles y seie to
3ou fro hennes forp ze schulen se
man̄ sone sittyng at ye rizt
hal of ye vertu of god: and
comyng ī ye cloudis of heue

ne / pañe ye ꝑnce of ꝑstis to ren
te his clopis: & seide / he hap bla
sfemede / what zit han we neede
to witnessis: lo now ze han her
de blasfemye / what semep to
zou: & pei answerdē & seidē / he
is gilti of deep / pañe pei spetē
i to his face: & smotē hym wip
buffetis / and opir zaue strokis
wip ye palmis of her hoondis
i his face · & seidē / pou crist arede
to us · who is he pat smoot pee:
And pei satte wip outē i pe halle
& a damysel cam to hi & seide /
pou were wip ihū of galile / &
he denyed bifor alle mē: & seide
y woot not what pou seist / &
whañe he zede out at pe zate:
a noper damysel sey hym · & seide
to hē pat werē pere / and pis was
wip ihū of nazareth / and eft
soone he denyede wip an ope · for
y knowe not pe mā / & alittil af
ter · pei pt stodē camē: & seidē to pet
treuly p̄ art of hē / for pi speche
makip pee knowun / pañe
he bigan to warie and to swe
re: pat he knewe not pe mā /
And a noon pe cok crewe / and
petir bipouzt on pe word of
ihū pat he hadde seide / bifor
pe cok crowe: pries pou schalt
denye me / and he zede out:
And wepte bittirly

Int whañe pe morowetyde
was come: alle pe princis
of ꝑstis & pe eldermen
of pe puple token counsele azens
ihū · pat pei schuldē take hi to pe
deep / and pei leddē hym bounde:
& bitokē to pilat of pontus misti
pañe iudas pat bitrayde hym ·
saye pat he was dampned: he vepē
tid & brouzt azen pe pritty panis
to pe princis of ꝑstis & to pe elder
mē of pe puple · & seide / y haue
synned bitrayinge viztful blood
And pei seidē / what to us / bise pe
& whañe he hadde caste forp pe
silu i pe tēple: he passide forp and
zede & hongide hi self wt a snare /
& pe princis of ꝑstis token pe silu:
& seide / it is not leeueful to put
te it i to pe tresorie: for it is pe
pris of blood / and whañe pei
haddē take counsel: pei bouzten
wip it a feelde of a potter · in to
birying of pilgrimes / herfor pilk
feelde is clepid acheldemak · pt is
a feeld of blood i to pis dai / pa
ne pat was fulfillid pat was sa
id bi pe profete ieremye seiyng /
and pei han taken pritti panis · pe
pris of a mā pt sid · whom pei pri
dē of pe childrē of israel · & pei za
uē hem i to a feld of a potter · as
pe lord hap ordeyned to me / And
ihc stoode bifor pe domesmā &
pe iustice axide hi & seide / Art pu

kng of ielvis: ihc seip to hi/ pon
seist/ and whanne he was accusid
of pe ꝑncis of ꝑstis and of pe eld
er men of pe puple/ he answerde
no ping/ panne pilat seip to him/
herist pou not hou many witnes
sing3 pei seien azen3 pee: and he
answerde not hi to ony word· so
pat pe iustice wondride gretly/
but for a solempne dai pe iustice
was wont· to delyne to pe pnple
oon boundn· whom pei woldē/ ꝛ
he hadde po a famous mā boundn
pat was seid barabas/ ꝑfor pilat
seide to hē· whanne pei were to gi
dir/ whō wilē ze pat y delyne to
zou: whper barabas or ihū pat
is seid crist: for he wiste: pat by en
vye pei bitrayden hi/ and while
he satt for domesmā: his wijf
sente to hi ꝛ seide/ no ping to pee:
ꝛ to pat iust man/ for y hane su
fferid pis dai· many pingis for
him bi a visiōn/ forsope pe ꝑnce
of ꝑstis ꝛ pe elder mē counseilden
pe puple· pat pei schuldē aske ba
rabas but pei schuldē distruye
ihū/ but pe iustice answerde ꝛ
seide to hem/ whō of pe tweyen
wolen ze pat be delyneriđ to zou:
and pei seidē/ barabas/ pilat se
ip to hem/ what panne schal y do
of ihū pat is seid crist/ alle sei
en be he crucified/ pe iustice seip
to hē/ what yuel hap he don: ꝛ
criedeu more ꝛ seideu/ be he cruci
fied/ ꝛ pilat seiug pat he ꝓfited
no ping· but pat pe more noyse
was maad· ꝛ tok watir ꝛ waischi
de his hoondis bifor pe pnple ꝛ
seide/ y am giltles of pe blood of
pis rijtful man/ vy se zou/ and
al pe puple answeride ꝛ seide/
his bloode be on us ꝛ on oure chil
dre/ panne he delyneride to hem
barabas but he tok to hē ihū
scourgid to be crucified/ panne
knyztis of pe iustice tokē ihū in pe
moot halle· ꝛ gadridē to him
al pe cumpany of knyztis/ ꝛ pei
vndoyedē hym ꝛ diden a bout e
hi a reed mātel/ and pei folde
a corowne of pornes ꝛ puttē on
his heed· and a reed in his rijt
hond/ and pei knueledē bifor hi:
ꝛ scornedē hi ꝛ seidē/ heyl king
of ielvis/ and pei spettē on hi·
ꝛ tokē a reed· ꝛ smot his hed/
ꝛ aft pat pei hadde scorned hi:
pei vndoyedē hi of pe mātil/ ꝛ
pei cloyidē hi with his cloyis·
ꝛ ledden hi to crucifien/ ꝛ as
pei zeden out: pei foundn a man
of siren cumyng fro pe toū·
symonī bi name/ pei coustre
yniedē hi to take his croos/ ꝛ
pei camē in to a place: pat is de
pid golgatha pat is pe place of
caluarie/ and pei zauē to hi to
drynke wyne meynd with galle/

And whãne he hadde tastid: he
wolde not drynke/ And aftir
pat pei haddẽ crucified hi: pei
departiden his clopis & keste
lotte/ to fulfille: pat is seide vi
ſete seiyng/ pei partide to hẽ
my clopis: & on my clop· pei ke
sten lott/ And pei setẽ & keptẽ
hi & setten a boue his hed his
cause writtẽ/ pis is ihũ of na
zareth: king of iewis/ pãne
tweyn penes weren crucified
wip hi· oon on pe rizthalf· &
oon on pe left half/ And men
pat passidẽ forp blaſfemedẽ
hi: mouyng her heedis And
seiyng/ vah to pee pat distriyest
pe temple of god: & ĩ pridde da
ie bildist it azen/ saue poli pi
self/ if pou art pe sone of god·
come doñ of pe croſſ/ Also And
princis of pis scornyng wip
scribis & elder mẽ: seidẽ/ he ma
de opir mẽ saaf: he may not ma
ke hi self saaf/ if he is king of
israel: come he nowe doñ fro
pe croſſ· & we bileuẽ to hi he
tristid ĩ god: delit̃ he hi nolde if
he wole/ for he seide: pat y am
goddis sone/ And pe peeues pt
weren crucified wip hym vp
braidedẽ hym of pe same ping/
but fro pe sixte our derknessis
weren maad on al pe erpe: to
pe nynep our/ & aboute pe nyn
nep our: ihc̃ criede wip a greet
voice & seide/ helyhely lamaſa
batany· pat is· my god· my god·
whi hast pou forsake me/ & ſ
sũme pat stodẽ peve & herynge:
seidẽ pis clepip helyh/ And anoon
oon of hẽ rennyng· took & fillid
a spoũge wip vynegre/ And
puttide on a reched· And zaf to
hi to drynke/ but opir seidẽ/
suffre pou· se we whper helyh co
me to delyñe hi/ forsope ihc̃ eft
soone criede wip a greet voice·
& zaf vp pe goost/ And lo pe veil
of pe tẽple was to reut ĩ twey
parties fro pe hyest to pe lowe
eft/ And pe erpe schoke & stones
werẽ clouen & birielis weren ope
ned· & many bodies of seyntis
pat haddẽ slepte: risen up/ And
pei zeden out of her birielis· &
aft his resurrectiõ· pei camẽ
ĩto pe hooli citee· & apperedẽ to
many/ And pe centuriẽ & pei pt
werẽ wip hi kepyng ihũ· whan
ne pei sayen pe erpe schakyng
& po pingis pat weren don· pei
dreddẽ gretly & seidẽ/ verily
pis was goddis sone/ & pi weren
peve many wymẽ afer: pt siedẽ
ihũ fro galile· & mynistreden
to hi/ among whiche was ma
rie magdelene & marie pe mo
dir of iames & of ioseph· & pe
modir of zebedees sones/ but

Whane pe eeuenyng was co
me·per cam a riche mā of Ar
mathy· Ioseph by name·& he
was a disciple of ihū / he wēte
to pilat: & axide pe bodi of ihū /
pāne pilat comaūdide pe bodi
to be zouē / & whane pe bodi was
takū: Ioseph lappide it i A clene
lenden·& leyde it i his newe bi
riel pat he hadde hewen i A sto
on / & he walewide A grete stoō
to pe daze of pe biriel: & wente
Awey / but marie maudelene
& anop marie wēre pere: sitty
ng azen? pe sepulcre / & ou pe to
p̄ daye pt is aft̄ pak euē: pe p̄u
as of p̄ris & pe fariseis camē
to gidir to pilat·& seidē / sir we
han mynde pat pilk gilour seide
zit lyuyng: aft̄ pre daies p
schal ryse azen to lyf / p̄for co
maūde pou pt pe sepulcre be
kept i to pe pridde daie / lest his
disciplis comē & stelen hi: & seiē
to pe puple·he hap ryse fro deep /
& pe laste errour schal be werse:
pāne pe forme / pilat seide to hē /
ze han pe kepyng go ze: kepe ze
as ze kunnē / & pei zeden forp and
keptē pe sepulcre· marking pe
pe stoon with keperis

But in pe euyntyd of pe
sabot pat bigynneb to
schyne i pe first daie
of pe woke: marie maudelene

cam & anop marie to se pe sepul
cre·& lo per was maad a gret
erpe schaking / for pe aungel of
pe lord cam doū fro heuene:
& neizide & turnede Awey pe sto
on·& satte p on / and his loking
was as leyt: & his clopis as sno
we / & for drede of hi· pe keperis
weren affeerd: & pei weren maad
as deed mē / but pe aungel answe
ride & seide to pe wymmen / uyle
ze dreede / for y woot pat ze seke
ihū pat was crucified / he is n
ot here / for he is risen: as he sei
de / comeze & se ze pe place: whe
re pe lord was leyd / and go ze
soone·& seie ze· to his disciplis:
pat he is risē / & lo he schal go
bifor zou i to galile / pere ze schulē
se hi: lo y haue bifor seid to zou /
and pei wenten out soone fro
pe biriels with dreede & greet ioi
e: rennyng to telle to his disci
plis / & lo ihc mette hem: & seide /
heile ze & pei neizedē & heldē his
feet & worschipidē him / pāne
ihc seide to hem nyle ze dreede /
go ze· telle ze to my britheren: pat
pei go i to galile: per pei schulē
se me / and whanne pei weren go
on: lo sum of pe keperis camē
i to pe cite·& telden to pe princis
of p̄ris· alle pingis pat weren
doon / and whanne pei weren ga
deryd to gidir with pe eldere mē

& hadden take he wiſeil pei zanō
to pe kuyztis tuyche tuoney & lei
den / leie ze pat his diſciplis cam
en bi nyzt: & hau ſtolen hi whyle
ze ſlepten / and if pis be herd of
pe iuſtice: we ſchulē wiſeil hi
& make zou ſiker / & whanne pe m
oney was takū: pei didē as pei
were tauzt / and pis word is
pupliſchid among pe iewis:
til ī to pis daie / and pe euleuē
diſciplis wentē ī to galile · ī to
an hille where ihc hadde ordē
yned to hē / & pei ſeyn hi: and
wor ſchipidē / but ſūme of hē
doutidē / and ihc cam nyz & ſpac
to hem & ſeide / al power ī heu
ene & ī erpe is zouū to me / for
go ze & teche ze alle folkis: bap
tiſyng hē ī pe name of pe fad·
& of pe ſone & of pe holy gooſt /
techyng hem to kepe al pingis:
what euī pingis y haue comā
ndid to zou / and y am wt zou ī
alle daies: ī to pe eend of pe world /
Here endip matheu: And
here biggynep pe ploge on marc
Marc pe goſpeler was
pe chosū ſeruaūt of
god: & pe goodli ſone
of petir ī baptym · & pe diſciple
ī goddis word / he mynyſtride
pſthod ī iſrael pat is among
iewis: & was of pe lynage
of leuy bi fleiſchly / and he was
cōuertid to pe feip of crist: & wrot
pe goſpel ī ytalie · pat is · pe cūtrey
of rome / and ſchewide ī pe goſpel:
what he ouzte to his kyn & to ēſt /
mark bigynep at pe dōing of
ioon baptiſt: & tellip not pe vnity
nite of crist bi fleiſch: but fro ēſt
tis baptym whanne he was ful
man he tellip of his faſtyng bi
xl daies · & of his temptyng in
deſert hou pe deuel tēptide hym /
and how he was yolde beeſtis wer
gaderid vere: & how holy aungē
lis camē & ſeruyedē ēſt aftir his
tēptacioū & oū conyng pof / af
ter ēſtē feip reſteyned · he kitte
de of his yonibe: pat he ſchulde
be had repuſible to pſthod / pt is ·
be vnable to be pſt ī pe goſpel /
but cheſing bifor ordeyned cou
ſeilyngе to pe feip: nyzt do ſo
myche / pat he loſte not ī pe werk
of word · pat is · ī pchyng of god
dis word: pat pat he diſſeruede
bifore ī kyn / pat is · as he was
a pſt bi kyn ī pe elde lawe amo
ng iewis: ſo he was a pſt in pe
goſpel among ēſtē mē / for he was
biſchop of alisaūdre / and bi alle
pingis it was his werk to fūme
profecies: & to diſpoſe ī him ſilf
pe ſeipingis of pe goſpel / and to
knowe in hī ſilf pe techyng of
lawe: & to vndurſtonde pe dyny
n kynde of pe lord ī fleiſchly / whi

che ymagis it bihoneþ: to be fon
ȝt firſt in vs ¶ Here bigynneþ
ye book of mark ye euangeliſt
e bigynnyng of ye goſp
el of ihū crift: ye ſone of
god as it is writtē in ỳ ſai
e ye pfete/ lo ỳ ſende my
angel bifor þi face: þt ſchal
al make þi weyes redi bifore
yee ye voys of a crier in deſ
ert· make ze redi ye weies of ye
lord: make ze his paþis ryȝt
woon was in deſert baptiſing·
and þchinge ye baptym̄e of pena
ūce in to remiſſioū of ſyn̄/ and
al ye cūtre of iudee went out
to hym̄: & alle mē of ieruſalē/ & pei
weren baptiſid of hī in ye flom̄ of
dan: & knowlechiden her ſyn̄
and was clopid with heeris of
camels: & a girdil of ſkyn was
about his leendis and he eet
honi ſoukis & wilde honi· and
þchide & ſeide a ſtrenger pān̄e
ỳ ſchal come aftir me: & ỳ am
not worþi to knele doū & vnlace
his ſchoone/ ỳ haue baptiſid zou
in watir but he ſchal baptiſe zou
in ye holi gooſt ¶ and it was don
in þo dayes· ihc̄ cam fro nazareth
of galile: & was baptiſid of woon
in iordan/ & anoon he wente up
of ye watir· & ſām̄ heuenes ope
nyd· & ye holi gooſt comyng do
un as a culuer· & dwelling in hī
and a voys was maad fro heue
nes/ pou art my lowede ſone in
pee ỳ am pleſid & anoon ye ſpirit
puttide hī forþ in to deſert and he
was in ye deſert fourti dayes &
fourty nyȝtis: & was temptid
of ſathanas/ and he was with
beeſtis· & aungelis mynyſtriden to
hī/ but aftir þat woon was takē
ihc̄ cam in to galile· & þchide ye
goſpel of ye kyngdom of god·
& ſeide þat ye tyme is fulfillid·
& ye kyngdoom of god ſchal come
nyȝ/ doȝe penaūce: & bileueȝe to
ye goſpel/ and as he paſſide biſi
des ye ſee of galile/ he ſaȝe ſym
oūn & andrew his brooþr caſtyng
her nettis in to ye ſee/ for pei
weren fiſſchieris· & ihc̄ ſeide to hē/
come ze aftir me/ ỳ ſchal make
zou to be maad fiſſchieris of m
en/ and anoon pei lefte ye
nettis: & ſuedē hī/ & he ȝede
forþ fro þēnē a litil: & ſiȝ ia
mes of zebedee: & woon his bro
þer in a boot makyng nettis/ and
anoon he cleþide hem̄/ and pei
lefte zebedee her fadir in ye
boot: with hirid ſeruaūtis· &
pei ſuedē hym̄/ And pei entridē
in to capharnaū/ And anoon in ye
ſabatis he ȝede in to a ſynagoge:
& tauȝte hem̄/ And pei wondri
den on his teching/ for he tauȝ
te hem̄: as he þat hadde power·

and not as scribis And ī ye syn
agoge of hem was a man in an
vnclene spirit: & he criede out
& seide what to us & to pee pou
jhū of nazareth: hast pou co
me to destruye us I woot pat
pou art ye hooly of god & jhc
pretended hi & seide wex doūb
& go out of ye man And ye vncle
ne spirit debreidinge hi & crip
inge with grete voys: wente out
fro him & alle men wondride
so pat pei souzte wip ine hem
selfe & seide what ping is pis
what newe doctrine is pis
for ī power he comaūdip to
vncleue spiritis & pei obeien
to hi And pe fame of hi went
te forp anoon ī to alle pe cūtre
of galile And anoon pei zedē
out of pe synagoge & camen
ī to pe hous of symoūt & of
andrewe with iames & ioon
And pe modir of symoūtis
wyf: laye sijk ī feneris & a-
noon pei seien to hi of hir
& he came nyz & arerde hir: &
wha̅ne he hadde take hir ho
onde And anoon pe feuer left hir
& she servede hem but wha̅
ne pe eenētide was come & pe
sōne was goon doū: pei brou
ten to hi alle pat weren ek m
ale ese & hem pat hadden fee
ndis & al pe citee was gader
id at pe zate: & he heelide many
pat hadden diuerse seeknessis &
he caste out many feendis &
he suffride hem not to speke:
for pei knewen hi And he roos
ful eerly & zede out & went ī
to a desert place: & pyede pere
& symount suede hi: & pei pat ben
ren with hi & whanne pei hadden
foūde hym: pei seiden to hi pat
alle men seken pee & he seide
to hē go we ī to pe nexte townes
es & citees: pat y pche also pere
for herto y cam & he pchide ī
pe synagogis of hem & ī alga
lile: & caste out feendis And
a leprous ma̅ cam to hi: and
bisouzte & knelede & seide if
pou wolt: pou maist clēse me
& jhc hadde mercy on hym: And
streizt out his hoond & touch-
de hi: & seide to hym I wole:
be pou maad clene And wha̅
ne he hadde seid pis: anoon
pe lepre partide a wei fro hi
& he was clensid And jhū put
te hi out & seide to hi se pou se
ie to no man: but go schewe
pee to pe p̄estis & offere for pi cleusing as to
witnessing to hem po pingis
pat moises bad And he zede
out: & bigan to pche & publisshe
pe word so pat now he myzte
not go opēly in to pe citee:

prehe
hi & A
jhc

vnt be wip out fary m delert
placis & pei came to hi on alle sy
nd eft he entri ¶ des
de i to cafarnaū: aft
eizte dales & it was
herd pat he was i an hous: &
many came to gidir · so pt pei
myzte not be i pe hous: ne at
pe zate / and he spake to hē pe
word & pe came to hi mē pat
brouzte ā̄ sijk i palesie:
which was bozn of foure / &
whane pei myzte not bryngo
hym to ihū · for pe puple: pei
vnhelidē pe roof where he was
& openede it: & pei letten doū pe
bed · i which pe sijk mā i palesie
laye / and whane ihc had seyn
pe feip of hem: he seide to pe si
jk mā i palesye / sone pi synnes be
forzouē to pee / but pe were sti
me of pe scribis sittyng & pen
kyng in her hertis / what spe
kip he pus: he blaspemey / who
may forzyne synes: but god alo
one: & whane ihū hadde knowe
pis · bi pe hooly goost · pat pei
pouzte so wip ine hē silf: he
seip to hē / what penken ze pese
pingis in zoure heytis: / what
is lizt to seie to pe sijk man i
palesye · synes ben forzouē to
zee: or to seie rise take pi bed &
walke: but pat ze wite · pt mā
ha sone hap power in erpe to
forzyne synes: he seide to pe sijk
mā i palesye / y seie to pee rise up ·
take pi bed: & go in to pin hous /
& anoon he roos up / & whane he
hadde take pe bed: he went bifor
alle men · so pat alle me wond
reden & honouredē god & seidē · for
we sayen neu so ¶ and he went
out eft doune to pe see: & al pe pu
ple cam to hi · & he tauzte hem /
and whane he passide: he say
leny of alfey · sittyng at pe tollbo
pe & he seide to hym / sue me &
he roos: & sued hi & it was doū
whane he sitt at pe mete in his
hous: many publicans & synful
me · satten to gidir at pe mete wip
ihū: & his disciplis / for pere were
many · pat folewedē hi / and scri
bis & farisees seyng pat he eet
wip publicans & synful men:
seidē to his disciplis / wh eetip &
drynkip zoure maist wip publi
cans & synneris: whane pis was
herd: ihc seide to hem / hoole m
en han no nede to a leche: but
pei pat bē yuel at ese / for y
cam not to clepe iuste me: but
synneris ¶ and pe disciplis of
ioon & pe farisees weren fastyn
ug: & pei camen & seien to hym /
wh fasten pe disciplis of ioon ·
& pe farisees fasten: bi pi disci
plis fasten not: & ihc seide to
hem / whep pe sones of spousi

lig moñ faste: As longe As pe
spouse is wip hem: As longe tyme As pei haue pe spouse wip hē/ pei moñ not faste/ but dayes schulē come whāne pe spouse schal be takñ awey fro hem: & pan ne pei schulē faste i po dayes/ no man serip Apaithe of newe clop pe to An olde clope/ ellis he takip A wey pe newe paithe fro pe olde: & Amoor breking is maad/ & no mā puttip newe wyne: i to olde botelis/ ellis pe wyne schal bresse pe botelis: & pe wyne schal be schedde out· & pe botelis schulen perische/ but newe wyne schal be putte i to newe botelis/ And it was don eft sooues whāne pe lord walkid i pe sabatis bi pe cornes: & his disciplis bigunnen to pulle forp & pluckē eeris of pe corn/ And pe farisees seiden to hī lo what pi disciplis don i sabatis pat is not leeueful/ And he seide to hē/ r Adden ze neu what dauid dide: whāne he hadde neede: & And he hūgride and pei pat were weren wip hī: hou he wente in to pe hous of god· vndir Abiathar pruce of pistis: And eete loones of proposicioñ/ which it was not leeful to eete: but to pistis Aloone/ And he 3af to hem pat weren wip hī & he seide to hem pe sabat is maad for mā: & not man for pe sabat/ And so mā is lord Also of pe sabat

And he entride eft doone in to pe synagoge: And peer was Anā hauy3 adrie hoonde/ And pei espieden hī· if he heelid i pe sabatis: to Accuse hī & he seide to pe mā pat hadde adrye houde/ rys ī to pe myddil/ And he seip to hem is it leeueful: to do wel i pe sabatis· eyp yuel: to make A soule saaf: eyp to leese: & pei weren stille & he bihelde hem Aboute wip wraip pe· & hadde sorowe on pe blyndnesse of her herte· & seip to pe mā/ holde forpe pin hoonde & he helde forpe: & his hoonde was restored to hī/ sopely fariseis· 3edē out Anoon & maden Acounseil wip erodians Azen hī: hou pei schulden lese hī/ but ihc wip his disciplis weente to pe see & myche puple fro galile and iudee siede hī: And fro ierusalē & fro idume· And fro bizen dis iordan/ and pei pat weren Aboute tyre And sidon a greet multitude· heerynge pe pingis pat he dide· & camē to hī/ and ihc seide to his disciplis· pat pe boot schulde serue hī for pe puple· lesti pei pristen hym for he heelide many/ so pat pei feldē fallē to hī: to touche hym/

And hou many eiſe hadde ſeknesſis
& vnclene ſpiritis: whanne pei ſa
en hi̅ ſelden doū to hi̅ & crieden
ſeiyng; pou art pe ſone of god/ &
gretely he manesſide hem: pt pei
ſhuldē not make hi̅ knowē/ &
he wente i to an hille and clepi
de to him whō he wolde/ And pei
camen to hi̅/ and he made pat
pere weren twelue wip hi̅: to
ſende hem to preche/ and he zaf
to hem power to hele ſikneſſ
is & to caſt out feendis/ and to
ſymoū he zaf a name petir/
& he clepide iames of zebede·
& ioun pe brop̄ of iames: & he
zaf to hem names boenarges·
pat is ſonȝ of pūdrynge/ and he
clepide andreu & filip & bar
tholomeu & matheu · & thom
as & iames alfey & tadee & ſym
oū cananee · & iudas ſcarioth
pat bitrayde hi̅ & pei camen to
an hous/ and pe puple come to
gidir eft ſoone: ſo pat pei mygte
not ete breed/ and whanne his kȳ
neſmē hadde herd: pei wenten
out to holde hi̅/ for pei ſeiden pt
he is turnede in to woodneſſe/
And pe ſcribis pat camen doū fro
ieruſalē: ſeiden pat he hap belzab
ub: & pat i pe prince of deuelis · he
caſtip out feendis/ & he clepide hē
to gidir: & he ſeide to hem i par
ablis hou may ſathanas caſte
out ſathanas: And if a reume
be departid azenſt it ſelf: pilk
reume may not ſtonde/ & if
an hous be departid on it ſelf:
pilk hous may not ſtonde/ & if
ſathanas hape riſē azen hi̅ ſelf:
he is departid: & he ſchal not ma
ke ſtonde · but hap an ende/
no mā may go in to a ſtrong m
ānſ hous & take awey his veſ
ſelis/ but he bynde firſt pe ſtr
onge mā · & pānne he ſchal ſpoyle
his hous · treuly y ſeye to zou ·
pt alle ſynſ & blaſfemyes · wip
ich pei han blaſfemed: ſchulē
be forzouē to pe ſones of men/
but he pat blaſfemep azens pe
hooly gooſt: hap not remiſſiōn
i to wip outen ende · but he ſchal
be gilti of euerlaſting treſpas
for pei ſeide he hap an vnclene
ſpirit/ And his modir & bri-
pēn camen · & pei ſtoden wip out forp &
ſenten to hym and clepeden hym/
And pe puple ſatt aboute hym/
And pei ſeien to hym/ lo pi mo
dir and pi brepren wip outefor-
ſeken pee/ And he anſwerde to
hem And ſeide/ who is my mo
dir and my bryperen: And he
biheelde pilk pat ſatten aboute
hym · and ſeide/ lo my modir &
my bryperen for who pat doip
pe wille of god: he is my bro
per · and ſiſter and modir ·

C. viij.

And eft he⁊ bigan to teche at pe see: ⁊ myche
pnple was gadrid to
to hi⁊ so pat he went⁊ into a bo
ot · ⁊ sat⁊ in pe see/ And alle pe
pnple: was about pe see on pe
lond ⁊ he taujte hem in parabl
is: many pnigis/ And he seide
to hem in his teching/ here ze/
lo ani⁊ sowing goip out to sowe
⁊ pe while he sowip · sum seed
felde about pe weie · ⁊ bridis
of heuen camen ⁊ eeten it/ ope
felde doun on stony placis: whe
re it hadde not myche erpe/ ⁊
anoon it sprong up: for it had
de not depnesse of erpe/ ⁊ whan
ne pe sunne roos up: it weleiwi
de for heete · ⁊ it dried up · for it
hadde no vote/ And opе felde do
n in to pornes: ⁊ pornes sprou
gen up · ⁊ stranglide it · ⁊ it 3af
not fruyt/ And opi felde doun in
to good lond: ⁊ 3af fruyt sprym
gung up ⁊ wexing/ And oon br
ouzt pritty fold · ⁊ oon sixti fold ·
⁊ oon an hundrid fold/ And he se
ide/ he pat hap eeris of heyp
ng · here ¶ And whanne he was
bi him silf: po twelue pat were
with him · axiden him to expowne
pe parable/ ⁊ he seide to hem/
to 3ou it is 3ouin to knowe pe
pnete of pe kingdome of god
but to hem pat ben with outforp:

alle pingis ben made in parablis/
pat pei seynge see: ⁊ se not · and pei
heryng heve: ⁊ vndurstonde
ot/ lest sum tyme pei be conuti⁊d: ⁊
synes be forzouin to he⁊/ And he
seide to hem/ knowe not ze pis
parable · ⁊ hou ze schulen knowe:
alle parablis/ he pat sowip:
sowip a good/ but pes it ben pat
ben about pe weie · whei⁊ pe wo
rd is sowin ⁊ whanne pei han her
de: anoon comep sathanas · ⁊
takip awei pe word pat is sowi
n in her hertis/ ⁊ in lyk man
ben pees pat ben sowin on stoo
ny placis: which whanne pei ha⁊
herd pe word · anoon pei taken
it with ioye · ⁊ pei han not roote
in hem silf but pei ben lastyng
a litil tyme/ after ward whanne
tribulacion risip ⁊ persecucion
for pe word: anoon pei ben sla
undrid/ And pei ben opi pat ben sowi
n in pornes/ pees it be pat here
pe word: ⁊ drecche of pe world and
disseyt of richessis ⁊ ope charg
e of coueitise entrip ⁊ strange
lip pe word · ⁊ it is maad with out
fruyt/ and pese it ben pat be sowi
n on good lond: which whanne pe
word ⁊ taken ⁊ maken fruyt · oon
prittifold · oon sixtifol · ⁊ oon an
hundridfold/ And he seide to hem
¶ where a lanterne come pat it
be putt vndir a bussel or vndir

abed: nay but pat it be putt on
a candelstik: þ is no þing hid:
pat shal not be maad opyn /
nep ony þing is þriey: pat sh
al not come in to oppn / if ony
man haue eris of herpug: here
he / and he seide to hem / se ze w
hat ze heeren / in what mesur
ze meten: it shal be mett to
zou azen · & be cast to zou / for it
shal be zouen to hi pat hap / & it
shal be takn awey · fro hi pat
hap not · also pat pat he hap
And he seide so pe kingdome
of god is · as if a man caste seede
i to pe erpe · & he sleepe · & it rise
up nyzt & dai · & brynge forp
seed · & wexe faste · whyle he wo
ot not / for pe erpe makip fru
pt · first pe gras · afterward
pe ere · & after ful frupt i pe ere /
& whan of it silf it hap brouzt
forpt frupt: anoon he sendip
sikil · for repyng tyme is com
e / And he seide / to what þing
shulen we likne pe kingdome
of god: or to what parable sh
ul we comperisone it: as a cor
ne of seneuey · which whan
it is sowen in pe erpe: is lesse
pan alle seedis pat ben in pe
erpe / and whan it is sprongn
up it waxip in to a tre · & is m
aad gretter pan alle herbis /
and it makip grete braunches:
so pat briddis of heuene mon
dwelle vndir pe shadewe þ of /
And in many siche parablis he
spac to hem pe word: as pei myz
ten heere / & he spac not to hem
wip out parable / but he expouns
nede to his disciplis alle þing
is · bi hem self / And he seide to
hem in pat daye · whan eeue
ny ng was comen / passe we azen
ward / And pei lefte pe puple ·
& token hym so pat he was in
boot · & opir boţis weren wip
hym / & a grete storm of wynde
was maad: & keste wawis in to
pe boot · so pat pe boot was ful
& he was in pe hyndir part of pe
boot: & slepte on a pilewe / And
pei reysen hym: & seyn to hym /
maist̃ perteynep it not to vs:
pat we perisshyne: And he roo
se up & manaside pe wynde: &
seyde to pe see / be stille · wexe
domb / And pe wynde ceesside:
& grete pesibilnesse was maad /
& he seide to hẽ / what dredẽ ze:
ze han no feip it: / & pei dreddẽ
wip grete drede / & seide eche
to op / who gessist pow is pis:
for pe wynd & pe see obeischẽ to hi
m̃ And pei camẽ on̄ pe see:
in to pe cuntree of ge
rasenes / & aft̃ pt he
was goon out of pe boot: anoo
on a man in vnclene spirit

ran out of vyrielis to hym· wh̄i
che mā hadde an hous i vyrielis
And nopir· wip chepneg noip· nu
yzte ouy man vynde hi· for ofte
tymes he was boūdoū i stockis
& chaynes: & he hadde vroke pe
chaynes & hadde vroke pe stockis
to smale gobetis· & no mā myzte
make hi tame/ and eūmoz nyzt
& dai i vyrielis & i hillis· he was
cryng & betyng hi silf wip stoo
nes/ And he siz ihc after & ran &
worchipide hym & he criede wyt
gvete voice & seide wh̄at to me
& to pee: p̄t ihū pe sone of pe hizest
god: y coniure pee vigod· pat pou
turmente me not & iesc seide to
ham p̄t vnclene spirit go out fro
pe mā & ihc axide hi wh̄at is pi
name: And he seip to hi legioū
is my name· for we ben many
& he p̄iede ihū mychc: pat he sh
ulde not puttc hi out of pe cōtre
pe/ And p̄ was peve aboute pe
hille: a grete flock of swyn lese
wynge & pe spiritis p̄iedē ihū
& seidē/ sende us i to pe swyn· p̄t
we entren i to hē/ And anoon ihc
graūtide to hē & pe vnclene spiri
tis zedē out: & entriden i to pe
swyn & wip a grete birre pe floc
ke was cast doū i to pee see· & wer
ronstunde: & pei weren dreynt i
pe see/ & pei pat kepte hem: flod
den & tolden i to pe citee & i to pe
feeldis/ And pei wenten out to se: wh̄
at was don & pei camē to ihū: And
seyen hi pat hadde be tramelde of
pe fende· sittyng clopid & of hool
mynde· & pei dredde/ And pei pat
seien hou it was don to hi pat ha
dde a fend· & of pe swyne: teldeu
to hē/ And pei bigunnen to p̄ie hi: p̄t
he schulde go awey· fro her coostis
& panne he zede up i to a boot: he p̄t
was tramelid of pe deuel· bigan
to p̄ye hi· pat he schulde be wip hi
but ihc resseyuede hi not: but se
ide to hi go p̄t i to yn̄ hous to yi
ne: & telle to hē hou grete pingis
pe lord hap don to pee· & hadde mi
cy of pee/ And he wente forp and
bigan to p̄che i decapoly· hou gre
te pingis ihc hadde don to hi/ And
alle me wondriden & and wh̄an
ne ihc hadde gon up i to pe boot·
eft soone on pe see: mychc puple
come to gidir to hi & was aboute
pe see/ And oon of pe p̄ncis of sy
nagogis· bi name iayrus: cam &
sei hi· & felde doū at his feet & p̄i
ede hi mychc & seide· my doūt̄ is
myz deed/ come pou putte pin hon
de on hir· pat sche be maad & lyue
And he wente forp wip hi: & myche
puple sued hi & pressiden hi/ And a
wom̄a hadde be i pe bloody flixe
twelue zeere· & hadde receyued
many pingis· of fal many lechis·
& hadde spendide alle hir good &

was no þing amendid but was
ar̄ þe wors: whan̄e she hadde
her of ih̄u· she cam among þe
puple bihynde· & touchide his
clop̄ for she seide þat if y tondhe
but his clop̄: y shal be sauf. And
anoon þe welle of hir blood was
dried up: & she feelid i bodi þt
she was heelid of þe sekenesse
& anoon ih̄c knewe i hir silf.
þe vertu þat was goon out of
hi & turnede to þe puple and
seide who touchid my clopis:
& his disciplis seide to hi þou
seest þe puple prustyng vee:
& seist who touchide me: & ih̄c
lokede about to se hir þat ha
dde don þis þing. And þe wom
an dredde and quakid wetty
ng þat it was don i hir: & cam
& felde doun bifore hi· & seide to hi
al þe trewþe. And ih̄c seide to
hir. dou3t̄r þi feiþ hap maad þe
sauf: go i pees & be þou hool
of þi sekenesse. 3it while he
spac messangeris comen to þe
princ of þe synagoge & seiden
þi dou3t̄r is deed. what travelist
þou þe lord mai3t̄ ferþ. but
whanne þe word was herd þt
was seide to þe princ of þe syn
agoge. nyle þou drede: oonly
bileue þou. And he tok̄e no man
to sue hi: but pet̄r & iames·
& ioon þe brop̄r of iames & þei

camen in to þe hous of þe princ
of þe synagoge. And he sihe a
oyle: & men̄ weping & weplyng
mychel. And he 3ede in: & seide
to hem̄. what ben 3e troublid &
wepen: þe damysel is not deed:
but slepiþ. And þei scorneden
hi. but whanne alle were put
out: he takiþ þe fadir & þe
modir of þe damysel· & hem̄ þat
weren̄ with hi. And þei entren̄:
wher̄ þe damysel lay & heelde
þe hond of þe damysel· & seide
to hir̄ tabita cumy þat is to
seie· damysel y seie to þee a
yse· & anoon þe damysel roos
se & walkide. And she was of
twelue 3eere· & þei were aba[illegible]
id with a grete stonying. And
he comaundide to hem̄ greteli:
þat no man̄ schulde wite it· & he
comaundide to 3yue to hir̄ mete.
And he 3ede out fro þe
nyt: & weente in to his
owne cit̄e: & his
disciplis foleweden hi. And
whanne þe sabat was come:
ih̄c bigan̄e to teche i a synago
ge. And many herden & won
dreden̄ of his teching· & seiden
of whennes̄ hab̄ þis· alle þees yy
ngis̄. And what is þe wisdom̄
þat is 3ouen̄ to hi· & siche ver
tues which ben maad bi his
hoondis̄. whiche þis is not a

carpīt: pe sone of marie. pe
brop of iames & of ioseph & of
iudas & of symoñ: whepper
his sisteris ben not heere wt
us: & pei weren sclaūdrid in
hī/ and ihc seide to hē pt a pro
fete is not wip out onour.
but i his owne cūtree. & am
ong his kynne. & i his hous/
& he myzte not do pere ony mer
ti: saue he heelide a fewe sik
ke mē leyng on hem his hoo
ndis/ and he wondride for pe
vnbileue of hē/ & he went a
bonte castels on eche side: &
tauzte & he clepide to gidir
twelue. & bigan to sende hem
by two to gidir: & zaf to hem
power of vnclene spiritis/ &
comaūdide hem pat pei schul
dē not take ony pung i pe we
re: but zerde oonly/ not al
rippe. ne breed. nep money i
pe girdil: but schod wip san
dalis/ & pat pei schuldē not be
clopid wip twey cotis/ and he
seide to hem/ whodur ēize en
tren in to an hous: dwelle
ze pere. til ze goon out fro peu
nȝ/ and who euer receyue zou
not ne heere zou: go ze out fro
pēnȝ & schake awey pe powd
er fro zour feet. in to witnes
sing to hē/ and pei zedē forpe
and prechiden: pat mē schuldē
do penaūce and pei castidē out ma
ny feendis: & anoyntedē wip oile
many sijk mē. & pei weren heelid
and kyng eronde herde: for his
name was maad oppn/ & seide
pat ioon baptist hap risen azen
fro deep: & pfor vertues woercheu
in hī/ op seidē: pat it is help/ but
op seidē pat it is a pfete as oon
of pfetis/ and whanne pis pis
was herd: eronde seide/ pis
ioon whom y hanne biheedide:
is risen azen fro deep/ for pilk
eronde seynte & helde ioon: and
bond hī i to prisoñ for erodias
pe wijf of his brop philip. for
he hadde wedded hir/ for ioon
seide to eronde/ it is not leeue
ful to pee: to haue pe wijf of
pi broper/ & erodias leyde a
spies to hī: and wolde sle hī
& myzte not/ and eronde dred
de ioon: & knewe him a iust
mā & hooly & kepte hī/ & eron
de herde hī: & he dide many
pingis. & gladly herde hym/
and whanne a couenable dai
was fallū: eronde in his bir
pedaie made a soper to pe pu
ncis & tribunes & to pe gretteſt
of galile/ and whanne pe doȝ
tir of pilk erodias was comen
yne & daūsid & pleside to eron
de & also to men pat satē at
pe mete: pe kyng seide to pe

damysel/ axe pou of me· wh
at pou wolt· & y schal 3yue to
pee/ and he swore to hir· pat
what eu pou axe· y schal 3yue
to pee: pouz it be pe half of
my kyngdome/ and whanne
she hadde gon out· she seide
to hir modir/ what schal y
axe· & she seide/ pe heede of
ioon baptist/ and whanne she
was comme pne· anoon whi
hast to pe king· she axide &
seide/ y wille pat anoon pou
3yue to me i a dische pe heede
of ioon baptist/ and pe king
was sori for pe ooy & for me
pat seten to gidir at pe miete·
he wolde not make hir sori/
but sente an angeller· & com
aundide pat ioones heed wer
brouzt i a dische/ and he bihe
edide hi i pe prisoun· & brouzte
his heed i a dische & 3af it to
pe damysel· & pe damysel 3af
to hir modir· and whanne pis
pyng was herd· his disciplis
camen· & token his bodie· and
leiden it i a birielle and pe
apostelis comen to gidir to
ihū· & telden to hi alle pyng
is pat pei hadden don & tau3te
& he seide to hem/ comep bi 3o
u silf· i to a desert place· &
reste 3e a litel/ for per were
many pat camen & weenten

azen· & pei hadden not space to
ete/ and pei 3eden in to a boot·
& wenten in to a desert place· bi
hem silf/ and pei sayen hem
go awey· & many knewen
& pei wenten a foote fro alle
citees· & comen pidir & camen
bifor hem/ and iesus 3ede out &
say myche puple & hadde reu
pe on hem/ for pei were as scheep
pe· not hauyng a scheepherd/
and he bigan to teche hem· m
any pyngis/ and whanne it was
3ep dayes· his disciplis camen
& seiden/ pis is a desert place
& pe tyme is now passid· lete
hem go i to pe nexte townes
& villages· to bie hem miete
to ete/ and he answeride and
seide to hem 3yue 3e to hem to ete/
and pei seiden to hi/ go we & bie
we loones wip two hundrid
penis· & we schulen 3yue to hem
to ete/ and he seip to hem/ hou
many loones haue 3e· go 3e &
se/ and whanne pei hadden kno
we· pei seien/ fyue & two fischis/
and he comaundide to hem· pt
pei schulden make alle men sitte
to meete bi companyes on gree
ne heye/ and pei saten doun bi
parties· bi hundridis & bi fifty
es/ and whanne he hadde take
pe fyue loones· & twey fischis/
he bihelde in to heuene·

And blessid & brac loones and zaf
to his disciplis: pat pei shulden
sette brifor hem And he departid
de tuey fisshis to alle & alle
eeten & weren fulfillid And pei
token pe relifs of brokin metis·
twelue coffyns ful: & of pe fisshis
is And pei pat eeten: were fyue
pousind of me And anoon he
made his disciplis to gon up i
to a boot: to passe bifor hym on pe
see to bethsaida pe while he lef
te pe puple & whanne he hadde
left hem: he went in to an hil
le to pie And whanne it was ee
uen: pe boot was i pe myddil
of pe see· & he aloone in pe lond·
& he sawe hem turmentid i rowing
for pe wynde was contrarie to
hem And aboute pe fourpe wa
kyng of pe nyst: he wandride
on pe see & cam to hem· & wolde
passe hem And as pei sawen hym
wandrynge on pe see: pei gessiden
pat it were a fantum· & crieden out
for alle sawen hym: & pei weren a
frayed And anoon he spac with
hem: & seide to hem tristeze y
am nyle ze drede And he cam up
to hem i to pe boot: & pe wynd ce
sside And pei wondriden more
with inne hem self for pei vndir
stoden not of pe loones for her
herte was blyndid And whanne
pei weren passid ouer pe see: pei
camen in to pe lond of genazareth
& lettiden to loonde And whanne
pei weren goon out of pe boot: an
oon pei knewen hym And pei ranne
porou al pat cuntre & bigunnen to
brynge sijk men i beddis on eche
side where pei herden pat he was
And whidir euer he entride in to
vilagis oper i to townes or in to
citees: pei setten sijk men i stretis
And preyeden hym: pat pei shulden
touche namely pe hem of his cloop
And hou many pat touchiden hym:
weren made saaf

And pe pariseis & sum
of pe scribis camen fro
jerusalem: to gidir to hym
And whanne pei hadden seen sum
me of his disciplis ete breed with
vnwasshen hoondis pei blam
eden pe pariseis & alle pe iewis
eten not: but pei washen ofte
her hoondis· holding pe tradic
ouns of eldere men And whanne
pei turnen azen fro cheping·
pei eten not but pei be waisshun
& many opere pingis ben pat ben taken
to hem to kepe· washyngis
of cuppis & of watir vessellis &
of vessellis of bras And of be
dis And pariseis & scribis: aske
iden hym & seiden why gon not pi
disciplis after pe tradicioun of
eldere men: but with vnwasshe
hoondis pei eten breed: And

he answeride & seide to hem ysai
e prophecide wel of zou ypocritis:
as it is writtn/ pis puple wirshi
pip me wip lippis: but her hert
is fer fro me And i vepu pe wi
rshipē me: techinge pe doctri
nes & pe heestis of mē/ forze le
uen pe mandemēt of god· and
holden pe tradicoūs of men·
washīngis of watr̄ vessellis
& of cuppis· & many oy pingis
lijk to pese ze don And he seide
to hē/ wel ze han made pe mand
dement of god voyde: to kepe zou
re tradicioū/ for moyses seide
worshipe pi fadir & pi modir &
he pat curssip fadir or modir:
die bi deep but ze seien if a mā
seie to fadir or modir corban· pt
is what euer zifte is of me: it shi
al profite to pee And ou ze suffr
en not hi do ouy ping to fadir
or modir And ze breken pe word
of god bi zoure tradicoū pat ze
han zouē: & ze doū many siche
pingis And he eft soone clepide
pe puple: & seide to hem ze alle
heere me & vndirstonde no pi
ng pat is wt oute mā pat entr
ip i to hi: may defoule hi/ but po
pingis pt comen fozy of mā: po
it ben pt defoulē mā if ouy m
an hane eeris of heeryng heer
e he And whanne he was entr
id i to an hous fro pe puple: hi
s disciplis axiden hym pe parab
le And he seide to hem ze be vn
wise also vndirstonde ze not
pat al ping wip out forp pat en
trip i to man· may not defoule
hym: for it hap not entrid ñ to
his herte: but i to pe wombe
And vnpeye it goip out: purgyn
ge al metis/ but he seide pe pi
ngis pat gon out of mā: po
defoulen mā for fro wipinne
of pe herte of mē comē forp yn
el pouztis· auoutrīes· fornicacoūs·
manslayingis· pefts· auarices·
wickednessis· gile vnchastte·
yuel ize· blasfemyes· pride· foly·
alle pees yuels· comē forp fro wt
ynne: & defoulē man And
roose up fro pēn & wēte in to
pe coostis of tire & of sidon &
he zede in to an hous: and wolde
pat no mā wiste & he myzte not
be hidd for a wōman anoon as she
herde of hi· whos douzt hadde
an vnclene spirit: entride· and
fel doū at his feet And pe wōm
an was hepen of pe gen̄acioū
of sirofenyce And she pride
hi: pat he wolde caste out a deu
el fro hir douzt And he seide to
hir/ suffre pou pat pe childre
be fulfillid first for it is not
good to take pe breed of childr
en: & zyue to hoolidis And she an
swerde & seide to hi ze lord

for litti[l] wh̄elpis eeten vndir
pe boord: of pe crūmes of chi
ldren/ And ih̄c seide to hir/ go
pou: for pis word· pe feende is
ute out of pi douzt/ And whā
ne she was gon in to hir hous
home: she foonde pe dampsel
liggynge ou pe ou pe bed· And
pe deuel gon out fro hir/ ⁊
eftsoones ih̄c zede out fro pe
coostis of tire: ⁊ cam pirou
sidon to pe see of galile: bitwix
ē pe myddil of pe coostis of
decapoleos/ And pei brungen
to hi[m] a man defe ⁊ doūbe: And
p̄iedē hym to leye his hond
on hym/ And he toke hi[m] aliris
fro pe puple ⁊ putride his fyn
gris in to his eris/ ⁊ he spetide
⁊ touchide his tonge/ ⁊ he
bihelde i to heuene· And sorzeli
de wip mie ⁊ seide effata: pt
is be pou opened/ And anoon
his eris weren opened/ And
pe bonde of his tonge was u
boūdū: ⁊ he spac rigtli/ And he
comaūdide to hem: pat pei
shuldē seie to no[m]/ but hou
mychc he comaūdide to hem:
so mychc moore pei p̄chiden ⁊
bi so mychc more pei wondri
den and seiden/ he dide wel
al pingis: And he made deef
men to heere· And dowmbe
men speke

Ca po dayes eft whānē my
chc puple was wip ih̄m· And
hadden not what pei shuldē
eete: whānē his disciplis weren
clepid to gidir· he seide to hem
y haue ruthe on pe puple· for
lo· now pe pridde daie· pei abi
den me· ⁊ han not what to eete
And if y leeue hem fastyng in
to her houslis: pei shulen fayle
in pe weie/ for sūme of hē cam
en fro fer/ And his disciplis an
swerden to hi[m]/ whēr of shal a
m[an] mowe fille hem with loones
heer in wildirnesse: ⁊ he axide
hem/ hou many loones haue ze:
which seiden seuene/ And he co
maūdide pe puple to sitte doū
on pe erpe/ ⁊ he toke pe seuene
loones And dide paunkingis·
⁊ brac ⁊ zaf to his disciplis· pt
pei shuldē sette forp/ And pei
settidē forp to pe puple/ And
pei hadden a fewe smale fisshis·
And he blesside hem: And coma
ūdide pat pei weren sett forp/ ⁊
pei eeten ⁊ weren fulfillid/ ⁊ pei
token up pat pat left of relifs:
seuene lepis/ And pei pat eten:
weren as foure pousande of m
en/ ⁊ he lefte hem/ And anoon
he wente up in to a boot with his
disciplis: ⁊ cam in to pe coostis
of dalmanutha/ And pe farise
es weiten out· ⁊ bigunnen to dis

puyte wip hym: & aſkede atoke
ne of hi fro heuene & temptide
hi And he ſorewynge wip inne m
ſpirit ſeide what ſekip pis gen
acion atokene treuly I ſeie to yo
u atokene ſchal not be ȝouen to
pis generacion & he lefte hem &
wente up eft ſoone i to a boot.
& wente on pe ſee & pei forȝatten
to take breed: & pei hadde not
wip hem but o loof in pe boot
And he comaundide hem & ſeide
ſeȝe & be war of pe soure douȝ of
farisees & of pe ſourdouȝ of ero
de And pei pouȝten And ſeiden
oon to anoper for we han not lon
es & wpanne pis ping was knо
wen: ihc ſeide to hem what pen
ken ȝe for ȝe han not loones: zit
ȝe knowen not ne vnderſtonden
zit ȝe han ȝoure herte blyndid ȝe
haupng eien: ſeen not And ȝe ha
upng eeris: heren not nepir ȝe
han mynde: wpanne I brac fyue
loones among fyue pousande
And hou many coffyns ful of
brokun mete ȝe tokun up: pei ſeid
en to hi twelue wpanne alſo ſen
ene loones among foure pousa
nde of me: hou many lepis of
brokun meete tokeu ȝe up: & pei
ſeien to hi ſeuene & he ſeide he
how vnderſtonde ȝe not zit & &
pei comen to bethſaida: And pei
bryngen to hi a blynde man &

pei preieden hym: pat he ſchulde
touche hi And wpanne he hadde
take pe blynde mannis honde: he
ledde hi out of pe ſtreet And ſpe
te i to his eyen & ſette his hoondis
on hi: & he aſkide hi if he ſeye ony
ping And he beholde & ſeide I ſe
me as trees walkyng afterwa
rd eftſones he ſette his hoondis
on his eyen: & he bigan to ſee & &
he was reſtorid: ſo pat he ſaȝ
cleerly al pingis And he ſente
hi in to his hous & ſeide go in to
yin hous & if pou goiſt in to pe
ſtreete: ſeie to no man And ihc
entride & his diſciplis: i to pe caſt
els of cesarie of philip And in
pe weie he aſkide his diſciplis: &
ſeide to hem whо ſeyn men pat I
am: wpich anſwerde to hi And
seiden ſum men ſeien ioon baptiſt
op ſeien hely & op ſeien as oon
of pe profetis panne he ſeip to he
m but whom ſeien ȝe pat I am pe
tir anſwerde & ſeide to hi pou
art crist & he chargide hem pt
pei ſchulde not ſeie of hi to ony
man And he bigan to teche he
m pat it behoued man? sone to ſuf
fre many pingis: & to be repro
ued of pe elder men & of pe hizeſt
prſtis & pe ſcribis And to be ſlay
ne: & aft? pre dayes to riſe agen
And he ſpak pleynly pe word &
petir toke hym & bigan to bla

me hȳ & seide lord be pou mer-
ful to pee: for pis schal not be
& he turnede & sayȝ his disciplis:
& manaside petr̄ & seide go aft̄
me sathanas for pou sauerest
not po þingis þat ben of god:
but po þingis þt bē of me ¶ And
whanne pe puple was clepid to
gidir· with his disciplis: he sei-
de to hē & ony man wole come
aftr̄ me: denye he hȳ self· &
take his croſ & sue he me for
he þat wille make saf his lif:
schal leese it and he þat leesiþ
his lif for me & for pe gospel· sch
al make it saf for what profi
tiþ it to a man: if he wynne al pe
world· & do peyrung to his soule:
or what chaungyng schal a man
ȝiue: for his soule: but who þt
knowlechiþ me & my wordis· in
þis generacioun auoutrelle & syn
ful: also man? sone schal knowl
eche hȳ· whanne he schal come in
pe glorie of his fadir with his
aungelis & he seide to hē treuly
y seie to you· þt þ ben sum ston
ding heer· whiche schulē not taſ
te deep: til pei seen pe reume
of god comyng in vertu

¶ And aftr̄ sex daies· ihc
tok petre & iames &
ioon and ledde hem bi
hem silf aloone i to an hiȝ hille:
and he was transfigurid bifor
hem and his clopis weren maad
ful schynyng & white as snow: wh
ich man white clopis a fuller may
not make on erpe and helī with m
oyses apperide to hem: & pei spak̄
with ihū and petr̄ answerde & sa
ide to ihū maist̄ it is good: vs to be
heere and make we heere pre ta
bernacles: oon to pee· oon to moi
ses· & oon helie for he wiste not
what he schulde seie for pei were
agaste bi dreede & þ was maad a
clowde ouerschadowyng hem and a
voice cam of pe clowde & seide þis
is my moost deer-worþy sone: heere
ȝe hȳ and anoon pei biheldē about
& saien no more ony man· but ihū oo
nly with hē and whanne pei camen
doun fro pe hille: he comaundide hē
þat pei schuldē not telle to ony m
an po þingis· þat pei hadden seen:
but whanne man? sone hap risn̄
ayen fro deep and pei heldē pe wo
rd at hē self· seking what þis sch
ulde be: whanne he hadde risn̄ ay
en fro deep and pei aryden hym
& seiden what? þanne seiē scribis
& scribis: for it bihoueþ helī to co
me first and he answerde & sei-
de to hem whanne helye comeþ
he schal first restore alle þingis
and as it is writē of man? sone:
þat he suffre many þingis & be
despisid and y seie to you þat hely
is comun̄: & pei diden to hȳ what

euer ꝓnuncio pei wolden · as it is
writtē of hī / And he comyng to
his disciplis fauȝ a gret cūpany
about hem & scribis disputyng
wiꝑ hem / And anoon al ye puple
seyng ihū: was astoyned & pei
dredden / And pei rēnyng gretten
hī / & he axide hem / what dispu-
den ȝe amongis ȝou / And oon of ye
cūpany answerde & seide / maist
y haue brouȝt to pee · my sone: pt
hap a doūbe spirit / And where eu
he takip hī: he hurtlip hi doū / And
he fomep & betip to gnidir wip teep
& wexip drie / And y seide to pi disci-
plis pat pei schulden caste hī out:
& wyxten not · & he answeride to
hem & seide / A pou generacioū out
of bilene: hou longe schal y suffre
ȝou: bringe ȝe hī to me / And pei
brouȝtē hī / And wanne he hadde
seyn hī: anoon pe spirit troublide
he hī / And he fellide doū to ground &
walewide & fomede / And he axide
his fadir hou longe is it syp pis
hap falle to hī: & he seide / fro chil
dhode / And ofte he hap put hī in
to fier & in to watir to leese hī / but
if pou maiste ony ping: help us
& haue mercy on us & helpe hī
if pou maiste bilene: alle pi
ngis ben possible to him pat bile
uep / And anoon pe fadir of pe ch
ilde criede wiꝑ teeris & seide / lord
y bilene: lord help pou myn vnbi-
lene / And wanne he sawe pe
puple rēnyng to gidir: he manacid
de pe vnclene spirit · & seide to hym
pou deef & doūbe spirit: y comaūd
de pee go out fro hī · And entre no
moze in to hī / And he crieng & mych
to brepyngis hī: wente out fro
hī / And he was maad as deed: so
pat many seiden · pat he was de
ed / And ihc held his hoond & lift
hī up · & he roos / And wanne he ha
dde entrid in to an hous: his disci-
plis axiden hī priuely / Why myȝten
not we caste hī out: & he seide to
hem / pis kynde in no ping may
go out: but in preier & fastyng / &
peiȝeden fro pennȝ · & wenten forp
in to galilee: & pei wolde not pat
ony mā wiste / & he tauȝte his dis-
ciplis: & seide to hem / for mannis
sone schal be bitrayed in to pe hoo
nds of menn: & pei schulen sle hym /
And he slayn schal rise agen on
pe pridde daie / And pei knewen
not pe word: And dredden to axe
hym / And pei camen to capharna
ū & wanne pei weren in pe hous
he axide hem / what tretiden ȝe
in pe weie: & pei weren stille for
pei disputiden among hem in pe
weie: who of hem schulde be gre-
ttest / And he satt & clepide pe twe
lue: & seide to hem / if ony man
wole be pe firste among ȝou: he
schal be pe laste of alle · And pe

mynister of alle / And he toke a chyld & sette hym in ye myddil of me / And whanne he hadde vicluppid hym he seide to hem / Who euer resseyuep oon of suche children in myn name: he resseyuep me / & who euer resseyuep me: he resseyuep not me aloone but hym pat sente me / Joon answerde to hym & seide / maist we seyen oon casting out feendis in pi name which suep not us: & we han forbodun hym / & ye seide / nyle ze forbede hym / for þ is no man pat doip vertu in myn name: & may soone speke yuel of me / he pat is not azeyn us: is for us / And who euer zyuep zou a cuppe of cold water to drinke in my name · for ze ben of crist: treuly I seie to zou · he shal not lese his mede / And who euer shal hynder oon of pees litil pat bileuen in me: it were betir to him pat a mylne stoon · were doon about his necke · & he were cast in to pe see / And if pin hoonde shal hynder pee · kitte it a weie / it is betir to pee · to entre feble in to lijf: pan haue two hondis · & go in to helle · in to pe fier pat neuer shal be quenchid / where pe worme of hem dieþ not: And pe fier is not quenchid / And if pi foot shal hynder pee: kitte it of / it is betir to pee to entre · crokid in to euerlastyng lijf: pan haue tweye feet & be sente in to helle · of fier pat neuer shal be quenchid / where pe worme of hem dieþ not: & pe fier is not quenchid / And euery man shal be salted with fier: & euery sacrifice shal be maad sauery with salt / salt is good · if salt be vnsauery: in what ping shulen ze make it sauery / haue ze salt among zou: & haue pees among zou

And ihc roos up fro pennus: & cam in to pe coostis of iude ouer iordan / And eft soones pe puple cam to him / and as he was wont: eft soones he tauzte hem / And pe pharisees camen · & axiden him / wheper it be leeful to a man: to leue his wijf: And pei tempten him / & he answerde & seide to hem / what comaundide moises to zou: & pei seiden / moises suffride to write a libel of forsaking & to forsake · to which ihc answerde to hem and seide / for pe hardnes of zoure herte: moises wroot to zou pis comaundement / but fro pe bigy-

ynge of creature: god made
hem male & female & seide for
þis þing man shal leue his fa
dir & modir: and dwelle to his
wif & þei shulen be tweyne i
o fleisshe/ and so now þei be not
tweyne: but oo flesh/ þerfor þat
þing þat god ioynede to gidir:
noman departe/ And eft done
i þe hous: his disciplis axiden
hi of þe same þing/ And he sei
de to hem/ Who euer leuep his wif
& weddiþ anoþer: he doiþ auout
ry on hir/ And if þe wif leuep
hir housebonde & be weddid to a
noþer man· she doiþ lecherie/ and
þei brouȝten to hi litil children·
þat he shulde touche hem/ &
þe disciplis pretenede þe men·
þat brouȝten hem/ And whanne
iesus hadde seyn hem: he bar he
uy & seide to hem/ suffre ȝe lit
shal til children come to me: & forbe
de ȝe hem not/ for of suche is þe
kingdome of god/ treuly i seie
to ȝou who euer resseyue not þe
kingdome of god as a litil ch
ilde he shal not entre in to it/
& he biclupide hem & leide his
hoondis on hem & blesside hem/
And whanne iesus was gon out
in þe weie: a man ran biforn
& knelide biforn hi: & preyde hi
& seide/ good maist[er] what shal
i do: þat i resseyue euerlastyng
lijf: And iesus seide to hi/ what seist
þou þat i am good: þer is noman
good but god hi silf/ þou knowe
est þe comaundementis/ do not
non auoutrie· sle not· stele not·
seie not fals witnessing· do no
fraude: worshipe þi fadir & þi mo
dir/ And he answerde & seide to
hi/ maist[er] i haue kept alle þese
þingis: fro my ȝongþe/ And iesus
biheld hi: & louede hi/ & seide to
hi/ o þing failiþ to þee/ go þou
& selle alle þingis þat þou hast·
& ȝyue to pore men: & þou shalt
haue tresoure in heuene/ & come
& sue þou me/ And he was ful
sori in þe word· & went awei
mornyng/ for he hadde many
possessiouns/ And iesus biholde a
bouten & seide to his disciplis/ hou
hard þei þat han richessis:
shulen entre in to þe kingdome
of god/ And þe disciplis weren
astonyed in his wordis/ And iesus
eft sone answeride· & seide to
hem/ ȝe litil children hou hard
it is: for men þat triston in richi
essis to entre into þe kingdome
of god/ it is liȝter a camele to
passe þorou a nedlis iȝe: þan
a riche man to entre in to þe
kingdom of god/ And þei won
driden more & seiden among
hem silf/ And who may be sa
ued: & iesus biholde hem and seide/

Aneutis men it is impossible: but
not Anētis god for alle pingis
ben possible Aneutis god · & petir
bigan to seie to hī lo we han left
te alle pingis: & han suede pee
sīc Ansuerde & seide treuly y
seie to zou · per is nonā pat len
ep hous · or britþene or sistris or
fadir or modir · or childrē or feel
dis for me · & for pe gospel: which
shal not take An hundrid fold so
mychе now in pis tyme housis
& britþeu · & sistris & modris &
children & feeldis · with persecu
cioūs: & in pe world to comyng
euerlastyng lif but many shu
lē be pe firste: pe laste And pe laste
pe firste And pei weren in pe
weie going up to ierusaleem · &
jesus went bifor hem: & pei won
driden & folowdē & dreddē &
eft soone jhū toke pe twelue ·
& bigan to seie to hem what pi
ngis weren to come to hī for to
we stizen to ierusalē: & mānis sone
shal be bitrasied to pe princis of
prestis & to scribis & to pe eldere m
en · & pei shulen dāpne hym to
deep And pei shulē take hym:
to hepen unē: & pei shulē scorne
hi · & vispete hym · & bete hī &
pei shulen sle hi: & in pe pridde
dai he shal ryse azen And
Iames & Iohn zebedees sones:
camē to hi & seidē maist we
wolen · pat what eu we aren: pou
do to us And he seide to hem what
wolen ze pat y do to zou & pei seidē
graūte to us pat we sitten pe won
at pi rizthalf · & pe toper at pi left
half in pi glorie And jhc seide to hem
ze witen not what ze aren moū
ze drynke pe cuppe which y shal
drinke: or be we baptisid with pe bap
tym · with which y am baptisid: And
pei seidē to hī we moū & jhc seide
to hem ze shulē drinke pe cuppe
pat y drinke: & ze shulē be baptisid
with pe baptym · with which y am bap
tizid but to sitte at my rizthalf
or lefthalf: is not myn to zyue
to zou · but to which it is maad redy
And pe ten herden · & bigunnen to
haue indignacioū of Iames And
Iohn but jhc clepide hem & seide
to hē ze witē pat pei pt semē to
haue principat of folkis: ben
lordis of hem & pe princis of hem:
han power of hem but it is not
so among zou but who eu wole
be maad grett: shal be zoure
mynistre & who eu wol be pe fi
rste among zou: shal be serū
aūt of alle for whi mānis sone
cam not: pat it shulde be myn
istrid to hī but pat he shulde
mynistre: & zyue his lif azenbi
yng for many & pei women to
ieriho And whanne he zede fro
fro ieriho & his disciplis · & a gret

nyche puple: bartholyneus ably
nde man ye sone of thymey: satt
biddis ye weie & beggide & whan
ne he herde pat it is ihc of nazar
eth he bigan to crie & seie ihu ye
sone of dauy: haue mcy on me
& mampe pretiedē hi: pat he sch
ilde be stille And he criede mychc
pe more ihu ye sone of dauy:
haue mcy on me And ihc stood
& comaūdide hi: to be clepid &
pei clepen ye blynde man: & seie
to hi be p of bett herte rise up:
he clepip pee And he caste awe
ie his clop: & skippide & cam to hi
And ihc answerde & seide to hi
what woltt pou pat y schal do to
pee: pe blynde man seide to hi
maist: pat y se ihc seide to hi
go pou: pi feip hap maad pee sa
f And anoon he sawe: And su
ede hym in pe weie

And whanne ihc cam nyz
to ierlm & to betanye
to pe mount of olyues:
he sendip tweyne of his disciplis
& seip to hē go ze in to p castelle:
pat is azens zou And anoon as
ze entre per ze schulē fynde a colt
tyed on which no man hap sete
zit vnteyn ze & bringe hi & if
ony man seie ony ping to zou wh
at doon ze: seie ze pat he is nede
ful to pe lord & anoon he schal
leene hi hidir And pei zedē forp

& founden a colt teyd bifor pe zate
with out forp

in pe meting of tweyne weies &
pei vntiden hi & summe of hem pt
stoden pere seidē to hem what
don ze vntiyng pe colt & pei seidē
to hem: as ihc comaūdide hem
& pei lefton it to hem & pei bro
ugtē pe colt to ihu & pei leyden
on hi her clopis: & ihc satt on hi
And many strewedē her clopis
i pe weie opir mē kittiden braūch
is fro trees: & strewedē i pe weie
And pei pat wenten bifor & pat
sueden: criedeu & seiden osanna:
blessid is he pat comep i pe name
of pe lord blessid be pe kingdō
of oure fadir dauy: pat is comen
osanna: i hizest pingis And he
entride i to ierlm: i to pe tēple
& whanne he had sei al ping abo
ute whanne it was eue: he went
te out i to betanye with pe twel
ue & anoy daie whanne he wēte
out of betanie: he hungride &
whanne he hadde sayen a fyge
tre afer hauyng leues: he cam
if happily he schulde fynde ony
ping p on & whanne he cam to it:
he fond no ping out takn leues
for it was not tyme of figis &
ihc answerde & seide to it now
nemore ete ony mā fruyt of pe more
& hise disciplis herdē And pei
comen to ierlm And whanne he
was entrid i to pe temple: he bi
gan to caste out selleris and

bigger is in pe temple. And he
turnede up so doñ pe boordis
of chaungeris. & pe chayeris
of men pat solden culueris
And he suffride not pat ony m
an shulde bere ani vessel porou
pe temple. And he tauzte he
& seide. whep it is not writtiñ
pat myn hous shal be clepid
pe hous of preyng to alle folk
is. but ze han maad it. dõne
of penes. & whanne pis pyng
was herd. pe princis of prestis &
scribis. souzten hou pei shulde
dõ lese hi. for pei dredde him:
for al pe puple wondride on
his teching. And whanne eue
ning was come. he went
out of pe cite. And as pei pas
iden forp eerly. pei sayen pe fy
ge tre maad drie fro pe roote
is. And petir bipoynte him. &
seide to him. maist lo pe fyge
tree whom pou cursidist. is drie
ed up. And ihc answerde and
seide to hem. haue ze pe feip
of god. treuly I seie to zou. pt
whoeuer seip to pis hil. be pou
takn & cast in to pe see. & doutip
not in his herte but bileuep:
pt whateuer he seie shal be do
n. it shal be do to hi. for I seie
to zou. al pingis whateuer pin
gis ze praynge shulen axe. bi
leue ze pat ze shulen take. &
pei shulen come to zou. & whan
ze shulen stonde to pie. forzyue
ze if ze han ony pyng azen ony
man. pat zoure fadir pat is
in heuenes. forzyue to zou zoure
synnes. And if ze forzyuen not. nep
zoure fadir pat is in heuenes.
shal forzyue to zou zoure synnes.
And eftsoone pei comen to ierlm
And whanne he walkide in pe tep
le. pe hizeste prestis & scribis
& pe eldere men comen to hi & seien
to hi. in what power doist pu
pese pingis. or who zaf to pee pis
power. pat pou do pese pingis:
ihc answerde & seide to hem.
And I shal axe zou o word. And
answeri ze to me. & I shal seie
to zou in what power I do pese
pingis. whep was pe baptym
of ioon of heuen. or of men. answe
re ze to me. And pei pouzten wip
inne hem self. seiyng. if we seien
of heuen. he shal seie to us. whi
panne bileuen ze not to hi. if we
seien of men. we dreden pe pu
ple. for alle men hadden ioon.
pat he was verrily a profete.
And pei answerden & seien to
ihu. we witen not. & ihu answerde
& seide to hem. nep I seie to zou. in
what power I do pese pingis.

And he bigan to speke
to hem in parablis. A
man plauntide a vyne

zerd: & sette An hegge Aboute it
& dalf Alake. & bildide A toure
& hirde it to tylieris: & went
fer i pilgrymAge / And he sen
te to pe erytilieris i tyme A ser
Aunt to resseyne of pe erytili
eris. of pe fruyt of pe vyne
zerd / And pei token hym & beete:
And lefton hi voide / & eftsoon
e he sente to he Anop ser Aunt.
& pei woundide hym i pe heed.
& turmentide hi / And eftsoo
ne he sente Anop: & pei slowe
hi / And op mo betinge sume:
& sleyng opir / but zit he hadde
Amost deerworpe sone. & he sen
de hi last to hem & seide pei Aue
ture pei wolen drede my sone /
but pe erytilieris seide to gidur
pis is pe eyr / comeze sle we hi:
& pe eritage shAl be ourn And pei
token hi & kilde: And cAstide out
wip ouiten pe vynezerd / pAne
what shAl pe lord of pe vyneze
do: he shAl come & lese pe tilier
is: & zine pe vinezerd to op wh
eve ze hAn not red pis scripture.
pe stoon which pe bilderis hAn
despisid: pis is mAde in to pe he
ed of pe corner / pis ping is don
of pe lord: & is wondirful i ome
zen / And pei souzten to holde hi:
& pei dredde pe pople for pei kn
ewen: pAt to hem he seide pis
pArable / And pei leften hi: And
pei wenten Awei & pei sende to hi
sume of pe fariseis & erodiAns.
to take hi in word / which come
& seien to hi / mAist we witen
pat pou Art sopfast: & recchist
not of ony mAn / for nep pou
biholdest i to face of mA: but
pt techist pe wei of god i treupe
it is leeueful pAt tribute be
zouen to pe emperour: or we shu
le not zine: / which wityng her
pney falsnesse: seide to hem
what tempten ze me: / bringe
ze to me Apeny pAt y se / & pei
brozten to hi & he seide to he
whos is pis ymAge. & pe wry
ting: / pei seien to hi / pe emper
our / And ihc Answerde & seide
to he / pAne zelde ze to pe emper
our. po pingis pAt ben of pe
emperours / And to god: po
pingis pAt ben of god / And pei
wondride of hi / And mArueils
pAt seien: / pAt pis no reso
cioun: / Amen to hi & Axiden
hi & seiden / mAist moyses wr
oot to us / pAt if pe brop of m
An weve deed. & lefte his wijf
& hAue no sonn: his brop take
his wijf. & reise up seed to his
brop / pAne seue briper per we
ren: & pe first tok A wijf. & di
ede & lefte no seed / And pe secu
de took hir. & he diede. & neiper
pis lefte seed / & pe pridde Al so

And in lyk maner pe seuene tok
en hir: & lefton not seed & pe ibd
man pe laste of alle is deed vñ
ne i pe resurrectiõ. Whyñe pei
shulē vpsle ayen: whos wipe of
pees shal she be: for seuē hadde
hir to wipe & ihc answerde &
seide to hem wherze eyrē not
vfor: pat ze knowe not scriptu
ris. nep pe vtu of god: for wh
ñne pei shulē vpsle ayen fro de
ep: ny pei shulē wedde. neper
shulē weddid but pei shulen
be as aungelis of god in heuen
es And of deed men. pat peirisē
ayen. han ze not redd i pe book of
moyses on pe bynsh. hon god
spak to hi & seide: y am god of
Abrahan: & god of ysaac & god
of iacob he is not god of deed
men: but of lyuynge mē. yfor
ze erren mychc And oon of pe
scribis. pat hadde herd hem dis
putyng to gidir: cam nyz And
sez pat ihc hadde wel answeri
de hē. & axide hi. Whiche was
pe firste maundemēt of alle &
ihc answerde to hi: pat pe first
comaundemēt of alle. is here
pon israel: pi lord god is o god
& pon shalt lone pi lord god of
alle pin herte. & of al pi soule.
& of al pi mynde. & of al pi my
zt. pis is pe firste maundemēt
& pe secoñde is lyk to pis. pon
shalt lone pi neyboze. as pi self
. pis is noon op maundement gret
ter pañe pees And pe scribe sei
de to hi. mayst i treupe pon hast
wel seid. for o god is: & pis is noon
op out taki hi. pat he be loued
of al pe herte. & of al pe mynde.
& of al pe vndurstonding. & of
al pe soule. & of al strengpe &
to lone pi neyboze as hi self: is
gretter pañe alle bryut offring
is & sacrifices & ihc seyng pat
he hadde answerid wisely: seide
to hi. pou art not fer fro pe ky
ngdom of god And pañe no ma
durste axe hym. no more ony pi
ng & ihc answerde & seide techy
ng i pe temple. hou seien scribis
pat crist is pe sone of dauy: for
dauy hi self seide i pe hooly go
ost. pe lord seide to my lord: sitte
on my vrthalf til y put pin en
myes: pe stool of pi feet. pañe
dauy hi self clepip hi lord: hou
pañe is he his sone: & mychc
puple gladly herde hi & he seide
to hem i his teching. be ze war
of scribis pat wolen wandre
i stolis & be salutid i cheping. &
sitte i synagogis i pe firste dyse
sis & pe firste sittyng placis i
sopers. which denowē pe hon
dis of widowis: vndir colour
of long preyer. pei shulē take
pe lengere dome And ihc sittig

azen? pe tresorye: bihelde hou pe
puple kaste money i to pe trese
ry/ and many riche men kaste
many pingis/ but whanne a pore
widowe was comm: she keste
two mynutis· pat is a ferpyng/
and he clepide to gidir his disci
plis· & seide to hem/ treuly y sei
to you pat pis poore widowe kes
te more pane alle: pat kesten
i to pe tresorye/ for alle kesten
of pat ping pat pei haddē plen
te of/ but pis of hir power keste
all pig? p^t she hadde al hir lyflode

C. xiij. And whanne he wente
out of pe temple: oon
of his disciplis seide to
him/ maist? biholde what man
stoones· & what man bildingis/
& ihū answerde & seide to hym/
seest pou alle pees greet bildy
ng? p^t shal not be left a stoon
on a stoon: whiche shal not be
destroyed/ And whanne he satt
i pe mount of olyues· azen? pe
temple: petre & iames & ioon
& andrew a-side hi bi hi self: se
ie pou to us: whanne pees pingis
shulē be don/ and what toke
ne shal be: whanne alle pees pp
ingis shulē bigynne to be end
id/ and ihc answerde: & bigan
to seie to hem/ loke ze pat no
man disceyue you/ for many sh
ulē come i my name· seiyng p^t
y am: & pei shulen disceyue
many/ And whanne ze heere ba
telis & opynyouns of batels: dr
edeze not/ for it bihoueb pees
pingis to be don: but not zit a
noon is pe ende/ for folk shal
rise on folk· & reume on reu
me· And ercmouyngis & hungir
shulen be bi placis/ pese pingis
shulē be bigynnyngis of sorew
es/ but ze ze you self/ for pei sh
ulē take you i counsels: & ze shu
len be betun i synagogis/ and ze
shulen stoonde bifor kingis &
doueschē for me: i witnessing
to hem & it bihoueb pat pe gos
pel be first p^chid among alle
folk/ And whanne pei taken you
& lede you forp: vpleze bifore
penke what ze shulē speke/ but
speke ze pat ping pat shal be zo
un to you i pat our/ for ze bē not
pe spekeris: but pe hooly goo
st/ for a-brop shal bitake pe
brop i to deep· & pe fadir pe sone·
& son? shulē rise to gidir azen?
fadris & modris & pinysshe hē
bi deep/ And ze shulē be i hate
to alle men: for my name/ but
he pat lastip un to pe ende. sh
al be saaf/ but whanne ze shu
lē se pe abhominacioun of distru
xcioun stoonding where it oubt u
ot· he pat redip vndirstonde
pānne pei p^t ben i iudee: flee i to

hillis And he pat is Above pero
of: come not doñ nto pe hous
ney entre he to take ony ping
of his hous And he pat shal
be ī pe feeld: turne not azen bi
hynde to take his clop/ but ywo
to hem pat ben wip child And
nowsshen ī po dais/ pfor pie
ze pat pei be not don i wynt
but pilk dais of t'bulacioñ
shulē be siche wbiche nañ wbe
ren not fro pe bigynnyng of
creature wbich god hap ma
ad til now ney shulē be/ And
but pe lord hadde abreggid po
dais: al fleisshe hadde not be
saaf/ but for pe chosñ wbich he
chees: pe lord hap maad short
pe dais And pāne if ony mā
seie to zou lo heer is crist: lo
pere bilene ze not for fals cr
tis & fals profetis shulē ry
se: & shulen zyne tokenes &
wondris to disseyue if it ma
y be doñ pe hem pat ben chos
en/ pfor take ze kepe: lo y ham
e bifor seid to zou alle yngis
but ī po dais aft' pat tribula
cioñ pe sunne shal be maad
derk: & pe moon shal not zy
e hir list And pe sterris of
heuē falle doñ: & pe vertues
pat ben ī heuenes shulē be mo
uyd

shulen

pāne ben moued and shulen

glorie And panne he shal sende
his aungelis: & shal gedre his ch
osñ fro pe foure wyndis fro
pe hizest pyng of erpe: til to pe
hizest pyng of heuē but of pe
figge tre: lerne ze pe parable
wbāne now his braūche is
tendre & leeues ben sprongñ
out: ze knowē pat soñ is nyz
so wbāne ze seen pees pingis
be don: wite ze pat it is nyz
ī pe doris treuly y seie to zou
pat pis generacioñ shal not
passe albey: til alle pese ping
is be doñ heuen & erpe shulē
passe: but my wordis shulē
not passe/ but of pat dai or
our no mā woot ney aūge
lis ī heuē ney pe sone: but
pe fadir/ se ze wake ze & pie
for ze wite not: wbāne pe tym
e is/ for as a man pat is gon
ner ī pilgrimage lefte his
hous: & zaf to his seruaūtis
poiber of euery werk and
cōmaundide to pe porter: pt
he wake/ perfor wake ze/ for
ze witen not wbanne pe lord
of pe hous comep ī pe euyn
tide or at mydnyzt or at cok
is crowbyng: or pe morwyng
lest wbanne he come sodenly:
he fynde zou slepyng/ forsope
pat pat y seie to zou: y seie
to alle wake ze

Pask and ye feest of pert
loones: was aftir two dayes
and ye hizest pr
tes & scribis souzten: hou pei
schulden holde hi wip gile & cle
but pei seiden not i ye feeste
daie, lest peraunture a noyse
were maad among ye pnple
and wh̃ane he was at betany
e i ye hous of symoun leprous
& reste: a wom̃a cam pat hab
dde a voxe of alabast of preci
ous oynement spykenard &
wh̃ane ye voxe of alabast was
brokn̄ she helde it on his heed
but þ weren sum̃e pat weren it
heuely: wip in̄e he selfe & seide
wherto is pis losse of oynemẽt
maad: for pis oynemẽt myzte
hane be seld more pan̄e for
pre hundrid penis · & be zouen to
pore mẽ and pei grutchiden
azens hir but iesus seide suf
frez hir what beze heuy to
hir she hap wrouzt a good we
rk in̄e me for euermore ze schulen
hane pore men wip zou and
wh̃ane ze wolen ze moun do w
el to hem but ze schulen not ey
more hane me she dide pat þt
she hadde she cam biforz to a
noynte my bodie in to birying
treuly y seie to zou · wher eu
pis gospel be pchid in al pe wor
ld: & pat þt pis wom̃a hap don
schal be told in to mynde of hi
Judas skariothy oon of pe twelue:
wente to pe hizest preestis · to bi
trape hi to hem and pei herden &
iopeden · & bihizten to zine hym
money & he souzte hou he schul
de bitrape hi conenably and pe
firste daie of pert loones · wh̃a
ne pei offriden pask: pe disci
plis seyn to hi wher wilt pou
pat we gon & make redy to pee:
pat pou ete pe pask: and he se
ndip tweyn of his disciplis: &
seip to hem go ze in to pe citee:
& a man berynge a galoun of wa
tir · schal meete zou sue ze hi
and wher euere he entrip: seie
ze to pe lord of pe hous · pat pe
maist seip wher is myn etyng
place: wher y schal ete pask wit
my disciplis and he schal sche
we to zou a greet coupid pla
ce: arayed: & pere make ze redi
to us and his disciplis wenten
forp: & cam̃e in to pe citee · and
foũden as he hadde seid to hem
and pei maden redi pe pask and
wh̃ane pe enentyde was come:
he cam wip pe twelue & wh̃a
ne pei saten at pe mete & eeten:
ihũ seide treuly y seie to zou:
pat oon of zou pat etip wip me
schal bitrape me and pei bigũ
nen to be sori & to seie to hym
ech bi hem selfe wher y: which

seide to hem oon of thelne: pat
puttip pe hoond thip mete me pe pl
ater And sopely mañ sone go
ip: As it is writtē of hī but wo
to pat mā: bi whō mañ sone
shal be betrayed it were good
to hī: if pilke man hadde not be
borē ¶ whyle pei eeten: ihc took
breed ¶ blessid ¶ brak ¶ zaf to
hem ¶ seide take ze pis is my
body And whanne he hadde take
pe cuppe: he dide pankingis ¶
zaf to hem And alle dronken p
of ¶ he seide to hē pis is my blo
od of pe newe testamēt: which
shal be shed for many treuly
y seie to zou for now y shal not
drynke of pis fruyt of vyne:
in to pat daye whanne y shal
drynke it newe in pe rewme
of god And whanne pe ympne
was seid: pei wenten out in to
pe hil of olyues ¶ ihc seide to hē
alle ze shulē be sclaūdrid in me
in pis nyzt: for it is writtē p
shal smyte pe sheephirde: And
pe sheep of pe flock shulē be
dispurplid but aft pat y shal
rise azen: y shal go bifor zou
in to galile ¶ petir seide to hym
pouz alle shulen be sclaūdrid:
but not y And ihc seide to hym
treuly y seie to pee pat to daye
bifore pat pe cok crowe twyes
thryes: pou shalt
denye me but he seide more pouz
it bihoney pat y dye to gidir with
pee: y shal not forsake pee And
lyk man: Alle seidē ¶ pei camē
in to a place: whos name is geth
semany And he seide to his dis
ciplis sitte ze heer: whyle y pri
And he took petre ¶ iames And
oon with hym: ¶ bigan to drede
¶ to be anoyed And he seide to
hē my soule is sorowful to pe
deep abide ze heere: ¶ wake ze
with me And whanne he was gon
forp a litil: he felde doū on pe
erpe ¶ prayde pat if it myzte be
pat pe our shulde passe fro hī
And he seide Abba fadir alle y
ingis ben possible to pee: beve
oū fro me pis cuppe but not
pat y wole: but pat pou wolt
be don ¶ he cam ¶ foond hē slep
ynge And he seide to petir symo
un clepist pou: myzтest pou
not wake with me oon our: wa
ke ze ¶ praye ze: pat ze entre not i
temptacioū for pe spirit is re
dy: but pe fleish is syk And
eft soone he zede ¶ prayde ¶ seide
pe same word And turnede azē
eftsoone ¶ foond hē slepynge
for her yzen weren heuyed: And
pei knewen not what pei shul
den answere to hī ¶ he cam pe
pridde tyme: ¶ seide to hem sle
pe ze now ¶ reste ze it suffisip

ye our is comũ: lo mani? one
shal be betrayed in to ye hou
dis of synful men/ ryse ze: go
we/ lo he yat shal betraye me:
is uyz And zit while he spak:
iudas schariothi oon of ye twel
ue cam & wip hi mychc puple
wip swerdis & staues: sent fro
ye hizest pstis & ye scribis & fro
ye elder men And his traytour
hadde zouñ to hem a token/ &
seide/ whom eũ y kisse: he it is
holde ze hi: & lede ze warly/ And
whãne he cam: anoon he come
to hi & seide maist? And he kis
de hi & pei leiden hoondis on hi:
& helde hi/ but oon of pe mẽ yt
stoden aboute· drouz out a swe
rde· & smote ye seruaũt· of ye
hizest preest· & kittide of his eer·
& ihc answerde & seide to hem
as to a peef ze han gon out wip
swerdis & staues: to take me/
daye bi daie y was among zou
& tauzte i ye temple: & ze helde
me not/ but yat pe scripturis
be fulfillid/ pãne alle his disci
plis forsoken hi & fledden/ but
a zong man clopid wip lynnen
clop on ye bare siede hi/ & pei
heldẽ hi/ And he lefte ye lynen
cloping & flei· naki? awei fro
hem/ And pei leddẽ ihũ to ye
hizest preest/ And alle ye pstis
& scribis & eldere men: comen

to gider/ but petir sued hym afer
in to pe halle of ye hizest preest
And he sat wip ye mynistris:
& warmed hi at pe fier/ and pe
hizeste pstis & alle pe counsel sou3
ten wytnessing azen? ihũ: to ta
ke hi to pe deep· but pei foũden
not/ for many seiden fals wit
nessing azen hi: & pe wytnes
singis weren not couenable
and sum risen up & bare fals
wytnessyng azen hi & seide
for we han herd hym seyng
y schal vndo pis tẽple maad
wip hoondis· and after pe
pridde daye y schal bilde an
op not maad wip hoondis
And pe wytnessing of hem
was not couenable And pe
hizest preest roose up i to pe
myddil & axide ihũ & seide An
swerist pou no ping to po pi
ngis: pat ben putt azen? pee
of peese: but he was stille:
& answerde no ping eftsoo
ne pe hizest pst axide hi and
seide to him Art pou crist pe
sone of pe blisful god: & ihũ
seide to hym y am And ze sch
uleu se man? sone sittyng on
pe riztsalf of pe vertu of god:
& comyng i pe cloudis of he
uen/ and pe hizest pst to reu
te his clopis· & seide/ what
zit desiren we wytnessis: ze

hym herd blaſfemye what ſeme
ep to zou. & pei alle condẽpnedẽ
hi to be gilty of deep and ſume
bigunnen to biſpete hi & to hile
his face & to ſmyte hi wip bur
fetis: & ſeie to hi areede pou
and pe vpmoſtres beten hym
wip ſtrokis & whanne petir w
as i pe halle vnepen: oon of
pe damyſels of pe hizeſt p̃ſt
cam & whanne ſche hadde ſeẽ
pet warmyge hi: ſche bihel
de hi & ſeide and pou wer wt
ihũ of nazareth and he denp
ed & ſeide nei y woot: nei y
knowe: what pou ſeiſt and
he weute wipoute forp bifore
pe halle: & anoon pe cok crew
e & eftſoone whanne aungel
damyſel hadde ſeen hi: ſche
bigan to ſeie to mẽ pat ſtodẽ
aboute pat pis is of hem &
he eftſoone denyede & aftir
a litil eftſoone pei pat ſtodẽ
ayn: ſeidẽ to petir verily pou
art of hẽ for pou art of gali
lee alſo but he bigan to cur
ſe & to ſwere for y knowe not
pis man whom ze ſeizen & anoõ
eftſones pe cok crew and pe
tir bipoute on pe word pat
ihc hadde ſeid to hym bifor
pe cok crowe twyes: pries
pou ſchalt denye me and
he bigan to wepe

And anoon i pe morewhy
de pe hizeſt p̃ſtis maden
a coũſeil wip pe eldere
men & pe ſcribis and wip al pe
coũſeil & bouden ihũ & ledden &
bitoken hym to pilat and pilat
axide hi art pou king of iewis:
& ihc answerde & ſeide to him
pou ſeiſt and pe hizeſt preeſtis
accuſeden hi in many pingis:
but pilat eftſoone axide him
& ſeide answerſt pou no ping:
ſeeſt pou in hou many pingis.
pei accuſen pee: pilat wondride
but bi pe feeſte dape he was wt
out to leeue to hem oon of mẽ
bouñdi: whom eũ pei axiden
and oon per was pat was ſeid
barabas pat was bouñdi wt
mẽ of diſſencioñ: pat haddeu
don manſlaut i ſedicioñ and
whanne pe puple was gon up:
he bigan to pie as he euere
ze dide to hem & pilat answe
rde to hem & ſeide woleu ze y
leue to zou pe king of iewis:
for he wiſte pat pe hizeſt preeſ
tis haddẽ taki hi bi envye
but pe biſchopis stereden pe
puple: pat he ſchulde raper
leue to hem barabas and eft
ſoone pilat answeride & ſeide
to hem what pãne woleu ze:
pat y ſchal do to pe king of
iewis and pei eftſoone cridẽ

crucifye hi but pilat seide to
hem what yuel hap he dou: &
pei criеden pe more crucifie
hi And pilat willing to make
aseep to pe puple: lefte to he
barabas And bitok to he ihū
betid with stourgis to be cruc
fied And knyztis ledden hym
with ine karp · i to pe parche of
pe mote halle And pei cleped
eu to gidir al pe coupany of
knyztis: & clopiden hi with pur
pur And pei writeu aboue hi
ne of pecues & puttiden on hi
And pei bigunneu to greete hi:
& seiden heyle pou kyng of iew
is And pei smyten his heed wt
reede: & bispatten hi And pei
knelideu · & worshipiden hym
And aft' pat pei hadden stern
ed hi: pei vnclopeden hym of
purpur · & clopiden hym with
his clopis And ledden out hym:
to crucifie hi & pei compelled
eu Ruſa pat passide pe weye·
pat cam fro pe toū symoū
of syrenen pe fadir of Alisaū
dir & of ruke to bere his croſſ
And pei ledden hi i to aplace
golgatha · pat is to seie pe pla
ce of caluery & pei zaue to hi
to drynke wyne medlid with
myrre: And he took not And
pei crucifiden hi And depar
tiden his clopis & keſten lott
on po who schulde take what
And it was pe pridde our · And
pei crucifyden hi And pe titil
of his cause was writtū: kyng
of iewis And pei crucifieu
with hi · twey peues: oon at pe
rizthalf · & oon at his lefthalf
And pe scripture was fulfillid
pat seip And he is ordeyned
with wicked mен And as pei
passiden forp · pei blaſſemede
hi: movyng her heedis · & seip
ng vaye pou pat distreſt pe
temple of god: & in pre daies
bildist it azen come adoū fro
pe croſſ · & make pi self saf
also pe hizest preestis · storue
den hi ech to oy with pe scribis
& seiden he made opir men
saaf: he may not saue hi self
crist kyng of isrl come doū n
ow fro pe croſſ: pat we seen
& bileue And pei pat weren
crucified with hi: dispisede hi
And with pine pe sixte our was
come: derknessis weren maad
ad ou al pe erpe · til i to pe nyn
pe our And in pe nynpe our
ihc criede with a greete voice · &
seide heloy · heloy · lamma sabA
tany · pt is to seie · my god · my
god · why hast pou forsaki me:
And sum of pe pat stoden
aboute · herden & seiden lo he
clepip hely And oon ran and

fw

Allide asponge wip pe vynegre
& puttiden about to a rehed · &
zaf to hi drynke & seide · suffre
ze se we if help come to do hym
doun / And ihc zaf out a gret
cry · & dyede And pe veil of pe
temple was rent atwo · fro pe
hizest to binepe / but pe centur
ien pat stood fore azeyn3 hi3 · pat
he so crying hadde died · & seide
verily pis man was goddis
sone / And pei weren alle wipin
ea · biholding fro afer: among
which was Marie magdeleyn ·
& Marie pe modir of iames
pe lesse & of ioseph · & of salome
& whanne ihc was in galile: pei
folewedē hi · & ministredē to hi
And many op̄ pynē: pat comen
up to gidir wip hi to ierusa
lem And whanne euentid was
come · for it was pe euentid · w
hich is bifore pe sabat: ioseph
of Aramath pe noble decurion
cam And he: abood pe reume
of god And boldly he entride to
pilat: & axide pe bodi of ihu
but pilat wondride · if he wer
now deed / And whanne pe centu
rion was clepid: he axide hym
if he were deed / And whanne he
knewe of pe centurion: he gaf
the bodi of ihu to ioseph /
And ioseph bouzte lynen clop · &
tok hi doun: & wlappide in pe
lynnen clop / And leide hi in a
pulcre pat was hewen of a stoon
And walewide a stoon to pe dore
of pe sepulcre / And marie ma
gdeleyne & marie of ioseph: be
helden where he was leyd
And whanne pe sabat w
as passid: marie ma
gdeleyne & marie of
iames & salome · bouzten swete
smellynge oynementis to come
& to anoynte ihu And ful eerly
on of pe woke dayes: pei ca
men to pe sepulcre · whanne pe
sunne was risen And pei seiden
to gidir who schal meue a wey
to us pe stoon: fro pe dore of pe
sepulcre: & pei bihelden & sayen
pe stoon walewed awey for it
was fulgrete And pei zeden in
to pe sepulcre & sayen a zongling.
hild wip a white stole · sittyng
at pe rizthalf · & pei weren a
feerd which seip to hem uple
ze dreede ze seken ihu of naza
reth crucified: he is risen he is
not heer lo pe place where pei
leyden hym but go ze · & seie ze
to his disciplis & to petre: pat
he schal go bifore zou in to galile
pere ze schulen se hi: as he sei
de to zou / And pei zeden out &
fledden fro pe sepulcre for dre
de & quakyng: hadde astoyed
hem And to no man pei seiden

ony þing for þei dredden and
ihc rood eerly þe firste daye of
þe weke & apperide first to ma
rie magdelepne fro whom
he hadde cast out seuene deue
lis And she zede & tolde to hem
þat hadden be with hi whiche
weren weilinge & wepinge &
þei herynge þat he lyuede: And
was seien of hir vnbileuede not
but after þees þingis whanne
tweyn of he wandriden: he
was shewid in anoþir liknesse
to hem goyng in to a toñ And
þei zeden & tolden to þe opir &
neþer þei bileuede to hem but
at þe laste whanne þe enleuene
disciplis sate at þe mete: ihc ap
peride to hem & repnede þe vn
bilene of he: & þe hardnesse of
herte for þei bileuede not to
hem: þat hadden seyn þat he
was risñ fro deep And he seide
to he go ze in to alle þe world: and
preche þe gospel to eche creatur
e: who þat bileueþ & is bapti
sid: shal be saaf but he þat
bileueþ not shal be dampned
And þese tokenes shulen sue
hem þat bileuen in my name:
þei shulen caste out feendis þei
shulen speke with newe tongis
þei shulen do awey serpentis
And if þei drynke ony venymi:
it shal not nope hem þei sch

uleu sette her hondis on syk men:
& þei schulen ben hoole And þe
lord ihñ after he hadde spokñ
to hem: was takñ up into heue
ne And he sittiþ on þe rizthalf
of god And þei zeden forþ & prche
den euery where: for þe lord wro
te with hem And confermede þe
word with signes folewyng:
here endiþ mark:: And here
bigynneþ aplogie ou lnk

Luyk was a man of syrie
bi nacioñ & of Antiochie:
And was a leche in craft:
And a disciple of apostlis after
ward he suede poul til to his
ending: & seruede god & was
with out gweet synne: for neuer
he hadde a wijf in ony tyme: neþ
children: & he died in fulfyue
at lxxxiij. zeer: And was ful of
þe hooly goost And whanne gos
pels weren writtñ bi mathew
in iudee & bi mark in ytalie: luyk
bi stirynge of þe hooly goost wro
ot þis gospel: in þe cõtreis of
achaye þe moste nede of his tra
uel was þis þat þe vnlerned
of ẽst schulde be oppu to feiþ
ful grekis: bi alle profetis þat
god schulde come in fleisch þt is
to schewe bi alle profetis: þt ẽst
schulde be god & mã to gidere
left ẽsten grekis token heede
to þe fablis of ielwis: & were

holdñ in desir aloone of mons es laue & luyk trauelide left eþ per wherein dissepned bi fab lis of eretikis & fõned stelpis: & felden albeye fro treupe þis luyk bigynneþ at þe conceptiõ & natiuyte of ioon baptist & destruyeþ þe natiuite & baptyþ & þching of cst & his dep and rising azen & assencaoñ & ieu oun i þis prologe ou luyk: ley pleyuli þis sentence

Cap. ¶ In þe daies of erode kyng of iude per was a þst of þe cost abia & his wyf was of þe dou ters of aaron: & hir name was elizabey And boþe were iust biforn god: goynge in alle þe maũdements & iustifyn gis of þe lord wiþ outè pleynt & þe hadde no child for elizab eth was barevn & boþe were of greet age in her daies & it bifel þat in þe ordre of his cours to for god after þe custome of þe þsthode: he went forþ bi lot & entride i to þe temple to encensen & al þe multitude of þe puple was wiþ out forþ & þide in þe our of incensyng & an aũgel of þe lord apperide to hi: & stood on þe rizthalf of þe aut of incense

And zacarie seyng was affrai ed & drede fel vpon hi And þe aũgel seide to hi zacarie drede þou not: for þi þier is herd & elizabeth þi wyf shal bere to þee a sone: & his name shal be clepid ioon And ioye & gladyng shal be to þee: & manyf shulẽ haue ioye i his natiuite for he shal be grete bifor þe lord: And he shal not drynke wyn ne sidr. & he shal be fulfillid wiþ þe holy goost zit of his modir wõbe & he shal cõuerte many of þe childrẽ of isrl: to her lo rd god And he shal go bifor hi i þe spirit & þe vertu of he ly: & he shal turne þe hertis of þe fadris i to þe sones and inẽ out of bileue to þe prude nce of iust men to make redi a perfit puple to þe lord And zacary seide to þe aũgel wherof shal y wite þis for y am eld: & my wyf hath gon fer in hir daies And þe aũgel answer de & seide to hi ffor y am gabri el þat stoonde nyz bifor god: & y am sent to pee to speke & to euũgelize to pee þese þingis And lo þou shalt be doũbe & þou shalt not mowe spekc til i to þe daye i which þees þi ngis shulẽ be don: for þou hast not bileued to my wordis

Whiche shulen be fulfillid i her
tyme And pe puple was abidy
ng zacary: & pei wondriden pt
he tariede i pe tẽple And he zede
out & myzte not speke to hem:
& pei knewen pat he hadde sey
nacioũ i pe tẽple And he bek
nede to hẽ And he dwellide stil
le doũb ¶ And it was doũ whã
pe dayes of his office were
fulfillid: he went in to
his hous/ And after pese dayes
elizabeth his wyf conceyuede:
& hidde hir fyue monepis And
seide for so pe lord dide to me:
i pe dayes i which he bihelde to
take awey my repreue amoġ
mẽ ¶ But i pe sixte monepe pe
aũgel gabriel was sent fro
god: i to a citee of galile· whos
name was nazareth/ to a mai
dẽ wedded to a man: whos n
ame was ioseph· of pe hous
of dauid/ And pe name of pe
maydẽ was marie/ & pe aũg
el entride to hir: & seide/ heil
ful of grace· pe lord be wt pee·
blessid be pou among wymẽ
And whãne she hadde herd
she was troublid in his word
& pouzte what man salutaci
oũ pis was/ And pe aũgel se
ide to hir/ ne drede not pou
marie for pou hast foũdun
grace anentis god lo pu shalt
conceyue in wombe & shalt
bere a sone: & pou shalt clepe
his name ihc/ pis shal be gre
te: & he shal be clepid pe sone
of pe hizeste And pe lord god shal
zine to hi· pe sete of dauid
his fadir: & he shal regne in
pe hous of iacob wip outẽ ende
And of his reume: shal be no
on eende/ & marie seide to pe aũ
gel on what man shal pis yy
ng be don: for y knowe not
man/ And pe aũgel answeri
de & seide to hir/ pe holy goost
shal come fro aboue i to pee:
& pe vertu of pe hizest shal
ouershadowe pee/ And þfor pt
hooly þing pat shal be borũ
of pee: shal be clepid pe sone
of god/ And lo elizabeth pi cosyn:
& she also hap conceyued a
sone i hir elde/ And pis monep
is pe sixte to hir pat is clepid
bareyn: for eny word shal not
be impossible anentis god/ &
marie seide/ lo pe hand maidẽ
of pe lord: be it don to me af
tir pi word/ And pe aũgel de
partide fro hir ¶ And marie
roose vp in po dayes & wẽte
wip haste in to pe mountaynes
in to a citee of iudee/ And she
entride in to pe hous of za
carie: & grette elizabeth/ &
it was don as elizabeth her

de ye ſalutacioñ of marie: ye
ȝonge childe in hir wombe gla
dide and elizabeth was fulfi
lld wip ye hooly goost: & cri
de wip a gret voice & ſeide
blellid be pou among wymen:
& blellid be ye fruyt of pi wo
be/ and whens of is dis ping
to me: pat ye modir of my lor
d come to me: for lo as ye voi
ce of pi ſalutacioñ was maad
i myn eris: pe ȝonge childe gla
dide i ioye i my wombe & blel
lid be pou pat haſt bileued: for
pilk pingis pat ben ſeid of pe
lord to pee ſchulen be perfitly
don/ and marie ſeide. Mi ſo
ule magnyfiep pe lord/ and
my ſpirit hap gladdid: i god
myn helpe/ for he hap biholdū
pe mekenelle of his handma
yden. for lo of dis: alle gene
racioñs ſchulen ſeie pat y am
blellid/ for he pat is mygtī hap
doñ to me grete pingis: and
his name is hooly/ and his
mercy is fro kynrede i to kyn
redis: to men pat dreden hyȝ/
he made myȝt i his arme: he
ſchateride proude men wip
pe pouȝt of his herte/ he sette
doñ mygty men fro sete: and
enhaūſide meke men/ he hap
fulfillid hungry mē wip good
is: & he hap left ridye men
voyde/ he hauyng mynde of his
mercy: toke i ſirl his child as he
hap spokē to oure fadris: to ab
raham & to his seed i to worldis
and marie dwellide wip hir as
it were pree monepis: & turnede
azen i to hir hous. but pe tyme
of beryng childe was fulfillid to
elizabeth: & ſche bare a ſone and
pe neizebores & cosyns of hir her
den. pat pe lord hadde magnye
fiede his mercy wip hir: & pei gā
ſeden hī/ and it was don i pe
eiȝte daye pei comen to circūcide
pe childe: & pei clepiden hī zacha
rie bi pe name of his fadir/ &
his modir answerde & seyde nay
but he ſchal be clepid ioon/ and
pei seiden to hir: for no mā is i
pi kynred. pat is clepid pis name
and pei bekeneden to his fadir:
what he wolde pat he were cle
pid/ and he axyng a poyntel: wro
te seiyng/ ioon is his name/ and
alle men wondriden/ & anoon
his mouþ was opened/ and his
tunge: & he spak. & blellid god/ &
drede was maad on alle her
neizbores: & alle pese wordis
weren pupplischid on alle pe
mountaynes of iudee/ and alle
mē pat herden puttiden i her
herte: & seiden what manner
child ſchal pis be: for pe hond
of pe lord was wip hī/ and za

cary his fadir was fulfillid wt
ye holy goost: & profecied and
sede ¶ blessid be ye lord god
of israel: for he hath visitade &
maad redempcoñ of his pup
le and he hath revide to us an
horn of heelpe: i ye hous of da
uy his child as he spake bi ye
mouy of his hooly profetis:
pat were fro ye world helpe
fro onve enmyes: & fro ye ho
ond of alle men pat hatiden
us to do mgy wip oure fadris:
& to haue mynde of his hooly
testament pe greet op pat he
swoor to abrahaam oure fadir:
to zine hi self to us pat we
wipout dreede delyuerid fro
ye hoond of oure enmyes: ser
ne to hi in hoolynesse and ri
twisnesse bifor hi: i alle oure
daies and pou child schalt be
depid ye profeet of ye hizest:
for pou schalt go bifor ye face
of ye lord to make redi his we
pes to zine science of helpe to
his puple: i to reuussioñ of
her synn bi ye mvardnesse
of ye mcy of oure god: in ye
wisch he sprygynge up fro
an hyz hap visitid us to zine
list to hem pat sitten in derk
nessis: & i schadowe of deep
to dresse oure feet: in to ye w
eie of pees and ye child wexi
de: & was confortid i spirit and
was in desert placis til to ye dai
of his schewing to israel

¶ And it was don i po da
pes amaundement we
nte out fro ye emper
our augist: pat al ye world sch
ulde be discryued pis first dis
crynyg was maad of cryn
ustius of syrye and alle men
wente to make professioñ: ech
in to his owen citee and ioseph
weute up fro galile fro ye citee
nazareth i to iude i to a citee
of dauy pat is clepid bethlee
for pat he was of ye hous &
of ye meyne of dauy: pat he
schulde knouleche wip marie
his wyf pat was weddid to
hi & was greet wip childe & it
was don whyle pei were pere:
ye daies were fulfillid pt she
schulde bere childe & she bare
hir first borñ sone and wlap
pide hi in clopis: & leide hi in
a cracche for p was no place to
hi i no chaunbir ¶ and schipher
dis were i ye same cñtre: wa
kynge & kepynge ye wardis of
ye nyzt ou her flock and lo ye
aungel of ye lord stoode bisidis
hem: & ye clerenesse of god schy
ned aboute hē & pei dredden wt
grete dreede and ye aungel sei
de to hē nyle ze dreede for lo

C. ij.

y preche to zou · Agrete ioye · pt
shal be to al puple for a stuy
ou' is bꝛũ to daye to zou: pat
is crist pe lord ī pe citee of da
uid And pis is a token to zo
u ze shal fynde a zong child·
wlappid ī clopis: & leyd ī a cra
che & suddenly p' was mad
wip pe aũgel a multitude of
heuenly knyztlhode: heripge
god & seipge Glorie be in pe
hizeste pingis to god: & ī erpe
pees be to mẽ of good wille
And it was don · as pe aũge
lis passiden awey fro hẽ in to
heuẽ: pe shipherdis spakẽ to
gidir & seidẽ go we oũ to beth
leme: & se we pis word pt is
maad · which pe lord hap ma
ad · & shewide to us And pei
hizynge camẽ: & foũdũ ma
rie & ioseph · & pe zong child
leyd ī a cracche And pei seyn
ge kneliden of pe word pt was
seid to hẽ of pis child & alle
mẽ pat herdẽ wondridẽ: &
of pees pingis pat weren sewd
to hẽ of pe shipherdis but ma
rie kepte alle pese wordis:
berynge to gidir ī hir herte
And pe shipherdis turneden
azen glorifyinge & heripge
god ī alle pingis pat pei had
dẽ herd & seyn: as it was
seid to hem ¶ And aft' pt pe
eizte daies weren endid · pat pe
child shulde be circũcidid: his
name was clepid ihc which is
as clepid of pe aũgel: bifor pt
he was conceyued ī wõbe ¶ &
aft' pat pe daies of pe purgaci
oũ of marie weren fulfillid af
tir moyses lawe: pei token hi
ī to ierlim to offre hym to pe
lord · as it is writtũ ī pe lawe
of pe lord for euy male kynde
openyge pe wõbe: shal be cle
pid hooly to pe lord And pat
pei shulde zyue an offeryng·
aft' pat it is seid ī pe lawe of
pe lord · a peyre of turturis·
or tweyn culuer briddis And lo
a man was ī ierlim · whos name
was symeon & pis man was
iust & ꝛtelwis · & abode pe cõ
forte of israel And pe hooli goost
was in hi & he hadde taken an
answer of pe hooly goost pat
he shulde not see deep: but
he saiz first pe crist of pe lord
And he cam in spirit ī to pe tẽp
le And whanne his fadir & mo
dir ledden pe child ihũ to do af
tir pe custom of pe lawe for
hi: he took hi ī to his armes·
& he blessid god & seide lord
now pou leuest pi seruaũt·
aft' pi word ī pees for myn yen
han seyn pyn heelpe which
pou hast maad redye · bifor

ye face of alle puples liȝt to
ye schewyng of hepen men: &
glorie of yi puple israel And his
fadir & his modir weren wond
ynge on pees pingis pat were
sayd of hym And symeon ble
sside hem: & seide to marie his mo
dir lo pis is sett in to ye fallyng doun & in to ye risyng azen
of many men in israel: & in to a token
ne to whom it schal be azensayd
And swerd schal passe porou yi
owne soule: pat pe pouȝtis be
schewed of many hertis And
anna was a profetesse ye douȝ
tir of fanuel of ye lynage of
aser And she hadde gon forp in
many daies: & hadde lyued wyt
hir hosebond seuen ȝer fro hir
maydenhode And pis was a
widowe: to foure score ȝer &
four And she departide not
fro ye temple: but seruede to
god nyȝt & dai in fastingis And
preyeris And pis cam in pat hem
in pilk our: & knowlechide to
ye lord & spak of him to alle pt
abiden ye redempcioun of israel &
as pei hadden fulfild alle pingis
after ye lawe of ye lord: pei tur
neden azen in to galile in to her ci
te nazareth And ye child wax
& was confortid ful of wisdom:
& ye grace of god was in hym
And his fadir & modir weren

ech ȝeer in to ierusalem: in ye solep
ne daye of pask And whanne
he was twelue ȝeer olde pei
weenten up to ierusalem after ye
custom of ye feeste daye And
whanne ye dayes weren don pei
turneden azen & ye child abod
in ierusalem & his fadir & modir knu
ween it not for pei gessinge
pat he hadde be in ye felow
schip came a dayes iourney
& souȝten hym among his
cosyns & his knowleche And
whanne pei founden him not: pei
turneden azen in to ierusalem &
souȝten hym And it bifelle pt
after ye pridde daye pei founden
him in ye temple: sittynge in ye my
dil of ye doctouris herynge
hem & axynge hem And alle
men pat herden him: wondriden
on ye prudence & ye answer
is of him And pei seyn & wondri
den And his modir seide to him:
sone what haste pou do to us
pus lo yi fadir & y sorowynge:
han souȝte pee And he seide to
hem what is it pat ȝe souȝten me:
wisten ȝe not pat in po pingis pt
ben of my fadir: it bihoueth me
to be: & pei vnderstoden not pe
word: which he spak to hem And
he cam doun with hem & cam to
nazareth: & was suget to hem
And his modir kepte to gidir

Alle pese ibordis: & bare hem i
hir herte And ihc profitide in
ibisdom & grace: And ꝺ god
And men

C. iij. In pe fiftenpe zeer of pe empi
re of tyberie pe emperoure
Ihane pilat of ponte gouue
de iudee & eroude was prince
of galile & filip his broper
was prince of iturie & of pe cã
tre of trachon & lisanye was
prince of abilyn vndir pe pry
as of pistis annas & cayfas:
pe word of pe lord was maad
on ioon pe sone of zacarie in
desert/ and he cam i to al pe
cũtre of iordan: & prchide bap
tym of penaũce in to remis
sioñ of synn as it is writtẽ
in pe book of pe wordis of isa
ye pe profete/ pe vois of a cry
er ĩ desert/ make ze redy pe we
y of pe lord: make ze his pap
is rizt/ ech valey schal be fil
filld: & ech hil & litil hil schal
be maad lowe/ And schrewid
pingis schulẽ be i to dressid pi
ngis: & scharp pingis i to pleȝ
weyes/ And ech flesche schal
se pe heelpe of god/ perfor he
seide to pe puple which wẽte
out to be baptisid of hĩ/ kyn
dlyngis of ederis: who schewe
wide to zou· to fle fro pe wr
appe to comynge: ꝑfor doze
worpi fruytis of penaũce: And
bigynneze not to seie· we haue a
fadir abraham/ for ich seie to zou:
pat god is mizti to reyse of pese
stoones pe sonȝ of abraham &
now an axe is sette to pe roote
of pe tre And ech tre pat
makip no good fruyt schal be
kitt doñ: & schal be cast i to pe fi
er/ And pe puple axide hĩ: & seidẽ
what pane schulẽ we do: he an
swerde & seide to hẽ he pat hap
twey cootis: ȝyue to hĩ pat hap
noon/ And he pat hap metes do
ĩ lyk maneer/ And puplicans ca
men to be baptisid: & pei seidẽ
to hĩ/ maist what schulẽ we do:
& he seide to hẽ/ doze no pyng m
ore pan pat pt is ordeyned to
zou/ And knyztis axidẽ hĩ and
seidẽ/ what schulẽ also we do:
& he seide to hẽ/ smyte ze wron
gfully no maneer· ne make ze fals
chaleuge: & be ze apayed wip
zoure soudis/ whanne alle pe pu
ple gessiden & alle men pouȝten
ĩ here hertis of ioon· lest pera
nẽture he were cryst: ioon answe
ride & seide to alle men/ y bapti
ze zou i watir/ but a stronger
pan y schal come aft me: of
whom y am not worpi to vnlo
se pe lace of his schoon/ he sch
al baptize zou i pe hooly goost
& fier/ whos wynewing tool

in his hoond: & he shal purge his floor of corn & shal gadre pe whete in to his berne: but pe chaffis he shal brēne · with fir vnquenchabil/ and many oþ þingis alsō he spak & þchide to pe puple. But eronde tho[se] ark whānne he was blamed of woon · for erodias pe wijf of his brop · & for alle pe yuels pat eronde dide: encreside pis oon alle · & schitte woon i þsoñ. And it was don whānne all pe pup le was baptisid · & whānne ihū was baptisid & þide: heuene was opened/ and pe hooly goost cam doñ i bodily lickenesse: as a dowue on hi/ and a voic was maad fro heuene · pou art my deer wœpe sone: i pe it hap ple sid to me/ and ihū hi silf was big3ynynge as of pritti 3eer/ pat he was gessid pe sone of ioseph/ which was of hely: which was of matthi/ which was of leuy/ which was of melchi/ pat was of ānne/ pat was of ioseph/ pat was of matatie/ pat was of amos/ pat was of naum/ pat was of hely/ pat was of nagge/ pat was of matath/ pat was of matatye/ pat was of semey/ pat was of iose ph/ pat was of mda/ pat was of iohanna/ pat was of resa/ pat was of zorobabel/ pat was of salatiel/ pat was of nery/ pat was of melchi/ pat was of addy/ pat was of cosam/ pat was of elmadam/ pat was of her/ pat was of ihū/ pat was was of eleasar/ pat was of iorī/ pat was of matath/ pat was of leuy/ pat was of symeon/ pat was of mda/ pat was of ioseph/ pt was of iona/ pat was of elyachi/ ym/ pat was of melca/ pat was of mēna/ pat was of mathatha/ pat was of mathan/ pat was of dauy/ pat was of iesse/ pat was of obeth/ pat was of booz/ pat was of salmon/ pat was of naason/ pat was of aminadab/ ab/ pat was of aram/ pat was of esrom/ pat was of fares/ pt was of mdas/ pat was of iacob/ pat was of ysaac/ pat was of abraham/ pat was of tare/ pt was of nacor/ pat was of seruch/ pat was of ragau/ pat was of phaleth/ pat was of heber/ pat was of sale/ pat was of cha3nan/ pat was of arfax3ath/ pat was sem/ pat was of noe/ pat was of lameth/ pat was of matusale/ pat was of enok/ pat was of iareth/ pat was of malaliel/ pat was of cay nan/ pat was of enos/ pat was of seth/ pat was of adā/

Ō. iuj.

pat was of god:
And ihc ful of pe hooly
goost: turnede azen
fro iordan And was
ledde bi pe spirit ī to desert: fou
rty daies And was tēptid of pe
denel: & eet no þing ī þo daies
And whanne þo daies weren endid:
he hungride And pe denel seide
to hī if pou art goddis sone:
seie to þis stoone þat it be ma
d breed & ihc answeride to hī
it is writtī þat manī lyuey not
ī breed aloone: but ī euery wo
rd of god And pe denel ladde
hī to an hiz hil & schewed to hī
alle pe reumes of pe world
ī a mooment of tyme: & seide
to hī þ schal zyue to pee al þis
power: & pe glorie of hem for to
me pei ben zouī: & to whom þ
wole þ zyue hem for if pou fal
le doū & worschipe bifor me:
alle þingis schulen be þine &
ihc answeride: & seide to hym
it is writtī pou schalt worsch
ipe þi lord god: & to hī aloone
pou schalt serue And he ledde
hī ī to ierusalem: & sette hī on pe
pynacle of pe temple & seide to
hī if pou art goddis sone: le
nde þi self fro hennis doū for
it is writtī for he hath comaū
did to his aungelis of pee þat
pei kepe pee ī alle þi weies &
pat pei schulen take pee in hoon
dis: lest perauenture pou hurte
þi foot at a stoon & ihc answerde
& seide to hī it is seid pou schalt
not tempte þi lord god And whā
ne eiþ tēptacoū was endid:
pe feende went awey fro hym
for a tyme And ihc turnede aze
in þe vertu of pe spirit ī to galilee:
& pe fame went forp of hī þoro
u al pe cuntre & he tauzte in pe si
nagogis of hem: & was magnifi
ed of alle men And he cam to na
zareth: wher he was norischid
And entride aft his custom in
pe owne day in to a synagoge:
& roos to reede And pe book of
ysaie pe profete was takī to
hī And as he turnede pe book:
he foond a place wher it was
writtī pe spirit of pe lord ou
me for which þing he anoyn
tide me: he sente me to þche to
poore men to hele contrite men
in herte & to þche remissioū
to þsoneris: & siȝt to blynde m
en And to delyne brokī men
ī to remissioū to þche pe zeer
of pe lord plesauūt & pe dai of
zeldīng azen And whanne he ha
dde closid þe book: he zaf azen
to pe mynistre & satt: And pe
izen of alle men ī pe synagoge:
weren biholdīng ī to hī: And he
bigan to seie to hem for in þis

dayes þis scripture is fulfillid
ī youre eris And alle mē zaue
witnessing to hī: & wondriden
ī þe wordis of grace þat camen
forþ of his mouþ And þei seidē
whiche þis is not þe sone of ioseþ
h: & he seide to hē sothely ze schul
leu seie to me þis licknesse leche
heele þi silf þe fariseis seiden
to ihū hou grete þingis hā we
herd don ī capharnaū: do þou al
so here ī þi cūtre & he seide treu
ly y seie to zou þat no profet is
resseyued ī his owne cūtre ī
treuþe y seie to zou þat many
widowis weren ī þe dayes of he
lie þe profete ī israel: whanne he
uene was closid þre zeer And sex
monepis whanne grete hūgre
was maad ī al þe erþe And to
noon of hē was elye sent: but
ī to sarepta of sydon to a widow
e & many lepris weren ī israel:
vndēr heliseo þe profete And
noon of hē was cleunsid: but na
mā of syrie And alle ī þe sy
nagoge herynge þese þingis: we
ren fillid wiþ wraþþe And þei
risen up & dryuen hī out wiþ ou
ten þe cītee And ledden hī to þe
cop of þe hill on which her cītee
was bildid: to caste hī doū but
he passide and went forou þe
myddil of hē And cam doū ī
to capharnaū a cīte of galilee:
And þere he tauzte hem ī sabotis
And þei weren astonyed ī his te
chyng: for his word was ī power
And ī þer synagoge was a man
hauynge an vnclene feend: & he
criede wiþ grete vois & seide lat
bere what to vs & to þe ihū of na
zareth: art þou comū to leese us:
y knowe þee þou art þe hooly of
god And he blamede hī: & seide
wexe doūbe: & go out fro hī And
whanne þe feend hadde cast hym
forþ ī to þe myddil: he wente a
wey fro hī & he noyede hī no
þing And drede was maad ī
alle mē: & þei spaken to gidir
& seidē what is þis word for ī
power & vertu he comaūdiþ to
vnclene spiritis & þei gon out:
And þe fame was pupplischid
of hī: ī to eche place of þe cūtre
& he roos up fro þe synagoge &
entride ī to þe hous of symoūn
And þe modir of symoūdis wi
fe: was holdē with grete feue
ris And þei preyeden hī for hir
& he stood oū hir & comaūdide
to þe feuer & it lefte hir And
anoon she roos up & seruede
hem & whanne þe sunne went
doū: alle þat hadden sike mē
with diuerse langouris ledden
hem to hī And he sette his ho
ndis on ech vī hem self· And
heelide hem And fendis wēte

out fro mannye: And arieden And
seiden for pou art pe sone of god
And he blamyde & suffride hē not:
to speke: for pei wistē hym · pt he
was arist And whanne pe day was
come: he zede out & went into a
desert place: & pe puple souzten
hī And pei camen to hī: And pei
heldeu hī pat he schulde not go
awey fro hē to which he seide for
also to opēr cites · it bihoueb me
to þeche pe kyngdome of god: for
þfor y am sent And he prechide
in pe synagogis of galilee
And it was don whanne pe
puple camē fast to hym:
to heer þ word of god
he stood biſidis pe poel of genn
sareth: & saiz two bootis stondyng
biſidis pe poel And pe fiſſchers
is weren go doū · & waſchiden
her nettis And he went up into
a boot pat was symoūdis · & þrede
hym to lede it a litil fro pe loud
And he sett & taujte pe puple out
of pe boot And as he ceeſſide to
speke: he seide to symoūt / lede
pon into pe deepe: & lakke zeiour
nettis to take fiſch And symoūt
answerde & seide to hī / comaūd:
be trauaileds al pe nyzt · & token
no þing: but in þi word y schal
leye out pe nett And whanne pei
hadden do þis þing: pei closideu
to gidir a greet multitude of
fiſchis And her nett was brokē
And pei beckeneden to felawes pat
weren in an oþr boot: pat pei schul
den come & helpe hem And pei ca
meu & filleden bope pe bootis so þt
pei weren almoſt drenchid And
whanne symoūt petir saiz þis þing:
he felde doū to pe knees of ihū &
seide lord go fro me: for y am a syn
ful mā for he was ou ech syde a
stonyed: & alle pat were with hym
in pe taking of fiſchis which pei
token lowely in lyk maner ames &
ioon pe sones of zebede: pat were
felowes of symoūt petre And ihc
seide to symoūt nyle pou drede:
now fro þis tyme pou schalt take
me And whanne pe bootis weren
ledd up to pe loond: pei lefte alle
þingis · & pei sueden hym And it
was don · whanne he was in oon
of pe cites lo a man ful of leyre ·
& seyng ihū felle doū on his face:
& þyde hym & seide / lord if pou wilt:
pou maist make me clēne And
ihc held forp his hoond & touchide
hym & seide / y wole: be pou maad
cleene & anoon pe leyre passide
awey fro hym And ihc comaū
dide to hym: pat he schulde seie to
noman but go schewe pou pee to
a þ̄st And offre for þi cleusing
as moyses bad: in to witnessing
to hē And pe word walkide abo
ute pe more of hī And myche

puple cam̃en to gr̃ete: to heere
and to be helid of her seeknessis
and he went into desert: & p̃iede
& it was don̄ soon of pe dapes:
he satt & tauzte & p̄ were̅ farisé
es sittinge & doctours of pe la
we: pat camen of eche castel of
galilee & of iudee & of ierlm̄/ and
pe vertu of pe lord was: to hele
sike me̅/ & lo men beren̄ abed
aun̄ pat was sijk in pe palsye:
& pei souzten to bere hym in & /
sette bifor̄ hi/ and pei fond̃en
not in what partie pei shulden
bere hi in- for pe puple: went
en on pe roof/ and bi pe shattis̄
pei leeten hi doñ with pe bed: in̄
to pe myddil bifor̄ ihū/ and whā
he ihū sai3 pe feip of hem: he
seide/ man pi synes be forzon
ī to pee/ & pe scribis & farisees
bigūnen to penke: seiynge/ who
is pis pat spekip blakbenynes:/
who may forzine synes: but
god aloone:/ and as ihc knewe
pe pouztis of he̅: he answerde
& seide to hem/ what penken
ze ynel pingis in zoure hertis:
what is lizter̄ to seie̅· synes be̅
forzoñ to pee: or to seie rise
up & walke:/ but pat ze wite̅
pat man̄ hab̄ sone hap power in
erpe to forzine synn̄: he seide
to pe sike man̄ in paleshe/ y seie̅
to pee/ rise up: take pi bed &
go in to pin hous/ and anoon he
roos up bifor̄ hem & tok pe bed
in which he lay/ and went in to
his hous: & magnyfiede god/ &
greet wondir took alle: & pei in
agnyfiede̅ god/ and pei were̅
fulfillid with gvete drede: & sei
den· for we han seyn mervelous
pingis to dape/ and aft̄ pees
pingis ihc went out & sai3 ap
uplican leuy by name· sittynge
at pe tollop: & he seide to hi̅/ sue
pou me/ and vpstāne he hadde
left alle pingis: he roos up and
siede hi̅/ and leuy made to hi̅
a grete feste in his hous/ and
per was a grete cūpanye of
publicans & of opr̄ pat were̅
with hem: sittynge at pe mete
and farisees & pe scribis of he̅
gruchiden· & seiden to his dis
ciplis/ why etip ze & drynken
with publicans & synful men:/
and ihc answerde & seide to he̅/
pei pat ben hoole han no nede
to a leche: but pei pat be̅ sike
for y cam not to clepe iust men̄:
but synful me̅ to penaūce/ &
pei seide̅ to hym/ why pe disci
lis of ioon faste̅ ofte & maken
preyers and & of pe farisees:
but pine etip & drynken/ to
which he seide/ wher̄ ze mon̄
make pe soun̄ of pe spouse to
faste: whil pe spouse is with he̅:

bint dayes shulē come· whan ne ye spouse shal be take albe y fro hem· & thā ne pei shuleu faste ī po dayes/ And he seide to hem also· Alicknesse for no mā takiṅ apece fro a nelbe cl op· & pittip it ū to an oold cl oping/ ellis hope he brekip pe nelbe: & pe pece of pe nelbe acordip not to pe olde/ and no mā pittip nelbe wyne ī to ool de botels/ ellis pe nelbe wyne shal breke pe botels· And pe wyne shal be shed out: & pe botels shulē perishe/ but ne lbe wyne owey to be pitt· ī to nelbe botels: & hope ben kept And noma drynkyng pe elde: wole anoon pe nelbe/ for he seip· pe olde is pe bett

¶. vj.

er· And it was don· ū pe secōnde firste sabot whane he passide bi pe cornes: his disciplis pluck iden eeris of corn/ And pei fro tyng with her hoondis: eeten & siūne of pe phariseis: seidē to hē/ what don ze yt pat is u ot leeueful ī pe sabotis: & ihc answeride & seide to hē/ ze han not redde what dauid dide: whane he hungride· & pei pat weren with hī/ hou he entri de ī to pe hous of god & took loones of proposicioū & eet: and zaf to hem pat weren with hym/ which loones it was not leeueful to eete: but oonly to pri tis/ And he seide to hē/ for mā ne sone is lord· yhe of pe saboth/ & it was don ī anoy saboth: pat he entride ī to a synagoge & tauzte/ And a mā was pere: & his riztb onde was drye/ And pe scribis & phariseis aspieden hī· if he wol de heele hī ū pe sabotb: pat pei shulden fynde cause wher of pei shuldē accuse hī/ And he wy iste pe pouztis of hē & he seide to pe mā pat hadde adrye ho ond/ ryse up & stoonde ī to pe myddil/ And he roos & stood/ & ihc seide to hē/ I axe zou if it is leeueful to do wel ī pe sabot or yuel: to make alone saaf: or to leese/ And whanne he hadde biholde al men aboute: he seide to pe mā/ hold forp pin honde/ And he held forp: & his hoond was restorid to helpe/ And pei weren fulfillid with vnwisdom: & spaken to gidre· what pei shuldē do of ihū ¶ And it was don ī po dayes· he went out ī to an hille· to pye: & he was al nyzt dwellyng ī pe pyer of god & whanne pe daye was co me: he clepide his disciplis· & chees twelue of hē· whiche he clepide also apostlis/ sym

oist whom he clepide petre: & andrew his broper iames & ioon· filip & bartholomeus· matheus & thomas· iames alphey & symond pat is clepid zelotes iudas of iames: & iudas skarioth pat was traytour & he zaue doun two he hill wip hem & stood i a feeldy place & pe cumpany of his disciplis & a grete multitude of puple of alle iudee & ierlm· and of pe se coostis & of tyre and sydon· pt camen to heere hym· & to be heelid of her seekenessis· & pei pt weren turmentid of vncleene spiritis: weren heelid· and al le puple souzte to touche hym· for vertu went out of hym & heelide alle· and whanne his disciplis weren cast up i to his disciplis: he seide· blessid be ze pore men: for pe kyngdom of god is zoure blessid be ze pt now hungren: for ze shulen be fulfild· blessid be ze pat now wepen: for ze shulen leize ze shulen be blessid: whanne men shulen hate zou· & departe zou awey· & putt schenschip to zou: & caste out zoure name as yuel for mannus sone· ioye ze in pat day· & be ze glad: for loo zoure meede is myche i heuenes· for aftir pes pingis: pe fadris of he diden to profetis· neveles wo to zou riche men: pat han zoure conforte· wo to zou pat ben fulfillid: for ze shulen hungre· wo to zou pat now leizen: for ze shulen mourne & wepe· wo to zou whanne alle men shulen bless zou· aftir pes pingis pe fadris of he diden to profetis· but y seie to zou pat heeren· loue ze zoure enmyes: do ze wel to hem pat hatedn zou· bless ze men pat curssen zou: praie ze for men pt de famen zou· and to him pat smyt pee on o cheeke: shewe al so pe toop· and fro him pat takip awey fro pee a clop· nyle pou forbede pe coote· and zyue to eche pat axip pee· & if a man takip awey po pingis pat ben pine: axe pou not azen· and as ze wolen pat men do to zou· do ze also to hem i lyk maner· & if ze louen hem pat louen zou: what thank is to zou: for synful men louen men pat louen hem· & if ze don wel to hem pat don wel to zou: what grace is to zou· synful men don pis ping· & if ze lenen to hem of whiche ze hopen to take azen: what take is to zou: for synful men lenen to synful men: to take azen as myche· nevelis louze zoure enmyes· & do ze wel

stud leue ze hopyng no ping ꝑof:
ꝑ zoure mede shal be myche ꝑ
ze shulē be pe sones of pe hyest:
for he is beuyuge ou vnkynde
mē ꝑ ynel mē / ꝑfor beze mcyful:
as zoure fadir is mcyful / uple ze
deme: ꝑ ze shulē not be demed /
uple ze condēpne: ꝑ ze shulē not
be condēpned / forzyue ze: ꝑ it sh
al be forzoū to zou / zyue ze: ꝑ it
shal be zoū to zou / per shuleu
zyue i to zoure bosū a good meu
re: ꝑ wel fillid: ꝑ shakū to gid
ir ꝑ ou flowinge / for bi pe same
mesur bi whiche ze metē: it sh
al be metū azen to zou ꝑ he seide
to hē a lickenesse whey ꝑ blynde
may leede pe blynde: ne falleu
pei not bope i to pe diche: a disci
ple is not aboue pe mayst / but
eche shal be parfyte: if he be
as his mayst and whi seest
pou i pi brop is ize amoot: but
pou biholdest not a beem pt is
i pin owne ize: or hou maist
pou seie to pi brop bropꝰ suffre:
y shal caste out pe moot of pin
ize ꝑ pu biholdest not a beem i pi
owne yze: ypocrite first take
out pe beem of pin ize ꝑ pane
pu shalt se to take pe moot of
pi brop is ize / it is not a good
tre: pat makip ynel fruytis /
nep an ynel tre: pat makip go
od fruytis / for euy tre: is knowe
en of his fruyt / and neu gadre
not figus of pornes: nep neu
gadre a grape of a bussche of bre
ris / a good mā: of pe good tresou
re of his herte bryngip forp good
pingis / and an ynel mā: of pe y
nel tresoure bryngip forp ynel
ping / for of pe plente of pe her
te: pe mouy speki and whi
clepen ze me lord lord: ꝑ don not
pe pingis pat y seie / eche pat com
ep to me ꝑ herip my wordis ꝑ doip
hem: y shal shewe to zou to wh
om he is lyk / he is lyk to a mā
pat bildip an hous pat diggide
deepe ꝑ sette pe foūdemēt on a
stoon / ꝑ whanne grete flood was
maad pe flood was hurtlid to pt
hous: ꝑ it myzte not moue it /
for it was foūdid on a stid stoon /
but he pat heerip ꝑ doip not: is
lyk to a mā bildinge his hous on
erpe wip outē foūdemēt / in to
which pe flood was hurlid ꝑ a
noon it felle doū and pe fallyng
doū of pat hous: was maad greet
And whanne he hadde
fulfild alle his wordis
ū to pe eris of pe pu
ple: he entride i to capharnaū /
but a seruaūt of a centurien yt
was ꝓcious to hī was like and
dreynge to pe deep / ꝑ whanne
he hadde herd of ihū: he sente
to hī pe elder mē of iewis / ꝑ

preyde hym pat he wolde come
& heele his seruaunt/ and whan
ne pei camẽ to ihũ· pei þideu hi
busily & seidẽ to hi/ for he is wor
þi pat pou graunte to hi þis þig/
for he loueþ oure folk: & he bil
dide to us a synagoge/ & ihc̃ wẽ
te wiþ hẽ/ & whanne he was
not fer fro þe hous: þe centurien
sente to hi frendis and seide/
lord uyle pou be trauelid/ ffor y
am not worþi: pat pou entre vn
dir my roof/ for which þing· &
y demede not my self worþi: þt
y come to pee/ but seie pou bi wo
rd: & my child schal be heelid/
for y am a man ordeyned vndir
power· & haue knyztis vndir
me/ and y seie to þis go: & he go
eþ/ & to an oþer come: & he cõmeþ
& to my seruaũt do þis þing: &
he doiþ/ & whanne þis þing was
herd: ihc̃ wondride· & seide to
þe puple suynge hi/ treuly y seie
to zou: nei i fond so gret
te feiþ/ and pei pat weren sent
turneden azen hom: & foũde
þe seruaũt hool which was si
yk/ and it was don· aftirward
ihc̃ wente i to a citee· pat is cle
pid nayn: & his disciplis and
ful grete puple wente wiþ hi/
and whanne he cam nyz to þe zat
e of þe citee: lo þe bore of a wi
dewman pat hadde no mo childr
en· was born out deed/ and þis
was a widowe· & myche puple of
þe citee wiþ hir/ & whanne þe lord
ihũ hadde seyn hir: he hadde reu
þe on hir· & seid to hir/ uyle pou
wepe/ & he cam nyz: & touchide
þe beere/ & þei pat baren: stood
en/ & he seide/ zonge man: y seie to
pee ryse up/ & he pat was deed
satt up azen: & bigan to spelke/ &
he zaf hi to his modir/ & dreed to
ok alle men: & þei magnifiden
god· & seiden/ for a gret profete
is risi among us: & for god hap
visitide his puple/ and þis word
wente out of hi in to al iudee: &
in to al þe cũtre aboute/ ¶ And ioon
es disciplis toolden hi: of alle þe
se þingis & ioon clepide tweyne
of his disciplis & sente hẽ to ihũ
& seide/ art pou he pat is to come:
or abiden we an oþir: & whanne
þe men came to hi: þei seiden/
ioon baptist sente us to pee: &
seide art pou he pat is to come:
or we abiden anoþ·: And in pat
owr· he heelide many men of her
seeknessis & woundis & yuel spi
rits: & he zaf sizt to many blyn
de men/ And ihc̃ answerde and
seide to hem/ go ze azen & telle
ze to ioon: þo þingis pat ze haũ
herd & seien/ blynde men seyn·
crokid men goon· meselis ben
made cleene/ deef men heren·

deed men ryſen ayen· poore men ben taku to ꝓchyng of pe gospel/ and he pat ſchal not be ſchamid ine: is bleſſid/ & whanne pe meſſengeris of ioon· weren go forp: he bigan to ſeie of ioon to pe puple/ what went̃e ze out i to deſert to ſe:/ a reyed waggid wip pe wynd:/ but what went̃e ze out to ſe:/ a man clopid wip ſofte clopis:/ lo pei pat ben i ꝓciouſ clop & i delicis: ben in kingis houſis/ but what went̃e ze out to ſe:/ a profete:/ ze y ſeie to zou: & more pan a profete/ pis is he of whom it is writ̃/ lo y ſende myn angel bifor pi face: which ſchal make pi weie redy bifor pee certis y ſeie to zou: þ is no man more prophete among chil dren of wym̃en pan is ioon/ but he pat leſſe i pe kyngdo of heuenes. is mor pan he/ & alle pe puple herynge & pub plicans pat hadden be bap tizid wip pe baptym of ioon: iuſtifieden god/ but pe fari ſees & pe wiſe men of pe la we pat weren not baptizid of hi: diſpriſiden pe coñſeil of god: ayens hem ſilf· & pe lord ſeide/ þfor to who ſchal y ſeie̅ of pis generacioñ liyk: & to whom ben pei liyk:/ pei ben liyk to childre̅ ſittyng i chepy ng & ſpekynge to gidre & ſeiy nge we han songñ to zou wip pipis: & ze han not dañſid/ we han maad mornyng: & ze han not wept/ for ioon baptiſt cam neiþ etynge breed ne drynky nge wyne: & ze ſeien he hap a feend/ mañes ſone cam etyn ge & drynkynge: & ze ſeien lo a mañ a deuourer: & drynkyng wyne a frend of pupplicans & of ſynful men/ & wiſdom is iuſtified of her ſonn̄e/ but oon of pe fariſees preide ihū: pat he ſchulde ete wip hi̅ & he entride i to pe hous of pe fariſe· & ſatt at pe mete/ & lo a ſynful wom̃a pat was in pe citee· as ſche knewe pat ihū ſat at pe mete· i pe hous of pe fariſee: ſche brouzte an alabaſtr· box of oynement & ſche ſtood bihynde bi ſidis his feet· & bigan to moyſte his feet wip teeris· & wipide wip pe heris of hir heued/ & kiſte his feet: & anoyntide wip oynement/ and pe fari ſee ſeynge pat hadde clepid hi̅: ſeide wip ine hi̅ ſelf ſei ynge/ if pis were a profete: he ſchulde wite· who & what man̄ wom̃a it were pat ton

chip hun· for she is a synful
wōmā/ And ihc answerde &
seide to hi symoūt y hame sū
ping to sei to pee/ and he sei
de maist sei pon & he answe
ride thep dettours weren
to oo leuer: & oour owzte fyue
hundrid pans: & pe oper fyfty
but whanne pei haddeu whe
of pe schulde zelde: he forzat
to bope who pānе louep hi
moze: symoūt answeride &
seide y gesse pat he: to whom
he forzaf moze/ And he answe
ride to hi pou hast demyd ri
thly/ and he turnede to pe wō
man· & seide to symoūt seest
pou pis wōmā: y entride in
to pin hous: pou zaf no wat
to my feet/ but pis hap moist
id my feet whip teeris: & whip
idwip hir heris/ pou kissidist not
zouū to me ac she entride ceesside not to kis
se my feet/ pou anoyntidist not
myn heed whip oile: but pis an
oyntide my feet whip ointemt
nt/ for pe which thing y seie
to pee manp synnes ben forzo
uū to hir/ for she hap loued
mychel/ and to whom is lesse
forzouū: he louep lesse/ & ihc
seide to hir/ pi synnes ben forzo
uū to pee/ and pei pat saten
to gidir at pe mete: bigūnen

to seie wip inne hem self/ who
is pis pat forzynep synnes: but
he seide to pe wōmā pi feip hap
maad pe saaf/ go pou in pees
and it was don aftir wh
ard· & ihū made iourn
uep bi cītees & castels·
prechinge & euāngelisinge pe
reume of god/ and twelue wt
hi· & sū wymmen pat weren
heelid of wickid spiritis & se
knesse/ marie pat is clepid
maudeleyn of whō seuene de
uelis weenten out/ And ioone
pe wif of chuse pe procurato
uis of eroude: & susanne & many
e opir pat ministriden to hi of
hir riches/ And whanne mych
puple was come to gidir/ And
men hizeden to hi fro pe cītees:
he seide bi a similitude/ he pat
sowip zede out to sowe his seed/
and while he sowip: sū fel bisi
dis pe weie· & was defoulid·
And briddis of pe eir eetyn it/
and opir fel on a stoon & it sprū
ge up & dride: for it hadde not
moisture/ and opir fel among
pornes: & pe pornes sprūgen
up to gidir· & strangliden it &
opir fel ūn to good eerpe: and it
sprūgū up· & maad an hūdrid
fold fruyt/ he seide pese pingis
& criede/ he pat hap eris of he
rinig here he/ but his disciplis

C. lvij

Aſkeden hym: what þis parable
was/ And he ſeide to hem/ to zou
it is graunted to knowe þe þuete
of þe kyngdom of god/ but to
oþ*er* men i parablis: þat þei ſeyn
ge ſe not/ & þei herynge vndir ſt
oude not/ & þis is þe parable/
þe ſeed: is goddis word/ And þei
þat ben biſidis þe weie: ben þe
es þat heren/ & aftirward þe fend
comeþ & takiþ awey þe word
fro þ*er* herte: leſt þei bileuyng be
maad ſaaf/ but þei þat fel on
a ſtoon: ben þees þat whanne
þei han herd· reſſeyuen þe word
wiþ ioye/ And þes han not rot
is/ for at a tyme þei bileuen: & i
tyme of temptacioun þei goen a
wei/ but þat þ*at* fel among þor
nes: ben þees þ*at* herden/ & of
buſynellis & richeſſis & luſtis
of lyf þei goun forþ & ben ſtra
ngled: & bryngyn forþ no fruyt
but þat þ*at* i to good erþe: ben þe
es þ*at* i a good herte & beeſt her
en þe word & holden· & bryngen
forþ fruyt i pacience/ Nouna
liȝtneþ a lanterne & hilþ it wiþ
a veſſel· or puttiþ it vndir a bed
but on a candil ſtikk: þat men
þat entren ſeen liȝt/ for þ*at* is no
þ*er* þing: which ſchal not be
opened/ ner hid þing: which
ſchal not be knowen· & come in
to open/ þ*at* for ſe ȝe holy ȝe heren/
for it ſchal be ȝouen to hym þat
haþ & who eu haþ not: also þ*at* þ*at*
he weneþ þ*at* he haue· ſchal be ta
ken awey fro hi & his modir and
bretheren camen to hi: And þei myȝ
te not come to hi for þe puple &
it was teeld to hi/ þi modir & þi
bretheren stoden wiþ oute forþ:
willynge to ſe hee & he answerde
& ſeide to hem/ myn modir & myn bre
theren ben þeſe: þat heere þe word
of god & don it/ And it was don
i ooon of þe dayes: he weente up
in to a boot & his diſciplis & he
ſeide to hem/ paſſe we ouer þe ſee/ And
þei weenten up/ & while þei voiȝeden:
he ſlepte/ And tempeſt of wynde ca
m doun i to þe watir: & þei weren
drenchid hidur & þidir wiþ wawes
& weren i perel/ And þei camen
nyȝ· & reyſeden hi & ſeiden/ comm
aundour we periſchen/ And he roos
& blamyde þe wynde & þe tempeſt
of þe watir: & it ceeſſide/ And
peſibilte was maad & he ſeide
to hem/ where is ȝoure feiþ: which
dredyng wondriden· & ſeiden
to gidir/ who geſſiſt þis þis·
for he comaundiþ to wyndis &
to þe ſee: & þei obeyen to hi/ And
þei rowiden to þe cuntre of geva
ſenis: þat is ayens galile/ and
whanne he weente out to þe lond:
a man ran to hym þat haddc a
deuel long tyme/ & he was not

clopid wip clop: nepir diþellide i
hous · but i seyn vnto yow þe wiþ ame
he sai3 ihū: fel doū biforē hī and
he cryinge wip greet voic: seide
what to me & to pee: ihū þe sone
of þe hize3t god: I biseche pee þt
pou turmente not me/ for he co
maūdide þe vnclene spirit: þt
he shulde go out fro þe mā/ for
he took hī ofte tymes & he was
boūdū wip cheynes & kept ū
stockis & wiþ ame þe boondis we
ren broku: he was ledd of dem
elis i to deserd: And ihc axide
hī & seide what name is to pee
& he seide Alegioū for many de
uelis weren entrid i to hym &
pei preidē hī þat he shulde not
comaūde hē: þat pei shulden
go in to helle/ And þ was aflo
ck of many swyne: leseiþynge
i an hil & pei þyedē hy: þat he
shulde suffre hem to entre i
to hē & he suffride hē & so þe
deuelis wentē out fro þe mā:
& entridē i to þe swyn & wip a
birre þe flock went headlong
i to þe pool: & was dreynchid &
wiþ ame þe hirdis saien þis þm
g doon · þe flowē & teldē i to þe
cite & i to þe townes & peizedē
out to se þat þing: þat was
don & pei camē to ihū & pei fo
ūden þe mā sittīg clopid fro
whom þe feendis wentē out ·
And ū hool myude at his feet: &
pei dredden & pei þat sayen told̄
to hem/ how he was maad hool
of þe legioū & al þe multitude
of þe cūtre of gerasen9 þidē hī
þat he shulde go fro hē: for pei
weren holdū wip grete dreede/
he wente up i to a boot & turne
de azen And þe mā of whom þe
deuelis weren gon out: þidē hī
þat he shulde be wip hī/ ihū lefte
hī & seide/ go azen i to þin hous:
& telle how grete þingis god hap
don to pee & he wente parcon al
þe cite · & þchide how grete þin
gis ihū hadde don to hī And it
was don wiþ ame ihc was gon az
en: þe puple reclaymede hī for
alle weren abidīg hī And lo
a mā to whom þe name was
iayrus: & he was þnce of a sy
agoge & he fel doū at þe feet
of ihū: & þyde hī þat he shulde
entre i to his hous for he had
de bint oon douzt̄ almost of tw
elue zeer̄ eelde & she was deed
And it befel: þe while he wente·
he was prūgū of þe puple & a
wōmā þat hadde a flux of blo
od twelue zeer̄: & hadde spendid
al hir catel i leches · & she myzte
not be curid of ony & she cam
nyz bihynde: & touchide þe hem
of his clop And anoon þe fluxe
of hir blood ceesside & ihc

seide / who is pat touchide me /
& whanne alle nē denyedē: petre
seide · & pei pat weren wip hym /
manasidon pe puple pristen &
diseisen pee: / & pou seist who
touchide me / & ihc̄ seide / sum̄
hap touchid me / for pat vertu
zede out of me And pe woūs
sepnge pat it was not hid fro
hī: cam trewlyng & fel doū at
his feet And for cause she had
de touchid hī: she schewide bi
for alle pe puple · & how anoon
she was heelid / And he seide
to hir / douzt̄r pi feip hap maad
pe saaf: go pou in pees / And zit
while he spak · ani cam fro pe
place of pe synagoge · & seide to
hī / pi douzt̄r is deed: tyle pou
travele pe maist̄r / And whanne
pis wor was herd: ihc̄ answe
ride to pe fadir of pe damysel /
tyle pou dreede: but bileue
pou oonly · & she schal be saaf /
And whanne he cam to pe hous:
he suffride noman̄ to entre wt
hym but petre & joon & iames
& pe fadir and pe modir of
pe damysel / And alle wepte
& biwepldē hir / And he seide /
tyle ze wepe / for pe damysel
is not deed: but slepiþ / And
pei scorneden him: & wisten
pat she was deed / but he
helde hir hond & criede &
seide / damysel rise up / And hir
spirit turnede azen: & she roos
anoon / And he comandide to zyue
to hir: to ete / And hir fadir and
modir wondridē greetly / And
he comandide hē pat pei schul
den not seie to ony pat þing
pat was don

And whanne he tuelue
apostlis were clepid to gidir: yaf to
hem vertu & power on alle de
uels · & pat pei schuldē heele
seeknessis / And he sente hē to
þche pe kyngdom of god: & to
heele syk men̄ / And he seide to
hem / no þing take ze in pe weye ·
neiþr zeerd ne scrippe · neiþr breed
ne money: & neiþr haue ze two
cootis / And in to what hous pat
ze entren: dwelle ze pere · & go
ze not out fro pēnes / & who eū
ne resceyuē not zou: go ze out of
pat cite & schake ze of pe poudir
of zoure feet · in to witnessing
ge on hem / And pei zeden forp ·
& wenten aboute bi castelis ·
þchinge & heelinge eiry where /
And herode tetrark: herde al
le þingis pat weren don of
hī: & he doutide for pat it was
seid of sum̄ men: pat joon was
risen fro deep / & of sum̄ men: pt
elye hadde apperid / but of oth:
pat oon of pe olde profetis

Cap. ix

was risen / And er ouide leide /
p hame bihedid ioon / & who
is pis: of whom p here such pi
ngis: / & he souzte to se hi / And
pe apostlis turnedē azen: &
teldeu to hi alle pingis pat
pei haddē doon / And he took
hem: & went bisidis in to a
desert place pat is bethsaida /
And whanne pe puple knewē
pis: pei folewedē hi / And he
resseyuede hē: & spake to hē
of pe kingdom of god / & he
heelide hem: pat haddeu ne
ede of cure / And pe day big
an to wexe bowe doū / And
pe twelue camē & seiden to
hi / leeue pe puple: pat pey
go & turne i to castels & tow
nes pat ben aboute · pat pei
fynde mete: for we ben hee
re in a desert place / And he sei
de to hem / zyue ze to hē to ete /
And pei seiden / we ben not
to us: no pānis fyue loones
& twey fischis / but pat we
shulē go & bien met
es: to alle pe puple / & pe men
weren almost fyue pousand /
And he seide to his disciplis /
make ze hem sitte to mete ·
bi cū panyes afifty to gidir /
And pei didē so / & pei made
alle men sitte to mete / And
whanne he hadde take pe fy
ue loones And twey fischis:
he bihelde i to heuene · & blei
side hem & brak / And delide
to his disciplis: pat pei shul
den sette forp bifor pe compa
nyes / And alle men eten: And
weren fulfillid / & pat pat lef
te to hem of broken metis was
taken up: twelue cofyns //
And it was doun whanne he
was aloone preiyng pryuy:
his disciplis weren with hi /
And he axide hem & seide /
whom seyen pe puple pat I
am: / & pei answerden & seidē /
oon baptist / opir seyen: elie /
And opir seien: o profete of
pe formere is risen / And he sei
de to hem / but who seie ze pt
I am: / simon petre answe
vide: & seide / pe crist of god /
And he blamyng hem: comā
dide pat pei shulden seie
to noman · & seide pese pingis
for it bihouep manye pingis
to suffre many / & to
be repued of pe eldre men: /
& of pe princis of prestis & of
scribis / And to be slayn: &
pe pridde daye to ryse azen /
And he seide to alle / if ony
wole come aftir me: denye
he hi self & take he his croos
euery day · & sue he me / for he
pat wole make his lyf

ſaaf: ſhal leeſe it and he pat
leeſip his liif: for me ſhal ma
ke it ſaaf/ And what profitip
it to mã if he wynne alle pe wo
eld & leeſe hi ſelf·& do perysh
of hi ſelf/ for who ſo ſhamep
me & my wordis: mãnys ſone
ſhal ſhame hi whãne he com
ep i his maieſte & of pe fadris
& of pe hooly aungelis ¶ And
y ſeie to zou verily þ̃ ſũme
ſtoond heere· whiche ſhy
len not taſte deep: til pei ſe
en pe reume of god/ And it
was don aftir pees wordis·
Almeſt eiȝte dayes: & he took
petre & iames & ioon And he
ſtiȝede i to an hil: to pie/ And
whyle he þ̃yede: pe likneſſe
of his cheer was chaunged·&
his cloping was whit ſhyny
ng/ And lo two men ſpaken
wip hi & moyſes & ely were
ſeen i maieſte/ And pei ſayẽ
his going out· which he ſh
ulde fulfille i ieruſũ/ & petre
& pei pat weren wip hi: we
ren heuy of ſleep/ & pei wa
kynge ſayen his maieſte: &
pe two men pat ſtoden wip
hi/ And it was don whanne pei
departiden fro hi: petre ſei
de to ihũ/ maiſtir it is
good: pat we be heere/ And
make we heere pre taber-u
adis/ oon to pee And oon to moy
ſes: & oon to elye/ And he wiſte
not: what he ſhulde ſeie/ for
whyle he ſpak peſe pyngis: a clo
ude was maad·& ouerſhadewide
hem/ And pei dredden: whanne
pei entreden to pe cloude/ And
a voys was maad out of pe clou
de·& ſeide/ pis is my derewoxy ſo
ne: heere ze hi/ & whyle pe voys
was maad: ihũ was foũdũ a
loone & pei weren ſtille: And to
no man seiden i po dayes ouȝt
of po pyngis· pat pei hadden
seyn/ but it was don i pe day
ſtyng· whanne pei camẽ doũ of
pe hil: much puple meette hẽ/
And lo a man of pe cũpany: cry
ede & ſeide/ maiſtir I biſeche pee·
biholde my ſone: for y haue no
mo & lo a ſpirit takip hi· And
ſudeynly he criep & ſmytip doũ·
& to drawip hi wip fome/ And
vnnepe he goip awey aftir he a
wunge hi & y þ̃ide pi diſciplis:
pat pei ſhuldẽ caſte hi out· And
pei myȝtẽ not/ And ihc answer
de: & ſeide to hem/ A vnfeipful
generacioũ & weywarde· hou lon
ge ſhal y be at zou· & ſuffre zou:
bryng hidir pi ſone/ & whanne
he cam nyȝ: pe deuel hmtilide
hi doũ· & to drapde hi/ & ihc bla
myde pe vncleene ſpirit: And
heelide pe chil· & zeldide hi to

his fadir / and alle men wondriden gretely i pe gretenesse of god / and whanne alle men woudriden i alle pingis pat he dide: he seide to his disciplis pitte ze pese wordis i zoure eris / for it is to come pat mannes sone be bitrayed in to pe handis of men / and pei knewen not pis word · & it was hid fro hem: pat pei feelden it not & pei dredden to axe hi of pis word / but aponzt entride in to hem: who of hem shulde be gretest / and ihc sepnge pe pouztis of pe herte of hem: took a child & sette hi biside hi · & seide to hem / who eu resseyuep pis child i my name: resseyuep me / and who eu resseyuep me: resseyuep hi pat sente me / for he pat is leest among zou alle: is pe gretest / and soon answerde & seide / conuaundour: we sayen a man castinge out feendis i pi name / and we han forbedun hi: for he sueb not pee wip vs / & it was don whanne pe daies of his taking up were euen fulfillid: he sette faste his face to go to ierlim · & sente messageris bifor his sizt / and pei zeden & entriden i to a cite of samaritans: to make redy to hym / and pei resseyueden not hi: for pe face was of hi-goynge i to ierlim / & whanne iames & ioon his disciplis seyn: pei seiden / lord wolt pou pat we seien pat fier come doun fro heuene · & waste hem / and he turnede: & blamyde hem & seide / ze witen not whos spiritis ze ben / for mannus sone cam not to leese mennus soulis: but to saue / & pei wenten i to anop castel / and it was don whanne pei walkeden i pe weie: a man seide to hi / y shal sue pee: whidir euer pou go / & ihc seide to hi / foxis han denes: & briddis of pe eir han nestis / but mannus sone hap not whider he reste his heed / & he seide to an op / sue pou me / and he seide / lord suffre me first to go: and birye my fadir / and ihc seide to hi / suffre pat deede men birye her deed men: but go pou & telle pe kingdom of god / & anop seide / lord y shal sue pee: but first suffre me to leeue al pingis pat ben at hoom / & ihc seide to hi / noman pat puttip his hoond to pe plouz and biholding bacward: is able to pe reume of god

And aft pe pingis: pe lord ihu ordeynede an so opir seuenty and sente hem bitwen tweyn / & seide hem bitwen

C. xx.

& ihc seide to hi / nyle ze forbede / for he pat is not azens us: is for us /

And tweyn bifor his face: in
to eiþy cite & place whidir he
was to come/ and he seide to
hem/ þis is myche ripe corn: &
fewe werkmē/ þfor þi preie ye
lord of þe ripe corn: þat he
sende werkmē i to his ripe
corn/ go ze loy sende zou: as
lambren among wolues/ þ
for uyle ze bere. & sachel nei
strupe· nei shon: & greete ze
noma bi þe weie/ nī to whom
hons þat ze entren fūst seie
ze pees to þis hous/ & if a so
ne of pees be þere: zoure
pees shal reste on hī/ but if
noon: it shal turne azen to
zou/ & dwelle ze i þe same ho
ns: etinge & drinkynge þo
þingis þat ben at hē/ for a
werkman is worþi his hire
uyle ze passe frō hous nī to
hous/ & i to whom eiī cite ze en
tren· & þei resseyuē zou: ete
ze þo þingis þat ben sett to
zou· & heele ze þe syke men
þat ben i þat cite: & seie ze
to hem/ þe kingdom of god
shal neyz i to zou/ nī to whom
cite ze entren· & þei resseyuē
zou not· goze out i to þe stree
tis of it· & seie ze/ we wipen
of· azens zou þe poudir þat
cleued to us of zoure cite/ ne
peles wite ze þis þing: þat
þe reelme of god shal come
nyz/ y seie to zou· þat to sodom
it shal be esyer· þan to þat
cite i þat daye/ wo to þee coroy
sin wo to þee bethsaida for
if i tyre & sydon þe vertues had
ben don i zou: sitynne þei which
wolden haue sete i heyre and be don
asshes· & haue don penaūce/
nepeles to tyre & sydon it sh
al be esyer i þe dome: þan to
zou/ and þou capharnaū art
enhaūsid til to heuē: þou shal
it be dēenchid til i to helle/ he
þat heriþ zou: heriþ me/ and
he þat dispisiþ zou: dispisiþ me
and he þat dispisiþ me: dispisiþ
hī þat sent me/ and þe two &
seuēty disciplis: turneden azē
with ioye· & seiden/ lord also de
uelis ben suget to us in þi na
me/ and he seide to hem/ y sayz
sathanas fallynge doū fro he
uene as leyt/ and lo y haue
zouū to zou power to trede on
serpentis & scorpiouns· & on al
þe vertu of þe enemy: & no
þing shal anoye zou/ nepeles
uyle ze ioye i þis þing þat spi
ritis ben suget to zou/ but io
ye ze þat zoure names ben writ
tū in heuenes/ in þilk our
he gladide in þe hooly goost:
& seide y knowleche to þee fa
dir: lord of heuē & of erþe/

for pou hast hid pese þingis
fro wyse & prudent: And
hast schewed hē to smale chil
dren / ȝhe fadir: for so it ple
sid bifor pee / alle þingis bē ȝon
ē to me of my fadir / & noman
wot who is pe sone: but pe fa
dir / & who is pe fadir: but pe so
ne · & to whom pe sone wil schew
e / And he turnede to his disci
pis & seide / blessid ben pe izen.
pat seen po þingis pat ȝe seen /
for y seie to ȝou: pat many pro
fetis & kingis wolden haue se
ē po þingis pat ȝe seen: & pei
sayen not / And here po þingis
pat ȝe heren: & pei herdē not /
And lo a wise man of pe lawe
roos up: tēptynge hi & seynge /
maist what þing schal y do
to haue euerlastyng liif / & he
seide to hi / what is writtē in
pe lawe: how redist pou:
he answeride & seide / pou sch
alt loue pi lord god of al pin
herte: and of al pi soule · & of
alle pi strengpis & of al pi my
nde / And pi neizbore as pi se
lf / & ihc seide to hi / pou hast
answerid rytly / do pis þing:
& pou schalt lyue / but he wil
lynge to iustifie hi self: seide
to ihū / & who is my neizbore:
& ihc biheld & seide / a man cam
doun fro ierlim in to ierico: and
fel among þeues & pei robiden
hi · & woūdiden hi & wentē awey:
& lefte pe man half alyue / & it
bifel pat a prest cam doun pe same
weye: & passide forp when he
hadde seyn hi / also a dekene whā
ne he was bisidis pe place · &
syȝ hi: passide forp / but a sam
aritan goynge pe weiē: cam
bisidis hi / And he seȝ hi · & had
de reupe on hi · & cam to hi &
bound to gidir his woūdis · &
hild ȳne ople & wyne: & lepde
hi on his beest · & ledde in to an
ostrye · & dide pe cure of hi / and
a noper day he brouȝte forp tweyn
pans: & ȝaf to pe ostiler & seide /
haue pe cure of hi / and what
eū pou schalt ȝine oūr: y schal
ȝelde to pee · whanne y come aȝē
who of pes was pre semyp
to pee: was neizbore to hi pat
fel among þeues / & he seide /
he pat dide mercy ī to hi / & ihc
seide to hi / go pou & do pou on
lyk man / And it was don whi
le pei wentē: he entride ī to a
castel / & a womā martha by na
me: resseyuede hi ī to hir hous
And to pis was a sist̄: marie
bi name / which also satt bisi
dis pe feet of pe lord · & herde
his word / but martha bisiede
about pe ofte seruyce / & sche
stood & seide / lord takist pou

Luyk.

C. xi.

no kepe: pat my sistir hap left me
aloone to serue: pfor seie pou to
hir: pat sche helpe me And pe lord
answerde: & seide to hir martha
martha martha pou art bisi: & art trou
blid about ful many pingis/but
o ping is necessarie/ mary hap
chosin pe beest part which schal
not be take awey fro hir
And it was don· whanne
he was pyng i a place:
as he ceesside· oon of
his disciplis seide to hi/ lord teche
us to pie: as joon tanyte his dis
ciplis/ and he seide to hem/ whanne
ze pyen: seieze ffadir: halewid
be pi name/ pi kingdom come to
zine to us to day: oure eche dayes
breed & forzine to us oure synn:
as we forzine eche man pat
owip to us & lede us not in to
temptacion/ And he seide to hem/
who of zou schal haue a freend·
& schal go to him at mydde nyzt· &
schal seie to him freend leene to me
pre loues/ for my freend comep
to me fro pe weie: & y haue not
what y schal sette bifor him· And
he wip in forp answer & seie nyle
pou be heuy to me· pe doze is no
w schitt· & my children be wip
me in bed: y may not ryse & zine
to pee/ and if he schal dwelle &
he knockyng· y seie to zou: pouz
he schal not ryse & zine to hym
for pat pat he is his freend ne
peles for his contynuel asking·
he schal ryse & zine to him: as m
any as he hap neede to And y
seie to zou aske ze: & it schal be
opened to zou/ for eche pat askip:
takip/ And he pat sekip: fynd
ip & to man pat knockip: it
schal be opened pfor who of
zou askip his fadir breed: whe
per he schal zine him a stoon:
or if he askip fisch: wher he sch
al zine him a serpent for pe fisch:
or if he aske an eye: wher he
schal areche him a scorpioun: per
for zif ze whanne ze be pnel· kn
nen zine goode ziftis to zoure
children: how myche moore
zoure fadir of heuen· schal zine
a good spirit to men pat askip
him: And ihu was castynge out
a feend: & he was doumbe And
whanne he hadde cast out pe
feend: pe doumbe man spak· & pe
puple wondride/ And sum of hem
seiden in belsabub pryce of deu
elis: he castip out deuelis &
opir temptynge: asiden o him ato
kene fro heuen/ & as he saw pe
poutis of hem· he seide to hem/
euy reume departid azens
it self: schal be desolat/ & an
hous schal falle on a hous &
if sathanas be departid aze
nus him self how schal his reme

+ zouyn to zou/ seke ze: & ze schulen
fynde/ knocke ze: & it schal be

me stoonde · for ze seyen pat y
caste out feendis ī belsabub/
and if y ī belsabub caste out
feendis · ī whō kestē out zoure
sonȝ: ¶ for pei shulē bezome
domesmē/ but if y caste out
feendis ī pe fyngr of god: pā
ne pe reume of god is comū
among zou ¶ whāne a strong
armed man kepip his hous:
alle pingis pat he weldip ben
ī pees/ but if a strenger pāne
he come vpon hī & ouercome hī:
he shal take awei al his armu
er̄ · ī whiche he tristide · & sha
l dele abrood his robries ¶ he
pat is not wip me: is azenis
me/ & he pat gederip not to gi
dir wip me: scatterip abrood/
whāne an vnclene spirit go
ip out of a man: he wandrip
bi drie placis · & sekip reste/ &
he fyndinge not: seip y shal
turne azen ī to myn hous: fro
whāunȝ y cam out/ & whāne
he comep: he fyndip it clansid
wip bisymes · & fayr arayed/
pāne he goip & takip wip hī
seuene opir spiritis worse pā
ne hī self: & pei entren & dwe
llen per/ and pe laste pingis
of pat man: ben maad worse
pāne pe formere/ & it was don
whāne he hadde seid pese ping
is: a womman of pe cūpanye re

ride hir vois and seide to him/
blessid be pe wombe pat bare
pee: & blessid be pe tetis pat pon
hast soken/ & he seide/ but zhe
blessid be pei pat heeren pe wo
rd of god & kepen it ¶ and whā
ne pe puple rūnen to gidir: he
bigan to seie/ pis generacioun is
an yuel generacioun/ it seekip
a tokene/ & a tokene shal not be
zouī to it: but pe tokene of io
nas pe prophete/ for as ionas
was a tokene to nīe of nynyue:
so man? soue shal be to pis ge
nracioun/ pe queen of pe soup sh
al rise ī doom wip nīe of pis ge
nracioun: & shal condempne hem/
for she cam fro pe endis of pe
erpe: for to here pe wisdom of
salamon/ & lo heer? is a gretter
pāne salomon/ nīe of nynyue
shulē rise ī doom · wip pis gen
racioun: & shulē condēpne it/ for
pei diden penaūce ī pe prechyng
of ionas/ & lo heer? is a grett?
pan ionas ¶ noma tendip ala
mpe: & puttip ī hidlis: neper
vndir a bushel/ but on a candle
stike: pat pei pat goun yn se lizt/
pe lauhne of pi body: is pīn yze/
if pīn yze be symple: al pi body
shal be lizty/ but it be wey
ard: al pi body shal be derkful/
for se pou: lest pe lizt pat is ī
pee be derknellis/ for if al pi

body be bryȝt · And yf ye haue no pa
rt of derknesse : rt shal be al
bryȝt / And as whanne ye of bryȝt
nesse it shal ȝiue ȝow ly ȝt to yee /
And why haue ye pat : a farisee
ꝓyede hi pat he shulde eete
wip hi / And he entride & satt
to pe mete / And pe farisee bi
gan to seie wip ine
hi self : why he was not wasshe
n bifor mete / And pe lord seide
to hi / now ye farisees clensen
pat pt is wip outē forp of pe
cuppe & pe plat : but pat ping
pat is wip ȝine of ȝow is ful
of raueyn & wickidnesse / foo
lis · whey he pat made pt pat
is wip outē forp : made not
also pat pt is wip ȝine / nepeles
pat pat is ouer ꝑing ȝiue ȝe alm
es : & lo alle pingis ben cleene
to ȝou / but woo to ȝou farisees
pat tipen mynte & rue & ech
eerbe : & leeuen doun & pe char
ite of god / for it bihofte to do
pese pingis : & not leeue po /
woo to ȝou farisees pat louen
pe firste chayres in synagogis :
& salutacions in chepyng / woo to
ȝou pat ben as sepulcris pt ben
not seyn : & men walking aboue
& witen not / but oon of pe wise
men of pe lawe answerde : & sei
de to hi / maist pou seyng pese
pingis : also to us doist dispyt

And he seide also woo to ȝou wise
men of lawe / for ȝe chargen men
wip birdyng · which pei moun
not bere : & ȝe ȝou silf · wip ȝour
o fyngir touchen not pe birdyn
ellis / woo to ȝou pat bilden tom
bis of profetis / & ȝoure fadir
is slowen hem / trewli ȝe witnesse
ȝen : pat ȝe consenten to pe werk
is of ȝoure fadir is / for pei
slowen hem : but ȝe bilden her sepul
cris / ꝓfor pe wisdom of god sei
de / y shal sende to hem ꝓfeet
is & apostlis : & of pei shulen
sle & pursue / pat pe blood of
alle profetis pat was shed
fro pe making of pe world : be
souȝt of pis generacioun / fro pe
blood of pe iust abel · to pe blo
od of zacarie : pat was slayn
bitwixe pe auter & pe hous / ly y
seie to ȝou : it shal be souȝt of
pis generacioun / woo to ȝou wise
men of pe lawe : for ȝe han taki
n awey pe keye of kunyng / & ȝe
ȝou self entriden not : And ȝe
han forbeden hem pat entri
den / And whanne he seide pe
se pingis to hem : pe farisees
and wise men of lawe · bigun
nen greuously to aseen ȝou
de · and stoppe his mouy of
many pingis · aspiynge hym
and sekinge to take sum ping
of his mouy : to accuse hym

C. Fii

And whanne myche
puple stod aboute · so
pat per treden ech on
oper: he bigan to seie to his
disciplis / be ye war of pe
sourdouz of fariseis: pat
is ypocrisie / for no ping is
hilid: pat shal not be schewid
/ neper hid: pat shal not be
wist / for whi po pingis pat zee
han seid i derknessis: shulen
be seid i list / and pat pat ze han
spokun i eer i pe conclis: shal
be prechid i roofes / and y seie to zou
my freendis / be ze not afeerd
of hem pat sleen pe bodie: and
aftir pese pingis han no more
what pei shulen do / but y shal
schewe to zou: whom ze
shulen drede / drede ze him · pat
aftir he hap slayn, hap power
to sende i to helle / and so y seie
to zou: drede ze him / whiche fyue
sparowes ben not sold for tw
eyn halpenis: and oon of hem is
not i forzetyng bifor god: but
alle pe heeris of zoure
heed: ben noumbrid / perfor nyle
ze dreede: ze ben of more pri
se panne many sparowes / tr
euly y seie to zou ech man pat
knowlechip me bifor men:
man3 sone shal knowleche
him bifor pe angelis of god /
but he pat denyep me bifor
men: shal be deniyed bifor pe
angelis of god / and eche pat
seip a word azens man3 sone:
it shal be forzouen to him / but
it shal not be forzouen to hym:
pat blaspemep azens pe hooly
goost ¶ And whanne pei ledun
zou in to synagogis · and to magi
stratis and potestatis: nyle ze be
bisi hou or what ze shulen
answeren · or what ze shulen
seie / for pe hooly goost shal
teche zou in pat our: what it
bihoupep zou to seie ¶ And oon
of pe puple seide to him / maist
seie to my brop pat he depart
te with me pe eritage / and he
seide to him: man who ordeyne
de me a domesman or a depar
ter on zou: And he seide to he
se ze and be war of al coueityse /
for pe lijf of a man: is not in pe
abundaunce of po pingis · whi
che he weldip / and he tolde to
hem · a lickenesse and seide / pe fe
eld of a riche man · brouzte forp
pleenteuouse fruytis: and he po
nzte with inne him self and seide /
what shal y do for y haue not
whidir y shal gadre my fru my
tis: And he seip pis ping y sh
al do / y shal pulle doun my ber
nes: and y shal make gretter / and
pidir y shal gadre alle pingis
pat growen to me and my goodis /

And y shal seye to my soule
soule pou hast many goodis
kept ī to ful many zeeris re
ste pou· ete drynke· & make
feeste And god seide to hī fool
ī pis nyzt: pei shulē take pi
lyf fro pee And whos shulē
po pingis be: pat pou hast a
rayed: so is he pat tresouryp
to hī self: & is not riche ī god
& he seide to his disciplis per
for y seie to zou· nyle ze be bisy
to zoure lyf: what ze shulen
ete nep to zoure body: nyp
what ze shulē be cloyid pe
lyf is more pan mete: & pe
bodi more pan cloping bihol
de ze crowis: for pei sowē not
nepir repen to which is no ce
ler ne bern: & god fedip hem
hou mychе more ze bē of more
prys pan pei: And who of
zou bipering: may putt to
oo cubit to his stature: & pfor
if ze moun not pat pt is leest:
what be ze bisie of op pingis:
bihold ze pe lilies of pe feeld
hou pei wexen pei trauelen
not nep spynen & y seie to zou:
pat nep salamon ī al his glo
rie was cloyid as oon of pees
& if god cloyip pus pe hey pat
to day is ī pe feeld· & to moro
ybe is cast ī to an ouē: hou m
yche more zou of litil feip: &

nyle ze seke· what ze shulen
ete or what ze shulē drynke:
& nyle ze be reysid an hī for fol
kis of pe world: sekē alle pese
pingis & zoure fadir woot·
pat ze neden alle pese pingis
nepeles seke ze first pe kingdō
of god: & alle pes pingis shulē
be cast to zou nyle ze litil floc
ke drede for it pleside to zour
fadir: to zyue zou akingdom
selle ze po pingis pat ze han ī
possessiōn: & zyue ze almes &
make ze to zou sachels pat wex
en not olde: tresour pat fai
lip not ī heuenes whidir a pe
f neizip not: nep mouzt dest
royep for wher is pi tresour:
pere pin herte shal be be zou
re leendis girid aboue: & lat
es brēnyng ī zour hoondis
and be ze lyk to mē pat abidē
hey word: whanne he shal tur
ne azen fro pe weddyngis
pt whanne he shal come and
knocke: anoon pei open to hī
blessid be po seruantis: pat
whanne pe lord shal come· he
shal fynde wakynge treuly
y seie to zou· pat he shal gir
de hī self: & make hem sitte
to mete and he shal go & ser
ue hē & if he come ī pe secon
de wakinge· & if he come ī pe
pridde wakinge· & fynde so:

amyche

po ſeruaũtis ben bleſſid / and
wite ze þis þing / for if an hoſe
bonde maũ wiſte i what our pe
þef wolde come: ſoþely he ſch
ulde wake & not ſuffre his ho
us to be myned / & be ze redy:
for i what our ze geſſen not·
maũn ſone ſchal come / and pe
tre ſeide to hi / lord ſeiſt þou
þis parable to us: or to alle:
& pe lord ſeide / who geſſiſt þ
is ſtrelbe diſpendere · & þru
dent: who pe lord hap ordeyne
de on his meyne to ziue he i
tyme · meſſ of whete: / bleſ
sid is þat ſeruaũt · þat pe lord
when he comeþ ſchal fynde
ſo doynge / verily y ſeie to zou·
þat ou alle þingis þat he weel
dip: he ſchal ordeyne hi / þat
if þt ſeruaũt ſeie i his herte:
my lord tarþep to come / and
bigynne to ſmyte children &
handemaydens: & ete & drin
ke & be fillid on meſſ / pe lord
of þat ſeruaũt ſchal come i
pe dai pat he hopip not: &
pe our þat he woot not / and
ſchal departe hi: & putte his
part wt vnfeipful me but
pilk ſeruaũt þat knew pe wi
lle of his lord: & made not hi
redi · & dide not after his wille:
ſchal be betin with many betin
gis / but he þat knew not &
dide worpi þingis of ſtrokis:
ſchal be betin with felwe / ffor to
ech maũ to whom myche is zoue:
myche ſchal be axid of hi / and
pei ſchulen axe more of hi: to
whom pei bitoken myche / þ can
to ſeude fiew i to pe erpe / and
what wole þ: but þat it be
kyndlid: / & þ hanne to be bap
tizid with a baptym / & how am
þ coufreyned: til þat it be par
fitly don / weene ze þat þ cam
to zine pees i to erpe / nay þ ſe
ie to zou: de departing / for fro
þis tyme · þ ſchulen be fyue de
partid in oon hous / pre ſchulen
be departid azenis tweyne: &
tweyne ſchulen be departid aze
nis pre / pe fadir azenis pe ſone:
& pe ſone azenis pe fadir / pe
modir azenis pe douzt: & pe
douzt azenus pe modir / pe
hoſebondis modir azens pe ſo
nes wijf: & pe ſones wijf ·
azenis hir hoſebondis modir /
and he ſeide alſo to pe puple /
whan ze ſeen a clonde riſyn
ge fro pe ſunne goyng doũ: a
noon ze ſeyen reyn comep · &
ſo it is don / and whanne ze fe
en pe ſouþe blowynge · ze ſei
en þat heete ſchal be: & it is
don / ypocritis ze kunnen pre
ue pe face of heuene & of erpe:
bout how þuen ze not þis ty

C. xiii

me: but what and of zou self
ze deme not pat pt is iust/
but whanne you goist wip pi
aduersarie i pe weie to pe prince:
do bisinesse to be deliuerid
from hi/ lest parauenture he
take pee to pe domesman & pe
domesman bitake pee to an
vnstidful exer & pe mayst vnstidful ex
er sende pee i to prisoun/ & sei
to pee pou schalt not go fro pe
nyȝ: til pou zelde pe laste ferdig
And sum men weren
presente i pat tyme·
pat telde to hi of pe
galileis: whos blood pilat
myngide with pe sacrifices of
he/ And he answerde & seide to
hem wenen ze pat pese men of
galile were synneris more pan
ne alle galileis· for pei suffri
den siche pingis: y say to zou
nay/ but ze schulen perische in
lyk man: but ze haue penau
nce· & as po eiȝtene· on which
pe tour i syloa fel doun & slow
en he: gessen ze for pei were
dettouris more pan alle men
pat dwellen i ierlm: y seye to
zou nay/ but also ze alle schu
len perische: if ze don not
penaunce/ And he seide pis lic
nesse/ A man hadde a fyge tre
planted i his vyneyerd: & he
cam seking fruyt i it & foond
noon/ And he seide to pe tilier
of pe vyneyerd/ lo pre zeris ben
sipen· y come seking fruyt i
pis fyge tre: & y fynd non/ kitte
kitte it doun/ wher to occupieb
it pe erpe: And he answerynge:
seide to hi/ lord suffre it also
pis zeer· pe while y delue abo
ute it· & y schal donge it/ if it
schal make fruyt: if nay· in
time comynge pou schalt kitte it
doun/ And he was techinge in her
synagoge i pe sabatis/ And lo
a womman pat hadde a spirit of
syknesse eiȝtene zeris: & was
crokid· & nei3 ony man myȝte
looke upward/ whom whanne ihc
hadde seyn: he clepide to him·
& seide to hir/ woman pou art
delyuerid of pi seeknesse· & he
settide on hir his hoondis: &
anoon she stood upriȝt· & glori
fiede god/ And pe prince of pe sy
nagoge answerde hauynge
dedeyn for ihc hadde heelid i
pe sabat: & he seide to pe puple/
per ben sex dayes: in whiche it
bihoueb to werche/ for come
ze in pese· & be ze heelid: & not in
pe daye of sabat/ but pe lord
answerde to hi & seide/ ypocrite
wheper ech of zou vnteyb not
i pe sabot· his oxe or asse fro
pe cracche: & ledib to watir:
whi3te it not pis douȝter of

Abrahã· whom ſathanas
hap bouñ ſ̃ to eyztetene zer is·
to be vnbũñ of pis boond·
ī pe day of pe ſabat: And whã
ne he ſeide peſe pingis: his ad
uerſaries weren aſhamed: & al
pe puple iopede ī alle pingis:
pat were wrouȝt gloriouſly don of
hym ¶ Forpi he ſeide to what
ping is pe kingdom of god lik:
And to what ping ſchal y geſſe
it to be lyk: it is lik to a corn
of ſeneuey: which a man took
& caſte ī to his zerd: And it wax:
& was maad ī to a gret tre: &
foulis of pe eir reſtiden ī pe br
ãnchis pof: And eftſoone he
ſeide: to what ping ſchal y gel
le pe kingdom of god lik: it
is lik to ſourdouȝ· pat a wom
an took & hidde it ī to pre me
ſuris of meele· til al were ſou
rid ¶ And he went bi cites
& caſtels: techinge & makinge
a iourney ī to ierlũ: & a man
ſeide to hi: lord if þ̃ ben fewe:
pat ben ſaued: And he ſeide to
hem: ſtrepe ze to entre bi pe
ſtreyte ȝate: for y ſeie to zou·
many ſeken to entre· & pei
ſchulen not mowe: for whanne
pe hoſebonde man is entrid
& pe doȝ ſchit is cloſid: ze ſchu
len bigynne to ſtonde wip out
forp & knocke at pe doȝe and
ſeie: lord opyn to us: And he ſchal
anſwer & ſeie to zou: y knowe zou
not: of whennȝ ze be: panne ze ſch
ulen bigynne to ſeie: we haue etũ
bifore pee & dronkũ: & in our ſtre
etis pou haſt tauȝt: And he ſch
al ſeie to zou: y knowe zou not:
of whennȝ ze ben: go awey fro
me: alle ze werchers of wick
idneſſe: pe ſchal be weping &
gryntyng of teep· whanne ze
ſchul ſe abraham & ypaac & ia
cob· & alle pe profetis ī pe kyn
gdom of god: & zou to be put
out: & pei ſchulen come fro pe eeſt
& weſt & fro pe norp & ſoup: &
ſchulen ſitte at pe mete ī pe reyn
me of god: & lo pei pat weren
pe firſte: ben pe laſte: & pei pat
weren pe laſte: ben pe firſte ¶ In
pat day ſum of fariſees camen
nyȝ: & ſeiden to hi: go out & go
fro hennȝ: for herode wole ſle
pee: And he ſeide to hem: go ze &
ſeie ze to pat foxe: lo y caſte out
feendis· & y make parfitly hel
pis· to day & to morowe: & pe
pridde day y am endid: nepe
les it bihoueþ me to day & to
morowe & pe day pat ſuep· to
walke: for it failiþ not a pro
fete to periſche out of ierlũ
ierlũ ierlũ pat ſlees profe
tis: & ſtonieſte hem pat ben
ſent to pee: how ofte wolde y

C. xliij.

gadere to gidir yi sones · as abrid gadiriȳ his nest vndir fepriȝ: ꝥ pou woldist not: lo zoure hous shal be left to zou: desert/ and y seie to zou pat ze shulen not se me: til it come · whanne ze shulē seie/ blessid is he pat comep i pe name of pe lord And it was don whanne he hadde entrid i to pe hous of a prince of farisees · i pe sabat · to ete breed: pei aspidē hi/ ꝥ lo anū sike i pe dropesye: was bifor hi/ ꝥ ihc answerynge spak to pe wise mē of lawe ꝥ to pe farisees ꝥ seide/ whyer it is leeful to heele i pe sabot: ꝥ pei helden pees/ ꝥ ihc seiȝe tok ꝥ heelide hi: ꝥ let hi go/ ꝥ he answeride to hē ꝥ seide/ whos asse or oxe of zou shal falle i to a pitt: ꝥ he shal not anoon drawe hi out i pe dai of pe sabat ꝥ pei mygten not answere to hi to pese pingis ¶ he seide also a parable to mē ched ū to a feeste ꝥ bihel hou pei chesyn pe firste sittyng places: ꝥ seide to hē/ whanne pou art bedū to bridalis: sitte not at pe mete i pe firste place/ lest peraūetur a worpier pan pou be bedū of hi/ and lest he come pat clepide pee ꝥ hi · ꝥ seie to pee/ zyue place to pis/ and pan pou shalt bigynne with shame: to holde pe lowest place/ but whanne pou art bedū to a feeste: go ꝥ sitte doū i pe laste place/ pat whanne he comep pat bad pee to pee feeste: he seie to pee freend come hizer/ pan worship shal be to pee bifor mē pat sitten at pe mete/ for ech pat enhaūsip hym: shal be lowid/ ꝥ he pat meksip hi: shal be hized ¶ And he seide to hi: pat hadde bedū hi to pe feeste/ whanne pou makist a mete or a soper: nyle pou clepe pi freendis · nep pi britheren · ne pe cosyns · nep neizboris · ne richе mē/ lest peraūetur pei bidde pee azen to pe feeste: ꝥ it be zolde azen to pee/ but whanne pou makist a feeste: clepe poore mē · feble · croked · ꝥ blynde/ ꝥ pou shalt be blessid: for pei han not whyer of · to zelde to pee/ for it shal be zoolden to pee: i pe risyng azen of iust mē/ ꝥ whanne oon of hem pat sateu to gidir at pe mete hadde herd pese pingis: he seide to hi/ blessid is he pat shal ete bred ū pe reume of god: ꝥ he seide to hi/ a mā made a gret soper: ꝥ clepide many/ and he sente his seruaūt i pe our of pe soper · to seie to mē pt whei

bedñ to ye feeste: pat yei ſhulde
come/ for now alle pingis be re
dy/ & alle bigñneu to grou to ex
cuſen hē/ ye firſt ſeide: y haue
bouȝt atoñ: & y haue ned to go
out & ſe it/ y pie yee: haue me
excuſid/ And ye toþ ſeide/ y haue
bouȝt fyue zockis of oxñ: and
y go to preue hē/ y pie yee: haue
me excuſid/ & a noþ ſeide/ y ha
ue wedded a wijf: & þfor y may
not come/ & pe ſeruaūt turne
de azen: & telde pese pingis to
his lorde/ pan pe hoſebonde ma
was wroþ· & ſeide to his ſerua
unt/ go out ſwype i to ye grete
ſtretis & pe ſmale ſtretis of pe
cite: & bringe inne hidir pore me
& feble· blynde & crokid/ & pe ſer
uaūt ſeide/ lord it is doñ as pou
haſt comaūdid: & zit þe is a vo
ide place/ And pe lord ſeide to pe
ſeruaūt/ go out i to weyes and
heggis· & cōſtreyne me to entre:
pat myn hous be fulfillid/ for
y ſeie to zou· pat noon of po
ue pat ben clepid: ſhal taaſte
my ſoper/ & myche puple went
wip hī/ And he turnede & ſeide
to hē/ if ony ma comey to me
& hatip not his fadir & modir
& wijf & ſones· & bripren and
ſiſtris· & zit his owne lijf: he
may not be my diſciple/ & he
pat berip not his croſſ· & com
ep aftir me: may not be my diſ
ciple/ ¶ for who of zou wilnyge
to bilde a toure: wheþ he firſt ſit
te not· & coūtip pe ſpensis pat
ben nedeful· if he haue to par
fourme: leſt aft pat he hap ſett
pe foūdemēt· & mowe not par
fourme: alle þt ſeen bigynneu
to ſcorne hī & ſeie/ for pis ma bi
gan to bilde: & myzte not make
an ende/ or what kyng pat wole
go to do batayle azeny anoþ kyng:
wheþ he ſittip not firſt & bipen
kip· if he may wt ten pouſand
go azenȝ hī· pat comep azen him
wip twenty pouſand: ellis zit
while he is afer: he ſendip am
eſſangis· & pies pe pingis pat ben of
pees/ ſo þfor ech of zou pat forſa
kip not alle pingis pat he hap:
may not be my diſciple/ ¶ ſalt is
good: but if ſalt vaniſhe· i what
pingis ſhal it be ſaueri: neþ in
erpe· neþ i dounhille it is profit
able: but it ſhal be caſt out/ he þt
hap eeris of herynge: heer he

¶ Cap. xv.

nd publicans & pyn
ful men weren nezyng
to hī: to heere hī/ & pe
farisees & ſcribis grutchiden:
ſeiynge/ for pis· reſſeyuep ſyn
ful men: & etip wip hē/ And he ſpake
to hē pis parable & ſeide/ what
man of zou pat hap an hundrid
ſheep· & if he hap loſt oon of hē:

where he leuey not upnty and
wyne i desert · & goiy to it pat
perisshide · til he fynde it: And
whanne he hap foundñ it: he io
yep & lepiep it on his shulde
ris & he comey hoom & clepip
to gidir his freendis & neiz
boris & seip to hẽ be ze glade
wip me: for y hane foũde my
shepe pat hadde perishid
and y seie to zou · so iope shal
be i heuene on o synful mañ
doynge penaũce: mor pan
on nynty & nyne iuste pat ha
ii no nede to penaũce / or why
at womman hauynge ten be
shuttis: & if she hap lost o
beshuit: whey she kendip not
alauntue · & turney upsodoñ
pe hous · & sekip diligentli
til pat she fynde it: & whañ
ne she hap foũdoñ: she cle
pip to gidir freendis & neiz
bores · & seip / be ze glade wip
me: for y haue foũde pe bes
tũt pat y hadde lost / so y seie
to zou · iope shal be bifor aũg
els of god: on o synful mañ
doynge penaũce / And he se
ide ammañ hadde twey sonys:
zonger of hẽ seide to pe fadir
ffadir zine me pe porciõn of
catel pat falley to me / And he
departide to hem pe catel · &
not aftir many dayes · whañ
alle pingis weren gedrid to
gidir: pe zonger sone wente
forp i pilgrimage i to a fer cũtre
& pere he wastide his goodis: li
uynge leccherously / & aftir
pat pat he hadde endid alle
pingis: a strong hungre was
maad i pat cũtre · & he bigan
to haue nede / And he wente
& drouz hi to oon of pe citeseyn
es of pat cũtre / & he sente
hi i to his toñ: to fede swyn /
And he coueytide to fille his
wombe of pe coddis pat pe hog
gis eeten: & no mañ zaf hi / & he
turnede azen i to hymself: &
seide / how many hirid men in
my fadris hous haun pleinte
of loones: & y perishe heere
pozu hunger / y shal rise up &
go to my fadir: & y shal seie to
hi / fadir y haue synned i to he
uene & bifor pee: & now y am
not worpi to be clepid pi sone
make me as oon of pin hirid
men / And he roos up & cam to
his fadir / & whanne he was zit
afer: his fadir sauz hi · & was
sterid bi mercy / & he ran & fel
on his necke: & kisside hi / & pe
sone seide to hi / ffadir y haue
synned i to heuene & bifor pee:
& now y am not worpi to be
clepid pi sone / & pe fadir seide
to his seruañtis / swipe bringe

ze for pe firſt ſtoole: & clope ze
hi & ſiue ze Arying i his hoond:
& ſhoon on his feet & brige ze
a fat calf & ſle ze: & ete we And
make we feeſte for pis my ſo
ne was dede: & hap lyued Azen
he periſshide: & is foundū & al
le me bigunnen to ete but his
eldere ſone was i pe feld &
whanne he cam & neyzide to pe
hous: he herde a ſymfounye & a
croude & he clepide oon of pe
ſeruaūtis: & Axide what pese
pingis weren & he ſeide to hi
pi brop is comū & pi fadir sl
owze a fat calf: for he reſſey
ued hi ſauf & he was wrop:
& wolde not come yn & pfor his
fadir zede out: & bigan to pie
hi & he answeride to his fad
ir & ſeide lo ſo many zeeris y
ſerue pee: & y neu̇ brak pi com
aūdemēt & pou neu̇ zaue to
me a kidde: pat y wip my fre
endis ſhulde haue ete but af
tir pat pis pi ſone pat hap de
nouryd his ſubſtaūce wip ho
rys cam: pou haſt ſlayne to
hi a fat calf & he ſeide to hy
ſone pou art ey̆ more wip me:
and alle my pingis ben pine
but it bihofte forto make
feeſte and to haue ioye: for
pis pi brooper was deed· And
lyued Azen he periſshide &
is founden

He ſeide Also to his diſci
plis p was ariche m
an· pat hadde a bayly:
& pis was defamed to hi· as he
hadde wastid his goodis And he
clepide to hi what heere y pis
ping of pee: zelde reken̄ing
of pi bayli for myzt not now
be bayli And pe bayli ſeide wt
ynne hi ſelf what ſhal y do· for
my lord takip awey fro me pe
bayli: delue may not: y ſhame
to begge y woot what y ſhal
do· pat whanne y am removed
fro pe bayli: pei reſſeyue me
i to her hous p for whanne alle
pe dettours of his lord were
clepid to gidre: he ſeide to pe
firſte hou muche oweſt pou
to my lord: And he ſeide an hū
drid barels of oyle & he ſeide
to hi take pi cauciōn: & ſitte
ſoone & write fifty Afterward
he ſeide to anop & hou muche
oweſt pou: whiche answerde
an hūdrid cores of whete And
he ſeide to hi take pi lettres:
& write foure ſcore & pe lord
preiſide pe bayly of wicchidneſſe.
for he hadde don prudently for
pe ſones of pis world· be more
prudent i her generacioū: pan
pe ſones of liyt And y ſeie to
zou make ze to zou freendis

hi & ſeide

of ye richesse of wickednesse
yat wham̃e ze schulē faile: yei
receyne zon ī to euerlastinge
tabernacles he yat is trewe
e ī ye leeste thing: is trewe al
so ī ye more and he yat is wi
cked ī alitil thing: is wicked
also ī ye more. for if ze were
not trewe i ye wicked thing
of richesse: who schal bitake
to zou yat yat is verry: and
if ze were not trewe ī ope
nēu thing: who schal zeue
to zou yat yat is zoure. no ser
uaūt may serue to tweyn lor
dis for eyr he schal hate ye to
on· & loue ye toyir: eyr he schal
drawe to ye toon: & schal despi
se ye toyr. ze maye not serue
to god & to richesse. but pe fa
risees yat were couetous·
herden alle pese thingis: & yei
scorneden hī & he seide to hē
ze it ben yat iustifien zou bifor
mē. but god hap knowē zour
hertis for yat yt is hiz to mē:
is abhominacioū biforgod
pe lawe & profetis: til to iō
hn yat tyme ye reume of
god is euāngelisid: & ech man
doip violence ī to it. forsope it
is liztir heuē & erpe to passe:
pan yat o titil falle fro ye
lawe. Eche man yat forsak
ip his wijf· & weddip anoper:
doip leccherie. And he yat wed
dip ye wijf forsakū of ye hosebo
nde: doip auoutrye. Per was
a riche mā & was clopid in pur
pur & whit silk: & eete eche day
schynyngly. And þ was a begger
lazarus by name: pat lay at his
zate ful of bilis. And comende
to be fulfillid of ye cōmes yt
fileu doū fro ye riche mānr bo
rd: & no mā zaf to hī but hoū
dis cameu: & lickiden his bilis
& it was dou pat ye begger dy
ede: & was berīe of aūgelis in
to abrahames bosū. And ye riche-
mā was deed also: & was buried
ī helle & he reysede his izen whā
ne he was ī turmentis: & say
abraham afer· & lazarus in
his bosū & he criede & seide
fad' abraham haue mercy on me:
& sende lazarus yat he dippe
ye ende of his fynger ī wat'
to kele my tōge: for y am tur-
mentid ī pis flawme. And abra-
ham seide to hī sone haue mynde·
for pou hast resseyued good pin
gis ī pi lyf: lazarus also yuel
pingis. but he is now comfort
id: & pou art turmētid. And ī
alle pese pingis: a grete derke
place is stablischid bitwixe us
& zou. yat yei yat wolen fro hē
nus passe to zou: mowen not·
nei fro pēns passe oū hidir

And he seide/ panne y preye pe
fadir: pat pou sende hĩ in to pe
hous of my fadir/ for y haue
fyue breþren: pat he witnesse
to hẽ· lest also pei come in to pis
place of turmẽtis/ And abra
ham seide to hi· pei han moyse
& pe profetis: heere pei hem/
& he seide/ nay fadir abraham·
but if ony of deed men go to
hẽ: pei schulẽ do penaũce/ & he
seide to hi/ if pei heerẽ not mo
yses & profetis: neper if ony
of deed men ryse azen pei schu
len bileue to hym

And ihũ seide to his dis
ciplis it is impossible:
pat skaũdris come
not/ but wo to pat maũ· bi w
hom pei comen/ it is more pro
fitable to hi· if a mylne stoon
be putt about his necke· & he
be cast in to pe see: pan pat he
skaũdre oon of pese litil/ take
3e heede to 3ou self if pi brooer
hap synned azen3 pee: blame hi/
& if he do penaũce: forzine hym/
& if seuene sipis in pe day he do
synne azen3 pee· & seuene sipis in
pe day he be cũuertid to pee· & seie
it forpenip me: forzine pou
hi/ And pe apostlis seiden to pe
lord/ encrese to us feip/ & pe lord
seide/ if 3e han feip as pe corn
of seuenep: 3e schulẽ seie to pis
more tre· be pou drawen up bi
pe rote· & be obeischid to pee·
& it schal obeye to 3ou but who
of 3ou hap a seruaũt erynge or
lesewynge ox/ which seip to
him/ whanne he turnep azen fro pe
feld: anoon go & sitte to mete:/
& seip not to hi: make redy pat y
soupe and girde pee & serue me
while y ete & drynke: & aft3 pis
pou schalt ete & drynke/ where
he hap grace to pat seruaũt: for
he dide pat pat he comaũdide hi:
nap y gesse 3oze whanne 3e han
don alle pingis pat ben comã
ndid to 3ou: seie 3e we vnprofi
table seruaũtis: we han do pat
pat we ou3ten to do; and it was
don pe while ihc̃ wente in to ierlim:
he was passide poron pe myddil
of samarie & galile/ And whanne
he entride in to pe castel: ten lepro
use mẽ camẽ azen3 hi/ which
stodẽ afer· & reisdẽ her voic·
& seidẽ/ ihũ comaũdour: haue
mercy on us/ And as he say hẽ:
he seide go 3e schewe 3e 3ou to pre
estis/ And it was don pe while pei
wenten: pei weren clensid/ And
oon of hem as he say3· pat he was
clensid: wente azen magnyfy
ng god wip a3rete voic/ And he
fel doun on pe face bifor his feet:
& dide pankyngis/ And pis was
a samaritan & ihc̃ answerde and

seide / whey ten ben not cleusid. & wher ben pe nyne: / per is noon foũdũ pat turnede azẽ & zaf glorie to god: but pis alien / and he seide to hĩ / rise up go pou: for pei feip hap maad pee saaf. ¶ And he was axid of fariseis · whanne pe reume of god comep: & he answeride to hẽ & seide / pe reume of god comep not with aspiyng: nei per shulẽ seie / lo heere: or lo pere / for lo pe reume of god is with ĩne zou. And he seide to his disciplis / dayes shulẽ come whanne ze shulẽ desyre to se o daye of mãn9 sone: & ze shulẽ not se. And pei shulẽ seie to zou / lo here · & lo pere / nyle ze go · nei pei sue ze / for as leyt schynynge fro vndir heuene · schynep ĩ to po ping is pat ben vndir heuene: so shal mãn9 sone be ĩ his day / but first it bihouep hĩ to suffre many pingis: & to be repued of pis generacioũ. And as it was don ĩ pe dayes of noe: so it shal be ĩ pe dayes of mãn9 sone / pei eeten & dronken: weddiden wyues · & weren zouen to weddyngis · til ĩ to pe dai ĩ pe which noe entride in to pe schip: & pe greete flood cam & loste alle / also as it was don in pe dayes of loth: pei eeten & dronkẽ · bouztẽ & seelden · plãtiden & bildiden / but pe day pat loth wente out of sodome: pe lord reynede fyer & brymstoon fro heuene & loste alle / lyke pis ping it shal be: ĩ what day mãnis sone shal be schewid / in pat our he pat is ĩ pe roof & his vessels in pe hous: come he not doun to take hẽ awei / and he pat shal be ĩ pe feld: also turne not azen bihynde / be ze mynde ful of pe wijf of loth / who eũ seeke to make his lyf saaf: shal leese it / & who eũ lesip it: shal quykene it / but y seie to zou ĩ pat nyzt tweyne shulẽ be ĩ o bed / on shal be takũ: & pe toper forsakũ / tweyn shulen be gryndynge to gidir / pe toon shal be takũ: & pe toper forsakũ / tweyn ben ĩ a feeld: pe toon shal be takũ · & pe toper left / pei answerẽ & seien to hĩ / wher lord / whi che seide to hẽ / wher eũ pe body shal be: pidir shulen be gaderid to gidir. Also pe egles

And he seide to hẽ also a parable / pat it bihouep to pie euermore · & not faile · & seide / per was a iuge in a citee: pat dredde not god · neper shamede of men / and a widowe was ĩ pat cite;

And she cam to hi and seide/ ꝛe ge me of myn ad̄ sarie/ & he wolde not louge tyme/ but aft tir pese pingis he seide wip ine hi self/ pouz y drede not god & schame not of mā: nepeles for pis widowe is heuy to me· y schal venge hir/ lest at pe laste she compinge coude̅ pne me/ & pe lord seide/ heere ze what pe domesma̅ of wicked nesse seip/ And wheper god schal not do vengeaūce of his chos sone crienge to hi day & nyzt: & schal haue pacience i hem: I sopeli y seie to zou· for sone he schal do veniaūce i hem/ Nepeles ge wisse pou pat m ani sone comynge schal fynde feip i erpe:/ And he seide also to sum̄e pat tristiden i hē self as pei were̅ vizteful· & dispisiden opir pis parable seipinge/ twei ne men weten up i to pe tēple: to pie pe to ou Farisee: & pe toper apup plican/ & pe farisee stood & p̄ ide bi hym self pese pingis & seide/ god y do pankingis to pee· for y am not as oper men raueynours: vniust· aduouterers· As also pis pup plican/ y faste twies in pe woke: y zyue tipis of alle pi ingis pat y haue i possessiōn/

And pe pupplican stood afer· & wolde nep̄ reyse his izen to he neue/ but smote his brest: & seide/ god be merciful to me sy nei̅/ treuly y seie to zou· pis zede doū i to his hous & was iustified fro pe op̄/ for eche pat enhaūsip hi̅: schal be enhaūs id̄/ And pei brouzte̅ to hi zonge children̄: pat he schulde touche hem/ & whanne pe disciplis sawe pis ping: pei blamedenhem/ but iesu clepide to gidir he̅ & seide/ suffrep̄ je children̄ to come to me: & nyle ze forbede hem/ for of such is pe kingdom of heuenes/ treuly y seie to zou· who eu̅ schal not take pe kingdom of god as a child/ he schal not entre i to it/ & a prince axide hi̅ & seide/ goode maist̄ i what ping doynge: schal y welde eu̅lastinge lyf: & iesu seide to hi̅/ what seist pou me good/ no man is good but god aloone/ p̄u knowist pe comaūdemētis/ p̄ schalt not slee· p̄u schalt not do letcherie· pou schalt not do pefte· pou schalt not seie fals witnessing· worschipe pi fadir & pi modir/ which seide/ y haue kept alle pees pingis fro my zongpe/ & whanne pis ping was herd iesu seide to hi̅ zit o ping failip to pee/ selle p̄u alle pingis pat p̄u hast & zyue

schal be maad lowz & he pat meknip hym

to pare men: And pou shalt haue
tresoure i heuene & come & sue pi
me Whan pese pingis weren
herd he was sore wofil: for he
was fulfrichi & isc seynge hi ma
ad sarie: seide hou hard pei pat
han money: shulen entre in to
pe kingdom of god/ for it is lizt
Camel to passe porou a needlis
ize: pane a riche man to entre i to
pe kingdom of god/ and pei pat
herden pese pingis seide/ Who
may be maad saaf & he seide to
hem/ po pingis pat ben impossi
ble anentis men: ben possible
anentis god/ but petre seide/ lo
we han left alle pingis: & han
sued pee & he seide to hi treuly
y seie to you/ pis no man pat shal
forsake hous or fadir & modir
or britheren or wijf or children or
feeldis for pe rewme of god: &
shal not resseyue manyfold mo
pingis i pis tyme & i pe world
to comynge euerlastynge lyf/ &
isc tok his twelue disciplis/ and
seide to hem/ lo we gon up to ieru
salem: & alle pingis shulen be
endid pat ben writen bi pe pro
fetis of man sone/ for he shal
be bitraied to hepene men: & he
shal be scorned & scourged & bi
spat/ & aft pat pei han scourgid:
pei shulen sle hi & pe pridde day
he shal rise azen/ And pei vndir

stoden not po pingis pat weren
seid/ but it was hid fro hem isc
cam nyz to iericho: a blynde man
satt bisidis pe wey & beggide &
whanne he herde pe puple pass
ynge: he axide what pis was/ &
pei seiden to hi: pat isc of nazar
eth passide/ & he criede & seide/
ihu pe sone of dauyp: haue mer
cy on me/ & pei pat weren bifor
blamyden hi pat he shulde be
stille/ but he criede myche pe
more: pou sone of dauyp haue mer
cy on me/ And isc stood & comaun
dide hi to be brouzt forp to hi/
And whanne he cam nyz: he axi
de hi & seide/ What wolt pou pt
y shal do to pee: & he seide lord
pat y se/ & isc seide to hi/ biholde:
pi feip hap maad pee saaf/ And
anoon he say: & sued hi/ And
magnifiede god/ and pe puple
as it say: zaf herynge to god
And isc went out and
walkide to iericho/ And
lo a man zache by name
And pis was a prince of puplis
cam & he was riche & he soug
te to se ihu who he was: & he
myzte not for pe puple for he
was littil i stature & he ran
bifor & stizede i to a sycomour
tre: to se hi for he was to pas
se fro penu/ & isc biheld up
whanne he cam to pe place &

vndurstoden no ping of pese
& pis word was hid fro hem: & pei

saiz hym· and seide to hym zache
haste pee & come doñ: for to da
y y nuot dwelle ī pūn hous &
he hizynge cam doñ: & iōiyn
ge reseyuede hī & wlhāne al
le men sayen: pei gr̄nachidē
seynge· for he hadde turnyd
to a synful mā but zache stoo
d & seide· to pe lord lo lord y zi
ue pe half of my good to poor
mē & if y hane ouy pūng defr̄
audid ony mā: y zelde foure fo
uyche wh̄c seiz to hī for to day
heelpe is maad to pis hous:
for pat he is abrahūs sone
ffor mān̄ sone cam to seke &
make saaf pat pūng pat per
ischide ¶ wlhāne pei herdē pe
se pūngis he addide & seide ap
arable for pat he was nyz ie
rusalē· & for pei gessiden pat
anoon pe kingdom of god sch
ulde be schewid perfor he sei
de a worpi mā went in to a
fer cāitre: to take to hī aking
dom· & to turne azen & wlhāne
his ten seruaūtis were clep
id: he zaf to hem ten besaūt
is· & seide to hē chaffaryze:
til y come but his citesyns
hatiden hī: & sentē after hym
aft hī· & seidē we wolē not
pat he regne on us & it was
don pat he turnede azen: wh
āne he hadde take pe king
dom and he comaūdide his ser
uaūtis to be clepid· to wlhiche he
hadde zifc money: to wlhite hon
uyche ech hadde wonne bi chaf
faryng & pe firste cam & seide
lord: yi besaūt hap wonne ten
besaūtis he seide to hī wel be
pou good seruaūt ffor in littil
pūng pou hast be trewe: pou
schalt be hauyng power on ten
citees & pe toper cam & seide lord
yi besaūt hap maad fyue besa
ūtis & to pis he seide & be pou
on fyue citees & pe pridde and cam
seide lord lo pi besaūt pat y
hadde: put up i a clowaryc for
y dredde pee: for pou art aster
ne mā pou takist awey· pt pat
pou settidest not: & pou repest
pt pat pou hast not sowū he
seip to hī wickid seruaūt of pi
mouy y deme pee wistist pou
pat y am asterne mā· takynge
awey pat pūng pat y settide
not: & repyng pat pūng pat y
sewe not: & wlhi hast pu not zo
uē my money to pe boor· & y co
mynge schulde hane axid it wt
vsuris: & he seide to men stōdy
ng nyz take ze awei fro hī pe
besaūt: & zyue ze to hī pat hap
ten besaūtis & pei seidē to hī
lord he hap ten besaūtis & y
seie to zou· to eche mā pat hap·
it schal be zouē: & he schal

encrese / but fro hī pat hap not
also pat puig pat he hap shal
be taku of hī / nepeles bryuge
ze hidur po nuyn eunyes pt wol
den not pt y regnede on hē · t
cle ze bifor me · t whāne pese
puigis weren seid: he wēte bifor ·
t zede up to ierlūn / t it was dō
whāne ihc cam upz to bethfage
t betanye at pe moūt pt is de
pid of olyuete: he sente his tw
ey disciplis t seide go ze ī to pe
castel: pat is azeuȝ zou ī to wh
ich as ze entrē ze shulē fynde
a colt of an asse tyed: on which
neu̇ nā sat̄t / uutpe ze hi: t
bryuge ze to me t if ouy man
aȝe zou whi ze uutpeu: pus ze
shulē seie to hi / for pe lord desī
rip his werk / t pei pat wereu
sent · wēteu fayr: t foūdē as he
seide to hē · a colt stoudyuge /
whāne pei uutiedē pe colt: pe
lordis of hī seidē to hē / what
uutpeu ze pe colt: t pei seiden
for pe lord hap nede to him / t
pei leddē hī to ihū / t pei casty
nge her clopis on pe colt: and
setten ihū on him / and whāne
he weute: pei strowedē her clo
pis ī pe were / and whāne he
cam nyz to pe comyng doū of
pe mouīte of olyuete: alle pe
puple pat cam doū bigūnen
to iōpe and to herie god wip

gretе voys · on al pe vertues pat
pei hadden sayen / t seidē blessid
be pe king pat comep ī pe name
of pe lord: pees ī heuene · t glorie
ī hize puigis / and sīi of pe fari
sees of pe puple: seidē to hym:
maist̄: blame pi disciplis / t he
seide to hē / y seie to zou · for if
pese ben stille: stoones shulē
crye / t whāne he neȝide: he sez
pe cite · t wepte on it · t seide /
for if pu haddest knowīn: pou
shuldest wepe also / for in pis
day · pe puigis ben ī pees to
pee / but now pei ben hid fro
pin izen / but dayes shulen co
me ī pee · t pin enmyes shulē
environ pee wip apale: t pei
shulen go aboute pee · t make
pee · strept on alle sidis t caste
pe doū to pe erpe: t pi soung pt
ben ī pee / and pei shulē not
lene ī pee · a stoon on a stoon ·
for pou hast knowīn pe tyme
of pi visitacoū / and he entri
de ī to pe tēple: t bigan to
caste out me sellyuge pm ine t
biyuge t seide to hē / it is wri
tē: pat myn hous is an hous
of pier / but ze han maad it
a den of penes / t he was
techīnge eny day ī pe temple /
and pe princis of pe prestis and pe
scribis · t pe princis of pe pu
ple: souȝten to lese hym / t

pei coñdon not wḥat pei ſḥul
den do to ḥim / for alle pe puple
was occupied & herde hym
And it was don ī oon
of pe dayes wḥanne
he tauzte pe puple ī
pe temple & p̄chide pe gospel:
pe p̄nces of p̄stis & scribis ca
men to gidir wip pe elder mē
& pei seidē to hi / seie to us in
wḥat power p" doist pese pin
gis: or wḥat is he pat zaf to
pee pis power: & ihc answer
de & seide to hē / & y ſḥal axe
zou a word: answer ze to me
was pe baptym of of heuene:
or of mē: & pei pouztē wip ī̃ne
hem self: seiynge for if we
seie of heuene: he ſḥal seie
wḥy p̄ne bileue ze not to hi:
& if we seien of mē: alle pe
pnple ſḥal stoone us / for pei
ben certeyn: pat ioon is a pro
fete & pei answerdē pat pei
knewē not: of wḥan̄ it was
& ihc seide to hē / nep̄ y seie to
zou: ī wḥat power y do pese
pingis / & he bigan to seie to
pe puple: pis parable / a man̄
plaūtide a vyne zerd: & hirde
it to tylieris · & he was ī pilg'
mage longe tyme / & ī pe ty
me of gadrige of grapes · he
sente a seruaūt to pe tilieris:
pat pei ſḥuldē zine to hi of
pe fruyt of pe vynezerd / wḥich pe
ten hi · & leten hi go voyde / and he
pouzte zit to sende anop̄ seruaūt
& pei betē hi̇ pis ſeruaūt & tur
mentide hi sore: & leten hi go
& he pouzte zit · to sende pe prid
de / & hi also pei wondidē & cast
den ont / & pe lord of pe vynezerd
seide / wḥat ſḥal y do: p ſḥal
sende myn derewoze sone / per-
ā nēture wḥanne pei see hi̇: pei ſḥ
ulē drede / & wḥanne pe tilieris
sayē hi̇ pei pouztē wip ī̃ne hem
self & seidē / pis is pe eyre / sle
we hi̇: pat pe ſritage be oure
& pei castidē hi̇ out of pe vyne
zerd: & killidē hi̇ / wḥat ſḥal
p̄ne pe lord of pe vynezerd
do to hē / he ſḥal come & destru
ye pese tilieris: & zine pe vyne
zerd to op̄ / And wḥanne pis pyng
was herd: pei seiden to hi̇ / god
forbede / but he bihelde hem: &
seide / wḥat p̄ne is pis pat is
writī̃ · pe stoon wḥich mē beel
dynge repꝓueden: pis is made
ī to pe heed of pe coṛn̄ / ech pat
ſḥal falle on pat stoon: ſḥal
be to bruſid / but on wḥom it
ſḥal falle it ſḥ ſḥal atto bre
ke hi̇ / And pe p̄nces of p̄stis &
scribis · souzten to leye on hym
hoondis ī pat our: & pei dred
den pe puple / for pei knewen:
pat to hē he seide pis lykenesse

And pei aspyeden and seyde asp
ieris: pat keyneđ̄ heem nust pt
pei schuldē take hī i word· & bi
take hī to pe power of pe pu
ce· & to pe power of pe iustice/
& pei axiden hī & seidē/ maist
we witen: pat vrytly pou seist
& techest/ & p' takist not pe per
sone of mā: but pou techist i
treupe pe weie of god/ is it le
ueful to us: to zine tribute
to pe emperour or nay: & he
bihelde pe dissept of hē· & seide
to hē/ what tēpte ze me: schе
we ze to me a peny/ whos pin
age & superscripcioū hap it:/
pei answerdē & seidē to hī/ pe
emperouris/ & he seide to hē/
zelde ze perfore to pe empero
ur: po pingis pat ben pe em
perouris/ & po pingis pt bē
of god: to god/ & pei wondriden
his answer: & heelden pees
sūme of pe sadducеis· pat de
nyedē pe azenrysing fro de
ep to lyf: camen & axidē & se
idē maist· moyses wroot to
us· i pe if pe brop of ony mā
hadde a wyf & he deed· and
he was wip outen eyres: pt
his bropер take his wif· &
reyse seed to his bropер/ and
so p' were seuen breperen/ pe
firste took a wyf: & is deed wt
outē eyris/ & pe brop' suynge to
ke hir: & he is deed wip outē sone/
and pe pridde toke hir/ also & alle
seuene· & lefte n not: but ben
deed/ and pe laste of alle pe wō
man is deed/ for i pe rysing ayē:
whos wyf of hē schal she be/
for seuene hadden hir to wyf/
& ihc seide to hē/ sones of pis wor
ld wedden: & ben zouñ to weddig
is/ but pei pat schulē be had wor
pi of pat world· & of pe risyng
azen fro deep: neip ben wedde
neip wedden wymes neip schulē
nolde die more for pei ben eue
wip angels· & ben pe soun of
god: sipen pei ben soun of risy
ng azen fro deep/ & pt deed mē
risen azen: also moyses schew
ede bisidis pe bussh/ as he seip
pe lord of abr ahā: & god
of ysaac· & god of iacob/ & god
is not of deed mē:/ but of ly
nyng mē/ for alle mē lyuen
to hī/ & sūm of scribis answer
inge: seidē/ maist' pou hast
wel seid/ & pei durstē no more
axe hī oup ping/ but he seide
to hē/ hou seien mē crist to be
pe sone of dauip: & dauip hī
self seip i pe book of salmes:
pe lord seide to my lord· sitte
pou on my vrzhalf: til pat
I putte pin enmyes a stool

hī

god

of yi feet: perfor dam̃y clepip
hi̅ lord: & hou is he his sone: &
iheering of al pe pnple: he sei
de to his disciplis/ be ze war of
scribis pat wolen wandre in
stolis: & lou̅e salutaciou̅s i pe
cheping & pe firste chayris i
synagogis: & pe firste sittyng
placis i feestis/ pat denouncē
pe houslis of widowis: & fey
nen long preyng/ pese sh̃ulē
take pe more dampnacio̅n
Ande he biheld & saye
po riche mē pat castē
her zifts i to pe trese
rie/ but he saye also a litil po
re widowe castynge twey fer
pingis: & he seide/ treuly y sey
e to zou pat pis poor widowe:
peste more pā̃e alle mē/ for
wh̄i alle pese of ping pt was
plēteuouse to hē: castē i to pe
zifts of god/ but pis widowe
of pat ping pat failid to hir:
caste al hir lyflode pat she ha
dde & wh̄ēne sū mē seidē of pe
tēple: pat it was appar̄eild
wip good stoones & zifts: he
seide/ pese pingis pat ze seen·
dayes sh̃ulē come· i wh̄iche
a stoon sh̃al not be left on a
stoon: wh̄ich sh̃al not be dest
royed/ And pei axidē hi̅ & seidē
comaūdour wh̄ane sh̃ulē pe
se pingis be: & wh̄at tokē sh̃al
be wh̄anne pei bigynne to be don/
& he seide/ seze pat ze be not dis
eyued/ ffor many sh̃ulē come
i̅ my name: seiynge for y am· &
pe tyme sh̃al neize/ p̄for uple ze
go aft̄ hē/ & wh̄anne ze sh̃ulen
heere batels & stirynes wip ine:
uple ze be afered/ it bihouep
first pese pingis to be don: but
not zit anoon is an ende/ pā̃e
he seide to hē folk sh̃al rise aze
n̄ folk: & reume azen̄ reume/
gete moyngis of er̄pe sh̃ulē
be bi placis: & pestilencis & hū
gris/ & dredis fro heuene: & gre
te tokenes sh̃ulē be/ but bifor
alle pese pingis· pe sh̃ulē sette
her hoondis on zou: & sh̃ulen
pursue/ bitakynge i̅ to synago
gis & kepingis: & alsynge to
pingis· & nistis for my name/
but it sh̃al falle to zou in to wit
nessynge/ p̄for putte ze i̅ zoure
hertis: not to penke bifor zou
how ze sh̃ulē answer̄/ for y sh̃al
zine to zou moup & wisdom: to wh̄
iche alle zoure aduersaries sh̃ulē
not mowe azēstonde & azen seie
& ze sh̃ulē be taki̅ of fadir and
modir & britheren & cosyns & freen
dis: & bi deep pei sh̃ulē turnē
te of zou/ & ze sh̃ulē be i̅ hatid
to alle mē: for my name/ & an
heer of zoure heed: sh̃al not
perisshe/ in zoure pacience ze

shulen welde youre soules/ but
whanne ze shulē se ierlīn be ēui
rolwned wip an oost: pānne write
ze pat pe desolacioñ of it shal
neize/ pānne pei pat bē i iudee:
flee ze to pe mountaines/ & pei
pat bē i pe mydil of it: gon
awei/ & pei pat ben i pe cūtre
is: entre not i to it/ for pese bē
daies of vēgaūce· pat alle pyn
gis pat ben writtī: be fulfil
lid/ & wo to hē· pat bē wt childe·
& norishen i po daies· for agret
distresse shal be on pe erpe: and
wrape to pis puple/ & pei shul
en falle bi pe sharpnesse of
swerde: & pei shulē be led pīso
neris i to alle folkis/ & ierlīī
shal be defoulid of hepē mē:
til pe tymes of nacioñs be
fulfillid ¶ and tokenes shulē
be i pe sunne & pe mone & i pe
sterris: & i pe erpe ouerleyinge
of folkis for cōfusioñ of sown
of pe see & of floodis/ for mē
shulē wexe dry for dreede &
abidyng· pat shulē come to
alle pe world/ for vtues of he
uenes shulē be moued/ & pā
ne pei shulē se mañ soue com
ynge i a cloude: wip gret po
wer & maieste/ & whanne pese
pingis bigynē to be maad:
biholde ze & reyse ze youre he
edis· for youre redēpcioñ neȝ
ip/ and he seide to hem a lickenes
se/ seze pe fige tre & alle trees/
whanne pei bryngen forp now
of hē self fruyt· ze witē pat so
mer is nīz/ so ze whanne ze seen
pese pingis to be don: write ze pt
pe kingdō of god is upz/ treuly
y seie to zou· pat pis generacioñ
shal not passe: til alle pingis
be don/ heuene & erpe shulen
passe· but my wordis shulen
not passe/ but take ze heede to
zou self: lest parauēture youre
hertis be greuyd wip glotony
& drunkenesse· & bisynesses of
pis liyf· & pilk day com suden
on zou/ for as a snare it shal
come on alle mē pat sitten on
pe face of al pe erpe/ perfor
wake ze & preyse in echе tyme: pt
ze be had woxpi to flee alle pese
pingis pat ben to come & to stō
de bifor mañ? sone & i daies
he was techinge i pe tēple
but i nyztis he zede out and
dwellide i pe mount pat is cle
pid of olyuete/ & alle pe puple
rood eerly to come to hī in pe
temple & to here hym

And pe halidai of pesy
loones pat is seid pask
neiside: & pe princis of
prestis & pe scribis souzten·
hou pei shuldē sle ihū/ but pei
dreddē pe puple/ & sathanas

entride in to ihudas: pat was
clepid scharioth oon of pe tvelue
e ihe went & spak wip pe
magistratis: how he schulde
betraye hi to hē & pei coyden
& maden couenaūt: to zyue hi
money & he bihizte & he soughte
opoztunyte: to betraye hi wt
outen puple but pe daȝes of
per festes cam in which it
was needē pt pe sacrifice of
pask shed schuld & he sente
petir & ioon & seide goo ze and
make ze redy to us pe pask:
pat we ete & pei seiden wher
wolt pou pat we make redy:
& he seide to hē lo whanne ze sch
ulē entre i to pe citee: anā be
ryuge a vessel of wat: schal
mete zou sue ze hi i to pe ho
us: i to which he entrip: & ze
schulē seie to pe hostbondmā
of pe hous pe maist scip to
pee wher is a chaūbere: whe
r̄ p schal ete pe pask wip my
disciplis: & he schal schewe
to zou a grete souped place
strewid: & per make ze redy
& pei zeden & foūdē as he seide
to hē: & pei madē redy pe pask
& whanne pe our was come:
he sate to pe mete · & pe twelue
apostlis wip & he seide to hē
wip desir y hanne desirid · to
ete wip zou pis pask: bifor
pat y suffre for y seye to zou·
pat fro pis tyme y schal not ete
it: til it be fulfillid i pe reume
of god & whanne he hadde take
pe cuppe: he dide gracis & seide
take ze & departe ze among zou
for y seie to zou · pat y schal not
drynke of pe kynde of pis vyne:
til pe reume of god come and
whanne he hadde take breed:
he dide pandynguis & brack &
zaf to hem · & seide pis is my bo
dy: pat schal be zouē for zou
do ze pis ping i myn̄d of me
he took also pe cuppe · aft pat
he hadde soupid · & seide pis
cuppe is pe newe testament
i my blood: pat schal be schedd
for zou nepeles lo pe hond of
hi pat betrayep me: is wip me
at pe table & mān̄ goip:
aft pat it is determyned nepe
les wo to pat mā: bi whō he
schal be betrayed & pei bigū
nen to seke among hē · who
it was of hē: pat was to do
pis ping ¶ And strif was
maad among hē: which of
hē schulde be seyn to be gret
test but he seide to hē kyn
gis of heyen men: ben lordis
of hē & pei pat han power
on hem: ben clepid goode
doeris but ze not so but
he pat is gretteste among

3on: be mAAd AS 3ouger / And he
pAt iS biforgoer: AS A ser mAn
for whO is gretter: he pAt sittip
At pe mete: or he pAt mynistrip:
Whey not he pAt sittip At pe me
te: & y Am i pe mydil of 3ou:
AS he pAt mynistrip And 3e bē
pAt hAu dwellid wip me i my
tēptacoūS & y dispose to 3ou: AS
my fadir hAp disposid to me A
reIwme pAt 3e ete And drynke
on my bord i my reIwme: & sitte
on thrones & deme pe twelue
kynredis of isrl & pe lord seide
to symoūt symoūt lo sathanAS
hAp Axid 3ou: pAt he schulde ridi
le AS whete but y hAue preyed
for pee: pAt pi feip faile not And
pou sū tyme cōuertid: confirme pi
brepren which seide to hī lord y
Am redy to go: i to prisoū & i to de
ep wip pee & he seide y seie to pe
pet· pe cok schAl not crowe to
dAie: til pou pries forsake pAt
pou knowest me And he sei
de to hē whAne y sente 3ou
wt outē sche sachel· & scrippe &
schone: wher ony ping failid
to 3ou: & pei seiden no ping
for he seide to hē but now he
pAt hAp A sachel: take Also And
A scrippe And he pAt hAp noon:
selle his wote & bigge A swerd
for y seie to 3ou· pAt 3it it biho
uep pAt ping pAt is writē to
be fulfillid in me And he is Aret
id wip wickid mē for po pingis
pAt ben of me: hAn eende & pei
seidē lord lo twei swerdis heer
& he seide to hē it is y nouȝ & he
3ede out: & wente Aft pe custom
i to pe hille of olyues & pe disci
pis siueden hī & whAne he cam to
pe place: he seide to hem prei
ze lest 3e entren in to temptacoū
And he was takū A wey fro hē
so myche AS is A stones cast: &
he knelide & pridē & pri seide fadir
if pou wolt: do Awey pis cup
pe fro me nepeles not my wil
le be don: but pū & An Angel
pide to hī fro heuene· & confor
tide hym & he was mAAd in A
gonye· & pried pe leng And his
swot was mAAd AS dropis of
blood rennynge doū in to pe er
pe & whAne he was risū fro
pier· & was comē to his dis
plis: he foond hē slepynge for
heuynesse & he seide to hem
what slepen 3e: rise 3e & pie 3e:
pAt 3e entre not in to tempta
coūn 3it while he spAk: lo A cou
pAny And he pAt was clepid
iudAS oon of pe twelue: wente
bifor hem & he cam to ihū: to
kisse hī & ihc seide to hī iudAS
wip A coost pou betrAyest mAn
mis sone: & pei pAt weren A
bonte hī & knewen pAt pt was

to come: seiden to hym/ lord wlye
þe we suyten wiþ swerd: and
oon of hē smot þe seruaūt of
þe þuce of þstis: & kittide of
his riȝt eere/ but ihc answeri
de & seide/ suffere ze til hidir/
& whāne he hadde touchid his
eere: he heelide hī/ & ihc cam
to hē/ þat camē to hī: þe prin
cis of þstis & maiestratis of
þe tēple & elder mē/ as to a þe
ef ze han goon out wiþ swer
dis & stanes · whāne y was
ech dai wiþ zou i þe tēple: ze
stretzten not out hoondis in
to me/ but þis is zoure our
& þe power of derknessis/ &
þei token hī & ledden to þe ho
us of þuce ost of þstis · & þe
tir suede hī afer/ & whāne
afier was kyndelid in þe
myddil of þe grete hous · &
þei saten aboute: petre was
i þe myddil of hem/ whom
whāne Adamysel hadde se
yn hī sittynge at þe liȝt & had
de biholdīn hī: whe seide/ & þis
was wiþ hī/ & he denyede hī: & seide/
wōmā y knowe hī not/ & aft
a litil: anoþir sei3 hī & seide
& þou art of hem/ but petre
seide/ A man y am not/ & whā
ne aspace was maad as of an
our: an opir affermyde and
seide/ treuly þis was wiþ hym/
for also he is of galile/ & petre
seide/ man y not what þou seist/
& anoon3it while he spac þe cok
crewe/ & þe lord turnede azen:
& biheld petre/ & petre hadde
mynde ou þe word of ihū as he
hadde seid/ for bifor þat þe cok
crowe: thries þou shalt denye
me/ & petre 3ede out: & wepte
bittirly/ & þe mē þat heldē hī:
stowedeu hym/ & smytē his fa
ce/ & axideu hī: & seidē/ & reede
þou crist to us: who is he þat
smote þee: & alle þei blasfemyȝe
seiden azeuȝ hī many oþ þingis/
& as þe daye was come: þe elde
re mē of þe puple · & þe þuces
of þstis · & þe scribis camē to
gidir · & leddē hī i to her counsel
& seidē/ if þou art crist: seie
to us/ & he seide to hē/ if y seie
to zou: ze shulē not bileue to
me/ & if y axe: ze shulē not an
swer to me. neiþir ze shulē dely
uer me/ but aftir þis tyme:
manȝ sone shal be sittyng on
þe riȝthalf of þe vertu of god/ þan
alle seidē/ þane art þu þe sone of
god: & he seide/ ze seie þt y am/ &
þei seidē/ what ȝit desirē we
witnessyng: for we us self ha
n herd of his mouy
nd alle þe multitude
of hem arisen & leddē
hym to pilat/ & þei

& smytē hī/ &
^þei blyndfelden
hym:

Ch. xxiij.

bigynnen to accuse hym & seid
en we han foũden þis turn
yng upsodoñ oure folk: and
forbedyng tribute to be zoue
to ye emperour & seiyng þt
hi self is crist & kyng And þilat
axide hi & seide Art þou kyng
of ielwis: & he answerde and
seide þou seist And þilat seide
to ye þrestis of þstis & to ye þup
le y fynde no þing of cause i
þis man & þei woxen strongˢ
& seiden he moueþ ye puple:
techyng þorou al iude bigyn
nyge fro galile til hidir And
þilat herynge galile: axede
if he wer' ama of galile And
whanne he knewe þat he was
of ye power of erode: he se
nte hi to erode which was
at ierlm in yo dayes & whanne
erode seiz ihũ: he ioyede ful
myche for long tyme he wo
uȝte to se hi for he herde
many þingis of hi: & hopide
to se sũ tokene to be don of hi
& he axide hi ī many þingis
of hi wordis & he answeride
no þing to hi & ye þrestis of
þristis & ye scribis stoode: stid
fastly accusyng hi And erode
with his oost dispisede hi:
& scornede hi & cloyid with a
white cloþ & sente hi azen to
þilat & erode & þilat were
made freendis fro þat daye
for bifor þei were enmyes to
gidre And þilat clepide to gid
re ye þrestis of þstis & ye mai
estratis of ye puple: & seide
to hẽ ze han brouȝt to me þis
man: as turnyng awey ye
puple & lo y axynge bifor zou:
fynde no cause in þis man of
þes þingis ī which ze accusẽ
hi· nei'r eroude for he hap sent
hi azen to us: & lo no þing worþi
of deeþ is don to hi & þfor y
schal amende hi & delyue hi
but he moste nede delyue to
hem oon bi ye feeste daye And
alle ye puple criede to gidre
& seide do hi away: & delyue
to us barabas which was sett
i to þsoñ: for distourblyng ma
d in ye citee & for mansleyng &
eftsoone þilat spak to hẽ: and
wolde delyue ihũ & þei vndir
criedẽ & seidẽ crucifie crucifye
hi And ye þridde tyme he seide
to hẽ for what yuel hap þis
man: y fynde no cause iuel of de
ey in hi þfor y schal chastise hi:
& y schal delyue & þei cõtynue
dẽ with grete voicis: axynge
þat he schulde be crucified &
ye voices of hẽ woxen strõge
& þilat demyde her axing to
be don & he delyuerde to hem·
hym þat for mansleyng and se

dicioũ was sent in to prisoũ. why
ou pei axidẽ / but he bitok ihũ
to her wille / & whãne pei ledde
hi: pei token anã cpuon of
cyrenen comynge fro pe tolbu
& pei lepdẽ on hi pe croff: to be
re aftir ihũ / & pei suede hi myd
che puple. & wymẽ pat weile
dẽ & bymoeneden hi / & ihc sue
de to hẽ: & seide / doustertis of
ierlũ tuyle ze wepe on me. but
wepe ze ou zou self & on zoure
sonys / for lo dayes schulẽ come:
in which it schal be seid / blessid
be bareyn wymẽ. & wombis
pat han not born children: &
pe tetis pat han not zouẽ sou
ke / pãne pei schulẽ bigynne to
seie to mounteynis: falle ze doũ
on vs & smale hillis: hele ze
us / for if in a greene tre pei dõ
pese pingis: what schal be don
in adrye: / also opir thwey wicke
mẽ were ledde wip hi: to be sla
yn & aftir pat pei camẽ in to
a place pat is cleped of caluarie
: pere pei crucifiedẽ hi / and
pe penes oon on pe rigthalf: &
pe toper on pe lefthalf / but ihc
seide / fadir forzyue hem: for
pei witen not what pei don
& pei departiden his clopis &
keston lottis & pe puple stood
abidynge / & pe princis scorneden
hi wip hẽ: & seidẽ / opir me he m
ade saf: make he hi self saf.
if pis be crist pe chosũ of god /
& pe knyztis nezedẽ & scorneden
hi: & proferdẽ vynegre to him
& seidẽ / if pou art kyng of iew
is: make pee saf / & pe superscrip
cioũ was writtẽ on hi. wip gre
ke letteris. & of latyn. & of ebreu.
pis is pe kyng of iewis / & oon
of pese penues pat hangedẽ: blas
femede hi & seide / if pou art crist:
make pi self saf & us / but pe
toper answerynge blamyde hi &
seide / ney pou dredist god: pat
art in pe same dampnacioũ / and
treuly we iustly. for we han res
seyued worpi pingis to werkis:
but pis dide no ping of yuel /
& he seide to ihũ / lord haue my
nde on me: whãne pou comest
in to pi kyngdom / & ihc seide to
hi / treuly y seie to pee: pis day
pou schalt be wip me in paradise /
& it was almest pe sixte our:
& derknessis weren maad in al
pe erpe un to pe nynte our / & pe
sũne was maad derk: & pe veyle
of pe tẽple was to rentc atwo /
& ihc crizynge wip grete voice:
seide / fadir in to pin handis: y
bitake my spirit / & he seiynge
pese pingis zaf up pe goost / &
pe centurien seynge pat ping
pat was don: glorifiede god /
& seide / verily pis man was

nst / And al pe puple of heu pat we
re per to gidir at pis spectacle: & sa
yen po pingis pat were don: sup
tidē her brestes & turnedē azen /
but alle his knowē stoden afer:
& wymē pat suedē hī fro galile-
speuge pese pingis / & lo amā io
seph bi name of aramathie a
cite of iudee: pat was a decurī
eu · a good mā & a ust / pis man
cuētide not to pe coūseil & to pe
deedis of hē: & he abood pe kin
gdom of god / pis ioseph cam to
pilat: & axide pe bodie of ihū / &
took it doñ & wlappide it in a clee
ne lynen clop: & leide hī in a gra
ue hewī · in which3 not zit ony
mā hadde be leid / & pe day was
pe euē of pe halidai: & pe sabot
bigan to schyne / & pe wymē sui
nge pat camē wip hī fro galile:
sayen pe graue · & hou his body
was leid / & pei turnedē azē & /
madē redy swete smellynge
spices & oynemētis / but in pe sa
bot pei restidē aft pe comaūde
ment in o day
C. xxiij.
And erly
of pe woke ful eerly
pei camen to pe gra
ue: & brouztē swete smellīge
spices · pat pei haddē arayed /
& pei foūden pe stoon turned
awey fro pe graue: & pei ze
den yn / & foūdē not pe bodi of
pe lord ihū / & it was doñ pe wh
ile pei weren in ponst astonyed
of pis ping: lo twey mē stoden
biside hem in schynynge clop / &
whane pei dreddē: & bowedē her
semblaūt in to pe erpe: pei seidē
to hem / what seken ze hī pat ly
ney wip deed mē: he is not heer:
but is risī / haue ze mynde hou
he spak to zou: whane he was
zit in galile · & seide / for it bihou
ep mañ9 sone to be bitakī in
to pe houndis of synful men
& to be crucified: & pe pridde
day to rise azen / & pei bipouztē
on his wordis / & pei zedē azē
fro pe graue: & teldē alle pese
pingis · to pe enleuene & to alle
op / & p was marie magdele
yn & ioone & marie of iames
& op wymen pat were wip
hem: pat seidē to apostlis pe
se pingis / & pe se wordis weren
seyn bifor hē as madnesse · And
pei bileueden not to hē / but pe
yn roos up & ran to pe graue
& he bowide doñ & sawe pe lynē
clopis lyinge aloone / & he wen
te bi hī self: wondrynge on pt
pat was don And lo tweyne
of hem wenten pat day in to a
castel: pat was fro ierlīm pe
space of sixty forlongis · bi na
me emaus / & pei spakē to gi
dir of alle pese pingis pat had
den bifallī / & it was don pe

while þei talkeden and souȝten
bi hem self: criȝt hi him self neȝide
& weute wiþ hē/ but her ȝen
were holdē· þat þei knewe hi
not/ and he seide to hē/ what bē
þese wordis þat ȝe speken to gy
dre wandrynge: & ȝe bē sorowy
ful: and oon whos name was
cleofas: answerde & seide/ wost
þi self art apilgrym i ierlm:
& hast þou not knowē what
þingis ben don i it i þese dayes:
to whō he seide/ what þingis:
& þei seidē to hi of ihū of naza
reth/ þat was a mā prophete m
ȝti i werk & word: bifor god &
alle þe puple & hou þe hiȝest pre
estis of oure þuris bitoken hi
i to dāpnacioū of deep: & cruc
fieden hi/ but we hopiden þat
he schulde haue azen bouȝt isrl
& now on alle þese þingis: þe
þridde daye is to day· þat þese
þingis were don/ but also si
wymē of ouris maden us a
fered: which bifor day were
at þe graue/ & whanne his body
was not foūdē: þei camē & seidē
þat þei syen also a siȝt of aungls.
which seien þat he lyuep/ & si
of oure wentē to þ grave/ and
þei foūdē so· as þe wymē sei
den: but þei foūden not hi/ &
he seide to hē/ a foolis & sclowe
of herte: to bileue i alle þingis
þat þe prophetis han spokē/ wher
it bihofte not crist to suffre þese
þingis: & so to entre i to his glorie:
& he bigan at moises & at alle
þe prophetis & declaride to hem
i alle scripturis þat were of him/
& þei camen ny3 þe castel· whidir
þei wentē: & he made cōtenaūce
þat he wolde go ferþe/ & þei con
streinedē hi & seidē/ dwelle wiþ
us for it dawiþ to ny3t: and þe
daye is now bowid doū/ & he en
tride wiþ hē/ & it was don while
he sat at þe mete wiþ hē: he took
breed & blessid & brak· & took to
hem/ & þe ȝen of hē were open
ed: & þei knewe hi/ & he vanysch
ide fro her ȝen/ & þei seidē to gi
dir/ wher our herte was not
brēnynge i us: while he spak i
þe weye· & openede to us scrip
turis: & þei risen up i þe same
our: & wentē azen i to ierlm/ &
foūden þe enleuē gaderid to gidir·
& hē þat were wiþ hem seiynge/
þat þe lord is risē verrily: and
apperide to symount/ & þei teldē
what þingis were don i þe weye:
& hou þei knewen hi i breking
of breed. And þe while þei spa
ken þese þingis: ihc stood i þe
myddil of hē & seide to hē/ pees
to ȝou/ y am: unpleȝe dredē/ but
þei were affrayed & agast: &
gessiden hem to se a spirit/ &

he seide to hem / what þeuze tr
oubli3 : & ponyti3 come up ī to
3oure hert ti3 : / se3e my hoondi3
& my feet : for y my self am
sele3e & se3e · for aspirit hap
not flesch & boones : as 3e se
en pat y haue / & whane he had
de sei3 pi3 ping : he schewi
de hoondi3 & feet to hem / &
3it while pei bileuede not · &
wondride for ioye : he seide
han 3e heer ony ping pt schal
be eti3 : / & pei proferden him
apart of a fisch roosti3 : & an
honycombe / & whane he hadde
eten bifor hē : he took pat pt left
te & 3af to hem / & seide to hem /
pese ben pe wordi3 pat y spak
to 3ou : whane y was 3it wip
3ou for it is neede pat alle ping
gi3 ben fulfillid : pat ben writ
tī ī pe lawe of moyses & in
profetis · & ī salmes of me
pane he openede to hem wit :
pat pei schulde vndirstonde scrip
turis / & he seide to hem for þ
it is writi3 · & pus it bihoofte
crist to suffre : & rise a3en fro
deep ī pe pridde dai / & penau
nce & remissiō of synes to
be prchid ī his name ī to alle fo
lki3 : bigynnynge at ierlim / &
3e ben witnesse3 of pese ping
gis : & y schal sende pe biheest
of my fadir ī to 3ou / but sitte
3e in pe cite : til pat 3e be clopid wt
vertu fro an hize / & he ledde hē
forp ī to bethanye : & whane his
hoondi3 were lift up · he bles
sīde hem / & it was don pe whi
le he blessīde hē : he departide
fro hē / & was bore ī to heuene
& per worschipidē · & wentē a3e
ī to ierlim wip grete ioye : & we
ren eū more ī pe tēple herynge
& blessinge god

here endip lupk : here big
nep a ploge o pe gospel of ioon :

This is ioon euangelist
oon of pe disciplis of
pe lord · pe which is a
virgyn chosī of god / whō god
clepide fro pe spousēlis : whane
he wolde be wedded / & double
witnesse of virginyte is 3omī
to hī ī pe gospel : ī pis pat he is
seid loued of god bifore opē disci
plis / & god hongynge ī pe crof ·
bitook his modir ī kepyng to
hī : pat a virgyn schulde kepe
a virgyn / pis ioon ī pe gospel
bigynnep a loone pe werk of
vncorruptible word : & witnes
sip pat pe kyndely sone of god
is maad mā / & pat pe lyt was
not takī of derknesse / & he
schewip pe firste myracle ·
whiche god dide at pe wedd
ingis / to schewe where pe
lord is 3yed to pe feeste : pe

wyn of ye weddingis oliv to
faile / pat whane elde vingis
ben chaungid: alle ne we pingis
pat ben ordeyned of crist· appe
re / joon wroot pis gospel ia
spe: aft pat he hadde writtū
pe apocalips i pe yle of pathm
os / nevelees he wroot pe gosp
el: aft alle gospeleris / pat
also an vncorruptible ende
bi a virgyn i pe apocalips· to
hi: to whō an vncorruptible
biggynyng is zouū i geneſis
i pe biggynyng of hooly scripture
for crist seip i pe apocalips·
y am pe biggynyng & pe ende
& pis joon is he· pat knewe·
pt pe day of his departynge
was comū· & he clepide to gid
his disciplis i effesie: & shewi
de crist· bi many pingis of myr
acle· & zede doū i to adolupn
place of his birying & whane
he hadde maad pier: he was
put to hise fadris / & was my
che wip out sorowe of deep:
hon myche he is holdē deeme
fro compacioū of fleisly / cer
ton i his plogge on joon: seip
al pis

In pe biggynnyng was pe word
and pe word was at god / and
god was pe word / pis was
i pe biggynyng at god / alle
pingis were maad bi hi: & wip outen hym was maad no
ping / pat ping pat was maad
i hi was lyf: & pe lyf was pe
lizt of mē / & pe lizt shynep in
derknessis: & derknessis compre
hendide not it / A man was se
nt fro god: to whom pe name
was joon / pis man cam i to wit
nessing: pat he shulde bere
witnessing of pe lizt· pat alle
mē shulden bileue bi hi / he
was not pe lizt· but pat he sh
ulde ber witnessing of pe lizt /
þ was a ry lizt: which lizteneþ
eche man pat comep i to pis
world· & pe world was maad bi
hy: & pe world knewe hi not he
cam i to his owne pingis: & his
resceyuedē hi not / but hou ma
ny euū resceyuedē hym· he zaf
to hē power to be maad pe sonnes of god· to hē pat bileueden
i his name / pe whiche not of
bloodis neþ of pe wille of fle
sshe ne þ neþ of pe wille of maū·
but ben borē of god & pe word
was maad maū: & dwellide am
ong us / & we han seyn pe glo
rie of hi: as pe glorie of pe
oon bigetū sone of pe fadir·
ful of grace & of treupe / joon
berip witnessing of hi: and
criep & seip / pis is whom y seide
he pat schal come aft me· is
maad bifor me: for he was to

he was in pe world

for me And of ye pleute of hym
we alle han taken & grace for gr
ace for ye lawe was zouñ bi mo
yses: but grace & treupe is ma
d bi ihū cſt no mā say eū god:
no bing ye oon bigetū sone pat
is i ye bosū of ye fadir he hap
teld out ¶ And pis is ye witnes
sing of ioon. whanne iewis sent
en fro ierlū. ꝑtis & dekenes to
hī: pat yei schulde axe hī who
art pou he knoulechide & denye
de not & he knoulechide: for y
am not cſt & yei axide hym wh
at pānne: art pou elie: & he sede
y am not art pou aprofete: &
he answeride nay ꝑfor yei sei
den to hī who art pou: pat we
zyue an answere to pese pat se
nte ns what seist pou of pi silf.
he sede y am a vois of a crier
i desert: dresse ze ye weie of ye
lord as ysaie ye profete sede &
yei pat weren sent: weren of
ye fariseis & yei axide hi & sede
to hī what pānne baptisist pou:
if pou art not crist. neþ elie. ne
per aprofete: ioon answerde to
hem: & sede y baptise in watir.
but i ye unþonk of zou hap stōd
oon. pat ze knowē not he it is
pat schal come aft me. pt was
maad bifor me. of whom y am
not worþi to louse pe pwong of
his schoo pese pingis were dōd
in bethanye bizonde iordan: wher
ioon was baptischynge ¶ A noþ day
ioon say ihū comynge to hī: & he
sede lo ye lombe of god: lo he pt
doip awey ye synn of ye world
pis is he pat y sede of aft me
is comē a man: which was ma
d bifor me for he was raper
than y & y knew hī not but pat
he be schewid i isral: þfor y am
baptischynge i watr & ioon bar
wytnessing: & sede pat y say
pe spirit comynge doū as a cal
fro heuene. & dwellide on hī
& y knew hī not but he pat
sente me to baptise i watr. sede
to me on whom pou seest pe
spirit comynge doū. & dwelly
nge on hī: pis is he pat bapti
sip i ye hooly goost & y say and
bar wytnessynge: pat pis is
ye sone of god ¶ A noþ day ioo
n stood: & tweyne of hise dis
ciplis & he biheld ihū walky
nge & seip lo ye lomb of god
& tweyn disciplis herden hym
spekynge: & folewide ihū &
ihū turnede & say hem suyn
ge hī: & seip to he what seke
ze: & yei seiden to hī rabi. pt
is to sei maist: where dwel
list pou: & he seip to hem come
ze & se & yei camen & sayen wh
ere he dwellide: & dwelten wt
hī pat day & it was as ye

tenpe our / And Andrewe pe bro
per of symoũt petre was oon
of pe twelue pat herdē of ió
on: & hadden sued hī / pis foond
first his broper symoũt: & he
seide to hī / we han foũdũ mes
sias: pat is to seie cřst / & he led
de hī to ihū / & ihc biheelde hī: &
seide / pou art symoũt pe sone
of iohãna· pou schalt be clep
id cefas· pat is to seie petre / &
on pe morowe he wolde go out
i to galilee: & he foond filip / &
he seip to hī / sue pou me / filip
was of bethsayda pe citee of
Andrewe & of petre / filip foond
nathanael: & seide to hī / we
han foũdũ ihū pe sone of iose
ph of nazareth: whó moyses
wroot i pe lawe & pe profetis /
& nathanael ꝙ seide to hī / of
nazareth may sũ good ping be /
filip seide to hī / come & se / ihc
sīz nathanael comynge to hī:
& seide to hī / lo vřly amã of is
rael: i whom is no gile / nath
anael seide to hī / wherof hast
pou knowñ me: / ihc answerid
de: & seide to hī / bifore pat fil
ip clepide pee whanne pou wer
undir pe figge tre: / sawz pee /
nathanael answeride to hī:
& seide / rabi· pou art pe sone
of god: pou art kyng of isrl /
ihc answeride: & seide to hī /
for y seide to pee· þ sawz pee vn
dir pe figge tre· pou bileuest: þ"
schal se more pan pese þingis /
& he seide to hem / treuly treuly
y seie to zou· ze schulen se heuene
opened: & pe aungels of god· sty
inge up· And comynge doñ on
mãnus sone:

And pe pridde day wed
dingis were maad in
pe cane of galilee: & pe
modir of ihū was pe / & ihc was
clepid & his disciplis to pe wedd
ingis / & whanne wiyn failide:
pe modir of ihū seide to hī / pei
han not wiyn / & ihc seip to hir /
what to me & to pee wom̃a:
nuyn our cam not zit / his modir
seip to pe mynistris / whatei
þing he seie to zou: do ze / & pe
weren set sixe stonin cũnes af
tir pe clensynge of pe iewis:
holdinge ech· twey ne eþ pre
metretis / & ihc seip to hẽ / fille
ze pe pottis with wat / & pei fil
liden hem up to pe mouþ / And
ihc seide to hem / drawe ze now
& bere ze to pe architriclyn· &
pei bareu / & whanne pe architri
clyn hadde tastid pe wat maad
wiyn· & wiste not whennes it
was· but pe mynistris wisten
pat drowen wat / pe architriclyn
clepiþ pe spouse & seip to hym /
ech man settiþ first good wiyn

C. vj.

And whanne men ben fulfilled·
panne pat pt is wrotte: bnt pou
hast kept pe good wiyn ı̄ to pis
tyme ihc̄ dide pis pe bigynyng
of signes ı̄ pe cane of galilee·
& schewide his glorie / & his dis
ciplis bileueden ı̄ to hi. Aftir
pese pingis he came doñ to capha
rnaũ· & his modir· & his bry
eren· & his disciplis: & pei dwelli
den pe not many dayes / & pe
pask of iewis was nyz: & ihc̄
wente up to ierlũ / & he foud
ı̄ pe tẽple men sellinge oxn̄ and
scheep & culueris· & chaũgeris
sittynge / & whanne he hadde m
ade as it were a scourge of
smale cordis: he drof out al
le of pe tẽple· & oxn̄ & scheep·
& he schedde pe money of cha
ũgeris: & turnede up sedoñ
pe boordis / & he seide to hem
pat seelden culueris / take alb
ep fro hen pese pingis· & ny
le ze make pe hous of my fa
dir· an hous of marchaũdise/
& his disciplis hadden mynde
for it was writtñ· pe feruent
loue of pin hous hap etñ me/
pfor pe iewis anſwerideu &
seidẽ to hi· what tokeu schew
ist pou to us: pat pou doist pe
se pingis: ihc̄ anſweride and
seide to hem / vndo ze pis tẽple·
& in pre dayes y schal reise it

perfore pe iewis seideu to hm
in fourty & sixe zeer pis tẽple
was bildid· & schalt pou ı̄ pre
dayes reise it: bnt he seide of
pe tẽple of his bodi / pfor whã
ne he was risñ fro deep: his
disciplis haddẽ mynde· pat he
seide pese pingis of his body
& pei bileuedẽ to pe scripture·
& to pe word pat ihc̄ seide / and
whanne ihc̄ was at ierlũ ı̄ pask
ı̄ pe feeste daie: many bileue
deu ı̄ his name· seynge his sig
nes pat he dide / but ihc̄ trowi
de not hi silf to hem / ffor he
knewe alle mẽ· & for it was
not nede to hi: pat ony man
schulde bere witnessynge / for
he wiste what was ı̄ man
ud pe was ãmõg of pe
farisees· upchodeme
bi name a pũce of pe
iewis & he cam to ihñ bi nyzt
& seide to hi / rabi we witẽ pat
pou art comñ fro god maist.
for no mã may do pese pingis
pat pou doist: bnt god be wip
hi / ihc̄ anſweride: & seide to
hi / treuly treuly y seie to pee·
bnt ãmã be borñ azen: he may
not se pe kingdom of god / up
chodeme seide to hi / how may
ãmã be borñ: whanne he is old:
whep he may entre azen ı̄ to
his modris wombe: & be borñ

azen· iesc answeride/ treuly
treuly y seie to pee· but annan
be bozn̄ azen of wat & of pe ho
oly goost: he may not entre in̄
to pe kingdom of god/ pat pat
is bozn̄ of pe flesch: is flesch/
and pat pt is bozn̄ of pe spirit:
is spirit/ woudre pou not· for
y seie to pee: it bihouey zou to
be bozn̄ azen/ pe spirit breep
where he wole: & pou herist
his voys/ but pou wost not
fro whenn̄ he comep· ne whi
dir he goip/ so is ech man̄ pt is
bozn̄ of pe spirit/ nychodeme
answeride & seide to hi/ how
moun̄ pese pingis be don:/ ihc
answeride: & seide to hi/ pou
art a maist̄ in isral: & knowist
not pese pingis: treuly treu
ly y seie to pee: for we speke
pat pat we wite̅ & we witn
essen· pat pat we han seyn:
& ze taken not oure witnes
sing/ if y haue seyd to zou
erpely pingis· & ze bileuen
not: how if y seie to zou he
uenly pingis schulen ze bile
ue: & no man steiep into hen
ene: but he pat cam doun fro
heuene· mannis sone pat is in
heuene/ & as moises arerde
a serpent in desert: so it bihо
uey mannis sone to be reis
id/ pat ech man̄ pat bileuey
in̄ him̄ perisshe not: but ha
ue euerlastinge lif/ ffor god
louede so pe world: pat he
zaf his oon bigetin̄ sone/ pt
ech man̄ pat bileuey in̄ him̄
perisshe not: but haue euerlasty
nge lif· ffor god sente not his
sone in to pe world: pat he iuge
pe world· but pat pe world be
sauyd bi hi̅/ he pat bileuey in hi̅
is not demed/ but he pat bile
uey not· is now demed: for
he bileuey not in pe name of pe
oon bigetin̄ sone of god & pis
is pe doom/ for lizt cam̄ in to pe
world: & men̄ louedē more derk
nessis pan lizt/ ffor her werk
is were̅ puele/ for ech man
pat doip puele hatip pe lizt &
he comep not to pe lizt: pt his
werkis be not repued/ but
he pat doip treupe· comep
to pe lizt: pat his werkis be
schewid· pat pei ben don in
god/ Aftir pese pingis ihc
cam̄ & his disciplis in to pe lo
nd of iudee: & pere he dwelli
de wip hem̄ & baptisid/ & ioon
was baptisinge in enion bisi
de salym: for many watris
were pere· & pei camen̄ & we
ren baptisid/ & ioon was not
zit sent in to prisoun̄/ pfor aquesti
oun was maad of ioons disci
plis wip pe iewis of pe puri

fracciõ / And per came to ioon: & seide to hi / maist. he pat was wip me pee bizonde iordan to whõ pou hast bozn witnessinge: lo he baptisip & alle mẽ come to hi / ioon answeride: & seide a man may not take oup ping: but it be zoun to hi fro heuene ze zoun silf bere witnessing to me: pat y seide / y am not crist: but pat y am sent biforn hi / he pat hap awif: is pe holdbonde / but pe freend of pe spouse · pat stondip & herip hi: ioiep wip ioie · for pe voic of pe spouse / pis for i pis ping my ioie is ful fillid / it bihoued hi to wexe: but me to be maad lesse / he pat cõ fro aboue is aboue alle / he pat is of pe erpe: spekip of pe erpe / he pat comep fro heuene: is a boue alle / & he witnessip pat ping pat he hap seie & herde · & no mã takip his witnessing / but he pat takip his witnessing: hap confermed pat god is soper ast / but he whom god hap sent: spekip pe wordis of god for not to mesure · god zeuep pe spirit pe fadir louep pe sone: & he hap zoue alle pingis i his hond / he pat bileuep i pe sone: hap eue lastyng lif / but he pat is vnbileue ful to pe sone: schal not se euer lastyng lif · but pe wrappe of god dwellip on him

Cap. iij

Therfor as ihũ knew · pat pe pharisees herden · pat ihũ makip & baptisip mo disciplis pan io ou · pouz ihc baptisede not · but his disciplis: he lefte iudee · & went azen i to galilee · & it bihofte hi to passe bi samarie · pat is seid sicar · bisidis pe place pat iacob zaf to ioseph his sone / & pe welle of iacob was pe / & ihc was werid of pe iourney: & sat pus upon pe welle / & pe our was as it were pe sixte · & a wõman cam fro samarie: to drawe watir / & ihc seip to hir / zeue me drynke / his disciplis were gon i to pe citee: to bie mete / for pilke wõman of samarie seip to hi / hou pou whanne pou art a iewe: axist of me drynk · pat am a wõman of samarie: for iewis vsid not to dele wip samaritans ihc answeride · & seide to hir / if pou wistist pe zifte of god · & who he is pat seip to pee · zeue me drynke: pou peraũture woldist haue axid of hi · & he schulde haue zouen to pee · quyk watir / pe wõman seip to hi / sire pou hast not wher̃ pine to drawe: & pe pit is deep / wher̃ of panne hast pou quyk watir: wher̃ pou art gretter pan our fadir iacob: pat zaf to us pe pit: & he drank pof: & his sones & his

ueestus / ihc answerede and seide to hir / ech mā pat dryukip of pis wat̄: schal pirste eftsone / but he pat dryukip of pe wat̄ pat y schal ziue hi: schal not pirste wip oute ende / but pe wat̄ p̄t y schal ziue hi: schal be maad i hi a welle of wat̄ springynge up in to euerlastinge lif / pe wom̄a seip to hi / sire ziue me pis wat̄ pat y pirste not: neip comme hidir to drawe / ihc seip to hir / go· clepe pin housebonde: & come hidir / pe wom̄a answerede: & seide / y haue noon housebonde / ihc seip to hir / pou seidist wel· pat y haue noon housebonde / for pou hast hadde fyue housebondis: & he pat pou hast· is not pin housebonde / pis ping· pou seidist sopely / pe wom̄a seip to hi / lord· y se: pt pu art a profete / oure fadris wor schipiden in pis hil: & ze seyen / pt at ierlim is a place: where it bihoueb to worschupe / ihc seip to hir / wom̄a bileue pou to me· for pe our schal come: whan̄e neip in pis hil· neip in ierlim ze schulen worschipe pe fadir / ze worschipen pat ze knowen not: we worschipen pat pt we knowen· for helpe is of pe iewis / but pe tyme is comen & now it is: whan̄e true worschipers schulen worschipe pe fadir in spirit & treupe / for also pe fadir seekip siche· pat worschipen hym / god is a spirit & it bihoueb hem pat worschipen hi: to worschipe in spirit & treupe / pe wom̄a seip to hi / y woot pat messias is comyn· pat is seid crist / pforw whanne he comeb: he schal telle us alle pingis / ihc seip to hir / y am he pat spekip with pee / & anoon hise disciplis camen: & wondriden pat he spak with pe wom̄a / nepeles no man seide to hi what sekist pou: or what spekist pou with hir / pforw pe wom̄a lefte hir watir pot: & wente in to pe citee & seide to po men / come ze & se ze a man pat seide to me alle pingis: pat y haue don / whepe he be crist: & yei wenten out of pe citee: & camen to hi / in pe mene while hise disciplis preiden hi & seiden / maist̄ete: but he seide to hem / y haue mete to ete: pat ze knowen not / pforw disciplis seiden to gidre / whether oup man haap brouzt hi mete to ete: / ihc seip to hem / my mete is: pat y do pe wille of hi pat sente me / pat y parfourme pe werk of hi / whep ze seien not· pt zit foure monepis ben: & ripe corn comep: lo y seie to zou· lifte up zoure eizen & se ze pe feeldis: for now yei ben white to repe / & he pat repip: take mip hire / & gadrip fruyt in to euerlastinge lif / pt bope he pat

sothly & he pat repip: hAue io
ye to gidere/ ī pis ping is ye
word treuye· for Auoȝ is pat
sothly: & Auoȝ pat repip/ y se
ute zou to repe: pat pat ze hA
ue not trAuelid: & hȝe ze hAu
entrid ī to her trAuels/ & of
pat citee mAny sAmAritans
bileueden ī hī: for pe word of
pe wōmAn pat bAre witnessig.
pat he seide to me Alle pingis
pat y hAue don/ þfor whAne
sAmaritans camē to hī: pei
þrieden hī to dwelle þe/ And he
dwelte þe twey dAies/ & mA
ny mo bileueden for his word·
& seiden to pe wōmAn/ pt now
not for pi speche we bileuen/
for we hAu herd· & we witen·
pat pis is vrily pe sAuyour of
pe world And Aftir twey dA
ies he weute out fro pēnȝ· &
weute ī to galilee/ & he bAr
wrtnessiug: pat A profete ī
his owne cūtre hAp noon on
our/ þfor whAne he cam ī to
galilee: mē of galile resseyu
eden hī· whAne pei hAdden
seyn Alle pingis pat he hAd
de don ī ierlm ī pe feeste dAie·
for Also pei hAddē comm to pe
feeste dAy/ þfor he cam eftso
one ī to pe cAne of galile: whe
re he made pe wAt' wiyn/ & A
litil kyng was: whos sone
was sijk At cAfarnAū/ whAne
pis hAdde herd pat ihū Shulde
come fro iude ī to galilee: he
weute to hī & þyede hī/ pat he
Shulde come doū: & heele his
sone/ for he bigAn to die/ þfor
ihc seide to hī/ but ze se tokenes
& gretc wondris: ze bileuē not/
pe litil kīng seip to hī/ lord come
doū: bifor pat my sone die/ ihc
seip to hī/ go: pi sone lyuep/ pe
mA bileuede to pe word pat ihc
seide to hī: & he weute/ & now
whAne he cam doū: pe seruAn
tis camē Azeyn hī· & teldē to hī
& seidē· pat his sone lyuede/ &
he Axide of hē pe our: ī which
he was Amendid/ & pei seidē to
hī/ for zistrday ī pe seuenpe our:
pe fever leefte hī/ þfor pe fadir
knew pat pilke our it was: in
which ihc seide to hī/ pi sone lyuep/
& he bileuede: & Al his hous/ ihc
dide eft pis secūde tokene: whA
ne he cām fro iudee ī to galilee
After pese pingis þ was
A feeste dAy of pe iewis:
& ihc weute up to ierlm/
And ī ierlm is A wAllyhinge pla
ce: pat ī ebreu is nAmed bet
sAidA· & hAp fyue porchis/ ī pes
Ay A gret multitude of sike mē·
blynde · drokid · & dry· Abidinge
pe movyng of pe wAtir/ for pe
Aungel of pe lord cam doū Certey

ne tymes in to pe wattir: And
pe wat' was moued & he pat
first ran doñ i to pe ſtrue aft'
pe mouyng of pe wat': was
maad hool of what eñ ſikenes
he was holdñ & anñ was
pe hauyng eyte & pritty zeer i
his ſikenelle & whanne ihc had
de seyn hi liggynge & hadde kn
owñ· pat he hadde myche tym
e: he seip to hi / wolt pou be ma
d hool: pe ſijk mañ answeride
to hi / lord y haue no mañ pat whañ
ne pe wat' is is ſmoupd· to put
te me i to pe ſtrue / for pe while
y come: And oper goip doñ bifor
me / ihc seip to hi / rise up· take
pi bed & go / & anoon pe mañ was
maad hool: & took up his bed
& wente forp / & it was ſabat· i
pat day / for pe iewis seidē to
hi pat was maad hool / it is ſa
bat· it is not leueful to pee: to
take awey pi bed / he answeride
to hē / he pat made me hool: sei
de to me / take pi bed & go / for
pei axidē hi / what mañ is pat·
pat seide to pee: take up pi bed
& go / but he pat was maad ho
ol: wiſte not who it was / &
ihc bowide awei fro pe puple
pat was set i i pe place / aftir
ward ihc foond hi i pe tēple:
& seide to hi / lo pou art maad
hool: now ſyle pou do synne·

leſt ouy worse ping bifalle to
pee / pilke mañ went & telde to
pe iewis: pat it was ihū pat
made hi hool / for pe iewis pur
ſuedē ihū: for he dide pis ping
i pe ſabat & ihc answeride to
hē / my fadir worchip til now:
& y worche / for pe iewis sou3tē
more to ſle hi / for not onely he
brak pe ſabot: but he seide pt
god was fadir· & made hi eme
ne to god / for ihc answeride:
& seide to hē / treuly treuly y
seie to 3ou· pe sone may not of
hi silf do ony ping: but pat
ping· pat he seep pe fadir do
ynge / for what eñe pingis
he doip: pe sone doip i liſ m
aner po pingis / for pe fadir
louep pe sone: & ſchewip to hi
alle pingis pat he doip / & he
ſchal ſchewe to hi gretter wer
kis pan pese: pat 3e wondrē /
for as pe fadir reiſip deed mē
& quikenep: so pe sone quike
nep whom he wole / for neper
pe fadir iugip ony mañ: but
hap 3oue echē dom do pe sone /
pat alle men onourē pe sone:
as pei onourē pe fadir / he pt
onourip not pe sone / onourip
not pe fadir pat sente hym /
treuly treuly y seie to 3ou· pt
he pat herip my word and
bileuip to hi pat sente me:

his

hay eu[er]lastinge lijf / and he cou
ep not i to doun: but pallip fro
deep i to lijf / treuly treuly y se
ie to zou · for pe our comey and
now it is: whanne deede men
shulen here pe vois of goddis
sone / & pei heren: shulê lyue /
for as pe fadir hap lijf i hi silf:
so he zaf to pe sone to haue lijf
i hi silf / & he zaf to hi power ·
to make dom: for he is mañ
sone vnto pe wondre pis for pe
our comey · i which alle men p[t]
ben i birielis: shulê here pe vo
is of goddis sone / & pei pat ha
do good pingis: shulê go nu to
azenrisyng of lijf: but pei p[t]
han don puele pingis: i to azê
rising of doom / y may do no
ping of my self: but as y here
y deme / & my doom is iust: for
y seke not my wille · but pe
wille of pe fadir pat sente me
if y bere witnessing of my silf:
my witnessing is not treuþe
anoy is pat berip witnessing
of me: & y woot pat his witnes
sing is treuþe pat he berip of
me ze sentê to woou: & he bar wi
tnessing to trenpe / but y take
not witnessing of mañ: but y
seye pese pingis · pat ze be saf
he was a lanterne brenyge · and
shynyng / but ze woldê glade
at an our · i his liȝt / but y ha
ne more witnessing pan woou /
for pe werkis pat my fadir zaf
to me to perfourme hê: pilke
werkis pat y do · berê witnes
sing of me · pat pe fadir sente
me / and pe fadir pat sente me:
he bar witnessing of me: nep
ze herden eure his vois · nep ze sa
wen his likenesse / & ze han not
his word dwellinge i zou · for ze bi
leuen not to hi whom he sente
seke ze scripturis: i which ze ges
sen to haue euerlastinge lijf / & pos
ben pat berê witnessing of me
& ze wolê not come to me: pat ze
haue lijf y take not clerenesse
of mê: but y haue knowen zou
wip pat ze han not pe lone of
god i zou y cam i pe name of my
fadir · & ze takê not me / if anoy
come i his owne name: ze shulê
resseyue hi / hou mañ ze bileue
pat resseyuê glorie ech of oper:
& seken not pe glorie pat is of
god aloone: / uple ze gesse pat y
am to accuse zou anentis pe fad
ir is mopsees pat accusip zou:
i whom ze hopen / for if ze bile
ueden to moysees: par auentur
ze shuldê bileue also to me / for
he wroot of me / but if ze bileuê
not to his letris: hou shulen ze
bileue to my wordis

Eftir pese pingis ihc we
nte ouer pe see of galilee:

pat is tiberias / and agreet
ultitude suede hi: for pei sawen
pe tokenes pat he dide on hē pt
were sijke / pfor ihc weute in to
an hil· & sat pe wip hise disciplis
& pe pak was ful upz: aneste da
y of pe ielwis / pfor whanne ihc
hadde lift up his izen· & hadde
seyn pat agreet multitude cam
to hi: he seip to filip / wherof
shulē we bie loaues: pat pese
men ete: but he seide pis ping:
temptynge hi / for he wiste wht
he was to do / filip answerde
to hi / pe loaues of twey hundrid
denerys · sufficen not to hem:
pat ech man take alitil what
oon of hise disciplis andrew
pe brop of symoun petre: seip
to hi / a child is here pat hap fy
ue barly loaues & twey fischis
but what ben pese among so
manye / pfor ihc seip / make ze
he sitte to pe mete / and p was
mychel hey i pe place & so men
saten to pe mete: as fyue pou
synde i noumbre / & ihc took fyne
loaues· & whanne he hadde do
panckynges: he departide to
me pat saten to pe mete / & also
pe fischis: as mychel as pei
woldē / & whanne pei were
fillid: he seide to hise disciplis
gadre ze pe relifs pat ben left:
pat pei perishe not / & so pei
gadriden & fillyden twelue cofi
fyns of relyfe of pe fyue barly
loaues & twey fischis: pat lefte
to hē pat hadde eti / pfor po me
whanne pei hadde seyn pe signe
pat he hadde doū: seidē / for pis
is verily pe profete pat is to come
i to pe world / & whanne ihc had
de knowē· pat pei were to come
to take hi & make hi kyng / he
fleiz aloone eft i to an hille / &
whanne euentide was comē· hise
disciplis wentē doū to pe see / &
pei wenten up i to a boot· & pei
camen oū pe see i to capharnaū
& derkenesse was comē· & ihc
was not come to hē & for
agreet wynde blew: pe see roos
up / pfor whanne pei hadden rowid
as fyue & twenty furlongis or
pretty: pei seen ihū walkyng
on pe see· & to be nezh pe boot / &
pei dredden / & he seide to hem /
y am: nyle ze drede / pfor pei wol
den take hi i to pe boot: and ano
on pe boot was at pe lond· to
which pei wentē ¶ oū pe topdai
pe puple pat stood oū pe see say:
pat p was noon op boot p but
oon / & pat ihū entride not wip
hise disciplis i to pe boot: but hi
se disciplis aloone wentē / but
ope botis camē fro tiberias: bi
sidis pe place where pei hadden
breed· & didē panckynges to

god / ꝑfor whāne ye ꝓple hadde
seyn ꝑat ihū was not ꝑe neper
hise disciplis: pei weritē upī to
bootis · & camen to capharnaū
seekynge ihū / & whāne pei had
den foūdū hym oū ꝑe see: pei
seidē to hī / rabi how comest ꝑ'
hidir: / ihc answeride to hē
& seide / treuly treuly y seie
to zou · ze seken me not for ze
seyn ye wyraclis: but for ze
eten of loones & were fillid /
worchē ze not mete ꝑat perif
chip: but ꝑat dwellip ī to euer
lastynge lif / which mete mañ?
sone schal zyue to zou / for god
ye fadir hap marked hī / ꝑfor
pei seiden to hī / what schulē
we do: ꝑat we worchē ꝑe werk
is of god: / ihc answeride: &
seide to hem / pis is ꝑe werk
of god: ꝑat ze bileue to hī · wh
om he sente / ꝑfor pei seiden
to hī / what tokene pāne doist
pou: ꝑat we seen & bileue to
pee: / what worchist pou: / ou
re fadris eeten mānā ī desert:
as it is writū / he zaf to hem
breed · fro heuene to ete / ꝑfor
ihc seip to hē / treuly treuly
y seye to zou · moyses zaf zou
not breed fro heuene: but
my fadir zyuep zou ꝑy breed
fro heuen / for it is ꝑy breed
ꝑat comep doū from heuen:

and zyuep lif to ꝑe world / per for
pei seiden to hī / lord euere zyue us
pis breed / & ihc seide to hē / y am
breed of lif / he ꝑat comep to
me: schal not hungre / he ꝑat bi
leuep ī me: schal nevre pirste /
but y seide to zou ꝑat ze han se
yn me: & ze bileuedē not / for
ping ꝑat ꝑe fadir zyuep to me:
schal come to me / & y schal not
caste hī out: ꝑat comep to me /
for y cam doū from heuene · not
ꝑt y do my wille: but ꝑe wille
of hī ꝑat sente me / & pis is ꝑe
wille of ꝑe fadir ꝑat sente me /
ꝑat al ping ꝑat ꝑe fadir zaf
me: y leese not of it · but ayen
reise it ī ꝑe laste day / & pis is
ꝑe wille of my fadir ꝑat sente
me / ꝑat ech mā ꝑat seep ꝑe so
ne & bileuep ī hī: haue euerlas
tynge lif / & y schal ayenreise hī
ī ꝑe laste day / ꝑfor iewis grud
chiden of hī · for he hadde seid ·
y am breed ꝑat cam doū fro
heuen / & pei seiden / wheper pis
is not ihc ꝑe sone of ioseph:
whos fadir & modir we han
knowē / hou pāne seip pis · ꝑt
y cam doū fro heuene: / ꝑfor
ihc answeride: & seide to hē /
nyleze grutche to gidere / no
man may come to me: but
if ꝑe fadir ꝑat sente me dra
we hī / & y schal ayen reise hī

in pe laste day / it is writtin in pro
fetis · & alle mē schulē be able for
to be taust of god / ech mā p^t her
de of pe fadir & hap lerned: com
ep to me / not for ony man hap
sen pe fadir: but pis pat is of
god hap sipe pe fadir / sopely
sopely y seie to zou · he pat bile
ep in me: hap euerlastynge lif /
y am breed of lif · zoure fadr
is eeten mana in desert: & ben
deed / pis is breed comyng doun
fro heuene / pat if ony man ete
pof: he die not / y am lyuynge
breed: pat cam doun fro heuene /
if ony man ete of pis breed: he
schal lyue wip outen ende / & pe
breed pat y schal zyue: is my fle
sch · for pe lif of pe world / p^for
pe iewis chidden to gidr & seiden /
hou may pis zyue to us his lif
fleisch to ete: / p^for ihū seip to
hem / treuly treuly y seie to
zou but ze eten pe fleisch of man
nus sone & drenken his blood:
ze schulē not haue lif in zou / he
pat etip my fleisch & drynkip
my blood: hap euerlastinge lif / &
y schal ayen reise hi in pe laste day /
for my fleisch is vp mete: & my
blood is vp drynke / he pat etip
my fleisch & drynkip my blood:
dwellip in me & y in hi / as my fad
ir lyuynge sente me: & y lyue
for pe fadir / & he pat etip me:
he schal lyue for me / pis is bre
ed pat cam doun fro heuene /
not as zoure fadris eeten man
na: & ben deed / he pat eetip pis
breed: schal lyue wip outen ende /
he seide pese pingis in pe synago
ge: techinge in cafarnaū / p^for
many of his disciplis herynge
seiden · pis word is hi3 hard:
who may here it / but ihc wit
ynge at hi silf · pat his disciplis
grutchide of pis ping: seide to
hē / pis ping schal driuip zou / p^for
if ze seen mā 9 sone stiynge whe
re he was bifore: it is pe spirit
pat quikenep · pe fleisch profi
tip no ping / pe wordis pat y ha
ue spokū to zou: ben spirit & lif /
but p^ ben some of zou: pat bile
uen not / for ihc wiste fro pe bi
gynnyng: which were bileu
ynge & who was to bitraye hi /
& he seide / p^for y seide to zou · pat
no man may come to me: but
it were zouū to hi of my fadir /
ffor pis tyme many of his disci
plis went aback: & went n
ot now wip hi / p^for ihc seide to
pe twelue / wher^ ze wolē also
go awey: & symount petre and
answerde to hi / lord to who schal
we go: / pou hast wordis of
euerlastinge lif / & we bileuen &
han knowē: pat pou art crist
pe sone of god / p^for ihc answe

ryde to hem / Wheper y chees not
zou tuelue: & oon of zou is a fend:
& he seide pis of iudas of symo
nis scharioth / for pis was to bi
traie hi: Wham̃e he was oon
of pe twelue

C. vij. Aftir pese pingis ihc
walkide i to galilee /
for he wolde not walk
e i to iudee · for pe iewis souz
ten to sle hi / & p was nei3 a fe
este day of pe iewis · scenofegi
a · & hise bripren seide to hi / pas
se fro hen & go i to iude: pat
also pi disciplis seen pi werkis
pat pou doist / for no man doip
ouy ping i hidils: & hi silf se
kip to be oppu / if pou doist
pese pingis: schewe pi silf to pe
world / for nep his bripren bile
ue3 i hi / p for ihc seip to hem /
my tyme cam not 3it: but 3our
tyme is eu̓more redy / pe world
may not hate zou / sopely it ha
tip me: for y bere witnessinge
pof · pat pe werkis of it ben
pnele / go ze up to pis feeste dai ·
for my tyme is not 3it fulfil
id / Wham̃e he hadde seide pese
pingis: he dwelte i galile / & /
aft pat hise bripren were go
on up: pan̄e he zede up to pe
feeste dai not oppenly: but as
i pinyte / p for pe iewis souzten
hi i pe feeste day: & seiden /

Where is he: & mychc grucching
was of hi among pe puple for
sum seiden pat he is good: &
ope seiden nay · but he disceyu
ep pe puple / nepeles no man
spak oppenli of hi: for drede of
pe iewis / but Wham̃e pe myd
il feeste dai cam: ihc went up
i to pe tẽple & taugte / & pe iewis
wondriden & seidẽ / hou can pis
man̄ lettris: sipen he hap not ler
ned: / ihc answerde to hẽ: & seide
my doctryn is not myn: but
his pat sente me / if ony man
wole do his wille: he schal knowe
pe of pe techyng · whep it be
of god · or y speke of my silf / he
pat spekip of hi silf seekip his
owne glorie / but he pat sekip
pe glorie of hi pat sente him:
is sopefast · & vnrigtwisnesse
is not i hi / whep moises 3af not
to 3ou alle pe lawe / & noon of 3ou do
ip pe lawe / what seken ze to sle
me: / & pe puple answerde & sei
de / pou hast a deuel / Who seekip
to sle pee: / ihc answerde & seide
to hem / y hane don o werk: &
alle ze wondren / p for moises
3af to 3ou circumcisioñ · not for
it is of moyses but of pe fadris
& i pe sabat ze circumcidẽ a man̄
if a man̄ take circumcisioñ in pe
sabat · pat pe lawe of moyses
be not brokẽ: han ze indigne

pis
but y schal not
go up to pis fes
te day ·

non to me·for þ made al amon
hool ī þe sabat ¶ Wile ze deme aſ
t' þe face: but deme ze rightful
dom þfor ſum me of ierlm seiden
whep þis is not he: whō þe iew
is seken to sle: t' lo he spekp opp
nly: t' pei seyn no þng to hym
whep þe princis knewen verily:
pat þis is crist: but we knowē
pat þis man of whēn he is but
whanne crist schal come: no man
woot of whēn he is þfor ihc
criede ī þe tēple techyng t' seide
ze knowē me· t' ze knowē of whē
n' y am: t' y cam not of my self:
but he is trewe pat sente me
whō ze knowē not/ y knowe hī/
t' if y seie pat y knowe hī not:
y schal be lijk to zou a liere/ but
y knowe hī: for of hī y am t' he
sente me/ þfor pei soughtē to take
hī: t' no man sette on hī hondis·
for his our cam not zit/ t' manye
of þe puple bileuedē ī hī t' seidē
whanne crist schal come: wheper
he schal do mo tokenes: than þo
pat þis doip: ¶ Farisees herdē
þe puple munyng of hī þese
þngis t' þe princes t' farisees se
ntē mynistris: to take hī þfor
ihc seide to hē/ zit a litil tyme
y am wip zou: t' y go to þe fad'
pat sente me/ ze schulē seke me:
t' ze schulē not fynde/ t' where
y am ze moun not come/ þfor þe
iewis seiden to hem silf/ whidir
schal þis go: for we schulē not
fynde hī: ¶ whep' he wole go ī to
þe scatþng of hepene mē: t' wo
le teche þe hepen: ¶ what is þis
word which he seide: ze schulen
seke me: t' ze schulen not fynde/
t' whep' y am zo moun not come/
but ī þe laste dai of þe greete fe
ste: ihc stood t' criede t' seide/ if
ony man þirstip: come he to me
t' drynke/ he pat bileuep ī me
as þe scripture seip: flodis of
quik watir schulē flowe fro his
wombe/ but he seide þis þng
of þe spirit: whom mē pat bi
leuedē ī hī schuldē take/ for þe
spirit was not zit zouī: for ihc
was not zit glorified/ þfor of
pat cūpanye whanne pei hadde
herd þes wordis of hī: pei seidē/
þis is vrily a profete/ o þe seidē·
þis is crist/ but sume seidē/ whep'
crist comep fro galilee: ¶ whep' þe
scripture seip not· pat of þe seed
of dauip· t' of þe castel of bethle
em whepe dauip was: crist com
ep: ¶ þfor discencioun was maad
among þe puple for hī/ for sū
me of hē wolde hanne take hī:
but no man sette hondis on hī/
þfor þe mynistris camē to bischo
pis t' farisees: t' pei seidē to hē/
whi brouzte ze not hī: ¶ þe mi
nistris answeriden/ neuer man

spak so: as pis man speki/ þer pe farisees answeriden to hem/ whei ze ben disseyued also:/ whe per ouy of pe princes ou of pe farisees· bileuede ì hi:/ but pis pu ple pat knowip not pe lawe: bẽ cursid/ upcomen ben to hẽ· he pat cam to hi ny3t: pat was o ou of hem/ whei oure lawe de mep aniã: but it haue first he rde of hi· & knowe what he do ip:/ & pei answeriden: & seiden to hi/ whei þou art a man of galilee also: seke þou scriptur es· & se þou· þat a profete ris ip not of galilee/ & pei turnede azen: ech ì to his hous

C. viij·

but ihc went ì to þe mount of olyuete: & eerly eft he cam ì to pe temple/ & al pe puple cam to hi: & he sat & taujte hem/ & scri bis & farisees brynge a wom an taki ì a vowtrie/ & pei setted hy· ì pe myddil: & seide to hi/ ma ist² pis wom a is now taki in a nowhte/ & pe lawe mopses com anded us: to stoon swyn such/ per for what seist þou: & pei seiden pis ping tem̃ptinge hi: þat pei m yzten accuse hi/ & ihc bowide hi silf doũ & wroot wip his fy ngur ì pe erpe/ & whanne pei a biden axynge hym: he reisede hi silf & seide to hem/ he of zou pat is wip out synne: first caste a stoon ì to hi· & eft he bowide hi silf: & wroot ì pe erpe/ & pei herynge pese ymagis went̃ awey: oon aft̃ anoy· & pei bigunne fro pe eldre me· & ihc dwelte aloone: & pe wom̃a stondynge ì pe myd dil/ & ihc reisede hi silf· & seide to hi· wom̃a· where ben pei pat accusiden pee:/ no man hap dampned pee/ she seide/ no man lord/ ihc seide to hir/ nei·þ I shal pee/ go þu and now aft̃ward nyle þou sy ne nomore ¶ per-for eft ihc spak to hem & seide/ I am pe list of pe world/ he pat sueþ me· wal kip not ì derknesses: but shal hane pe list of life/ þ̃for pe far isees seiden/ þou berist witnes syuge of pi silf: pi witnessyuge is not trewe/ ihc answeride & seide to hẽ/ & if I bere witnessy ng of my silf: my witnessinge is trewe/ for I woot fro whẽn I cam: & whidir I go/ but ze wi ten not fro whẽn I cam: ne whidir I go/ for ze demẽ after pe fleischly/ but I deme no man/ & if I deme: my dom is trewe/ for I am not aloone: but I & pe fadir pat sente me/ & ì zoure la we it is writ̃· þat pe witnes syng of twei men is trewe/ I am þat bere witnessyng of my silf/ & pe fadir pat sente me:

berip witnessing of me/ perfor
per seiden to hi/ where is pi fad?
ihc answeride/ nep ze knowen
me: ne ze knowē my fadir/ if
ze knewē me peraventure ze sch
uldē knowe also my fadir/ iht
spak pes wordes i pe tresorie·
techinge i pe tēple/ & no man
took hi: for his our cam not zit/
pfor eft ihc seide to hē/ Io y go
& ze schulē seke me: & ze schulen
die i zoure sinne/ whidur y go:
ze moun not come/ pfor pe iewis
seiden/ whep he schal sle hi silf:
for he seip· whidur y go: ze mo
un not come/ & he seide to hē/ ze
ben of bynepe: y am of above/
ze ben of pis world: y am not
of pis world/ pfor y seide to
zou: pat ze schulden die i zour
sinnes/ for if ze bilenen not pt
y am: ze schulē die i zoure sinne/
pfor pei seiden to hi/ who art
pou/ ihc seide to hē/ pe bigyn
ing· which also speke to zou/
y haue many pingis to speke &
to zou3 deme of zou: but he pt
sente me· is sopefast/ & y speke
i pe world pese pingis pat y he
rde of hi/ & pei knewē not: pt
he clepide his fadir god/ pfor
ihc seip to hem/ whanne ze ha
ueiside manyg sone: panne ze
schulē knowe· pat y am/ & of
my silf y do no ping/ but as
my fadir tauzte me: y speke pe
se wordis ping is/ & he pat sente
me· is wip me· & lefte me not alo
one: for y do euermore po pingis
pat ben plesyng to hi/ whanne he
spak pese pingis: many bilewē
i hi/ pfor ihc seide to pe iewis: pt
bilewē i hi/ if ze dwellē in my
word: pilp ze schulē be my disci
lis/ & ze schulē knowe pe treupe:
& pe treupe schal make zou free/
pfor pe iewis answeriden to hi/
we ben pe seed of abrahā: and
we serue wem to nā/ hou seist pu:
pt ze schulē bē free: ihc answeri
de to hē/ treuly treuly y seie to
zou· ech man pt doip synne: is
seruaūt of synne/ & pe seruaūt
dwellip not i pe hous wip outē
ende: but pe sone dwellip wip
outē ende/ pfor if pe sone make
zou free: pilp ze schulē ben free/
y woot pat ze ben abrahās sone
es/ but ze seken to sle me: for
my word takip not i zou/ y speke
po pingis pat y sap at my fadir/
& ze doen po pingis: pat ze sayen
at zoure fadir/ pei answeriden
& seiden to hi/ abrahā is oure
fadir/ ihc seip to hē/ if ze bē pe
sones of abrahā: do ze pe werk
is of abrahā/ but now ze sekē
to sle me a man pat haue spokē
to zou treupe pat y herde of
god/ abrahā dide not pis pig

ye doen ye werkis of youre fadir
perfore pei seiden to hȳ/ we ben not
born of fornicacioũ: we haue o fa
dir god/ but ihc seip to hȳ/ if god
were youre fadir: sopeli ye schu
lden lone me/ for y pcede & cam
of god: & cam/ for nei y cam of
my silf: but he sente me/ whi
knowen ye not my speche:/ for
ye moũ not here my word/ ye bẽ
of pe fadir pe deuel: & ye wolen
do pe desiris of youre fadir/ he
was amẽdeer fro pe bigynyng
& he stood not i treupe: for treupe
is not ihī/ whanne he spekip leesy
ng: he spekip of his owne· for
he is aspei & fadir of it/ but
for y seie treupe: ye bileuẽ not
to me/ who of you schal repne
me of synne:/ if y seie treupe: whi
bileuẽ ye not to me:/ he pat is of
god: herip pe wordis of god/ per
for ye heren not: for ye ben not
of god/ pfor pe iewis answeri
dẽ & seide/ whei we seie not wel
pat pou art a samaritan· and
hast a deuel:/ ihc answeride &
seide/ y haue not a deuel: but
y honoure my fadir· & ye han
vnhonoured me/ ffor y seke
not my glorie: p is he pat sek
ep & deuep/ treuly treuly y se
ie to you· if ony man kepe my
word: he schal not taste dep in
ontẽ eude/ pfor pe iewis seidẽ

now we han knowẽ: pat pou
hast a deuel/ abraham is deed:
& pe profetis/ & pou seist if ony
maũ kepe my word: he schal not
taste deep wip outen eude/ whei
pou art gretter pan oure fadir
abraham pat is deed:/ & pe pro
fetis ben deed whom makist
pou pi silf: ihc answeride/ if y
glorifie my silf: my glorie is
nouzt/ my fadir is pat glorifiep
me: whom ye seien pat he is yo
ure god· & ye han not knowẽ hȳ/
but y haue knowẽ hȳ: & if y seie
pat y knowe hȳ not: y schal be li
ere lijk to you/ but y knowe hȳ:
& y kepe his word/ abraham your
fadir gladide to se my day· & he
sai3 & ioiede/ panne pe iewis seidẽ
to hȳ/ pou hast 3it fifty 3eer: and
hast pou seyn abraham:/ pfor
ihc seide to hẽ/ treuly treuly y seie
to you: bifor pat abraham schulde
be: y am/ pfor per token stoonys
to casten to hȳ/ but ihc hidde hȳ:
& went out of pe temple

And ihc passynge sai3 a
man blynd fro pe birpe/
And his disciplis axiden
hȳ/ maist whanne synnede· pis ma
or his eldris: pat he schulde be
born blynd/ ihc answeride/ nei
pis man synnede· nei his eldris:
but pat pe werkis of god be
schewid i hȳ/ it bihouep me to

wozche pe werkus of hym pat se
ute me: as longe as pe day is/
pe nyzt schal come: whanne nom
an may wozche/ as longe as y
am i pe world: y am pe lizt of
pe world/ whanne he hadde seid
pese pingis: he spette i to pe er
pe· & made cley of pe spotile: &
anoyntide pe cley on his izen· &
seide to hi/ go & be pou wasschi
i pe wat' of siloe: pat is to seie
sent/ panne he weente & waischide.
& cam seynge/ & so neizbores and
pei pat hadden seyn hi bifore·
for he was a begge: seiden/ whey
pis is not he pat sat & beggide: ope
me seiden pat pis it is/ op me sei
den nay: but he is lijc hi but he
seide· pat y am/ for pei seide to hi/
hou ben pin izen openyde: he an
swerde/ pilke man pat is seid hi:
made cley & anoyntide myn izen·
& seide to me/ go pou to pe watir
of siloe: & waische/ & y weente and
waischide: & sai/ and pei seiden
to hi/ where is he: he seide/ y wo
ot not· pei ledeu hi pat was bly
nd to pe fariseis/ and it was sa
bat whanne ihc made cley: & ope
nyde his izen/ eft pe fariseis af
ide hi/ how he hadde seyn/ and he
seide to hem/ he leyde to me cley
ou pe izen: & y waischide· & y se·
for sum of pe fariseis seiden/
pis man is not of god: pat kepip
not pe sabat/ opere men seide/ how
may a synful man do pese signes/
& strif was among hem/ for
pei seien eftsoone to pe blynd man/
what seist pou of hi: pat openy
de pin izen: & he seide pat he is
a profete/ for iewis bileueden
not of hi· pat he was blynd· &
hadde seyn: til pei clepide his fa
dir & modir· pat hadde seyn/ &
pei axide hem: & seide/ is pis zou'
sone· which ze seien was bozn
blynd: how panne seep he now:
his fadir & modir answerden
to hem: & seiden/ we witen pat
pis is oure sone: & pat he was
bozn blynd: but hou he seep now
we witen nere: or who openyde
his izen we witen nere/ axe ze
hi/ he hap age: speke he of hym
silf/ his fadir & modir seiden pe
se pingis: for pei dredden
pe iewis/ for panne pe iewis
hadden conspirid· pat if ony m
an knoulechide hi crist: he schul
de be don out of pe synagoge/
for his fadir & modir seiden:
pat he hap age· axe ze hi/ for
eftsoone pei clepiden pe man
pat was blynd: & seide to hi/
zyue pou glorie to god/ we wite
pat pis man is a synful/ panne he
seide/ if he is a synful y woot nei'/
o thing y woot pat whanne y was
blynd: now y se/ for pei seide

to hī what dide he to pee: hou op
euyde he pin izen: he answerid
to hē y seide to zou now: & ze her
dē what woleu ze eft soone he
re: whep ze wolē be made his
disciplis: for pei cuplidē hī & se
idē be pon his disciple: we bē
disciplis of moyses we witē
pat god spak to moises: but
we knowē not pis of whēu
he is/ pilke man answeride &
seide to heu for ī pis is a wo
nderful pīng pat ze witē not
of whēu he is: & he hap ope
nyde myn izen & ze witē pt god
herip not synful mē/ but if ony
mā is worshipere of god· &
doip his wille: he herip hī/ fro
pe world it is not herd: pt ony
mā openede pe yen of a blynd
bozn mā/ but pis were of god:
he myzte not do ony pīng/ pei
answerdē: & seidē to hī/ pou
art al bozn ī synes: & techist p"
us: & pei puttē hī out/ ihc her
de pat pei haddē puttc hī out
& whan he hadde foūden hym:
he seide to hī/ bileuest pou in
pe sone of god: he answeride.
& seide/ lord who is he: pat y bi
leue ī hī/ & ihc seide to hī/ & pu
hast seyn hym: & he it is pat
spekip wip pee/ & he seide/ lord
y bileue: & he felle doū & wor
shipide hī/ for ihc seide to hī

y cam in to pis world in to doom
pat pei pat seen not: se & pei pat
seen be made blynde & sinne of
pe farisees herden pat weren
wip hī: & pei seidē to hī wheper
we be blynde: ihc seide to heu
if ze weren blynde: ze schulden
not haue synne/ but now ze seie
pat we seen: zour synne dwellip
Treuly treuly y ¶ I seie
seie to zou· he pat com
ep not in bi pe dore in
to pe foold of scheep· but stiep bi
anoyp weie: is a pyzt peef & a day
peef/ but he pat entrip bi pe do
re: is pe schepherde of pe schepe
to pis pe porte openip: & pe she
ep herē his voys & he clepip his
owne scheep bi name· & ledip
hē out & whan he hap don
out his owne schepe: he goip bi
fore heu & pe schepe suē hī· for
pei knowen his vois/ but pei
suē not an alien· but fleen fro
hī: for pei han not knowē pe
vois of aliens/ ihc seide to hē
pis proūbe/ but pei knewen
not: what he spak to hē/ pt for
ihc seide to hē eftsoone/ treuly
treuly y seie to zou: pat y am
pe dore of pe schepe as many
as han come: were ūpzt peues
& day peues/ but pe schepe her
den not heu/ y am pe dore/ if
ony man schal entre bi me:

he shal be sauyd / and he shal go in & shal go out: & he shal fynde leselvis / a wyst peef comep not: but pat he stele· slee & lese / & p cã pat per ham lif: & ha ne more pleuteuously ¶ p am a good shepherde / a good shepherde: & pep his lif for his shepp / but an hirid hyne & pt is not pe shepherde· whos hem not pe shepp his owne: seep a woolf compuge· & he leuep pe shepp & fleep / & pe wolf rauyship· & disparplip pe shepp / & pe hirid hyne fleep· for he is an hirid hyne: & it pertepu ep not to hi of pe shepp / p am a good shepherde / & p knowe my shepp: & my shepp knowip me / as pe fadir hap knowin me: p knowe pe fadir· & p putte my lif for my shepp / p hane oper shepp pat ben not of pis foolde: & it bihoupep me to brynge hem to gidir· & pei shulen here my voys / & it shal be maad o foolde: & o shepherde / for pe fadir louep me: for p putte my lif· pat eftsoone p take it no man takip it fro me: but p putte it of my self / p hane power to putte it: & p hane power to take it azen / pis maundement p hane taki of my fadir ¶ eft dissencioun was maad among pe iewis: for pese wordis & ma nye of he seide / he hap a deuel & maddip / what here ze hi / ope mew seide / pese wordis be not of a man pat hap a feend / whep pe deuel may opene pe izen of blynde me: ¶ but pe feeste of halewynge of pe tẽple were ma ad ierlim: & it was wynt / and ihc walkide i pe temple: in pe porche of salomon / for pe iewis cam e aboute hym: & seide to hi / hou long takist p' a wey oure soule: if pou art crist: seie pou to us opynly / ihc answeride to hẽ / p spoke to zou & ze bilieuen not / pe werkis pat p do in pe name of my fadir: beren wit nessing of me / but ze bilieuẽ not: for ze ben not of myn shepp / my shepp heren my voys: & p knowe hem· & pei suen me / & p zyue to hẽ euerlastinge lif: & pei shulẽ not perisshe wip outẽ ende / & noon shal rauysshe hẽ fro myn hond / pat ping pat my fadir zaf to me: is more pan alle pingis / & no man may rauysshe fro my fadris hond / p & pe fadir ben oon / pe iewis token up stoonys: to stoone hi / ihc answeride to hẽ / y hane shewid to zou many good werkis of my fadir: for which werk of hẽ stoonẽ ze me: / pe

anſwerideñ to hym/ ye ſtoonen
ye noot of good werk: but of
blaſfemye/ & for yon ſiyen yon
art anā: makiſt yi ſilf god/ ihc
anſweride to hem/ whey ſ it is
ot writtē i ȝoure lawe: pat y ſei
de ȝe ben goddis: if he ſeide pat
pei weren goddis: to whiche pe
word of god was maad & ſcrip
ture may not be vndon: pilke
pat pe fadir hap halewid & hap
sent i to pe world/ ȝe seien pat p
blaſfemie for p ſeide p am godd
is ſone: / if p do not pe werkis
of my fadir: upleȝe wileme to
me/ but if p do· ponȝe wolen
not wileme to me: wileme ȝe to pe
werkis/ pat ȝe knowe & wileme:
pat pe fadir is i me· & y i pe fa
dir/ for pei ſouȝte to take him:
& he went out of her hondis/
& he went eftſoone ouer iordan·
i to pat place where ioon was
firſt baptiſynge: & he dwelte
pe/ & many camē to hi & seiden·
for ioon dide no myracle/ and
alle pingis what euer ioon ſeide
of pis: were ſope/ and many
e bileneden in him

And per was a ſijk man
lazarus of betanye:
of pe caſtel of mary
& martha hise ſiſtris/ And it
was marie which anoyntide
pe lord wip oynement· & wipte
his feet wip hir heeris: whos bro
per lazarus was ſijk/ for hise
ſiſtris senten to hi: & seidē/ lord lo
he whom pou loneſt: is ſijk/ and
ihc herde & seide to hem/ pis ſik
nelle is not to pe deep: but for
pe glorie of god· pat mañ ſone
be glorified bi hi/ & ihc lonyde
martha: & hir ſiſt' marie & la
zarus/ for whanne ihc herde
pat he was ſijk: pañe he dwelli
de i pe ſame place twey dayes
& aft' pese pingis: he ſeide to hi
ſe diſciplis/ go we eft in to iude/
pe diſciplis seien to hi/ maiſt'
now pe iewis souȝte for to ſtoo
ne pee: & eft goiſt pou pidir:
ihc anſweride/ whey ſ pere not
twelue owris of pe day: if ony
man wandre i pe daie· he hirtip
not: for he seep pe liȝt of pis
world/ but if he wandre in pe
nyȝt: he ſtombliſ· for liȝt is not
i hi/ he ſeip pese pingis/ & aftir
pese pingis he seip to hē/ laſa
rus oure freend ſlepip: but y
go to reiſe hi fro ſleep/ pe for hi
ſe diſciplis seidē/ lord if he ſle
pip: he ſchal be ſaaf/ but ihc
hadde seid of his deep/ but pei
gessidē pat he seide of ſlepig
of ſleep/ pañe pfor ihc seide to
hē oppinly/ lazarus is deed/ &
y hamme ioie for ȝou· pat ȝe bile
ne· for y was not pere/ but go

we to hī / perfor thomas pat is
seid didym9: seide to eulenē dis
ciplis / go we alsō: pat we dien
wip hī / & so ihc cam: & foond hī
hauynge pāne foure daies in
pe graue / & betanye was bi
ī ierusalē as it weve fiftene
furlongis / & manye of pe iewis
is comen to mary & martha·
to coūforte hē of her broper /
for as martha herde pat ihū
cam: she ran to hī / but mary
sat at home / for martha sei
de to ihū / lord if pou haddist
be here: my brop' hadde not
be deed / but now y woot· pat
what eue pingis pou schalt
axe of god: god schal zīue to pee /
ihc seip to hī / pi brop' schal
vpse azen / martha seip to hī /
y woot pat he schal vpse azen
ī pe azenrisyng ī pe laste day /
ihc seip to hī / y am azenris
ng & lif / he pat bileuep īme:
zhe pouz he be deed: he schal
lyue / & eche pat lyuep & bilen
ep ī me: schal not die wip outē
en / bileuest pou pis pīng / she
seip to hī / zhe lord y haue bile
ued pat pou art crist pe sone
of pe lyuynge god: pat hast
come ī to pis world / & whānne
she hadde seid pis pīng: she
wente & clepide marie hir
sist' ī cylence & seide / pe maist'
comep and clepip pee / she as
she herde aroos anoon: & cā'
to hī / & ihc cam not zit ī to pe
castel: but he was zit ī pe pla
ce· where martha hadde comē
azen9 hī / for pe iewis pat
were wip hir ī pe hous· & co
nfortide hir· whānne pei sawē
mary pat she roos swipe
& went out / pei suedē hir &
seidē / for she goip to pe graue:
to wepe pe / but whānne marye
was come where ihc was: she
seynge hī felde doū to his feet
& seide to hī / lord if pou haddist be
here: my broper hadde not be
deed / & for whānne ihū saiz hir
wepynge· & pe iewis wepyngе
pat weren wip hir: he made
woyse ī spirit· & troublyde hym
silf & seide / where han ze leid
hī / pei seien to hī lord come &
se / & ihc wepte / for pe iewis
seiden / lo how he louede hym /
& sūme of hem seidē / wheper
pis man pat openyde pe izen
of pe borū blynd mā: myzte
not make pat pis schulde not
die: / for ihc eft makynge no
yse ī hī silf: cam to pe graue /
& pe was adēne: & a stoon was
leid pōne / & ihc seip / take ze a
wey pe stoon / martha pe sistir
of hī pat was deed: seip to hī /
lord he stynkip now: for he hap

leie fowre dayes / yhc leip to hir
hyaue y not seide to yee · pat if y^t
vileneſt pon ſhalt ſe pe glorie
of god: / y^for pei token alper pe
ſtoon / & yhc lifte up hiſe izen: &
ſeide / fadir y do pankyngȝ to
yee: for pou haſt herde me / & y
wiſte pat pou euermore herieſt me
but for pe puple pat ſtondip a
bonte y ſeide: pat pei vilene y^t
pou haſt ſent me / whanne he
hadde ſeid peſe pingȝ: he crie
de wip a greet voiz / lazarus
come pon forp / & anoon he pat
was deed: cam out bounden pe
hondis & feet wip boondis &
his face bounden wip a ſudarie
& yhc ſeip to hem / vnbynde ze hi:
& ſuffre ze hi to go forp / per for
many of pe ielwis pat camen
to marie & martha · & ſeien wh
at pingis yhu dide: bileueden
in hi / but ſum of hem weenten
to pe fariſees: & ſeiden to hem ·
what pingis yhc hadde don / per
for pe biſchopis & pe fariſees
gadriden a counſeil azenȝ yhu &
ſeiden / what do we: for pis m
an doip many myraclis: if
we leeuen hi pus: alle men ſh
ulen bileue in hi / & romayns ſh
ulen come & ſchulen take oure
place & oure folc / but oon of
hem caifas bi name · whanne he
was biſchop of pat zeer: ſeide
to hem / ze witen no ping ne pen
ken: pat it ſpedip to zou pat o
man die for pe puple · & pat al
pe folc periſche not / but he ſei
de not pis ping of hi ſilf / but
whanne he was biſchop of pat
zeer: he profeciede pat yhu was
to die for pe folc · & not oonly
for pe folc · but pat he ſchulde
gadere in to oon pe ſonȝ of god ·
pat were ſcatrid / for fro pat dai
pei pouȝten: for to ſle hi / for yhc
walkide not panne openly amo
nge pe ielwis: but he went in
to a cuntre bi pi dis desert / in to a ci
te pat is ſeid effrem: & pere he dwel
lide wip hiſe diſciplis / and pe
pask of pe ielwis was nyz: and
many of pe cuntrey wenten up
to ieruſalem bifor pe pask · to ha
lowe hem ſilf / for pei ſouȝten yhu:
& ſpaken to gidre ſtondinge in pe tep
le / what gesſen ze: for he comep
not to pe feeſte day: for pe biſch
opis & fariſees hadden zouen a
maundement / pat if ony man
knowe where he is: pat he ſche
we · pat pei take hym

Therfor yhc bifor ſixe dayes
of pask cam to betanye
where lazarus hadde be de
ed: whom yhc reiſide / & pei
maden to hi a ſoupeye pere · and
martha mynyſtride to hi · & la
zarus was oon of hem pat

ſitten at ye mete wiþ him / þ̄ for
marie took apoñd of oynement
of treiue marde þcious · & anoy
nted ye feet of ihū: & wipte his
feet wiþ hir heeris / & ye hous
was fulfilled of ye ſmour of
ye oynemet / þ̄ for iudas ſchari
oth oon of hise disciplis · þt was
to betraie hī: ſeide / why is not
þis oynemēt ſeeld for pre hūd
rid penis: & ȝouñ to nedi mē:
but he ſeide þis þing · not for it
pertepned to hī of nedy men:
but for he was a þeef / & he had
de ye purſis & bar þo þingis þat
weren sent / þ̄ for ihc ſeide / ſuf
frē ȝe hir · þat i to ye day of my
birying ſche kepe þat / for ȝe ſchu
le mē euermore haue poȝe mē wiþ
ȝou: but ȝe ſchule not euermore
haue me / þ̄ for myche puple of
iewis knew: þat ihc was þe
& þei camē not oonly for ihū:
but to ſe lasarus · whō he had
de reiſid fro deep / but ye þu
cis of þ̄ris pouztē to ſle lasar.
for manye of ye iewis weiten
awei for hī · & bileuedē in ihū /
but on ye mozewe · manyche
puple þat cam to gidē to ye fe
eſte day · whanne þei haddē herd
þat ihc cam to ierlm: token br
anchis of palmes & camē for
azen hī · & criedē / osanna · ble
ſſid is ye king of isral: þat com
ep in ye name of ye lord / and ihc
foond a zonge aſſe: & ſat on hym
as it is writē / ye dozt of ſyon:
uyle pou drede / lo þi king comep:
ſittynge on an aſſe fole / hise diſci
plis knewē not firſt pese þingis:
but whanne ihc was gloriſied /
þanne þei hadden mynde · for ye
ſe þingis weren writē of hī · &
pese þingis þei diden to hī / þer
for ye puple bar witneſſyng þt
was wiþ hī · whanne he clepide
lasarus fro ye graue · & reiſide
hī fro deep / & þ̄ for ye puple cā
& mette wiþ hī: for þei herden
þat he hadde don þis þigne / þ̄ for
ye farisees ſeidē to hē ſilf / ȝe ſe
en þat we profiten no þing / lo
al ye world wente aft hī & þei
weren comne hepene mē: of hē
þat hadden come up to worſchi
pe in ye feeſte day / & pese camen
to filip · þat was of bethſaida
of galile: & þreden hī & seiden /
ſire we woleu ſe ihū / filip com
ep & ſeiþ to andrew / eft and
rew & filip ſeidē to ihū / & ihc
anſwerede to hē & ſeide / ye our
coueþ þt manns ſdue be cla
rified / treuly treuly y ſeie
to ȝou but a corn of whete fal
le i to ye erþe & be deed: it dwel
liþ not aloone / but if it be deed:
it bryngiþ myche fruyt / he þt
loueþ his liif ſchal leeſe it / &

he pat hatip his lif in pis world: kepip it in to euerlastinge lif / if ony man serue me: sue he me / & wher y am: pere my mynistre shal be / if ony man serue me: my fadir shal worshipe hi / now my soule is troblid / & what shal y seye: / fadir saue me fro pis our / but þ for y cam i to pis oure / fadir clarifie pi name / & a vois cam fro heuene & seide / & y haue clarified: & eft y shal clarifie / þat pe puple pat stood & herde: seide pat þudur was maad / ope me seide an aungel spak to hi / ihc an swerede & seide / pis vois cam not for me: but for you / now is pe dom of pe world / now pe þuce of pis world: shal be cast out / & if y shal be enhaunsid fro pe erpe: y shal drawe alle pingis to my silf / & he seide pis ping: signifi ynge bi what dep he was to die / & pe puple answerde to hi / we han herd of pe lawe pat crist dwellip wip outen ende / & how seist pou: it bihouep manus sone to be arerid: who is pis manus sone: / & pane ihc seip to he / zit a litil liht is in you / walke ze pe wh le ze han liht: pat derknessis catche zou not / he pat wandrip in derknessis: woot nere whidir he goip / while ze han liht. bile ne ze in liht: pat ze be pe childrē of liht / ihc spak pese pingis. and went & hidde hi fro hē / & whanne he hadde don so many miracles bifor hem: pei bileuedē not in hi / pat pe word of ysaie pe profete shulde be fulfillid: which he sei de / lord who bileuede to oure he rpug: & to whom is pe arm of pe lord shewid: / þer pei mygte not bilene: for eft ysaie seide / he hap blyndid her yen: & he hap maad hard pe herte of hē / pat pei se not with yen: & vndirsto nde with herte / & pat pei ben co nertid & y heele hē / ysaie seide pe se pingis: whanne he say pe glorie of hi. & spak of hi / nepeles of pe þuces many bileuedē in hi / but for pe fariseis pat knowlechidē not: pat pei shulde not be put out of pe synagoge / for pei lou edē pe glorie of mē: more pan pe glorie of god / & ihc criede & sei de / he pat bilenep in me: bilen ep not in me. but in hi pat sente me / he pat seep me: seep hi pat sente me / y liht cam i to pe world pat ech pat bilenep in me: dwelle not in derknesse / & if ony ma herip my wordis & kepip hem: y deme hi not / for y cam not pat y deme pe world: but pat y make pe world saaf / he pat dispisip me & takip not my wor dis: hap hi pat shal juge hym /

pilke word pat y ihāne spokē of
my silf shal deme hī i pe laste
day/ for y ihāne not spokē of my
silf/ but pilke fadir pat sente
me: zaf to me mandement/
what y shal sei: & what y sh
al speke/ & y woot pat his mā
dement is euerlastynge liif/ þer
fo pingis pat y speke· as pe fa
dir seide to me: so y speke

Ca. xiii.

Bifore pe feeste day of
pask· ihc wityngе pat
his our is comē: pat
he palle fro pis world to pe fa
dir/ whāne he hadde loued his
pat weren i pe world: i to pe
ende he louede hē/ & whāne pe
soper was maad· whāne pe
deuel hadde putte pāne i to pe
herte: pat iudas of symoūt
scharioth shulde bitraye hī
he wityngе pat pe fadir zaf
alle pingis to hī in to his hon
dis· & pat he wente out fro
god· & goip to god: he risip fro
pe soper & doip of his clopis/
& whāne he hadde takē a lyn
nē clop: he girde hī/ & aftirwa
rd he putte wat i to a basyn:
& bigan to waische pe disciplis
feet/ & to wipe wip pe lynen
clop: wip which he was gird/
& so he cam to symoūt petre/
& petre seip to hī/ lord wasch
ist pou my feet: / ihc answeri

de: and seide to him/ what y do
pou woost not now: but pou sh
alt wite afterward/ petre seip to
hī/ pou shalt neuere waische my
feet/ ihc answeride to hī/ if y
shal not waische pee: pou shalt
not haue part wip me/ symoūt
petre seip to hī/ lord not oonly
my feet: but pope pe hondis &
pe feet/ ihc seide to hī/ he pat
is waischē hap no neede: but
pat he waische pe feet· but he
is al clene/ & ze ben clene: but
not alle/ for he wiste who was
he pat shulde bitraie hī: þ for
he seide ze ben not alle clene/ &
so aft pat he hadde waischē pe
feet of hē: he took his clopis/ &
whāne he was set to mete aze:
eft he seide to hē/ ze wite what
y haue don to zou/ ze clepe me
maist & lord: & ze seien wel/ for
y am/ þ for if y lord & maist ha
ue waischē zoure feet: & ze sh
ulē waische oon an opis feet/
for y haue zouē ensaūple to zou:
so doon ze/ treuly treuly y seie
to zou· pe seruaūt is gretter
pan his lord: nepir an apostle·
is gretter pan he pat sēte hī/ if
ze witē pese pingis: ze shulē be
blessid· if ze doen hē/ y seie not
of alle zou/ y woot· whiche y ha
ue chosē/ but pat pe scripture
be fulfillid· he pat etip my breed:

not

shal reise his heele azen me/
trewly y seie to zou bifor it be
doon/ pat whanne it is doon: ze
bileue pt y am/ trewly trewly
y seie to zou· he pat takip whom
eu y shal sende: resseiuep me/
& he pat resseiuep me: resseiu
uep hi pat sente me/ whanne ihc
hadde seid pese pingis: he was
troblid i spirit & witnesside &
seide/ trewly trewly y seie to zou:
pat oon of zou shal bitraie me/
pfor pe disciplis lokiden to gidre:
doutinge of whom he seide/ & so
oon of hise disciplis was resty
nge i pe bosum of ihu: whom ihu
louede/ pfor symount petre bike
nep to hi: & seip to hi/ who is it
of whom he seip: & so whanne
he hadde restid azen on pe bre
st of ihu: he seip to hi/ lord who
is it: ihc answeride/ he it is
to whom y shal areche a lop
of breed/ & whanne he hadde
wet breed: he zaf to iudas of
symount scharioth/ & aft pe m
orsel: panne sathanas entride
i to hi/ & ihc seip to hi/ pat pig
pat pou doist: do pou swipe/
& noon of hem pt saten at pe mete
wiste whereto: he seide to hi/ for
sum me gesside for iudas hadde
purs: pat ihc hadde seid to hi/
bie pou po pingis pat ben nede
ful to us· to pe feeste day: or pt
he shulde zyue sum pyng to nedy
me/ pfor whanne he hadde taki
pe morsel: he wente out anoon/
& it was nyzt/ & whanne he was
gon out: ihc seide/ now mannis
sone is clarified: & god is clari
fied in hi/ if god is clarified in hi:
god shal clarifie hi in hi silf/ &
anoon he shal clarifie hi· Litle
sones zit a litil y am with zou· ze
shulen seke me/ & as y seide to pe
iewis: whidur y go ze moun not
come/ & to zou y seie now/ y zyue
to zou a newe maundement: pat
ze loue to gidere/ as y loue zou·
& pat ze loue to gidre: pat ze be
my disciplis: if ze han loue to
gidre/ symount petre seip to hi/
lord whidur goist pou: ihc answ
eride/ whidur y go: pou maist
not sue me now· but pou shalt
sue afterward/ petre seip to hi
why may y not sue pee: y shal
putte my lif for pee/ ihc answe
ride/ pou shalt putte pi lif for
me/ trewly trewly y seie to pee· pe
cok shal not crowe: til pou shalt
denye me pries/ and he seip
to hise disciplis

Be not zour herte afi·
ried: ne drede it ze
bileuen i god: & bile
ueze in me· in pe hous of my
fadir: ben many dwellingis:
if ouy ping lesse y hadde seid

i pis p
alle me
shulde
knowe

C·

to zou· for y go to make redy to
zou a place / & if y go & make redy
to zou a place: eftsoones y come·
& y shal take zou to my self / that
where y am: ze be / & whidir y
go ze wtē: & ze wtē pe weie /
thomas seip to hī / lord· we wtē
not whidir pou goist / & how
mouī we wite pe weie: ihc seip
to hī / y am weie treupe & lif
no mā comep to pe fadir: but
bi me / if ze hadde knowe me
we me: sopely ze hadde knowe
also my fadir / & aftward ze
shulē knowe hī / & ze han seyn
hī / filip seip to hī / lord shewe
to us pe fadir: & it sufficip
to us / ihc seip to hī / so longe
tyme y am wip zou: & hast ze
not knowē me: filip· he pat
seep me: seep also pe fadir /
how seist pou: shewe to us pe
fadir: / bileuest pou not: pat
y am i pe fadir· & pe fadir is
i me / pe wordis pat y speke
to zou: y speke not of my self
but pe fadir· hī silf dwellīge
i me: doip pe werkis / bileue
ze not pat y am i pe fadir: &
pe fadir is i me: ellis· bilene
ze for pilke werkis / treuly y
seie to zou· if amā bileuep in
me: also he shal do pe werk
is pat y do / & he shal do gretre
werkis pan pese: for y go to
pe fadir / and what pīng ze axe
pe fadir i my name: y shal do
pis pīng· pat pe fadir be glori
fied i pe sone / if ze axen ony pīg
i my name: y shal do it / if ze
louen me: kepe ze my comaū
dementis / & y shal praye pe fadir:
& he shal zeue to zou anop coū
foztour pe spirit of treupe· to
dwelle wip zou wipoute ende /
which spirit· pe world may u
ot take: for it seep hī not neper
knowip hī / but ze shulē knowe hym
knowe: for he shal dwelle wip
zou· & he shal be i zou / y shal
not leeue zou fadir-lesse: y sh
al come to zou / zit a litil & pe
world seep not now me / but
ze shulē se me: for y lyue· & ze
shulē lyue / in pat day ze sh
ulē knowe pat y am i my fa
dir· & ze i me· & y i zou / he pat
hap my comaūdemētis & kep
ip hē: he it is pat louep me / &
he pat louep me: shal be louyd
of my fadir / & y shal loue hī:
& y shal shewe to hī my self /
iudas seip to hī: not he of ch
riotth / lord what is doon: pat
pou shalt shewe pi silf to us·
& not to pe world: / ihc answer
ide & seide to hī / if ony man lo
uep me: he shal kepe my word /
& my fadir shal loue hym:
& we shulē come to hī· & we

schulē dwelle wip hym/ he pat lou
ep me not: kepep not my wordis/
& pe word which ze han herd· is n
ot myn: but pe fadris pat sente
me pese pingis p haue spokē to
zou dwellynge among zou but
pilke hooly goost pe comfortour·
whom pe fadir schal sende in my
name· he schal teche zou alle pin
gis· what euere pingis p schal seie
to zou pees p leeue to zou: my pe
es p zyue to zou not as pe wold
zyuep: p zyue to zou/ be not zour
herte affrayed: ne drede it/ ze
han herd pat p seide to zou: p go
& come to zou if ze louedē me:
forsope ze schulden haue ioye· for
p go to pe fadir· for pe fadir is
gretture pan p· & now p haue
seid to zou bifor pat it be don:
pat whanne it is don· ze bileue
now p schal not speke many
pingis wip zou/ for pe prince of
pis world comep: & hap not in
me ony ping/ but pat pe wor
ld knowe pat p loue pe fadir/
& as pe fadir zaf a comaundem
ent to me: so p do ryse ze go we
I am a verey vyne: & myn
my fadir is an erpe tilier/
ech braunche in me pat berip
not fruyt: he schal take awei
it/ & ech pat berip fruyt: he sch
al purge it pat it bere pe more
fruyt/ now ze ben cleene for pe
word: pat p haue spokē to zou
dwelle ze in me: & p in zou/ as pe
uche may not make fruyt of it
self: but it dwelle in pe vyne/ so
nep ze: but ze dwelle in me/ p am
a vyne: ze ben braunchis/ who pat
dwellip in me & p i hym: pis berip
myche fruyt/ for wip outē me
ze mown no ping do/ if ony man
dwellip not in me: he schal be
cast oute as a braunche & schal
wexe drie/ & pei schulen gadre hym:
& pei schulen caste hym in to pe fier
& he brenep/ if ze dwellen in me·
& my wordis dwelle in zou: what
euer ping ze wolen· ze schulen axe &
it schal be don to zou/ in pis ping
my fadir is clarified: pat ze
bringe forp ful myche fruyt·
& pat ze be maad my disciplis/
as my fadir louede me: p haue
loued zou/ dwelle ze in my lone/
if ze kepen my comaundementis:
ze schulen dwelle in my loue/ as
p haue kept pe comaundemen
tis of my fadir: & p dwelle in
his loue/ pese pingis p spak
to zou: pat my ioie be in zou· &
zoure ioye be fulfillid/ pis is
my comaundement: pat ze lone
to gidre· as p louede zou/ no man
hap more ioye lone pan pis: pat
a man putte his lif for his fre
ndis/ ze ben my frendis: if ze do
en po pingis pat p comaunde to

zou / now y shal not clepe zou ser
nauntis: for pe seruaunt woot n
ot what his lord shal do / but y
haue clepid zou frendis / for alle
pingis what ebe y herde of my
fadir · y haue maad knowun to
zou / ze han not chosun me: but y
chees zou / & y haue put zou: pat
ze go & brynge fruyt·
& zoure fruyt dwelle / pat what
euer ze aske pe fadir in my
name: he zyue to zou / pese ping
is y comaunde to zou: that pat
ze loue to gidre / if pe world hat
ip zou: wite ze pat it hadde me
in hate rap pan zou / if ze hadde
be of pe world: pe world shulde
loue pat ping pat was his / but
forpe pei not of pe world · but y
chees zou fro pe world: pfor pe
world hatip zou / hane ze mynde
of my word · which y seide to zou.
pe seruaunt is not gretter pan
his lord / if pei han pursued
me: pei shulen pursue zou also /
if pei han kept my word: pei
shulen kepe zoure also / but pei
shulen do to zou alle pese pingis
for my name: for pei knowen
not hym pat sente me / if y hadde
not comun & hadde not spokun to
hem: pei shulden not haue synne /
but now pei han noon excusa
cion of her synne / he pat hatip
me: hatip also my fadir / if y
hadde not doon werkis in hem·
which noon oper man dide: pei
shulden not haue synne / but
now bope pei han seyn & yuel han
hatid: me & my fadir / but pat pe
word be fulfillid · pat is writ
un in her lawe · for pei hadden me
in hate wipouten cause / but when
ne pe confortour shal come · wh
ich y shal sende to zou · fro pe
fadir · a spirit of trewpe which
comep of pe fadir: he shal bere
witnessing of me / & ze shulen
bere witnessing: forpe ze ben wt
me fro pe bigynyng

pese pingis y haue spokun
to zou: pat ze be not sclaun
dried / pei shulen make zou
wipouten pe synagogis / but
pe our comep · pat eche man
pat sleep zou: deme pat he doip
seruyce to god / & pei shulen do
to zou pese pingis: for pei han n
ot knowun pe fadir nepir me /
but pese pingis y spak to zou:
pat whanne pe our of he shal
come · ze haue mynde pat y seide
to zou / y seide not to zou pese
pingis fro pe bigynyng: for
y was wip zou / & now y go to
hym pat sente me: & no man of
zou axip me whidir pou goist /
but for y haue spokun to zou pe
se pingis: heynesse hap fil
fillid zoure herte / but y seie

to zou trewpe: it speedip to zou pt
y go/ for if y go not forp: pe cõ
fortour shal not come to zou/
but if y go forp: y shal sende
hi to hi zou/ & whãne he comep
he shal repue pe world of sy
ne· & of rightwisnesse & of dõ/
of syne: for pei han not bile
ued in me/ & of rightwisnesse:
for y go to pe fadir· & now ze
shulẽ not se me/ but of doom:
for pe prince of pis world is no
w demed/ zit y haue many pi
ngis forto seie to zou: but ze
mowẽ not bere hẽ now/ but
whãne pilke spirit of trewpe
pe comep: he shal teche zou
al trewpe/ for he shal not spe
ke of hi silf: but what euer
pingis he shal here· he shal
speke/ & he shal telle to zou
po pingis pat ben to come/ he
shal clarifie me: for of myne
he shal take· & shal telle to
zou/ alle pingis whiche eũ pe
fadir hap: ben myne/ ꝑfor y
seide to zou: for of myn he sh
al take· And shal telle zou//
A litil· & pãne ze shulẽ not
se me/ & eftsoone a litil· & ze
shulẽ se me: for y go to pe fa
dir/ ꝑfor sũme of hise disciꝑl
is seide to gidre/ what is pis
ping pat he seip to us· a litil
& ze shulẽ not se me· & eftsoo
ne a litil· & ze shulen se me: for
y go to pe fadir: ꝑfor pei seidẽ
what is pis pat he seip to us a
litil: we witẽ not what he spe
kip/ & ihc knew· pat pei woldẽ
axe hi: & he seide to hẽ of pis yn
ge ze seken among zou· for y seide
a litil· & ze shulẽ not se me: & eft
soone a litil· & ze shulẽ se me:
treuly treuly y seie to zou: pat
ze shulẽ mourne & wepe: but
pe world shal haue ioye/ & ze
shulẽ be sorouful: but zoure
sorewe shal turne in to ioye/ a
womã whãne she berip child:
hap heuynesse for hir tyme to
mẽ/ but whãne she hap bor
ne a sone: now she penkip n
ot on pe peyne for ioye· for am
an is borñ in to pe world/ & ꝑfor
ze han now sorewe/ but eftso
one y shal se zou: & zoure herte
shal haue ioye· & no mã shal
take fro zou zoure ioye/ & in pat
day ze shulẽ not axe me ony
ping/ treuly treuly y seie to zou·
if ze axen pe fadir ony ping in
my name: he shal zyue to zou·
til now ze axidẽ now ping in
my name/ axe ze: & ze shulen
take· pat zoure ioie be ful/ y
haue spokñ to zou pese pingis
in prouerbis/ pe our comep· whã
ne now y shal not speke to zou
in prouerbis: but opynly of my

fadir· y shal telle to zou / in pat day
ze shulē aske in my name / & y seie
not to zou: pat y shal preie pe fa
dir of zou / for pe fadir him silf
loueþ zou: for ze han loued me·
& han bileued pat y weente out
fro god / y weente out fro pe fa
dir: & y cam i to pe world / eftsoo
one y leeue pe world: & y go
to pe fadir / hise disciplis seiden
to him / lo now pou spekist opy
nly: & pou seist no prouerbe /
now we wite pat pou woost al
le þingis / & it is not nede to pee:
pat ony man aske pee / in pis þing
we bileue: pat pou wentist out
fro god / ihc answerede to hem /
now ze bileue / lo pe ouer comep
& now it comep: pat ze be dis
parplid· ech i to his owne þin
gis· & pat ze leeue me aloone /
& y am not aloone: for pe fadir
is wip me / pese þingis / y haue
spokē to zou: pat ze haue pees
in me / in pe world ze shulē haue
diseese: but trust ze y haue
ouercomē pe world

These þingis ihc spak: and
whanne he hadde cast up hi
se izen i to heuene: he seide
fadir pe our comep· clarifi
e þi sone: pat þi sone clarifie
pee / as pou hast zouē to him
power of eche fleisshe· pat al
þing pat pou hast zouē to hi:
he zine to pee hem euerlastinge
liif / & pis is eūlastinge liif: pat
pei knowe pee vn god aloone· &
whom pou hast sent ihū crist / y ha
ne clarified pee ou pe erpe: y
haue endid pe werk pat pou
hast zouē to me· to do / & now
fadir clarifie pou me at þi silf:
wip pe dereuelle pat y hadde
at pee· bifor pe world was made /
y haue shewid þi name to po
ple whiche pou hast zouē to me
of pe world / pei were pine: & þ'
hast zouē hem to me· & pei han kept
þi word / & now pei han knowē·
pat alle þingis pat pou hast zo
uē to me ben of pee / for pe word
is pat pou hast zouē to me: y
zaf to hem / & pei token & han kno
wen vnly: pat y weente out fro
pee / & pei bileueden pat pou
sentist me. I y pie for hem / y pie
not for pe world: but for hem
pat pou hast zouē to me / for pei
ben pine / & alle my þingis ben
pine: & pine þingis ben myne·
& y am clarified in hem / & now y
am not in pe world· & pese ben in
pe world: & y come to pee / hooly
fadir kepe hem in þi name· whiche
pou zauest to me: pat pei ben
oon· as we ben / while y was wip
hem: y kepte hem in þi name / pilke
pat pou zauest to me: y kepte /
& noon of hem perishide: but pe

han

lone of perdicioñ· pat pe scripture
be fulfillid/ but nouw y come to
pee/ & y speke pese pingis in pe
world: pat pei haue my ioye fulf
illid in hem silf/ y zaf to hẽ pi word:
& pe world hadde hem in hate/ for pei
ben not of pe world: as y am not
of pe world/ y pie not pat pou ta
ke hem a wepe fro pe world: but
pat pou kepe hem from yuel/ pei
ben not of pe world: as y am not
of pe world/ halewe pou hem in tre
upe/ pi word is treupe/ as pou sen
tist me in to pe world: also y sente
hem in to pe world/ & y halewe my
silf for hẽ: pat also pei ben halew
id in treupe/ & y pie not oõly for hẽ:
but also for hẽ pat shulle bileue
in to me bi pe word of hẽ/ pat alle
bẽ oon· as pou fadir in me· & y in
pee: pat also pei in us be oon/ pt
pe world bileue: pat pou hast
sent me/ & y haue zouñ to hem
pe clerenesse pat pou hast zouñ
to me: pat pei be oon as we bẽ
oon/ y in hẽ & pou in me: pat pei
be endid in to oon/ & pat pe world
knowe pat pou sendist me/ and
hast loued hẽ: as pou hast loued
also me/ fadir pei whiche pou za
uest to me: y wole pat where y
am· pat pei bẽ wip me/ pat pei see
my clerenesse· pat pou hast zo
uñ to me: for pou louedist me bi
for pe making of pe world/ fadir

rigtfully pe world knewe pee not
but y knewe pee: & pese knewẽ pat
pou sentist me/ & y haue maad pi
name knowñ to hẽ· & shal make
knowñ: pat pe lone bi which pou
hast loued me· be in hẽ· & y in hem

Whanne ihc hadde seid pe
se pingis: he went out
wip his disciplis on pe
stroud of cedrou/ where was ze
rd: in to which he entride & his dis
ciplis/ & iudas pat betrayede hi:
knewe pe place for ofte ihc cam
pidur wip his disciplis/ perfor
whanne iudas hadde takñ a cupe
ny of knyztis & mynistris of pe
bischopis & of pe farisees: he cã
pidur wip lanternes & brondis
& armeres/ & so ihc wituge alle
pingis· pat weren to come on hi:
went forp & seide to hem/ whõ
seken ze:/ pei answeriden to hi
ihñ of nazareth/ ihc seip to hem/
y am/ & iudas pat betrayede hi:
stood wip hem/ & whanne he seide
to hẽ y am: pei wentẽ abak and
felden doñ on pe erpe/ & eft he
axide hẽ/ whom seken ze:/ & pei
seiden/ ihñ of nazareth/ he an
sweride to hẽ/ y seide to zou: pat
y am/ for if ze seken me: suffre
ze pese to go awey/ pat pe word
which he seide· shulde be fulfil
lid: for y loste not ony of hem·
whiche pou hast zouñ to me/

perfor ſp moñt petre hadde alle
vrd: & drowe it out & ſmoot pe
ſeruañt of pe biſchop: & kittide
of his rizt eer/ & pe name of pe
ſeruañt: was malcus/ þfor ihc
ſeide to petre/ putte pou pi ſwe
rd ì to pi ſchepe/ wolt pou not
pat y drynke pe cuppe: pat my
fadir zaf to me/ þfor pe cũpeny
e of kny3tis & pe ẽbme· and pe
mynistris of pe iewis: token
ihũ & bouñdñ hi· & ledden hi firſt
to annas ffor he was fadir of
caifas wiſe: pat was biſchop of
pat zeer & it was caifas pat
zaf cõſel to pe iewis: pat it
ſpedip pat o man die for pe pu
ple/ but ſymoñ petre ſuede
ihũ: & anop disciple and pilke
disciple was knowñ to pe biſch
op: & he entride wip ihũ ì to pe
halle of pe biſchop but petre
stood at pe dore wipoute forp/ þ
for pe top disciple pat was kn
owñ to pe biſchop wente out:
& ſeide to pe wõmañ pat kepte
pe dore· & brouzte pu petre/ and
pe damysel kepere of pe dore:
ſeide to petre/ whep pou art
also of pis mañ disciplis: he
ſeide/ y am not/ & pe ſeruañt
is & mynistris stoodẽ at pe co
lis· for it was cold: & pei war
myden hem/ & petre was wt
hem: stondige & warmynge

him/ and pe biſchop axide ihũ
of his disciplis: & of his techy
nge/ ihc answeride to hi/ y haue
ſpokñ openly to pe world/ y tau3
te eñ more ì pe ſynagoge & ì pe
tẽple· whidir alle pe iewis cã
mẽ to gidẽ: & ì hidles y ſpak no
ping/ what axiſt pou me: axe
hem pat herden: what y haue
ſpokñ to hẽ/ lo pei wite what
pingis y haue ſeid/ whan he
hadde ſeid pese pingis: oon of
pe mynistris stondinge upz zaf
a buffat to ihũ· & ſeide answe
riſt pou ſo to pe biſchop: ihc
answeride to hi/ if y haue ſpokñ
yuel: bere pou witnesſing of
yuel/ but if y ſeide wel: why
smytiſt pou me: & annas ſente
hi bouñdñ to caifas pe biſchop
& ſymoñ petre stood & warmp
de hi & pei seidẽ to hi/ whep artow
pou art his disciple: he denyede
& seide/ y am not/ oon of pe bi
chopis seruañtis cosyn of hy
whoos eere petre kit of: ſeide
ſam y pee not ì pe zerd wip hym:
& petre eftsoone denyede/ and
anoon pe cok crew/ pañe pei
leddẽ ihũ to caifas ì to pe mo
ot halle & it was eerly/ & pei
entridẽ not ì to pe moot halle:
pat pei ſchuldẽ not be defoulid·
but pat pei ſchuldẽ ete pask/
þfor pilat wente out wip out

for to hem: And seide/ what ac-
cusing bringe ze ayens pis man:
per answeride: & seiden to hi/ if
pis were not a mysdoere: we
hadden not taki hi to pee/ pan
ne pilat seip to he/ take ze hi: &
deme ze hi after zoure lawe/ &
iewis seide to hi/ it is not leful
ful to us: to sle ouy man/ pt pe
word of ihu schulde be fulfillid
which he seide: signifiynge wi
what deep he schulde die/ pfor
eftsoone pilat entride in to
pe moot halle: & clepide ihu &
seide to hi/ art pou king of ie
wis: ihc answeride & seide to
hi/ seist pou pis ping of pi silf:
ep opere han seid to pee of me:
pilat answeride/ whep y am a
ie: pilat pi folc & bischopis bi-
ken pee to me/ what hast pou
don: ihc answeride/ my kyng
dom is not of pis world/ if my
kyngdom were of pis world:
my mynistris schulde stryue·
pat y schulde not be taki to pe
iewis/ but now my kyndom
is not heer/ & so pilat seide to
hi/ pan pou art a kyng/ ihc
answeride/ pou seist: pat y am
kyng/ to pis ping y am bom·
& to pis y am comm i to pe wo
rld: to bere witnessing to tr-
euye/ ech pat is of treuye he
rip my vois/ pilat seip to hym
what is treuye: And whan
he hadde seid pis ping: eft he
went out to pe iewis· & seide
to hem/ y fynde no cause i hi/
but it is a custom to zou: pt y
delyue oon to zou i pask/ pfor
wole ze pat y delyue to zou pe
kyng of iewis: Alle crieden
eftsoone & seide/ not pis: but
barabas/ & barabas was a pef
Perfor pilat took pane ihu:
And scourgide hi/ & kny3t
is writhen a coroune of por
nes: & setten on his heed/
And clide about hi a clop of
purpur· & came to hi & seide/
heil king of iewis/ & pei 3ame
to hi buffetis/ eftsoone pilat
went out: & seide to he: lo y bri
nge hi out to zou: pat ze knowe
pat y fynde no cause i hi/ And so
ihc went out berynge a coro
ne of pornes: & a clop of purpur/
& he seip to he/ lo pe man/ but whi
anne pe bischopis & mynistris
hadden seyn hi: pei crieden &
seiden/ crucifie· crucifie hym/
pilat seip to he/ take ze hi: &
crucifie ze/ for y fynde no cause
i hi/ pe iewis answeriden to
hi/ we han a lawe· & bi pe lawe
he oujt to die: for he made hi
self sone/ pfor whanne pilat
hadde herd pis word: he dred
de pe more/ & he went i to pe

moot halle eft̄ coue: And ſeide
to ih̄u of whēn̄ art pou: but
ih̄c zaf non anſwere to hī pil
at ſeip to hī ſpekiſt pou not to
me: wooſt pou not pat p hāue
power to crucifie pee: & p hāue
power to delyūe pee: ih̄c anſ
werde) pou ſchuldiſt not ha
ue ony power azens me: but
it were zouñ to pee from abo
ue) p̄for he pat bitook me to pe:
hap pe more ſyne) fro pat tyme
pilat ſouzte to delyūe hī) but
pe iewis crieden & ſeidē if p̄
delyneriſt pis: pou art not pe
ēperours freend for ech man
pat makip hī silf kyng: azen
ſeip pe emperour) & pilat whā
ne he hadde herd pese wordis:
ledde ih̄u forp· & sat for domeſ
mā in a place pat is ſeide lico
thatos· but in ebrew golgatha)
& it was pan̄ene· as it were
pe ſiſte onr) & he ſeip to pe iew
is) lo zoure kyng) but pei crie
de & ſeiden) take away take a
wey: crucifie hī) pilat ſeip to
hē) ſchal y crucifie zoure kyng:
pe biſchopis anſwerideē) we
han no kyng: but pe emperō
& pānne pilat bitook hī to hem:
pat he ſchulde be crucified) and
pei tokē ih̄u & ledden hī out) &
he bare to hī ſilf across: & we
te out in to a place pt is ſeid of
calnarie· in ebrew golgatha)
where pei crucifieden hī· & ope
tweyne wip hī· oon on pis ſide·
& oon on pat ſide· & ih̄c in pe mid
dil & pilat wroot a title· & ſet
te on pe croſ) & it was writtē)
ih̄c of nazareth kyng of iewis)
p̄for many of pe iewis red
den pis title) for pe place whe
re ih̄u was crucified· was nyz
pe cite) & it was writtē· in ebr
ew· greke & latyn) p̄for pe biſch
opis of pe iewis ſeiden to pil
at) uple pou write kyng of ie
wis: but for he ſeide y am ky
ng of iewis) pilat anſwerī
de pat pat p hāue writtē: p
hāue writtē) perfor pe kuyzt
is whānne pei hadden crucī
fied hī: token his clopis· &
maden foure partis· to ech
kuyzt apart & a coot) & pe coo
te was wip outen ſeem· And
womē al aboute) p̄for pei ſeidē
to gidē) kitte we not it: but
caſte we lot whos it is) pat
pe ſcripture be fulfillid ſeip
inge pei partiden my clopis
to hē: & on my clop pei caſten
lott) & pe kuyzt didē pese pin
gis) but biſidis pe croſ of ih̄u
ſtodē his modir· & pe ſiſt of
his modir· marie cleofe· and
marie magdeleyne) p̄for
whānne ih̄u hadde ſeyn his

pt

90

modir· And ye disciple knowyng
whom he loued: he seiȝ to his mo
dir/ woman: lo yi sone/ After wa
rd he seiȝ to ye disciple/ lo yi mo
dir/ & fro yat our· ye disciple to
ok hir i to his modir ¶ Afterwa
rd ihc wityngе yat now alle
yngis ben endid: yat ye scrip
ture were fulfillid he seiȝ/ y
irste/ & a vessel was sett ful of
vynegre· & yei leidē in yspe a
bointe ye spongе full of vyne
gre· & puttеn to his mouȝ/ for
whanne ihc hadde takē ye vyne
gre: he seide/ it is endid/ & whā
ne his heed was bowid doñ: he
ȝaf up ye goost/ for for it was
ye pask euе· yat ye bodies sh
uldē not abide on ye croſſ i ye
sabat· for yat was a greet sab
at day: ye iewis priedē pilat·
yat ye iyis of hē shuldē be
brokē· & yei takē away/ for wi
ȝtis camē & yei brakеn ye yes
of ye firste & of ye tȳe yt was
crucified wiȝ hi/ but whanne
yei weren comē to ihū as yei
sayn hi deed nāue: yei brakē
not his yes/ but oon of ye
knyȝtis: openyde his side wiȝ
a spere/ & anoon blood & wat
wentē out/ & he yat say· bar
witnessing: & his witnessyng
is trewe/ & he woot yat he se
iȝ trewe yingis· yat ȝe bilene/

And yese yingis weren don: yt
ye scripture shulde be fillid/ ye
shulē not breke aboon of hi
& eftsoone anoy scripture seiȝ·
yei shulē se i to whom yei pigtē
porow/ but aft yese yingis to
ioseph of arimathi: prede pilat·
yat he shulde take away ye
body of ihū/ for yat he was a
disciple of ihū: but pryy for dre
de of ye iewis/ & pilat sufferide
& so he cam & took away ye bo
dy of ihū/ & nichodeme cam
also yat hadde come to hi firste
by nyȝt· & broute a meddlyng
of myrre & aloes· as it were
an hundrid poūd/ & yei token ye
body of ihū: & boūden it i lynē
clopis wiȝ swete smellinge oyne
mētis· as it is custom to iewis
is forto burye/ & i ye place whe
re he was crucified: was a gerd/
& in ye gerd a newe grāue i wh
ich nit no mā was leid/ for for
yei puttē ihū for ye vigile of
iewis feeste: for ye sepulcre was
nid in o day of ¶ Upi
ye wonke· marye m
Audelayne cam eerly
to ye grāue whānе it was ȝit
derk/ & she say ye stoon moued
away fro ye grāue/ for she
ran & cam to symoūt petre &
to anoy disciple· whom ihc lone
de: & seiȝ to hem/ yei han takē

pe lord fro pe grane: And we wi
ten not where per han leide hi/
þfore petre went out & pilke
ope disciple: & per cam̃e to pe gr
ane/ & per tweyne rinnen to gr
de: & pilke op disciple ran biforе
petre· & cam fürste to pe grane/
& whane he stoupide· he say pe
shetis liynge: neveles he en
tride not/ þfor sy mon̄ petre
cam suynge hi· & he entride i to
pe grane/ & he sie pe shеetis
leid: & pe sudarie pat was on
his heed not leid with pe shee
tis: but bi it silf wlappid i to
o place/ þfor pane pilke discip
le pat cam first to pe grane
entride: & say & bileuyde/ for
per knewe not zit pe scripture:
pat it bihofte hi to rise azen fro
deep/ þfor pe disciplis weenten
eftsoone to hem silf/ but ma
rie stood at pe grane wt out
forp weyynge/ & pe while she
wepte: she bowide hir & bihee
lde forp i to pe grane/ & she say
tweyn angelis sittynge in whyte:
oon at pe heed· & oon at pe feet·
where pe body of ihu was leid/
& pei seien to hir/ wom̃a what
wepist pou/ she seide to hem/
for per han take away my lord:
& y woot not where per han le
id hi/ whane she hadde seid
pese pingis: she turnede bac
ward· and say ihu stondynge·
& wiste not pat it was ihu/ ihc
seip to hir/ wom̃ what wepist
pou: whom sekist: she gessy
nge pat he was a gardene· seip
to hi/ sire· if pou hast takn̄ him
up: seie to me where pou hast
leid hi· & y shal take hi away/
ihr seip to hir/ marie she tur
nede· & seip to hi/ rabony· pat
is to seie maist/ ihc seip to hir/
imple pou touche me/ for y hane
not zit stized to my fadir but
go to my bripen· & seie to he y
stye to my fadir· & to zoure fadir:
to my god & to zoure god marie
maudeleyn cam telynge to pe
disciplis· pat y say pe lord: and
pese pingis he seide to me/ þfor
whane it was eue i pat day oon
of pe sabatis· & pe zatis weren
shit where pe disciplis were ga
dered for drede of pe iewis: ihc
cam & stood in pe mydil of pe dis
ciplis & he seip to hem/ pees to
zou & whane he hadde seid pis:
he shewide to hem hondis and
side/ þfor pe disciplis ioyeden:
for pe lord was seyn/ And he se
ip to hem eft/ pees to zou/ as pe
fadir sente me: y sende zou/ wh
anne he hadde seid pis: he bleiwe
on hem & seide/ take ze pe hooly
goost/ whos synnes ze forzeuen:
pei ben forzouen to hem/ & whos

ȝe wiȝ holden: po ben wiȝholdñ/
but thomas oon of pe twelue·
pat is seid didymꝰ: was not wiȝ
ihesu whanne ihc cam/ per-fore pe
oþ̄ disciplis seiden/ we han seyn
pe lord/ & he seide to hem/ but y
se in his hondis pe stickyng of
pe naylis· & putte myn fyngur
in to pe places of pe nailes· and
putte myn hond in to his side:
y shal not bileue/ And aft̄
eiȝte daies· eftsoone his disci
plis were wiȝ ynne: & thomas
wiȝ hē/ ihc cam while pe ȝatis
were shit: & stood in pe myddil
& seide/ pees to ȝou/ afterward
he seyd to thomas/ putte pin fin
er pi fyngr̄· & se myn hondis:
& putte hidur pi hond· & put
te in to myn side/ & nyle pu be vnbi
leuefil: but feithful/ thomas
answeride: & seide to hī/ myn lo
rd & myn god/ ihc seiþ to hī/ tho
mas· for pou hast seyn me: pu
bileuedist/ blessid bē pei þat
seyn not: & han bileuyd/ & ihc
dide many oþ̄e signes in pe siȝt
of his disciplis: which bē not
writtī in pis book/ but pese bē
writtī: þt ȝe bilene þt ihc is crist
pe sone of god/ and þt ȝe bilen
ynge: haue lif̄ in his name

Capitulum xxi

Afterward ihc eftsoone
shewide hī to his dis
ciplis: at pe see of ty

berias/ And he shewide hym
þ̄/ pere were to gidre symōn
petre & thomas· þat is seid
didimꝰ· & nathanael þt was
of pe cane of galilee· & pe
sonꝰ of zebedee· & tweyne
oþ̄e of his disciplis symōn
petre seiþ to hē/ y go to fisshe
pei seien to hī & he comē wiȝ
pee & pei wenten out· & wen
ten in to a boot: & in þat nyȝt
pei token no þing/ but whanne
pe morewe was comī: ihc
stood in pe brynke nepeles pe
disciplis knewen not: þat it
was ihc/ þerfor ihc seiþ to hem/
childrē whepēr ȝe han ony sou
ping ping/ pei answeriden
to hī/ nay/ he seide to hē/ mit
te ȝe pe nett in to pe rizthalf of
pe schip: & ȝe shulen finde
& pei puttiden pe nett: & panne
pe mysten not drawe it/ for
multitude of fischis/ therfor
pilke disciple whom ihū louede:
seide to petre/ it is pe lord/ sy
mōn petre whanne he hadde
herd þat it is pe lord: girte
hī wiȝ a coote for he was na
kid· & went in to pe see/ but
pe oþ̄e disciples camen bi boot/
for pei weren not fer fro pe
lond· but as a two hundrid cu
bitis: drawynge pe net of
fischis/ & as pei camen doun in

to pe lond: pei ſayn coolis lip
nge· & a fiſch leid oon· & breed/
iſt ſeiþ to hem/ bringe ze of pe
fiſchis: whiche ze haū takū now/
ſymoū petre weute up: & drouȝ
pe net ū to pe loud ful of gre
te fiſchis an hūdrid fyfti and
pre/ & whāne pei were ſo ma
nye: pe net was not brokū/
iſt ſeiþ to hē/ come ze· ete ze/ &
no man of hē pat ſatten at pe
mete durſte aſke hī· who art
pou: wityngе pat it is pe lord/
& iſc cam & took breed & zaf
to hē: & fiſche alſo/ now pis pr
idde tyme· iſc was ſchewid to
hise diſcipls: whāne he hadde
risū azen fro dep/ & whāne pe
i hadde etū: iſc ſeiþ to ſymoūt
petre/ ſymoūt of ioou loueſt þ̄u
me more þāne peſe: he ſeiþ to
hī ze lord· pou woſt pat y loue
pee/ iſc ſeiþ to hī/ fede pou my
lambren/ eft he ſeiþ to hī/ ſym
oūt of ioou loueſt pou me: he
ſeiþ to hī/ ze lord· pou woost þ̄t
y loue pee/ he ſeiþ to hī/ fede þ̄u
my lambren/ he ſeiþ to hī pe pr
idde tyme/ ſymoūt of ioou lo
ueſt pou me: petre was heuy·
for he ſeiþ to hī pe pridde tyme
loueſt pou me· & he ſeiþ to hym/
lord pou knowest alle þingis:
pou woſt pat y loue pee/ iſc
ſeiþ to hī/ fede my ſchepe ¶ tr

euly treuly y ſeie to pee· whāne
pou were zongе pou girdidiſt
pee: & wandridiſt whidir pou wold
diſt/ but whāne pou ſchalt wexe
eldere: pou ſchalt holde forp þ̄i
hondis· & an oþ̄ ſchal girde pee/
& ſchal lede pee whidir pou wolt
not/ he ſeide þis þing: ſignifiyng
bi what deep he ſchulde glo
rifie god ¶ and whāne he hadde
ſeid pese þingis: he ſeiþ to hym/
ſue pou me/ petre turnede and
ſay pilke diſciple ſuyng· who
iſc louede· which alſo reſtide i
pe ſoper on his breſt: & he ſeide
to hī/ lord who is it pat ſchal bi
traye pee: þ̄for whāne petre
hadde ſeyn þis: he ſeiþ to ihū/
lord but what þis: iſc ſeiþ to
hī/ ſo y wole pat he dwelle til þ̄t
y come/ what to pe: ſue þ̄u me/
þ̄for þis word went out amo
ng pe breþren· pat pilke diſciple
diep not/ & iſc ſeide not to hī·
pat he diep not: but ſo þ̄ wole
pat he dwelle til y come· what
to pee/ þis is pilke diſciple pat
beriþ witneſſing of pese þ̄y
ngis: & wroot hē/ & we witē
pat his witneſſing is trewe/
& þe bē alſo manye oþe þingis
pat iſc dide/ whiche if pei bē
writū bi eche bi hī ſilf: y deme
þ̄t pe world hī ſilf ſchal not
take þo bookis pat ben to be
writtū

Here endip pe gospel of ío
ou Here bigynnep prolo
ge on pe firste pistle of po
yl to romayns

Romayns ben in pe cíi
trey of ytalie / per we
ren dilleyned firſt
of falſe ꝓfetis · pat is falſe te
cheris : & vndir pe name of
oure lord ihū crist · per were
brouzt i to pe laiwe & ꝓfetis
pat is · i to ceremonyes eyer
fleischly kepyng of moyses
laiwe · & of ꝓfetis accordinge
wip po ceremonyes : which
vsing is contrarie now to pe
treupe & fredom of cristis gosp
el / poul azen clepip pes roma
yns to very feip & treupe of
pe gospel : & writip hem to hē
pis pistle firo corynthe //

Pis seint ieroni in his pro
loge on pe pistle to romayns :-

C·p·

Poul pe seruaūt of
ihū crist : clepid an
apostle departid
in to pe gospel of
god : which he hadde bihote
to fore bi his profetis · i holy
scripturis of his sone which
is maad to hi of pe seed of da
uip : bi pe fleisch / & he was bi
fore ordeyned pe sone of god
i vertu : bi pe spirit of halow
ing · of pe azenrisyng of deed

men of ihū crist oure lord bi
whō we haue resseyued grace
& pe office of apostle : to obeie
to pe feip i alle folkis for his
name / among whiche ze ben
also clepid of ihū crist / to alle pat
ben at rome · derlyngis of god
& clepid holy : grace to zou & pe
es of god oure fadir · & of pe
lord ihū crist First y do pank
yngis to my god · bi ihū crist
for alle zou : for zoure feip is
schewid in al pe world / for god
is a witnesse to me · to whom y
serue in my spirit · in pe gospel
of his sone : pat without ceas
sing y make mynde of zou
euere in my ꝓyeris : & biseche if
in ony maner sum tyme y haue
aspedi weie in pe wille of god
to come to zou / for y desire to
se zou : to parten sum what of
spiritual grace pat ze be con
fermed · pat is : to be comfort
id to gidere in zou · bi feip pat
is boþe zoure & myn to gidre /
& biwpen y wyle pat ze vnkno
wen : pat ofte y purpolide
to come to zou / & y am lett to
pis tyme : pat y haue sum fruyt
in zou · as in oþre folkis / to gre
kis & to barberyns to wise
men & to vnwise men y am det
tour : so pat pat is in me is
redy to ꝓche pe gospel also

to 3ou þat ben at rome/ ffor þ
schame not þe gospel/ for it is
þe vertu of god ī to helpe to ech
mā þat bileueþ: to þe iew first·
& to þe greke/ for þe rigtwisnes
se of god is schewid ī it· of feiþ
ī to feiþ: as it is writtū/ for a
iust mā lyueþ of feiþ/ for þe
wrappe of god is schewid fro
heuē· on al vnpite· & wickidn
esse of þo mē: þat wiþ holden
þe treuþe of god ī vnrigtwisn
esse/ for þat þing of god þt is
knowlī: is schewid to hē/ for
god hap schewid to hē/ for þe
vnsyhible þingis of hī: þat
bē vndurstōdīn ben biholdeu
of þe creature of þe world bi
þo þingis þat bē maad/ zhe &
þe eūe lastinge vtu of hym &
þe godhed: so þat þei mowe
not bē excusid/ for whānne þei
hadde knowe god: þei glorifi
eden hī not as god· neiþer diden
þankyngis/ but þei vanyschi
den ī her þouztis: & þe vnwise
herte of hē was derkid/ for
þei seiynge þt hē self were
wise: þei were maad foolis/
& þei chaūgidē þe glorie of
god vncorrupt̄ible: ī to þe lic
nesse of an ymage of a dee
dly mā· & of briddis· & of fou
re footid beestis· & of serpen
tis/ for which þing· god bitook
hem in to þe desiris of her her
te· ī to vnclēnesse: þat þei þury
schē wiþ wrongis her bodies
ī hē self/ þe which changeden
þe treuþe of god ī to leesing: &
herieden & seruiden creature·
rāþer þan to þe creatour· þt is
blessid ī to worldis of worldis
amē/ for god bitook hē in to
passiōns of schenschipe/ for þe
wymmen of hē changiden þe kyn
dly vss· ī to þat vss þat is aze
ns kynde/ also þe mē forsoken
þe kyndly vss of wōman: and
brenedē ī her desiris to gidere/
& mē ī to mē wrouztē filþehed:
& resseyuedē ī to hē self þe me
ede þt bihofte of her errō/ &
as þei þuedē þat þei hadden n
ot god ī knowing: god bitook
hē ī to a reprouable wit þt þei
do þo þingis þat ben not cone
nable/ þat þei bē fulfillid wiþ
al wickidnesse· malice· fayn
cacōn· coueitise· weiwardnesse·
ful of ēuye· manslepingis· stri
fe· gyle· yuel wille· þingy bacbi
teris· detractouris· hateful
to god· debateris· proude and
hey3 of mesure· fynderis of
yuele þingis/ not obeischyngē
to fadir & modir· vnwyse· vn
nayly wiþ outē lone· wiþ on
ten boond of pees· wiþ outē
mercy/ þe which whānne þei had

To pe Romayns.

Don knowe pe rizt wisnesse of
god: vndirstonde not / pat pei
pat don sicke pingis: be war pi
pe dey / not onely pei pat don
po pingis: but also pei pat
consenten to pe doeris

Wherfore pou art vnex
cusable · ech man pat de
mest / for what ping
pou demest anope man: pi conde
mnest pi silf / for pou doist pe
same pingis: Whiche pou dem
est / & we witen · pat pe dom of
god is aft' treupe azeus hem
pat doen sicke pingis / but gef
sist pou man · pat demest hem
pat doen sicke pingis & pou do
ist po pingis: pat pou schalt
escape pe dom of god: / wher
dispisist pou pe richessis of his
goodnesse: & pe pacience & pe
long abiding: / knowest pou not
pat pe benygnyte of god: leedip
pee to forepenking: / but aftir
pin hardnesse & vnrepentaunt
herte: pou tresorest to pee · wr
aype i pe day of wrape & of
schewing of pe rizteful doom
of god · pat schal zelde to ech
man aftir his werkis / sopely
to hem pat ben bi pacience of
good werk: glorie & honour /
vncorrupcioun to hem pat seken
euerlastinge lif / but to hem
pat ben of stryf & pat assen
ten not to treupe · but bileue
to wickidnesse: wrape & ire
nacioun · tribulacioun & angwisch
i to ech soule of man pat worchep
yuel · to pe iew first & to pe gre
ke / but glorie & honoure & pe
es to ech man pat worchep go
od ping: to pe iew first & to
pe greke / for accepcioun of per
sones: is not a-mentis god / for
who euer han synned with out
pe lawe: schal e perische with
oute pe lawe / & who euer han
synned i pe lawe: pei schal be
demed bi pe lawe / for pe here
ris of lawe · ben not iust a
nentis god: but pe doeris of
pe lawe schal be maad iust
for whan heyere men pat han
not lawe · don kyndly po py
ngis pat ben of pe lawe: pei
not hauyng e sicke man lawe ·
ben lawe to hem silf · pat schu
wen pe werk of pe lawe · wri
tun i her hertis for pe conscience
of hem zeldip to hem a-wentuelly
bitwixe hem silf of pouztis · pat
ben a-cusinge or defendynge ·
i pe day whanne god schal deme
pe priuy pingis of men aft' my
gospel bi ihū crist / but if pou
art named a Iew · & restist in
pe lawe · & hast glorie i god: &
hast knowe his wille / & pou
lernid bi pe lawe: preest pe

more profitable pingis / And
tristist pi silf to be a ledere of
blynde men· pe liȝt of hem pat
ben i derknessis· A techere of
vnwise me· A maist' of ȝonge
childrē: pat hast pe fourme of
kunpng & of treupe i pe lawe /
what pēne techest A noper:
& techist not pi silf / pou pat
precchest pat me shal not stele:
stelist / pou pat techist pat me
shal do no lecherie: doist lech
erie / pou pat wlatist maumet
is: doist sacrilegie / pou pat
hast glorie i pe lawe: vnwors
thepist god bi brekinge of pe
lawe / ffor pe name of god:
is blasfemyd bi3ou / Amoȝ
hepen men· as it is writū /
for circūcisiōn profitip if pou
kepe pe lawe / but if pou be
a trespassour a3ey pe lawe:
pi circūcisiōn is maad vncir
cumcisiōn / for if vncir kepe pe riȝtw
isnessis of pe lawe: whepir
his vncir shal not be arett
id i to circūcisiōn: & pe vn
cir of kynde pat fulfillep
pe lawe: shal deme pee· pt
bi lettre & circūcisiōn art
trespassour a3ey pe lawe /
for he pat is i opene is not
a iew· neip it is circūcisiōn
pat is openly i pe flesh:
but he pat is a iew in hid /

And pe circūcisiōn of herte·
i spirit· not bi lettre: whos
preising is not of mē but of
god / What pāne is god
more to a iew: or
what profit of circūcā
sion / mpche· bi al wise / first
for pe speking of god· we
ren bitakū to hē / & what if
sūme of hē bileuyde not:
whepir pe vnbileue of hē hap
avoidid pe feip of god: god
forbede / for god is sop fast:
but euery man a liere· as it is
writtū / pat pou be mistiied
i pi wordis: & ouercome whā
ne pou art demed / but if
oure wickidnesse comende
pe rigtwisnesse of god: what
shulē we seie: whepir god is
wickid: pat bringip i wrap
pe: aft' mā y seie / god forbe
de / ellis hou shal god deme
pis world: for if pe trupe
of god hap avoūded in my
leesing· i to pe glorie of hi:
what zit am y demed as a
synner: & not as we ben blas
emyd· & as sūme seien pt
we seyen· do we yuel png
is· pat good pingis come·
whos dāpnacion is ri3t
what pāne: passe we hem:
nay / for we han shewid bi
skile· pat alle bope iewis &

greku ben vndur synne: As it
is writtē for ꝑ is no mā iust:
ꝑ is no mā vndurstoudinge
nei͛ seking god/ alle bowi
den aweyꝰ to gidey̆ yei bē mā
ad vnprofitable: ꝑ is noon
pat doip good ping· ꝑ is noo͡
til oon/ pe vote of hē is an o
pyn sepulcre/ with ꝑ. yer tūg
is yei didē grilefully/ pe vnyu
of swerīg is vndur yer lip
pis/ pe mouy of whiche is
ful of cursyng & bittuelle:
pe feet of hē bē swifte to sly
ede blood sorowe & cursidue
lle bē in pe weynes of hem:
& yei knewen not pe weie of
pees· pe drede of god is not
bifor hey yzen & we writen· ꝑt
what euer pingis pe lawe spe
kip· it spekip to hē pat ben ī
pe lawe/ pat ech mouy be sto
pid· & ech world be maad gi
lt to god: for of pe werkis
of pe lawe ech fleischy schal n
ot be iustified bifore hī/ for bi
pe lawe pere is knowyng of
synne/ but now wipoutē pe la
we· pe rizthwisnesse of god is
schewid· pat is witnessid of
pe lawe & pe profetis/ and pe
rizthwisnesse of god is bi pe
feip of ihū cr̄st: ī to alle men
& on alle mē pat bileuē ī to
hī/ for ꝑ is no departyng· for
alle men synneden: and hamne
de to pe glorie of god· & bē iusti
fied freely bi his grace: bi pe a
zenbiyng pat is ī cr̄st ihū whō
god ordeynede forzyue bi feip
ī his blood: to pe schewyng
of his rizthwisnesse· for remis
sioū of bifore gonge synn̄/ in pe
bering up of god· to pe schew
ing of his rizthwisnesse in pis
tyme: pat he be iust & iustifiy
nge hī pat is of pe feip of ihū
crist· where is ꝓ̄ue is pi glor
iynge: it is excludid/ bi what
lawe: of pe dedis doyng: nay
but bi pe lawe of feip/ wip c
for we demē a mā to be iustifi
ed bi pe feip: wip outē werkis
of pe lawe/ whei͛ of iewis· is
god onely: whei͛ he is not
also of heben mē/ zhis and of
heben mē/ for oon god is· ꝑt
iustifiey circūcisioū bi feip:
& prucie bi feip/ distruye we
perfore pe lawe bi pe feip:
god forbede: but we stable
schen pe lawe

What pāue schulē we
seie: pat abraham
oure fadir aft̄ pe
fleischi foond: for if abrahā
be iustified of werkis of pe
lawe: he hap glorie· but not
anentis god/ for what seip pe
scripture: abraham bileuede

C. iiij·

to god: And it was Arettid to
hi to riztwisnesse / & to hi pat
worchip · meede is not Arettid
bi grace: but bi dette sopely
to hi pat worchip not · but bile
uip i to hi pat mistrieb Alwick
id mā · his feip is Arettid to riz
twisnesse Aft' pe purpos of
goddis grace / as dauip seip
pe blisfulnesse of a mā whid
god Acceptip: he ziuep to hi rig
twisnesse wip outē werkis
of pe lawe / blessid ben pei
whos wickidnesses bē forzo
uī: & whos sinnis ben hid / blec
sid is pat mā: to whō god Aret
tide not sinne / pānne whep dide
lip pis blisfulnesse onely in
circūcisioū: or also ī ꝓpucie:
for we seien pat pe feip was
Arettid to abrahūm to riztwis
nesse / how pānne was it Aret
tid: ī circūsticioū: but ī ꝓpu
cie & he took a signe of circū
cisioū · as tokenyng of riztwis
nesse of pe feip which is ī
ꝓpucie: pat he be fadir of alle
mē bileuynge bi ꝓpucie / pat it
be Arettid also to hē to riztwi
snesse: & pat he be fadir of
pe circūcisioū / not onely to
hē pat bē of circūcisioū: but
also to hē pat siē pe steppis ·
of pe feip which feip is ī ꝓpu
cie of oure fadir abrahām /

for not bi pe lawe · is bihees to
abrahūm or to his seed · pat he
shulde be eir of pe world: but
bi pe riztwisnesse of feip / for
if pei pat ben of pe lawe · ben
eiris: feip is distried · bihees
is don awey / for pe lawe wor
chip wrappe / for whep is no
lawe per is no trespas: nep
is trespassing / for riztfulnes
se is of pe feip: pat bi grace
bihees be stable to echе seed /
not to pat seed onely pat is of
pe lawe: but to pat pt is of
pe feip of abrahām / which is
fadir of us alle: as it is wri
tī / for I haue set pee fadir of
many folkis bifor god: to whō
pou hast bileuyd / which god
quykenep deed mē: & clepip po
pingis pat ben not as pei pat
ben / which abrahām azeinis ho
pe · bileuede ī to hope: pat he
shulde be maad fadir of ma
ny folkis · as it was seid to
hi / pus shal pi seed be · as pe
sterris of heuene: & as pe gra
uel pat is ī pe brynke of pe see
for he was not maad vnstidfast
ī pe bileue · nep he biheelde his
body pānne upz deed · whan he
was almost of an hūdrid zeer ·
ne pe wombe of sare upz deed /
also ī pe bihees of god · he dou
tide not wip vntrist: but he

& ī ꝓpucie. not ī circūcisioū

was conforted in bileue · ȝuyng glorie to god / writing most fully. pat what euer pingis god hap bihizt: he is myzti also to do / þfore it was aretted to hi to riztwisnesse / it is not writ̄ onely for hi · pat it was aret tid to hi to riztfulnesse: but also for us to whiche it shal be aretted · pat bileuē i hi pt reisid oure lord ihū cst fro dep / which was bitakū for ou re synnes: and roos azen for oure iustifying

Therfor we iustified of feip: hanne we pees at god bi oure lord ihū crist / bi whō we han nyz goyng to · bi fe ip i to pis grace: i which we stondē & han glorie in pe hope of pe glorie of goddis ch ildrē / & not pis onely: but also we glorien i tribulacions / with ynge · pat tribulacioñ worchip pacience & pacience proofyng · & pfyuyng hope / & hope confoūdip not for pe charite of god is spred abrood i oure hertis bi pe hooly goost pat is zoun to us / & while pat we were seke aft pe tyme: what dyed crist for wicked mē / ffor vnnepis dieþ oiþ mā for pe iust man / & zit for a good mā: peraven ture sūma dar die: / but god

commendip his charite in us / for if whanne we were zit synneris: aft pe tyme cst was deed for us / þanne myche more now we iustified i his blood shulē be sauf fro wrappe bi hi / for if whanne we were enemyes: we ben reconsiled to god bi pe dep of his sone / myche more were reconsiled: shulē be sauf in pe lijf of hi / & not onely pis: but also we glorien i god · bi oure lord ihū cst: bi whō we han resseyued now reconsilyng / pfor as bi o mā · synne entride i to pis world · & bi synne dep / & so dep passide fory i to alle mē: i which mā alle mē synne den / ffor til to pe lawe: synne was i pe world but synne was not rettid whanne lawe was not / but dep regnyde fr om adam til to moyses: also i to hem pat synneden not · in lichnesse of pe trespassing of adam · pe which is lichnesse of crist to comynge / but not as gift: so pe zifte / for if porow pe gilt of oon: manyp ben deed · myche more pe grace of god & pe zifte i pe grace of o man ihū cst hap it abounded i to ma nyp mē / & not as bi o synne: so bi pe zifte / for pe dom of oon i to condēpnacioñ: but grace of

many gyftis in to iustificacion/
ffor if i pe gilt of oon deep regu
ede pozoiz oon : mychemoze
men pat takyng plentee of
grace & of ye yiftyng of rigt
wisnesse schulē we regne in liif
by oon ihū crist/ pfore as bi pe gilt
of oon i to alle mē i to condepna
cion: so bi pe rigtwisnesse of
oon i to alle mē i to iustifiyng
of liif/ for as bi obedience of
oon mā many ben made syn
neris: so bi pe obedience of oon
many schulē be iust & pe lawe
entrede: pat gilt schulde be plē
teuouse/ but wher gilt was
plēteuouse: grace was moze
pleteuouse/ pat as syne reg
nyde i to deep: so grace regne
bi rigtwisnesse in to euerlastīge
liif bi ihū crist oure lord

Wherfor what schulen
we seie: schulen we
dwelle i syne: pt gra
ce be pleteuouse: god forbe
de/ for how schulē we pat ben
deed to syne: lyue zit pyne:
wher bi wi þeu ze knowē not·
pat wlsiche euc we ben bapti
sid i crist ihū: we ben baptisid
i his dep/ for we ben to gidere
biried wip hi bi baptym in to
deep pat as crist aros fro
deep bi pe glorie of pe fadir:
so walke we in a newnesse
of liif/ for if we plauntid to gi
dere ben made to pe liknesse
of his deep: also we schulē be
of pe liknesse of his risyng
ayen/ wityuge pis pūig pat
oure olde man is crucified to
gidere/ pat pe body of synne
be distriyed: pat we serue no
more to synne/ for he pat is de
ed: is iustified fro synne/ & if
we ben deed wip crist: we bile
ue pat also we schulē lyuen
to gidere wip hi/ witynge· for
crist risyng ayen fro deep: no
ye diep not· deep schal no more
haue lordschip on hi/ for pat he
was deed to synne: he was deed
ones/ but pat he lyuep: he ly
uep to god/ so ze deme zou silf
to be deed to synne: but lyuynge
to god i ihū crist oure lord

Per
for regne not synne i youre ded
ly body: pat ze obeischie to his
couetingis/ neper zyue ze youre
membris· armuris of wicked
nesse to synne: but zyue ze zou
silf to god· as pei pat lyuen
of deed mē· & youre membris
armuris of rigtwisnesse to
god/ for synne schal not haue
lordschipe on zou/ ffor ze ben
not vndir pe lawe: but vn
dir grace/ what perfor: sch
ulē we do synne· for we ben
not vndir pe lawe: but vn

our grace: god forbede/ wyten
ze not pat to whō ze ȝiue ȝon ser
uaūtis to obeye to: bē seruaū
tis of pat pinge to which ze shā
obeishid: eyē of synne to dep:
eyē of obedience to rightwisnes
se/ but y panke god pt ze wer
en seruaūtis of synne: but ze
shan obeishid of herte· ī to pt
fourme of teching· ī which ze
ben betakū & ze delyuerid fro
synne: ben maad seruaūtis of
rightwilnesse/ y seie pt pinge pt
is of mā· for pe vnstablenesse
of zoure fleish/ but as ze shan
ȝouū ȝoure mēbris to seruse to
vnclēnesse & to wickidnesse ī
to wickidnesse: so now ȝiue ze
ȝour mēbris to seruse to rightw
isnesse ī to hoolynesse for whā
ne ze werē fre of rightfulnesse
pfor what fruyt hadde ze pan
ne ī po pingis· ī whiche ze shā
mē now: for pe ende of hem
is dep/ but now ze delyuered fro
synne· & maad seruaūtis to god.
shan ȝoure fruyt ī to hoolynes
se· & pe ende euerlastinge lif
for pe wagis of synne· is dep/
pe grace of god: is euerlastinge
lif ī crist ihū oure lord

ryden wher ze knowē
not: for y speke to mē
pat knowyn pe lawe/
for pe lawe hap lordshup ī mā·

As longe tyme as it lyuep for pt
a wōmā pt is vndur an hosebon
de: is bouchū to pe lawe whyle
pe hosebonde lyuep/ but if per
hosebonde is deed: she is delyū
ed fro pe lawe of pe hosebonde/
pfor she shal be clepid anoutr
esse: if she be wip an opē man·
whyle pe hosebonde lyuep/ but
if her hosebond is deed: she is
delyuered fro lawe of pe hosebo
nde/ pat she be not anoutresse.
if she be wip an op̄ man & so my
brepen ze ben maad deed to pe
lawe bi pe body of crist: pat ze
ben of an op̄· pat rood rzen fro
deep· pat ze bere fruyt to god/
for whanne we were ī fleish·
passiouns of synn̄ pat were bi
pe lawe: wrouzte in oure men
bris· to bere fruyt to dep/ but
now we bē vnboundū fro pe la
we of dep: ī whiche we weren
holdū so pat we seruē ī newn
esse of spirit· & not ī eldnesse
of letture/ what pfore shulē
we seie: pe lawe is synne: god
forbede/ but y knowe not synn
ne: but bi lawe/ for y wiste not
pat couetyinge was synne: but
for pe lawe seide/ pou shalt
not couete/ & porou occasiōn
takū: synne bi pe mandement
hap wrouzt ī me al couetise
for wip outē pe lawe: synne

seruaūtis of synne: ze were

C. lvij

was deed/ And þ I pupde wt̄ out
en þe lawe cūtpue/ but whānne
þe comaūdement was comū: sȳ
ne I pnede azen/ but þ was deed·
& þis comaūdemēt þat was to
liſ: was ſoūdū to me to be to
dep/ for ſȳne poznz occaſioū
taku bi þe comaūdement diſſey
ned me: & bi þat it ſlow me/ þfore
þe lawe is hooly· & þe comaūdem
ent is hooly· & iuſt & good is þa
ne þat þing þat is good: was
deep to me: god forbede/ but ſy
nne þat it ſeme ſynne: þoroz
good þing wrouzte dep to me·
þat me ſȳnne on maner þoroz
þe comaūdemēt/ & we wite þat
þe lawe is ſpiritual/ but I am
fleiſchly ſeld vndur ſȳne/ for þ
vndurſtōde not þat þt I worche
for I do not þe good þing þat I
wole· but I do þe ilke yuel þi
ng þat I wole not: I conſente
to þe lawe þat is good/ but no
w I worche not it now: but þe
ſȳne þat dwellip in me/ but & I
woot: þat in me· þat is in my
fleiſchly dwellip no good/ for wil
le lipp to me: but I fynde not
to þat for-ȝiue me good þing/ ffor
I do not þe ilke good þing þt I
wole: but I do þe ilke yuel þig
þat I wole not & if I do þt yuel
þing þat I wole not: I worche
not it· but þe ſȳne þat dwellip

in me perfore I fynde þe lawe
to me willige to do good þing:
for yuel þing lipp to me/ ffor I
delite to gidere to þe lawe of
god aft̄ þe ȳuere mā/ but I ſe
an oþer lawe in my mēbris· azē
ſtitynge þe lawe of my ſoule· &
makinge me captif in þe lawe of
ſȳne yt is in my membris/ I am
awrecche mā: who ſchal delyuere
me· fro þe body of þis ſynne/
þe grace of god: bi ihū cſt oure
lord/ þfore I my ſilf bi þe ſoule ſer-
ue to þe lawe of god: but bi fle
iſch to þe lawe of ſȳne

Ver-for now no þing of dā
mpnacioū: is to hem þat
ben in cſt ihū: whiche wan
deren not aft̄ þe fleiſch/
ffor þe lawe of þe ſpirit of
liſ in cſt ihū: hap delyuered me
fro þe lawe of ſȳne & of deep/
for þat yt was vnpoſſible to
þe lawe· in what þing it was
ſijk bi fleiſch: god ſente his
ſone· in to þe liknelle of fleiſch
of ſȳne· in to þe lijk & of ſynne
dāpnede ſȳne in fleiſch/ þat þe
iuſtifiyng of þe lawe were
fulfillid in vs þt goen not aftir
þe fleiſch· but aft̄ þe ſpirit/ for
þei þat ben aft̄ þe fleiſch: ſaue
re þo þingis þat ben of þe fle
iſch/ but þei þat ben aftir þe
ſpirit: feelen þo þingis þat

C. viij.

ynte/ & if I do þt þing þt I

ben of ye spirit ffor ye prudeu
ce of fleisshy: is deep but ye pr
udence of spirit: is lijf & pees
for ye wisdom of ye fleisshy: is
enemye to god for it is not su
get to ye lawe of god: for neyr
it may & yei yat ben i fleisshy:
mow not plese to god/ but ze
ben not i fleisshy· but i spirit:
if nepeles ye spirit of god dw
elly i zou/ but if ony m̃ hap
not ye spirit of cst: pis is not
his/ ffor if cst is i zou: ye bod
is deed for synne· but ye spirit
lyuey for iustifiyng & if ye
spirit of hi yat reisede ihū cst
fro deep dwelly i zou: he yat
reisede ihū cst fro deep· shal
quykene also zoure deedly bod
es· for ye spirit of him yat dw
elly in zou

Therfor bripren we
ben dettours: not to ye fleisshy·
yt we lyuen aft ye fleisshy ffor
if ze lyuē aft ye fleisshy: ze shal
sen die but if ze bi ye spirit
sleen ye dedis of ye fleisshy: ze
shulē lyue/ for who euē ben
led bi ye spirit of god: pese bē
ye sones of god/ for ze haue not
take eft soone ye spirit of ser
uage i drede: but ze haue take
ye spirit of adopcioū of sonys in
which we crien· abba· fadir/
& ye ilke spirit· zeldip witnes
sing to oure spirit: yat we

ben ye sones of god if sones:
& eires & eires of god: & eiȝ ew
is to gode wip crist if nepeles
we suffren to glorifie: yat also
we ben glorified to gidere &
y deme· yat ye passiouns of pis
tyme ben not worpi: to ye glor
ie to comynge yat shal be schewd
ing/ for ye abidyng of creature:
abidip ye schewyng of ye sonys
of god/ but ye creature is subget
to vanyte· not willynge: but
for hi yat made it subget i hope
ffor ye ilke creature shal be de
lyuered fro seruage of corrupcioū:
i to liberte of ye glorie of ye
sonys of god/ And we witē· yat
ech creature sorowip & trauel
ip wip peyne til zit & not onely
it: but also we oure self yt
han ye firste fruytis of ye spir
it & we our self· sorewen wip
ine us for ye adopcioū of god
dis sonys· Abidynge ye azenbiy
nge of oure body/ but bi hope
we ben maad saaf/ for hope
yat is seyn: is not hope/ ffor
who hopip yt ping yat he seep:
& if we hopen yat ping yt we
seen not: we abidē bi pacience/
& also ye spirit helpip oure infir
myte/ for what we shulē pre
ie as it bihoueb we witē not·
but ye ilke spirit asky for us
wip sorewyngis· yat mowē not

be tolde out / forthe pat spekip ye
herip̄ · woot what ye spirit de
sirip̄ · for bi god he axip̄ for holy
mē / & we writē pat to mē pt lon
en god : alle pingis worchen to
gidere ī to good · to hē pat after
pur pos bē clepid seyntis / for pi
sike pat he knewe bifore : he bi
fore ordeynede bi grace to be m
ade lyk · to ye ymage of his so
ne · pat he be ye firste bigetī
among many bripen / & pilke
pat he bifore ordeynede to blis
hem he clepide / & whiche he cle
pide : hem he iustifiede : & hem
he glorifiede / what pāne schulē
we seie to pese pingis : if god
for us : who is azen̄ us : / pe
which also sparide not his owñ
ne sone : but for us alle bitook
hi / how also zat he not to us · al
le pingis wip̄ hi : who schal ac
use azen̄ ye chosen mē of mē : /
it is god pat iustifiep : who is
it pat cōdēpnep : it is crist
pat was deed · zhe pe which ro
os azen · pe whiche is on ye rist
half of god · & pe which prey for
us / who pāne schal departe
us fro ye charite of crist : / tri-
lacioñ · or anguisch · or hungir.
or nakidnesse · or perlocucioñ ·
or perel · or swerd : / as it is wr
itē / for we ben slayn aldai
for pee : we ben gessid as schepe

ep of slauzt̄ / but in alle pese
pingis we ouercomē : for i hī pt
lompde us / but y am certeyn · pt
nep̄ dep · nep̄ lif · nep̄ angels ·
nep̄ principatis · nep̄ vertues · nep̄
present pingis · nep̄ pingis to co
mynge nep̄ strengpe · nep̄ heig
pe · nep̄ depnesse · nep̄ noon oper
creature · may departe us fro
pe charite of god · pat is in
crist ihū oure lord

I seie treupe in crist ihū · y lie
not : for my conscience be
rip̄ witnessing to me i pe
hooly goost / for greet heuyn
esse is to me : & cōtinuel sorowe
to myn herte / for y my silf de
sirede to be departid fro crist
for my bripen : pat ben my co
syns aft̄ pe fleisch · pat ben
men of israel / whos is adop
cioñ of sonip̄ & glorie · & testam
ent & zyuynge of pe lawe : and
seruyce & biheestis / whos ben
pe fadris & of which is crist aft̄
pe fleisch : pat is god aboue
alle pingis · blessid ī to worldis
amē / but not pat pe word of
hap falle doñ / for not alle pat
ben of israel : pese ben israeli
tis / nep̄ pei pat ben seed of abr
aham · alle ben sonip̄ : but ī ysa
ac pe seed schal be clepid to pee /
pat is to seie not pei pat ben
sonip̄ of pe fleisch : ben sonip̄ of

And whiche he iustifiede :
^

god / but yei yat ben lou⁹ of
bilieeft: bō demed i ye feed
ffor wh⁹ pis y⁹ is ye word
of bilieeft / aftir pis tyme y
fchal come: & a fone fchal be
to fare / & not onely fche: but
alfo rebecca hadde twei lou⁹
of o liggyng by of ysaac our
fadir & whanne yei were not
zit born · ney hadden don ony
ping of good ey of yuel: yat
ye purpos of god fchulde dwy
elle bi electiou · not of werkis
but of god clepinge it was fe
id to hi / yat ye more fchulde
ferue ye talle: as it is writtin
y louyde iacob: but y hatide
efau / what fchulen we
feie: whey wickidnelle be a
meritis god: god forbede / for
he feip to moyfes / y fchal ha
ue mercy ou whom y haue mer:
& y fchal zeue mercy · ou whom y
fchal haue mercy / for it is not
nep of ma willyng · nep of re
nyng: but of god hauyng
mercy / & ye fcripture feip to fa
ro ffor to dis ping y haue stir
id yee: yat y fchewe in yee my
vertu · & yat my name be teld
in al erpe / for of whom god wole
he hap mercy: & whom he wole
he endurip / pan ne feift pou to
me / what is fouzt zit: for who
wiftondip his wille: o man

who art pou · yat an aduerift to
god: wher a mad ping feip to
hi yat made it: what haft pou
mad me fo: whey a potter of
cley hap not power to make of
pe fame gobet o vessel in to hon⁹
ou⁹ in to diffyte: yat if god
willinge to fchewe his wrappe
& to make his power knowin:
hap fuffred in grete pacience ves
fels of wrappe · able in to deep
to fchewe pe richessis of his glo
re · in to vessels of mercy: whiche
he made redy in to glorie / whiche
alfo he clepide not onely of iewis
as he feip in ofee / y fchal clepe
not my puple: my puple / & not
my louyd · my louyd · & not get
inge mercy · getynge mercy / & it fch
al be in pe place · where it is fe
id to hem · not ze my puple: pe yei
fchulen be clepid pe fonys of god
lyuynge / but ysaie cryp for israel
if pe noumbre of israel fchal be
as grauel of pe fee: pe relikes
fchulen be maad faaf / ffor fope
a word makynge an ende and
abreggyng in equite: for pe lord
fchal make a word breggid on
al pe erpe / & as ysaie bifor feid
de / but god of oostis hadde le
ft to us seed: we hadden be ma
d as sodom · & we hadden be li
yk as gomor / for what fchulen
we feie: yat hepene men y⁹ fueden

not rightwisnesse: han gete right
wisnesse/ the ye rightwisnesse þt
is of feip/ but israel suynge þe
lawe of rightwisnesse: cam not
parfitly i to þe lawe of rightwis
nesse/ wherp:/ for not of feip:
but as of werkis/ & þei spur
nedē azenȝ þe stoon of offēcioū:
as it is writtē/ loo ỹ putte a sto
on of offencioū i syon: & a sto
on of sclaūdre & eche þt schal
bileue it: schal not be cōfūdid
Briȝten þe wille of myn
herte· & my bisechyng
is maad to god for hē
m to helpe/ but ỹ bere witnes
sing to hē· þat þei han loue of
god: but aft kūnyng/ for þei vn
knowynge goddis rightwisnesse·
& sekinge to make stidefast her
owne rightwisnesse bē not suget
to þe rightwisnesse of god/ for þe
ende of þe lawe is cst: to right
wisnesse to ech mā þat bileuep/
for moises wroot· for þe mā þt
schal do rightwisnesse þat is of
þe lawe: schal lyue i it/ but þe
rightwisnesse þat is of bileue se
iþ þus/ seie þou not i þin herte/
who schal stie i to heuene· þt is
to seie· to lede doū crist/ or who
schal go doū i to helle: þat is to
azenclepe cst fro deep/ but what
seiþ þe scripture: þe word is
nyȝ i þi mouþ: & i þi herte/ þis
is þe word of bileue: which we
þchen/ þat if þou knowlechist
i þi mouþ· þe lord ihū cst· & bile
uyst i þin herte· þat god reisede
hī fro deep: þou schalt be saaf/
for bi herte me bileuep to right
wisnesse: but bi mouþ knowle
chyng is maad to helpe/ for wha
t scripture seiþ/ eche þat bileuep
in hī: schal not be confūdid &
þe is no distincioū of ieiw & of
greke for þe same lord of alle:
is riche i to alle þat inwardly
clepen hī/ for ech mā who euere sch
al inwardly clepe þe name of þe
lord: schal be saaf/ how pānc
schulē þei inwardly clepe hī: in
to whō þei han not bileuyd or
how schulē þei bileue to hī: whō
þei han not herd how schulen
þei here wiþ outen a þchour: &
how schulē þei þche: but þei ben
sent: as it is writtē how faire
ben þe feet of hē þat þchen pe
es: of hem þat þchen good þin
gis/ but not alle mē obeien
to þe gospel/ for ysaie seiþ lord
who bileuyde to oure herynge:
þ for feiþ is of herynge but her
ynge bi þe word of cst/ but ỹ se
ie/ whei þei herden not: zhis
sopely þe word of hē went out
i to al þe erþe: & her wordis i
to þe endis of þe world/ but
ỹ seie/ whei israel knewe not:

ffirst moises seiþ / þ shal leede
zou to enuye · þat ze ben · no folk ·
þat ze ben an vnwiȝe folk · þ
shal sende zou ī to wrappe / &
ysaie is bold & seiþ / þ am foūd
en of mē þat sekē me not / opī
ly þ apperide to hē: þat askiden
not me / but to israel he seiþ /
alday þ streizte out myn hondis
to a puple þat bileuyde not:
but azenseide me

Ⓒ. xj. Therfore y seie / whey god
hap put awei his puple:
god forbede / for y am an isra-
elite of ye seed of abraham
of ye lynage of beniamyn / god
hap not put awey his puple:
which he bifor knewe / wher ze
witē not · what ye scripture
seiþ in elie: / hou he þyep god aze
ī israel / lord pei han slayn
yi profetis · pei han vndurdol
uen yin auteris: & y am left a
loone · & pei seken my liif / but
what seiþ godis answer to hī /
y haue left to me seuene pou
synd is of mē: þat han not bo
wid her knees bifor baal / so
þ for also ī þis tyme: þe relifis
bē maad saaf · bi þe chesyng of
ye grace of god / & if it be bi þe
grace of god: it is not now of
werkis / ellis grace: is not no
wi grace / what þānne: israel ha
þ not geti þis þat he souzte /
but election hap geti & þe ope
ren blyndid · as it is writi / god
zaf to hē a spirit of cōpunccioū /
izen þat pei se not · & eris þt pei
here not: ī to þis day & dauid
seiþ / be þe boord of hē maad ī
to a grynn bifore hē · & ī to cacchig
& ī to skaundre · & ī to zeldyng to
hē / be þe izen of hē maad derk
þat pei se not: & bowe þ' doū al
gatis þe bak of hē / þ for þe þei
whey þei offendiden to: þat pei
shulden falle doū / god forbede but
bi þe gilt of hē · helpe is maad
to hepene mē: þat pei sue hem /
þat if þe gilt of hē ben richessis
of þe world · & þe mateng lesse of
hem · ben richessis of hepene ma
en: hou mychē more þe plentee
of hē / but y seie to zou hepen
men / for as longe as y am apos
tle of hepene mē: þ shal onour
myn mynistrie / if ī ony maner y fi
re my fleisch for to folowe: & þt
y make sum of hē saaf: / for if
þe loss of hē is þe reconsilyng
of ye world: what is þe takyng
up: / but lijf of deede mē / for if
a litil part of þat þt is takid
be hoolp: þe hool gobet is holy /
& if þe roote is holy: also þe bra
nchis hē / what if ony of þe br
anchis ben brokē · whānne þou
were a wielde olyue tree · art
grafted among hē · & art maad

felow of pe roote & of pe fatu
esse of pe olyue tree: wyle pou
hast glorie agenȝ pe brauchis
for it pou gloriest: pou berist
not pe roote· but pe roote pee
for pou seist/ pe brauchis be
broku: pt y be grafft yu/ wel·
for vnbileue pe brauchis beu
broku: but pou stondist bi feiþ
wyle pou schreue hiȝ þing: but
drede pou/ for if god sparide
not pe kyndely brauchis: lest
peraduenture he spare not pee
for pe goodnesse· & pe ferc
nesse of god/ ȝhe pe fersnesse
i to hem pat felden doun/ but pe
goodnesse of god i to pee: if þu
dwellist i goodnesse/ ellis also
pou schalt be kit doun/ ȝhe & pei
schulen be set yn: if pei dwellen
not i vnbileue/ for god is myȝti
i: to sette hem yn eftsoone/ for
if pou art kit doun of pe kyndly
wielde olyue tree: & agenȝ kyn
de art set i to a good olyue
tree/ how mychel more· pei pt
ben bi kynde: schulen be set in
hor olyue tre:/ but briþen y
wole not pat ze vnknowen þis
myste: pat ze be not wise to
zou silf/ for blyndnesse hap
feld a party i israel· til pt pe ple
nte of hepene men entride· & so
al israel schulde be maad saaf
as it is writun/ he schal come
of syon pat schal delyuere· and
turne awey pe wickednesse of
iacob/ & pis testament to hem of me:
whanne y schal do awey hor synn
ast pe gospel pei ben enemyes
for zou: but pei ben most dereworpe
for pe elecciun for pe fadris
& pe ziftis & pe clepyng of god:
ben wipouten forpenkyng & as
suryne also ze bileuyden not
to god: but now ze han geten mercy
for pe vnbileue of hem/ so & pese
now bileuyden not: i to oure
mercy· pat also pei geten mercy/
for god closide to gidere alle pin
gis in vnbileue: pat he haue
mercy on alle/ ¶ A pe heiȝnesse
of richessis of pe wisdom &
of pe knowyng of god/ how un
comprehensible ben his domes:
& his weies ben vnsercheable
for who knew pe wit of
pe lord: or who was his conse
lour: or who formede ȝift to him:
& it schal be quyt to him: for
of hym & bi him & in him· ben al
le pingis: to hym be glorie
in to worldis amen

Therfore briþen y biseche
zou bi pe mercy of god: pat
ȝe ȝiue zoure bodies· a lyu
ynge sacrifice· hooly plesy
nge to god· & zoure seruyse
reasonable/ & nyle ze be confo
rmede to pis world· but be

C. xij.

ze reformed in nelnesse of
youre wit: pat ze ꝓue which is
ye wille of god· good & wel ple
synge & parfit / for ȳ seie vi pe gr
ace pat is ȝouñ to me to alle pt
ben among ȝou· pat ze savre not
more pañ it bihoney to savere·
but ꝫ for to sañe to sobrenesse
& to ech mañ as god hap depar
tid pe mesur of feip / for as i o
body we han many mẽbris:
but alle pe mẽbris han not pe
same dede: so we many ben
mẽbris: oon of anope / ꝓ for
we pat han ziftis dyuersinge af
tir pe grace: pat is ȝouñ to us
ey prophecie aft pe reloñ of
feip· eyer seruyce ī mynistrig /
ey he pat techip ī teching· he pt
stirip softly ī monestig / he pat
ȝiuey ī symplenesse· he pt is
soliepn ī bisynesse· he pat hap
mercy ī gladnesse / ioye wip on
tẽ seyuyng / hatynge yuel / dr
awing to good / ioynge to gi
dere pe charite of bripped /
eche come bifore to worschipẽ
ope / not slow ī bisynesse / fer u
ent ī spirit seruynge to pe lord /
ioyinge ī hope / pacient ī tribula
cioñ / bisy ī pyer / ȝiuynge good
to pe nedis of seyntis kepinge
hospitalite. blesse ze mẽ pt pur
suynen ȝou: blesse ze & nyle ze
curse / for to ioye wip mẽ pat
ioyen· for to wepe wip men pat
wepe / fele ze pe same ping to
gider· not savering hiz pingis.
but cõsentynge to meke ping
is / & nile ze be prudent anẽ
tis ȝou silf: to no mañ zeldinge
yuel for yuel / but purueye ze
good pingis· not onely bifore
god: but also bifore alle men /
if it may be doon: pt pat is of
ȝou: have ze pees wip alle mẽ /
ze most dere bripen not defen
dinge ȝou silf: but ȝyue ze place
to wrappe / for it is writñ / pe
lord seip· to me vengaunce: & y
schal zelde / but if pin enemy
hungrip: fede pon hi / if he pirst
tip: ȝyue pon drynke to hi / for
pon doynge pis ping: schalt
gadere to gidere koles on his
heed / nyle pon be ouercomñ of yu
el: but ouercome pt yuel bi good

Euery soule be suget
to hizere poweris / for
is no power: but
of god / & po pingis pat bẽ of
god: ben ordeyned / ꝓ for he pat
azenstondip power: azenston
dip pe ordenaunce of god / & pei pt
azenstõden: getẽ to hẽ silf dap
nacioñ / for princes ben not to
pe drede of good werk: but of
yuel / but wilt pu pat pon drede
not power: do pon good ping·
& pou schalt have preysinge of

o bodi ī ech / & ech ben

it for not why he is ye mynistre of god: to yee i to good but if ꝑ doist yuel: drede pou for not why ouꝫ cause he berip ye swerd for he is ye mynistre of god: vengere i to wrappe to hi pat doip yuel & ꝑfor bi nede ye suget: not ouely for wrappe: but also for conscience. ffor ꝑfor ye zine tbutis pei ben ye mynistris of god: & seruẽ for pis same ꝑpng ꝑfor zelde ze to alle men dettis to whom tribute: tbut to whõ tol: tol to whõ drede: drede to whom onour: onour to no mã owe ze ony png: but pat ze lone to gidere for he pat louep his neizbore: hap fulfillid pe lawe for pou shalt do no lecherie. pou shalt not sle. ꝑ shalt not stele. pou shalt not sei e fals witnessing. pou shal not coueite pe png of pi neizbore & if ꝑ be ony ope mandement: it is restorid i pis word ꝑ shal lone pi neizbore as pi silf pe lone of neizbore: wozchip not yuel ꝑfor lone is pe fulfilling of pe lawe & we knowe pis tyme pat pe our is now. pat we rise fro sleep for now ouꝛ helpe is neer: pan whanne we bileuyde pe nizt wẽte bifore: but pe day hap neizid ꝑfor caste we awey pe werkis of derknes

sis & we we clopid i pe armeris of lizt: as i day wandre we onestly not i superflu feestis & dri kenessis not i beddis & vnchastetes. not i strijf & i enuye: but we ze clopid i pe lord ihũ crist & do ze not pe bisynesse of fleish i desiris

Ĉ. xiij.

Bnt take ze a sijt mã i vileue. not i demyngis of ponytis for an ope manere ney pat he may ete alle pngis but he pat is sijk: ete wortis he pat etip: dispise not him pat etip not & he pat etip not: deme not hi pat etip for god hap take hi to hi. who art pou pat demest an opes seruã nit: to his lord he stondip or fallip fro hi: but he shal stonde for pe lord is mizti: to make hi parfit for whi oon demep a day bitwixe a day: an ope demep ech day ech mã encreese i his wit he pat vndirstondip pe day: vndirstondip to pe lord for he doip pancking to god & he pat etip not: etip not to pe lord & do ip pancking to god for no mã of us lyuep to hi silf: & no mã diep to hi silf ffor whether we lyuẽ: we lyuẽ to pe lord & whepꝰ we dien: we diẽ to pe lord ꝑfor whepr we lyuẽ or dien: we ben of pe lord for whi for pis png cri was deed & roos azen: pat he

& he pat etip: etip to pe lord

be lord hope of myke and of
deed mē / but what deuelt
pou pi brop̄: or why despisit
pou pi brop̄ for alle we shul
len stonde biforе pe trone of
crist for it is writtē / y liue
seip̄ pe lord· for to me ech
kne shal be bowid: & eche
tūge shal knowlechе to god
pfor ech of us: shal zelde
reсoū to god / for hi silf / pfor
no more deme we ech op̄ / but
more deme ze pis ping: pat
ze putte not hurtyng or sclā
ndre to a brop̄ / ¶ I woot &
triste ī pe lord ihū: pat no pig
is vnclene bi hi / no but to hi
pat demep ony ping to be vn
clene: to hi it is vnclene / & if
pi brop̄ be maad sory ī cōscien
ce for mete: now pou walkist
not aft̄ charite / nyle pou for
lese hi: for who
eft diede / pfor be not oure go
od ping blaspemyd / for why
pe reume of god is not mete
& drink: but rigtwisnesse
& pees & ioye ī pe hooly goost
& he pat ī pis ping seruep̄ crist
pleseb̄ god / & is ꝓued to mē /
pfor sue we po pingis pat bē
of pees: & kepe we to gidere
po pingis pt̄ ben of edificacī
oū / nyle pou for mete distrie
pe werk of god / for alle pig
is ben clene: but it is puel to
pe mā pat etip̄ bi offendyng
it is ꝑfit good to not ete fleisch
& to not drinke wipu·nep̄ in
what ping pi brop̄ offendip̄
or is sclaūdrid· or is maad syk
pou hast feip̄ aūcēris pi silf:
haue pou bifore god / blessid is
he pat demep̄ not hi silf: ī pt̄
ping pat he ꝑuep̄ / for he pat
demep̄ is dāpned· if he etip̄:
for it is not of feip̄ / & al ping
pat is not of feip̄ is synne

But we sholdē we men
owen to sustеyne pe
feblenessis of syke
men: & not plese to us silf /
ech of us plese to his neizbore
ī good: to edificacioū / for crist
pleside not to hi silf: as it is
writtē· pe repreues of men
dispisyngе pee: felden on me /
for what euere pingis bē writtē·
po bē writtē to oure teching:
pat bi pacience & coūfort of
scriptures we haue hope / but
god of pacience & of solace zyue
to zou to vndurstonde pe same
ping· ech ī to ope aftir ihū cr̄t:
pat ze of o wille wip o mouy
worshipe god & pe fadir of oure
lord ihū cr̄t / for which ping
take ze to gidere: as also crist
took zou ī to pe onour of god
for ꝑ seie pat ihū cr̄t was mad

mistre of circūcisiōū for ye tre
upe of god: to confeme ye bihe
stis of fadris & hepene mē
owen to honoure god for mcy:
as it is writtū / þfor for y shal kn
onleche to yee among hepene
men: & y shal synge to þ name
& eft he seiþ ze hepene mē be
ze glad with his puple and eft
alle hepene mē herie ze ye lord:
& alle puplis magnefie ze hm
& eft ysaie seiþ / þ shal be aro
ote of iesse: pat shal rise up
to gouue hepene men · and
o hepene men shulen hope
in hm & god of hope fulfille
zou ī al iope & pees ī bileuyge:
pat ze encrese ī hope & vertu
of pe holy goost And briþ
en y my silf am certeyn of
zou: pat also ze ben ful of lo
ne & ze ben filled with al kun
yng · so pat ze moū moneste
ech oþ & & briþen more bold
ly y wroot to zou apartly as
bryngynge zou ī to mynde
for pe grace pat is zouū to
me of god: pat y be pe mys
tre of crist ihū among hepē
mē & y halowe pe gospel of
god: pat pe offering of he
pen mē be acceptid & halew
id ī pe holy goost / for y ha
ue glorie ī crist ihū to god
for y dar not speke ony þing
of yo þingis · which crist doy
not bi me ī to obedience of
hepene mē: ī word & dedis · ī
vertu of tokenes & grete wondris
ī vertu of pe holy goost / so þt
fro ierlū bi cūpas to pe illiryk
see: y haue fillid pe gospel of
crist / & so y haue þchid pis
gospel · not wher crist was na
med: lest y bilde vpon an opes
grouūd / but as it is writtū / for
to whom it is not teld of hī: per
shulē se & per þt herdē not:
shulē vndurstonde / for which
þing y was lettid ful mpche ·
to come to zou: & y am lettid to
pis tyme & now y haue not
ferþe place ī pese cūtreis · but
y haue desire to come to zou ·
of many zeeris þat bey pas
sid / whanne y bigynne to passe
ī to spayne: y hope pat in my
gouinge þ shal se zou / & of zou
y shal be led vdur: if þ vse
zou first ī party / þfore now y
shal passe forþ to ierlū: to my
nistre to seyntis / for macedo
nye & acaie han assayed to
make sūme gifte to pore mē of se
yntis pat bē ī ierlū / ffor it
pleside to hē: & per ben dettours
of hem / ffor hepene mē ben
maad parteneris of her goostly
þingis: per owen also ī fleischly
ly þingis to mynistre to hem /

Romayns

perfor wh͡ſ̄ne y hane ended
pis ping · & hane assigned to
hē pis tirnyt: y shal palle
bi zon ī to spayne / & y woot.
pat y comynge to zou: shal
come ī to pe abūdāūce of pe
blessyng of ēst / pforz bri͡pē
y biseche zou bi oure lord ih̄ū
crist · & bi charite of pe hooly
goost: pat ze helpe me ī zoure
pieris to pe lord · pat y be de
liuerid fro pe vnbeliful mē
pat bē ī iudee & pat pe offrīg
of my seruyce: be acceptid ī
ierlm̄ to seyntis / pat y come
to zou ī ioye bi pe wille of god:
& pat y be refreischid w͡t zou
& god of pees be w͡t zou alle amē
And y comende to zou
febeu oure sist̄ whi
ch is ī pe seruyce of
pe chirche pat is at cenc͡reis:
pat ze resseyue hir ī pe lord
worpily to seyntis / & p͡t ze hel
pe hir: ī what eūe cause she
shal nede of zo͡ / for she helpi
de many mē & my silf / grete
ze prisca & aquyla my helperis
ī ēst ih̄ū: whiche vndurputtid
en her neckis for my life / to
whiche not y allone do pancky
ngis: but also alle pe chirchis
of heyene mē / & grete ze wel
hermemyneal chirche / grete
wel marie: pe whiche hap

trauelid myche in us / grete
wel Andronyk & iulian my cosy
ns & myn euen ploūneris: whi
che ben noble among pe apost
lis & whiche weren bifore me ī
ēst / grete wel amplīate most dere
worp to me ī pe lord / grete wel
vrban oure helpere ī ēst ih̄ū:
& stachē my derlyng / grete wel
Appellem pe noble ī ēst / grete
wel hem pat ben of Aristobulis
hous / grete wel erodion my co
syn / grete wel hē pat ben of
narcisses hous: pat bē ī pe
lord / grete wel trifenam &
trifosam: which wym̄en tra
uelen ī pe lord / grete wel per
sida most dereworpe wom̄: .
pat hap trauelid myche in pe
lord / grete wel rufus chosen
ī pe lord: & his modir & myn
grete wel Asyncrete · flegonas ·
hermē · patroban · hermam ·
& bri͡pren pat ben with hem /
grete wel filologus & iulian
& nereū & his sist̄ · & olimpiad
es: & alle pe seyntis pat bē w͡t
hem / grete ze wel to gid̄e ī ho
oly coss / alle pe chirchis of ēst
grete zou wel / but bri͡pen
y pie zou · pat ze aspie hem pt
makē distencions & hertpingis
contrarie pe doctryn · pat ze han
ler ned: & bowe ze awei fro hē /
for suche mē seruen not to pe

grete wel efenet loued to me /
pat is pe firste of asie in crist
ih̄ū /

Rom. xvi.

lord crist: but to her wombe & bi
swete wordis & blessingis disley
uen pe hertis of innocent men
but youre obedience is puplis
shid i to eny place/ for y haue
ioye i you: but p wole pat ze be
wise i good þing & symple in
yuel/ & god of pees trede schal
nas vndir youre feet swiftely/
pe grace of oure lord ihū crist:
be wip you Timothe myn hy
lpeve: gretip you wel & alle in
ns & iason & sosipat' my kynes
men tercius grete you wel: pat wr
oot pis epistle i pe lord/ gayus
myn oost gretip you wel: and
al pe chirche/ erastus tresorer
of pe citee gretip you wel: and
quart' brop'/ pe grace of oure
lord ihū crist: be wip you alle
amē/ & onour & glorie be to hi
pat is mygti· to confirme you
bi my gospel & p'chyng of ihū crist
bi pe reuelacioū of mystrie hol
dū stille i tymes eūlastīge/ wh
ich mystrie is now maad opyn·
bi scripturis of prophetis· bi pe
comaūdemēt of god wip oute
bigynnyng & endyng: to pe obedi
ence of feip i alle heyene men
pe mystrie/ knowē bi ihū crist
to god aloone wijs: to whom be
onour & glorie in to worldis of
worldis: Here endip pe
pistle to romayns: And here

Here ginneþ pe prolog ou pe fir
ste pistle to corynthies

Corynthiēs ben of achē
and pei in lyk maner
herden of pe postle pe
word of treupe: & were per ner
pid i many maneris of false a
postlis sinne were pei tritid
of eloquence of filosofie ful
of wordis: oper me were led i
to pe sect of laue of ie wis/ pat
is· to holde it nedeful wip pe
gospel/ pe postle depip hem pes
corynthis to very feip & wisdō
of pe gospel: & wrytip to hem
fro effesie· bi tymothe his dis
ciple. Pis seip ieroim i his pro
loge ou pe firste pistle to corinthies

Paul clepid apostle
of ihū crist: bi pe
wille of god· & sosthe
nes brop'· to pe chir
che of god pat is at corynthe/
to hem pat ben halewid in crist
ihū· & clepid seyntis· wip alle
pat i wardly clepen pe name
of oure lord ihū crist· i eche pla
ce of hem & of oure: grace to
you & pees· of oure fadir· & of
pe lord ihū crist/ y do pankyng
is to my god euermore for you
i pe grace of god: pat is youn
to you i crist ihū/ for i alle pyng
is ze ben maad riche i hym: i ech
word· & i eche knowyng· as pe

lnes

God

witnessing of crist is confermyd
in you so that no ping fayle to you
in ony grace: that abiden ye sshe
wing of oure lord ihū crist/ which
also shal confermne you in to ye
ende wtyn ourē crymne: in ye dey
of ye comyng of oure lord ihū
crist/ a trewe god: by whom ye
ben clepid in to ye feloushype
of his sone ihū crist oure lord
but bridden y biseche you by ye
name of oure lord ihū crist:
that ye alle seie ye same ping.
& that discencions be not amo
ng you/ but be ye perfit in ye
same wytt: & in ye same kunp
ing/ ffor myn bridden it is telo
to me of hem that ben at clo
es: that stryues ben among
you/ & y seie pt that ech of you se
ip/ for y am of poul & y am of
apollo. & y am of cefas: but y
am of crist/ whether crist is depa
rtid: whether poul was crucifi
ed for you: ep ye ben baptisid
in ye name of poul: y do pank
yngis to myn god. that baptis
side noon of you. but crispus
& gayus: lest ony man seie pat
ze ben baptisid in myn name/ & y
baptisede also ye hous of stepha
nn: but y woot not pat y bap
tisede ony ope/ ffor crist sente
me not to baptise: but to pre
che ye gospel/ not in wisdom
of word: pat pe croff of crist be
not voidid alwey/ for pe word of
pe croos: is folp. to hem pat perischen
but to hem pat ben maad sauf
pat is to seie to us: it is pe ver
tu of god/ for it is writtin/ y shal
distrupe pe wisdom of wise men:
& y shal reprone pe prudence
of prudent men/ where is pe wi
se man. where is pe wise lettyp
ere. where is pe purchasour of
pis world: whep god hap not
maad pe wisdom of pis world.
foolid: for pe world in wisdom
of god. knewe not god bi wisd
om: it pleside to god bi folp of
preching to make hem saaf pat
bileueden/ for ie wis sekeu sign
es: & grekis sekeu wisdom/ but
we preche crucified. to iewis
is sclaundre: & to hepen men fo
lip/ but to po iewis & grekis pt
ben clepid we preche pe vertu of
god. & pe wisdom of god/
ffor pat pt is folp ping of god:
is wisere pan men/ & pat pat is
pe feble ping of god: is strey
gere pan men/ but bridden ze
ze youre cleppinge. for not many
wise men after pe flesshy. not ma
ny myzty. not many noble/ but
god chees po pingis pat ben fon
ed of pe world: to confounde wise
men/ & god chees pe feble pingis
of pe world: to confounde pe

stronge pingis / And god chees
ye vnoble pingis · & dispisable
pingis of ye world · And ye pin
gis pat be not : to distruye yo
pingis pat ben pat eche mā
hane not glorie ī his sizt but
of hī ze ben ī crist ihū : which
is made of god to us wisdō
& riztwisnesse · & hoolynesse ·
& azenbiyng / pat as it is wri
tē · he pat glorieb : hane glo
rie ī pe lord

And y bripen when
y cam to zou : cam not
ī pe hyznesse of wo
rd eþ of wisdom · tellinge to
zou pe witnessing of crist ffor
y demede not me to knine ou
y ping among zou : but crist
ihū & hī crucified / And y ū
sikenesse & drede & mychе
tremblyng was among zou /
& my word & my þchīng was
not ī suttely stirpinge wordis
of mānȝ wisdom : but ī scheu
inge of spirit & of vtu / pat
zoure feiþ be not ī pe wisdom
of mē : but ī pe vtu of god / for
we speken wisdom among pat
fit mē / but not wisdom of
pis world : neþ of þncis of pis
world pat ben distried / but
we speken pe wisdom of god
ī mystrie : which wisdom is hid
which wisdom god bifor ordey
ned bifore worldis in to oure
glorie : which noon of pe þnces
of pis world knew / for if pei
hadden knowen · pei schulden
neuere hane crucified pe lord of
glorie / but as it is writtē · pat
ize sahe not · ne eye herde · neþ
it stiede ī to herte of mā what
pingis god arayed : to hem pt
loue hī / but god schewide to
ns : bi his spirit / for whi pe
spirit serchep alle pingis :
zhe pe depe pingis of god / &
who of mē woot · what ping
is be of mā : but pe spirit of
mā pat is ī hī : / so what ping
is bē of god · no mā knowip :
but pe spirit of god / & we hā
not resseyued pe spirit of
pis world · but pe spirit pat
is of god : pat we wite what
pingis ben zouī to us of god /
which pingis we speke also
not ī wise wordis of mānȝ
wisdom : but ī pe doctryn of
pe spirit · & make alikenesse
of spirituel pingis to goostly
men / ffor aliestly mā perseyu
eþ not po pingis : pat ben of
pe spirit of god / for it is foly
to hī / & he may not vndirsto
nde · for it is examyned goo
stly / but spirituel mā demep
alle pingis : & he is demed of
no mā · as it is writtē / And

C. iii.

Who knew ye wit of ye lord: or
who tauȝte hym And we haue
ye wit of crist
And y bretheren myȝte
not speke to ȝou: as spi-
rituall men; but as to
fleischly me. as to lytle childrē
i crist: y ȝaf to ȝou mylk drynke
not mete; for ȝe myȝtē not
ȝit: ney ȝe moū now; for ȝit
ȝe ben fleischly; for while strif
is among ȝou: where ȝe ben
not fleischly: & ȝe goen after
man: for whanne sūme sey-
y am of poul. an oþe but y
am of Apollo: where ȝe bē
not mē: what þfore is apol
lo: & what poul: but ben my
nistris of hī: to whom ȝe hā
bileued & to ech māñ as god
hap ȝoūn; y planted. Apollo
moysted: but god ȝaf encre
esing þfor ney he þat plaū
tip is ony þing. ney he þat
moistip: but god þat ȝeuep
encreesing/ And he þat plaūtip
& he þat moistip: ben oon/ And
ech shal take his owene mede
de: after his trauel/ for we bē
ye helperis of god: ȝe ben ye
erþetilyng of god. ȝe ben ye
bildyng of god/ after þe grace
of god þat is ȝoūn to me: as
a wise maist carpent; y settide
þe foūdement/ & an oþ bildip
above/ but ech mā se hou he
bildip above/ for no mā may
sette an oþ foūdement. outakū
þat þat is set: which is crist
ihc/ & for if ony bildip oū þis
foūdement: gold. silū. þcious
stoupis. stickis. hey or stobil:
euery mānȝ werk shal be
open/ for þe day of þe lord shal
al declare: for it shal be shewid i fier/ & þe fier shal þue
þe werk of ech mā: what mā
ner werk it is/ if þe werk
of ony mā dwelle stille. whi
ch he bildide above: he shal
resseyue mede/ if ony mānȝ
werk brēne: he shal suffre
harm/ but he shal be saf:
so nepeles as bi fier/ & wite
ȝe not þat ȝe ben þe tēple of
god: & þe spirit of god dwel
lip i ȝou/ & if ony defoulip þe
tēple of god: god shal leese
hī/ for þe tēple of god is hooly:
which ȝe ben/ no man disseye
he hī silf/ & if ony mā among
ȝou is seyn to be wise in þis
world: be he made a fool. þat
he be wijs/ for þe wisdō of þis
world: is foly anentis god/ for
it is writtē/ I shal cache wise
mē in her fel wisdom/ And
eft/ þe lord knowip þe þouȝ
tis of wise mē: for þo ben ve
yn/ þfor no mā haue glorie i

men/ for alle pingis ben zoure
ever ye world· ever lif ever· ever
pingis present· ever pingis to com
inge/ ffor alle pingis ben zoure/
and ze ben of crist: & crist is of god
So a man gesse us: as m
inistris of crist & dispen
deris of pe mysteries
of god/ now it is sought here am
ong ye dispenderis: pat a man
be foundn trewe & to me it is
for pe leest ping pat y be demed
of zou· or of mann day: but nei
y deme myn silf/ for y am no pig
on trowbing to myn silf: but u
ot in pis ping y am justified/ ffor
he pat demep me: is pe lord/ per
fore nyle ze deme bifore pe tym
e: til pat pe lord come· which bo
th lizte pe hid pingis of derk
nessis· & schal schewe pe counse
ls of hertis/ & panne pising sch
al be to eche man of god/ And
bribren y haue transfigurid pe
se pingis in to me & in to apollo for
zou: pat in us ze lerne left oun pt
nt is writun· oon azen an oper·
be blowun with pride· for an oper/
who demep pee: & what hast p!
pt p! hast not resseyued: & if p!
hast resseyued: what gloriest p!
as pou haddist not resseyued/
now ze ben fillid: now ze ben ma
d riche ze regnen with outen
us & y wolde pat ze regnen: pt
also we regnen with nyl zou &
y gesse: pat god schewide us pe
laste apostlis· as pilk pat ben ge
ut to pe deep: for we ben made a
spectacle to pe lord world and to
angelis & to men; we foolis
for crist: but nyl ze prudent in crist/
we like: but ze stronge ze noble:
but we vnoble/ til in to pis our·
we hungren & pirsten & ben naked·
& ben smytun with buffetis: & we
ben vnstable· & we trauelen
werching with oure hondis/
we ben curssid: & we blessen we
suffren persecucioun: & we abi
den longe/ we ben blaspemyd: &
we bisechen/ as clensingis of
pis world we ben made pe out
casting of alle pingis til zit/
y write not pese pingis· pat y
confounde zou: but y warne as
myn most derworpe sones/ for
wip re ze haue ten pousynde of
maistris in crist: but not
many fadris/ for in crist ihū y ha
ue gendrid zou/ be ze folowers
of me: as y of crist/ pfor y sente
to zou tymothe: which is myn m
ost derewurpe sone· & feipful
in pe lord/ which schal teche zou
myn weyes: pat ben in crist ihū· as
y teche euery where in ech chirche
as pouz y schulde not come to
zou: so sum ben blowun with
pride/ but y schal come to zou

bi pe gospel/ pfor
bribren y pie zou

† poul· ep' apollo· ep' cefas·

done if god wole: And y shal
knowe not pe word of hem pt
ben vlowen wip pride but pe
vertu / ffor pe reume of god
is not in word: but in vertu wh
at woleze shal y come to zo
u in 3erde: or in dishrite and in
spirit of mylde nesse

I al nau3t forsakeb is lyf
rd among zou and sih sich for
nycacioun whiche is not among
hepene me: so pat sum3 haue
pe wyf of his fadir / & ze ben blo
wen wip pride & not more hadde
weilynge pat he pt dide pis
werk be taken awey fro pe
myddil of zou & y absent in bo
dy but present in spirit: now ha
ue demyd as present hi pat hap
pus wrou3t / wih 3ue ze ben gad
erid to gidere in pe name of ou
re lord ihu crist and myn spirit wip
pe vertu of pe lord ihu: to take
sich a man to sathanas in to pe pe
rishing of fleish pat pe spi
rit be saaf in pe day of oure lord
ihu crist / 3oure glorying is not
good / wite ze not pat a litil sour
dou3 apeyrep al pe gobet: clen
se ze out pe old sourdou3: pt ze
be newe sprynginge to gidere
as ze ben perf / for crist offrid is
oure pask / pfore ete we not in
old sourdou3: ney in sourdou3
of malice & werkwardnesse /
but in perf pingis of clernesse
& of treupe / y wroot to zou in
pistle: pat ze be not medlid wt
leachouris / not wip leachouris
of pis world ne couetouse ne
ne raueinouris ne wip men
seruynge to mawmetis: ellis
ze shulden haue go out of pis
world / but now y wroot to zou
pat ze be not meynd but if he
pat is named a brop among
zou is a leachour or couetouse
or seruynge to ydolis or a cursed
or ful of drunkenesse or a rauey
nour to take no mete wip sich
ffor what is it to qwne: to deme
of hem pat ben wip oute forp:
whep ze demen not of pingis pt
ben wip yne forp: for god shal
deme hem pt ben wipouten forp
do ze awey yuel fro 3ou silf

Dar ony of 3ou pat hap
a cause azen3 an oper:
be demed at wicked
men & not at holy men: where
ze witen not: pat seyntis shulen
deme of pis world: & if pe wor
ld shal be demyd bi 3ou: be ze
vnworpi to deme of pe leeste
pingis: witen ze not pat we sh
ulen deme aungelis: hou mych
more worldly pingis / pfor if ze
han worldly domes: ordeyne
ze po contemptible men pat ben
in pe chirche to deme / y seie to

make you ashamed so per is
not ony wise man: pat may de
me bitwixe abrop & his bropers
but abrop wip brop stryuep in
dom: & pat amog vnfeipful in
eu & now trespas is algates i
you: for ze han domes among
you why nap take ze no wrong-
why nap suffre ze not dissept:
but also ze doen wrong & don
fraude & pat to bripren why
ze witen not pat wicked men
shulen not weelde pe kingdo
of god: / nyle ze erre nep leach
ours nep me pat serueu ma
mentis nep auouteris neper
lechouris azeyn kynde neper
pei pat dou leccherie wip me-
nep penus nep auerouse men
nep ful of dronkenesse nep cur
seris nep raueinours: shulen
welde pe kingdom of god / &
ze were sum pese pingis /
but ze be wasshen: but ze ben
halewid: but ze ben iustefied
i pe name of oure lord ihū crist
& i pe spirit of oure god alle
pingis ben leeueful to me: but
not alle pingis ben spedeful /
alle pingis ben leeueful to me:
but y shal not be brouzt dou
vndir ony mannys power / me
te to pe wombe & pe wombe
to metis: & god shal distrupe
bope pis & pat / & pe body not
to fornycacioū: but to pe lord &
pe lord to pe body / for god reisede
pe lord: & shal reise us bi his
vertu / wite ze not pat zoure
bodies ben membris of crist: / shal
y panne take pe membris of crist:
& shal y make pe membris of
an hoore: god forbede / wheper
ze witen not · pat he pat cleuep
to an hoore: is maad o body: for
he seip · pei shulen be tweyne in
fleisch / & he pat cleuep to pe lo
rd: is o spirit / flee ze fornycaci
oū / al synne what euere synne a
man doip: is wip out pe body /
but he pat doip fornicacioū:
synnep azeyn his body / wher
ze witen not: pat zoure membris
ben pe temple of pe holy goost · pt
is in zou: / whom ze han of god: &
ze ben not zoure owne / for ze
ben bouzt with greet pris glo
rifie ze and bere ze god in
zoure body

But of pilke pingis
pat ze han writen to
me: it is good to man
an to touche not a womman /
but for fornicacioū · eche man
shulde haue his owne wif: & eche
womman shulde haue hir owne hosle
bonde / pe hoslebonde zelde det
te to pe wif: & also pe wif
to pe hoslebonde / pe womman
hap not power of hir body:

C. vij.

vnt pe hosebonde/ And pe hosebonde hap not power of his body:
but pe wom̃ / vnle ze defraude eche to ope· but peraventure of cõsent to a tyme: pat ze zine tent to pyer/ & eft turne ze azen to pe same thing: lest sathan as temipte zou for zoure vncõtinence/ but y seie this thing as zif y hadde leeue: not bi comaũdem et/ for y wole: pat alle mẽ be as my silf/ but ech man hap his proper zifte of god/ oon pus: & an opir pus/ but y seie to hem pt be not wedded & to widewis/ it is good to hem: if pei dwelle so as y/ & if pei contepne not hem silf: be pei wedded/ for it is bettre to be wedded: than to be brent/ but to hem pat be ioyned in matrimonye: y comaũde/ not y but pe lord: pat pe wijf depart not fro pe hosebonde & pat if she departip: pt she dwelle vnwedded· or be reconsiled to her hosebonde/ & pe hosebonde forsake not pe wijf/ but to ope y seie: not pe lord/ if ony brop hap an vnfeithful wijf· & she consentip to dwelle wip him: leeue he hir not/ & if ony wom̃an hap an vnfeithful hosebonde· & pis consentip to dwelle wip him: leeue she not pe hosebonde/ for pe vnfeithful hosebonde is halewid· bi pe feithful wom̃: & pe vnfeithful wom̃ is halewid bi pe feithful hosebonde/ ellis zoure children were vncleene: but now pei ben hooly/ pat if pe vnfeithful departip: departe he/ for wher pe brop or sist is not seruage i siche/ for god hap clepid us i pees/ & wherof woost pou wom̃· if pou shalt make pe wom̃ saaf: or wher of woost pou· if pou shalt make pe wom̃ saaf: but as pe lord hap departid to eche/ & as god hap clepid ech man: so go he/ as y teche i alle chirchis/ Ani man cirkumcidid is clepid: bringe he not to pe prepucie/ Ani man is clepid in prepucie: be he not circumcidid/ circumcisioũ is nouzt· & prepucie is nouzt: but pe keping of pe comaũdementis of god/ ech man i what cleping he is clepid: in pat dwelle he/ pou seruant art clepid: be it no charge to pee/ but if pou maist be free: pe rapir vse pou/ he pat is a seruant· & is clepid i pe lord: is a free man of pe lord/ also he pat is a free man & is clepid: is pe seruant of crist/ wip prys· ze ben bouzt vnle ze be maad seruantis of men/ bretheren eche man i what thing he is clepid abrop: dwelle he i pis thing anentis god/ but of vgpus

y haue no commaundement of god
but y gyue counsell as he pt hath m
ercy of pe lord: pat y be trewe
for y gesse pt pis yng is good
for pe present nede/ for it is good
to a man to be so/ pou art bounde
to a wyfe: unyle pu seke unbynd
yng/ pou art unbounde fro a
wyfe: unyle pou seke a wyfe/
but if pou hast taken a wyfe: pu
hast not synned/ & if a mayden
is wedded: she synnede not/ ne
peles such shulle haue tribulac
oun of fleisch/ but y spare you/
for bretheren y sein pis yng: pe
tyme is short/ and oght is pis· pat
pei pat haue wyues: ben as po
we pei hadde none/ & pei pat we
pen: as pei wepen not/ & pei pt
ioyen: as pei ioyede not/ & pei
pat bien: as pei hadde not/ and
pei pat vsen pis world: as pei
pat vsen not/ for wh pe figure
of pis world passip/ but y wo
le pat ze be wip out bisynesse/
for he pat is wip out wyfe: is
bisy what yngis ben of pe lo
rd· how he shal plese god/ but
he pat is wip a wyfe: is bisy wh
at yngis ben of pe world how
he shal plese pe wyfe· & he is de
partid & a woman vnwedded &
mayden penkip what yngis
ben of pe lord: pat she be hoo
ly in body & spirit/ but she pat
is wedded penkip what yngis
ben of pe world: how she shal
plese pe housebonde ¶ And y seie
pese yngis to oure profit· not
pat y caste to zou a snare but
to pat pat is honest & pat
gyuep esynesse wip oute let
tyng to make pyerid to pe lord
& if ony man gessip hi silf to be
sey vn fonle on his vgly pat
she is ful wofful· & so it bihoo
nep to be doon: do she pat pt
she wole/ she synep not: if
she be wedded/ for he pat ordey
ned stabli in his herte· not ha
uynge nede· but hauynge po
wer of his wille & hap demed
in his herte· pis yng to kepe his
vgly: doop wel/ pfor he pat 3yf
uep his vgyn in matrimonye: doop
wel & he pt 3yuep not: doop bette
pe woman is bounde to pe lawe:
as lõge tyme as her housebonde
lyuep/ & if her housebõde is deed·
she is delyuerid fro pe lawe
of pe housebõde· be she wedded
to whom she wole· oneli in pe
lord but she shal be more bles
sid: if she dwellip pus after my
counsel/ & y wene pat y haue
pe spirit of god

¶ But of pese yngis pt
ben sacrified to idols:
we witen· for alle we
haue kunnyng/ but kunnyng

C. viij.

blowyp: chastite edefieth but if o
ny man gessip þt he kan ony þing.
he hath not zit knowe hou it bilo
ueth hi to kunne / & if ony man lo
eth god: þis is knowyn of him
but of metis þat ben offrid to
idols: we wite þat an idol is no
þing i þe world & þat þ is no
god: but oon / for þouz þer ben
liuynge þat be seid goddis · eþ in
heuene eþ i erþe · as þ ben ma
ny goddis & many lordis: neþe
les to us is o god / þe fadir of
whom be alle þingis: & we in hi
& o lord ihu crist: bi whom be alle
þingis: & we bi hi / but not in
alle mo is knowyng / for sum men
wiþ conscience of idol / til now
eten as þing offrid to idols /
& her conscience is defoulid: for
it is sijk / mete comendiþ us n
ot to god / for neþer we schulen
fayle: if we eten not / neþer if
we eten: we schulen haue plen
tee / but se 3e left peraunetir
þis 3oure leeue: be war lest
tyng to sijke men / for if ony m
an schal se hi þat hab knowyng
etynge i a place wher idols be
worschipid: whedir his conscience
sipen it is sijke schal not be ede
fied to ete þingis offrid to id
ols: & þe sijk brop̄r for whom
crist diede: schal perische i þi
knowyng / for þus 3e synnynge

azeins bretheren · and smytynge
her sijke conscience: 3yuen aze
no crist wherfor if mete sclan
dritz my brop̄r: y schal neuer ete
fleisch · lest y sclaundre my brop̄r

Whedir y am not fre · am
y not apostle: whedir
y sey not crist ihu oure
lord: whedir 3e ben not my werk
i þe lord: & þouz to oþre y am not
apostle: but nepeles to 3ou y am
for 3e ben þe title signe of myn
apostlehed i þe lord / my defens
to hem þat axen me: þis / whedir
we haue not power to ete and
drynke: whedir we haue not pow
er to lede about a wymman a sist̄r:
as also oþre apostlis & bretheren
of þe lord & cefas: or y alone
& barnabas: haue not power
to worchje þese þingis: who euer
eliþ ony tyme wiþ his owne
wagis: who plantiþ a vyneze
rd: & etiþ not of his fruyt: who
kepiþ a flock: & etiþ not of þe
mylk of þe flock: whedir aft
man y seie þe þingis: whedir al
so þe lawe seiþ not þes þingis:
for it writun i þe lawe of moises
þat þou schalt not bynde þe mo
up of þe oxe þat preschiþ / whedir
of oxun is dyscharge to god: whedir
for us he seiþ þese þingis: for whi-
þo ben writun for us / for he þt
eriþ: oweþ to ere i hope / & he

pat preisthip: in hope to take
fruptis if we sowe spirituall
pingis to zou: it is it grete if
we repen zoure fleisly pingis:
if ope be partyneris of zoure
power: why not rap we: but
we vsen not pis power/ but
we suffre alle pingis: pt we
zyue no lettyng to pe euangeli
e of cst/ wrte ze not pt pei pt
worchen i pe tple: eten po pi
ngis pat be of pe tple: and
pei pat serue to pe awt: ben
partyneres of pe awt/ so pe
lord ordeyned to hem pat telle
pe gospel: to lyue of pe gospel
but y vside noon of pese pingis/
sopely y wrot not pese pingis:
pat po be doon so i me/ for it
is good to me rap to die: pan
pat ony man schal make my glorie
for if y preche pe gospel: glorie
is not to me/ for nedelich y am
ot dou it/ ffor wo to me: if y
preche not pe gospel/ but if y do
pis ping wilfuly: y haue mede
ede/ but if azens my wille:
dispendyng is betaki to me/
what pane is my mede:/ pat
y prechynge pe gospel: putte pe
gospel wip outen oures cost· pt
y vse not my power i pe gosp
el/ for whi whanne y was fre
of alle men: y made me serua
nt of alle men· to wynne pe mo
ne/ and to iewis y am maad
as a iew: to wynne pe iewis/ to
hem pat ben vndir pe lawe· as y
were vndir pe lawe· whanne y
was not vndir pe lawe: to whym
ne hem pat were vndir pe lawe/
to hem pat were wip out lawe·
as y were wip out pe lawe· whan
ne y was not wip out pe lawe
of god· but y was i pe lawe of
crist: to wynne hem pat were
wip out lawe/ y am maad like
to lyke men: to wynne like ne/
to alle men y am maad alle pyn
gis: to make alle men saaf/ but
y do alle pingis for pe gospel: pt
y be maad parten of it/ witen
ze not pt pei pat renen i a furlong·
alle renen· but oon takip pe pris/
so renne ze: pat ze cache/ ech man
pat stryuep i fyzt: abstenep hym
fro alle pingis/ and pei take a cor
uptible coroune: but we han
vncorrupt/ pfor y renne so· not
as i to vncertyn ping· pus y fy3
te not as betynge pe eir: but
y chastise my body and brynge it
i to seruage/ lest peraunture
whanne y preche to opere: y my
self be maad reprouable

Briben y vnple pat ze vn
knowe: pat alle oure
fadris were vndir
cloude/ and alle passiden pe see: and
alle were baptisid i moyses·

C. xx.

in ye clonde and in ye ſee/ And
alle eeten ye ſame ſpiritual mee
te: & alle dronken ye ſame ſpirit
ual drynke/ yei dronke of ye ſpi
ritual ſtoon: folewynge hē/ & ye
ſtoon was cſt/ but not i ful ma
nye of hē: it was wel pleſaūt
to god/ forwhy yei were caſt
doū i deſert/ but yeſe pingꝭ wē
don i figure of us: pat we be
not coueitevs of yuel pingis·
as yei coueitidē/ neyþer be ze maad
ydolatrevs as sūme of hē: as
it is writtē/ pe puple sat to ete
& dryuke: & yei risē up to pleie/
neyþer do we fornicacioū as sūme
of hē diden fornicacioū: & pre
& twenty powsyndis were dede
i o day/ neyþer tempte we cſt· as sū
me of hē temptiden: & perisshi
dē of serpentis/ neyþer grutche
ze as sūme of grutchidē: And
yei perisshidē of a distrier/ &
alle yeſe pingis befallidē to hē
i figure/ but yei ben writtē
to oure amēdyng: i to whom
ye endis of ye worldis ben co
mē/ þerfore he yat gessiþ hī þt
he stondey: se he yat he falle
not/ temptacioū take not zou:
but mānȳ temptacioū/ for god
is trewe which shal not suf
fre zou to be temptid: aboue
þt þat ze moū/ but he shal
make wiþ temptacioū also pur

vyaūce: þat ze moū suffre/
Wherfor ze most dere wel
to me: flee ze fro worshipyng
of mawmetis/ as to prudent
mē y speke: deme ze zou silf
pat ping yat y seie/ whych ye
cuppe of blessing which we ble
ssen: is not ye comynyng of
cristis blood: & whych ye breed
which we breken: is not ye ta
kyng of ye body of ye lord: for
we manyye bē o breed & o body:
Alle we yat takē part of o
breed & of o cuppe/ se ze israel
after ye fleisshly/ whych yei yat
eeten sacrifices ben not parte
neris of ye auter: What þerfor
seie y yat a ping yat is offrid
to ydols is ouy ping· or yat ye
idol is ouy ping: but þo ping
is yat heyene mē offrē: yei
offrē to deuelis & not to god/
but y wyle yat ze be maad felo
wis of feendis/ for ze moū not
dryuke ye cuppe of ye lord: &
ye cuppe of feendis ze moū
not be parteneris of ye boord
of ye lord: & of ye boord of fe
ndis/ whych we han ēnye to ye
lord: Whych we be strēgere pan
he: Alle pingis bē leeueful to
me: but not alle pingis ben
spedeful/ alle pingis bē leeful
to me: but not alle pingis ede
fien/ no mā seke yat ping þt

is his owne: but þat þing þat is of an ope) al þing þat is sold i þe bocherie ete ze: axinge no þing for cõscience þe erþe & þe plente of it: is þe lordis) & if o ny of ouy of heyene mẽ clepiþ zou to soper· & ze wolẽ go: al þig þat is set to zou ete ze· axinge no þing for consience but if o ny mã seiþ vis þing is offrid to mawmis: nyle ze ete for hi þat shewide & for cõscience) & y seie not þi cõscience: but of an ope but wherto is ny fredom demed of an ope mãn? cõscience: þfore if y take part wiþ grace: what am y blaspemyd: for þat þat y do pancking is: þfor whe þ ze eten or drynken· or don ouy op þing: do ze alle þingis i to þe glorie of god: be ze wiþ ou tẽ sclaundre to iewis & to heyẽ & to þe chirche of god: as y bi alle þingis plese to alle mẽ not seking þat þat is profi table to manye men· þat þei be maad saaf

Be ze my folewers· as y am of crist) & breþren y þise zou· þat bi alle þingis ze ben mynde ful of me· & as y bitok to zou my comaũ dementis ze holdẽ) but y wole þat ze wite: þat crist is heed of ech mã but þe heed of þe wõman: is þe man & þe heed of crist: is god) ech mã þrynge or pro ficiynge· whane his heed is hi lid: defoulip his heed but ech wyhõmã þrynge or profeciynge whane hir heed is not hilid: de foulip hir heed) for it is oon: as if she were pollid) & if awõmã be not kenerid: be she pollid) & if it is foul þing to a wõman to be pollid· or to be maad bal lid: hile she hir heed but a mã shal not hile his heed: for he is þe ymage & þe glorie of god but a wõmã is þe glorie of mã for a mã is not of þe wõmã: but þe wõmã of þe mã & þe mã is not maad for þe wõmã: but þe wõmã for þe mã þfor þe wõmã shal haue an yelyng on hir heed also for aungelis) nepeles nei þe mã is wiþ oute wõmã: nei þe wõmã is wiþout mã i þe lord· for wiþ as þe wõ mã is of mã: so þe mã is bi þe wõmã but alle þingis ben of god) deme ze zou silf bise myþ it a wõmã not heliid on þe heed to þe god: nei þe kynde it silf techiþ us) for if a mã nurche longe heer: it is schenschipe to hi) but if a wõmã nurche lon ge heer: it is glorie to hir· for heer is ȝouñ to hir for keue rynge but if ony mã is sepn

to be ful of stryfe: we han non
liche cristē· nei þ̄ þe chirche of god
bint þis þing y counsaile· not þ̄
longe· þat ze comē to gidē not in
to þe betē: bint ī to worse/ first
for whanne ze comē to gidere in
to þe chirche: þ here þat discēci
ons ben ī party y bileue/ for
it behoueþ ereſies to be: þt þei
þat ben preued ben openly kno
wn ī zou/ þfor whanne ze comen
to gidere ī to oon: now it is not
to ete þe lordis soper/ for whi
ech man biforn takiþ his soper to
ete/ and oon is hungry: and an o þe
is drunken/ whei þ ze han not ho
uses to ete and drynke: or ze dis
pise þe chirche of god· and confoundē
he þat han none: what shal
y seie to zou: y þise zou: but he
re in y þise zou not ffor y han
take of þe lord· þat þing
which y haue bitakē to zou/ for
þe lord ihū· ī what nyzt he was
bitraied: took breed and dide þa
nkyngis and brak and seide/ take
ze and ete ze: þis is my body wh
ich shal be bitraied for zou/
do ze þis þing ī to my mynde/
Also þe cuppe· after þat he hadde
soupid: and seide/ þis cuppe is þe
newe testamēt ī my blood/ do
ze þis þing· as ofte as ze shu
len drynke ī to my mynde/ for
as ofte as ze shulē ete þis bre
ed· and shulen drynke þe cuppe:
ze shulē telle þe dep of þe lord·
til þat he come/ þfore who eu
etiþ þe breed· or drynkeþ þe cup
þe of þe lord vnworthily: he sh
al be guilty of þe body and of þe blo
od of þe lord/ but preue a man
hī silf: and so ete he of þe ilke bre
ed· and drynke of þe cuppe/ for he
þat etiþ and drynkiþ vnworthily:
etiþ and drynkiþ doom to hī· not
wisely demynge þe body of þe
lord/ þfor among zou many be
like and feble: and many slepen/ and
if we demedē wisely us silf:
we shuldē not be demyd/ but
whyle we bē demed of þe lord·
we bē chastisid: þat we be not
dampnyd with þis world/ þfor
my briþren whanne ze comen to
gidē to ete: abidē ze to gidere
if ony man hungriþ: ete he at
home· þt ze come not to gidē
ī to doom/ and y shal dispose
o þe þingis: whanne y come
But of spiritual þing
is· briþren y wile þat
ze witen þat whanne ze weren
heþene men: how ze werē led
goyng to dombe maumetis
tis/ þfor y make knowūn to
zou· þat no man spekinge
ī þe spirit of god: seiþ depar
tyng fro ihū/ and no man may

sere pe lord ihū: but in pe hoo
ly goost & dyuise graces þ ben:
but it is al oon spirit & diuise
seruyses þ bē: but it is al oon
lord & diuise worchyngis þ bē:
but al is oon god pat worchip
alle pingis i alle pingis & to
ech man pe shewyng of spirit
is ȝouē to profit pe word of
wisdom is ȝouē: to oon bi spi
rit to an oþ pe word of kunyp
ng: bi pe same spirit ffeiþ
to an oþ: i pe same spirit to
an ope: grace of heelpis in o
spirit to an ope: pe worchig
of vtues to an oþ: profecie
to an oþ: verry: knowing of
spiritis to an oþ: kyndis of la
ngagis to an oþ: expowynyng
of wordis & oon & pe same spi
rit worchip alle pese pingis:
departinge to ech bi hem silf
as he wole for as þ is o body
& hap many membris & alle pe
membris of pe body: whanne
po ben manye: bē oo body: so
also crist for i o spirit alle we
bē baptisid i to o body: eþer iew
is eþ hepene eþ seruauntis eþ
free & alle we bē fillid wiþ
drynk i o spirit for pe body is
not o membre: but manye if
pe foot seiþ for þ am not pe ho
nd þ am not of pe body not
þfor it is not of pe bodye & if
pe ere seiþ for þ am not pe ize
þ am not of pe bodi: not þfor it
is not of pe body if al pe body
is pe ize: where is herynge: & if
al pe body is hering: where is
smellinge but now god hap sett
membris & ech of hē i pe body as
he wolde þt if alle were o membre:
where were pe bodi: but now
þ ben many membris: but o body
& pe ize may not seie to pe hond:
I haue no nede to pi werkes or
eft pe heed to pe feet: ze bē not
necessarie to me but mychel more
po þt ben seyn to be pe lowere
membris of po body: bē more ne
dedful & pilke þt we gessen to be
vnworpier membris of pe body:
we ȝiuē more honō to hē & po
membris pat bē vnhonest: han
more honeste for oure honest
membris: han nede of noon
but god tēperide pe body ȝiuy
nge more worship to it to whō
it failide: pat debate be not
i pe body but pat pe membris
be bisi i to pe same ping ech for
ope & if o membre suffery ony
ping: alle membris suffrē þ wiþ
eþ if o membre ioyep: alle mem
bris ioyen to gidere & ze ben
pe body of crist & membris of m
embre but god sette sūmen
i pe chirche first apostlis pe
secoūde tyme prophetis pe

pridde techeris · Afterward vtt
es: afterward graces of heelyng
is · helpyngis · gouernaylis · kyndi
is of langagis · interpretacions
of wordis / whiche alle Apostolis:
whiche alle profetis: / whiche alle
techeris: / whiche vttres · whi
che alle mē han grace of heelin
gis · whiche alle speken with lan
gagis / whiche alle expownen: /
but sue ze pe bete goostly ziftis /
& zit y shewe to zou ouure
excellent weie

C. xiij. If y speke with tungis of mē
& of aungels · & y haue not cha
rite: y am maad as bras sow
ynge · or a cymbal tynkynge /
& if y haue prophecie · & knowe
alle mistries · & al kunyng · & if
y haue al feip · so pat y meue
hilles fro her place · & y haue
not charite: y am nouyt / & if
y departe alle my goodis in to pe
metis of pore mē · & if y bitake
my body · so pat y brēne · & if y
haue not charite: it profitip
to me no ping / charite is pacy
ent / it is benygne · charite en
yep not / it doip not wickidly ·
it is not blowen · it is not cone
itous · it sekip not po pingis
pat ben hise owne / it is not
stirid to wrappe · it penkip
not puel · it ioyp. ioyep not
on wickidnesse · but it ioyep
to gidere to trewpe it suffrip
alle pingis · it bileuep alle pyn
gis / it hopep alle pingis · it
sustenep alle pingis / charite
fallip neuere doun / whepr profec
ies schulē be voidid · ep langa
gis schulē ceesse: ep science sch
al be distried / for apartp we
knowe: & apartp we profecie /
but whanne pat schal comen pt
is parfit: pat ping pat is of
partp schal be anoidid / whanne
y was a litil child: y spak as
a litil child · y vndirstood as a
litil child · y pouzte as a litil child /
but whanne y was maad a mā:
y anoidide po pingis pat were
of a litil child / & we seen now
bi a mirrour · in derknesse: but
pānne face to face / now y kno
we of partī: but pānne y schal
knowe · as y am knowen / And
now dwellē feip hope & charī
te · pese pre · but pe moost of
pese is charite

Sue ze charite · loue ze C. xiiij
spiritual pingis: but
more pat ze prophecien /
And he pat spekip in tunge: spe
kip not to mē but to god / for
no man herip / but pe spirit
spekip misteries / for he pat pro
fecip: spekip to mē edificacioun to
& monestyng & cōfortyng / he
pat spekip in tunge: edefiep hi

silf / but he pat profecaep: edefi
ep pe chirche of god / & pwole pat
alle ze speke in tũgis: but moze
pat ze profecaẽ / for he pat profe
caep: is moze pan he pat spekip
i langagis / but peraũture he
expowne: pat pe chirche take
edificacoũ / but nowe bripẽ if
pcome to zou & speke i langages:
what shal p profite to zou: / but
if p speke to zou: ep̃ i reuelacoũ
ep̃ i science · ep̃ i profecaẽ ep̃ i te
chig / ffor po pingis pat ben
wipouten soule · & zeuep voices:
ep̃ pipe ep̃ harpe · but po zif pou
distincioũ of sowngis: how
shal it be knowñ pat is sũgñ ·
ep̃ pat pat is trũpid: / ffor if a
trũpe zif an vncerteyn sõũe: wh
o shal make hi silf redy to ba
tel: / so but ze zifẽ an oppyn word
bi tũge: how shal pat pat is
seid be knowñ: / ffor ze shulen
be spekyng i veyn / p̃ ben mã
ny kyndis of langages i pis
world: & no ping is wipouten
vois / but if p knowe not pe ver
tu of a vois: p shal be to hi to
whom p shal speke Abarbar
ik / & he pat spekip to me: shal
be abarbarik / soze for ze ben
loueris of spiritis seke ze pat
pat ze be plẽteuouse: to edifi
cacioñ of pe chirche / & p̃ for he
pat spekip i langage: pie pat
he expowne / ffor if p pie i tũge:
my spirit pieip / my vndirston
ding is wipoutẽ fruyt / what
pãne: / p shal pie i spirit: p shal
pie i mynde / p shal seie salm
i spirit: p shal seie salm also i
mynde / for if p̃ blessist i spirit:
who fillip pe place of an idiot /
hou shal he seie amẽ on pi bles
sing: for he woot not what pou
seist: / for pou doist wel panck
yngis: but an oper man is n
ot edefied / p̃ I pancke my god:
for I speke i pe langage of alle
zou / but i pe chirche I wole spe
ke fyue wordis i my wit · pat
also I teche op̃ mẽ: pã ten pous
dis of wordis i tũge / bripen
nyle ze be maad childrẽ i wit
tis: but i malice be ze childrẽ /
but i wittis: be ze parfit / for i
pe lawe it is writũ / pat i ope
tũgis & ope lippis p shal speke
to pis puple: & nep̃ so pei shulẽ
heve me · seip pe lord / p̃ for langa
ges ben i tokene not to feipful
mẽ: but to mẽ out of pe feip /
but profecies bẽ not to men
out of pe feip: but to feipful
mẽ / p̃ for if al pe chirche come
to gidre i to oon · & alle mẽ spekẽ
i tũgis · if idiotis ep̃ mẽ out
of pe feip entrẽ: whep̃ pei sh
lẽ not seie · what bẽ ze woode:
but if alle mẽ profesien · if

ony vnfeipful man or idiot entre: he is cõpict of alle· he is wisely demed of alle/ for pe hid pingis of his hert ben knowñ/ & so he shal falle doñ on pe face: and shal worshipe god & shewe vnly: pat god is i zou/ wip pãne vripen: wip ãne ze comẽ to gidẽ: ech of zou hap a salm· he hap teching· he hap apocalip· he hap tũge he hap expowning: alle pingis bẽ wel doon to edificacioñ/ whep a man spekip i tũge: bi two ouper pre at pe moost· & bi parties· pat oon interprete/ but if þ he not an interpitour: be he stille i pe chirche/ & speke he to hi silf & to god/ prophetis twey ne pre seie: & ope wisely deme/ but if ony ping be shewid to a sitter: pe forme be stille/ for ze mown profecie alle· ech bi hi silf: pat alle mẽ lurne· & al moneste/ & pe spiritis of profetis: ben suget to profetis/ for whi god is not of distencioñ: but of pees/ as in alle chirchis of hooly men p teche ¶ wymẽ i chirchis ben stille/ for it is not suffrid to hem to speke: but to be suget as pe lawe seip/ but if pei wolẽ ony ping lurne: at home aske pei her housebondis/ for it is foule ping to a wom̃a: to speke i chir che/ whepir of zou pe word of god cam forp: oper to zou aloone it cam: / if ony man is seyn to be a prophete oper spiritual: knowe he po pingis pat y write to zou· for po bẽ pe comaũdemẽtis of pe lord & if ony man knowip: he shal be vnknowñ/ þfor bripren loue ze to profesie: & nyle ze forbede to speke i tũgis/ but be alle pingis doon onestely and bi ordre in zou

¶ Bripren y make pe gospel knowñ to zou: which y haue þchid to zou· pe which also ze han takñ· i which ze stondẽ· also bi which ze shulẽ be sauyd/ bi which resoñ y haue þchid to zou if ze holden: if ze han not bileyd idely/ for y bitook to zou at pe bigynyng· pat ping which also y haue receyued· pat crist was deed for oure synnis· bi pe scripturis· & pat he was biried & pat he roos azen i pe pridde day after scripturis· & pat he was seyn to cefas: & after pese pingis to enleuene/ afterward he was seyn to mo pan fyue hundrid bripren to gidre: of whiche ma nye lyuen3it· but sum ben deed afterward he was seyn to iames· & afterward to alle pe apostlis/ & laste of alle he was sey also to me: as to a deed born child/

for y am ye leste of Apostlis · yt
y am not worpi to be clepid A
postle: for y pursuyde pe chur
che of god but bi pe grace of
god y am pat ping pat y am
& his grace was not voide in
me: for y trauelide more plê
teuously pan alle pei but not
y: but pe grace of god wip me
but whepr y or pei· so we han
chid: & so ze han bileuyd & if
crist is pchid· pat he roos azen
fro deep: how seien sum ê am
ong zou· pat pe azenrisyng
of deed mê is not: & if pe azê
risyng of deed mê is not: ney
crist roos azen fro dep & if
crist roos not: oure pchyng is
veyn· oure feip is veyn and
we be foundn false witnessis
of god· for we han seid witn
essing azenys god· pat he reisi
de crist· whom he reisede not:
if deed mê risen not azen for
whi if deed mê risen not azê:
ney crist roos azen & if crist roos
not azen: oure feip is veyn &
zit ze ben in zoure synnys & pânе
pei pat han dede in crist: han
perischid if in pis lyf onely
we ben hopinge in crist: we bê
more wrecchis pan alle mê
but now crist roos azê fro deep:
pe firste fruyt of deed men
for dep was bi a mn & by an

an is azenrisyng fro deep and
as in adam alle mê dien: so in crist
alle mê schulê be quykenyd
but ech mn in his ordre· pe firste
fruyt crist· afterward pei pat ben
of crist· pt bileuyde in pe comyng
of crist afterward an ende: whanne
he schal bitake pe kingdom to
god & to pe fadir: whanne he sch
al avoide al purchood & power
& vtu but it bihouep him to reg
ne: til he putte alle his enemy
es vndir his feet & at pe laste·
dep pe enemye schal be distried
for he hap maad suget alle pin
gis vndir his feet & whanne
he seip· alle pingis ben suget
to him· wipoutê doute out takê
him pat sugetide alle pingis to
him & whanne alle pingis ben
suget to him: panne pe sone of
him silf schal be suget to him· pat
made suget alle pingis to him·
pat god be alle pingis in alle pi
ngis / ellis what schulê pei do
pat bê baptisid for deed men:
if in no wise· dede mê risê azen
wherto ben pei baptisid for hê·
& wherto ben we in perel euy
owrech day y die for zoure glor
ie bripren: which glorie y have
in crist ihu oure lord if aftr man
y have fouztê to beestis at efesy:
what profitip it to me· if deed
mê risen not azen: ete we &

drynke we: for we shulen die
to morowe/ vpleze be dilleyned
for yuel speches distrien good
pelpis/ awake ze ryst nē: & vp
le ze do sȳne/ for sūme hau ig
noraūce of god: bint to reuen
ce y speke to zou ¶ bint sūmā
seip/ how shulē deed mē rise
azen: oz ¦ with what mañ body sh
ulē pei come/ vnwise mā· pat
ping ꝑt ꝑ lowist is not quyke
nyd: bint it die first/ and pat
ping pat pou sowist· pou sow
ist not pe body pat is to come:
bint a nakid coꝛn as of whete
oz sū oꝑe seedis/ & god zineb to
it a body as he wole: & to ech
of seedis a propir body/ not
ech fleisch is pe same fleisch:
bint oon is of mē· an oꝑe is of
beestis· an oꝑe is of briddis·
an oꝑe of fischis/ & henēly bo
dyes ben: & erpely bodies bē/
bint oon glorie is of henēly
bodies: & an oꝑ is of erpely/
an oꝑe clereuesse is of pe sūne·
an oꝑe clereuesse is of pe mo
one: & an oꝑ clereuesse is ster
ris/ & a stere dyuersip fro a stere
i clereuesse: & so pe azenrisig
of dede mē/ it is sowū i coꝛr
upcioū: it shal rise i vncoꝛr
upcioū/ it is sowū i vnoblep:
it shal rise i glorie/ it is sow
ū in infirmyte: it shal rise i
vertu/ it is sowū a beestly bo
dy: it shal vpse a spiritual body
if ꝑ is a beestly body: ꝑ is also
a spiritual body· as it is wri
tū/ pe first mā adam was mā
ad i to a lonle lyuynge: pe laste
adam i to a spirit quykenynge/
but pe first is not ꝑt pat is spi
ritual: but pat ꝑt is beestly·
afterward· ꝑt pat is spiritual/
pe first mā of erpe: is erpely/
pe secōde mā of henene: is
henēly/ such as pe erpely mā
is: suche bē pe erpely mē/ and
such as pe henēly mā is: suche
bē also pe henēly mē/ ꝑfore as
we han bore pe ymage of pe
erpely mā: here we also pe ym
age of pe henenly/ bripen· y
seie pis ping/ pat fleisch & blo
od moū not welde pe kingdō
of god/ nep coꝛrupcioū shal
welde vncoꝛrupcioū/ lo y seie
to zou ꝑpyte of hooly pigh/ & alle
we shulē rise azen: but not
alle we shulē be chaūgid/ in a
mounēt i pe twynklyng of an
ye· i pe laste trūpe/ ffor pe trū
pe shal sowne: & deed mē shu
len rise azen wip outē coꝛrupci
oū· & we shulē be chaūgid/ for
it bihoueb pis coꝛruptible ping
to clope vncoꝛrupcioū: & pis ded
ly ping to putte awey vndedly
nesse/ but whanne pis dedly pig

shal clope vndedlynesse: pane
shal pe word be don pat is wri
tē dep is sopē up i victorie/ dep
where is pi victorie: dep wher
is pi pricke: but pe pricke of
dep: is sinne & pe vertu of sin
ne: is pe lawe/ but do we pane
kingis to god: pat 3af to us vic
torie: bi oure lord ihū crist/ pfor
my derewor3e breyren· be3e
stedfast & vnmouable· beynge
plēte nouȝ i werk of pe lord eū
more wityng pat 3oure tra
uel is not ydel i pe lord

But of gaderingis of
money pat ben ma
d i to seyntis· as y
ordeyned in pe chirchis of
galathie: so also 3ē do 3e o day
of pe wouke/ eche of 3ou kepe
at hym silf· keping pat pat
plesip to hī: pat whane y com
e pe gaderingis be not maad/
& whane y shal be ꝑsent· whi
che me3e ꝑuen: y shal sende
he bi epistlis to bere 3oure
grace i to ierlm/ pat if it be
worpi· pat also y go: pei shu
le go wip me/ but y shal com
e to 3ou: whane y shal passe
bi macedoyne· for whi y shal
passe bi macedoyne/ but per
auēture y shal dwelle at 3ou·
or also dwelle pe wynt·: pt 3e
lede me whidur euer y shal

go/ and y wole not now se 3ou
in my passing/ for y hope to dw
elle wip 3ou a while: if pe lord
shal suffre/ but y shal dwelle
at efesy: til to witsūtide/ ffor
a gret doze & an oppn is ope
nyd to me: & many aduersaries/
& if tymothe come: se3e pat
he be wipoute drede wip 3ou/
for he worchip pe werk of pe
lord: as y/ ꝑfor no mā dispise
hī but lede 3e hī forp i pees: pt
he come to me/ ffor y abide hī
wip bretheren/ but bretheren y ma
ke knowē to 3ou of apollo: pt
y ꝑiede hī myche· pt he shulde
come to 3ou wip bretheren/ but it
was not his wille: to come nowȝ
but he shal come: whanne he
shal haue leyser· wake 3e
& stonde 3e i fey: do 3e manly·
& be 3e confortid i pe lord· & be
alle 3oure pingis don i charite/
& bretheren y biseche 3ou· 3e kno
wē pe hous of stephan· & of
fortunati & achaici· for pei bē
pe firste fruytis of achaie/ &
i to mynistrie of seyntis pei
han ordeyned hē silf: pt also
3e bē subgetis to suche· & to
eche werchinge to gidere & tra
uelinge/ ffor y haue ioie i pe
ꝑsence of stephan· & of fortu
nate & achaici: for pei fulfilde
pat ping pat failide to 3ou

for pei han refreisshid boye my
spirit & youre / pfore knowe ze hẽ
pat bẽ suche men mẽ alle pe
chirchis of asie; gretenzon wb
el aquyla & prisca wip her hous
ely chirche gretẽ zou mychel in
pe lord: at pe whiche also y am
herbeted / alle bripen gretenu
zon wel gretezewel to gidere·
ī holy cos / my gretyng bi pon
lis hond if ony mā loney not
oure lord ihū cſt: be he cursid
maran atha / pe grace of oure
lord ihū cſt: be wip zou / my cha
rite be wip zou alle ī cſt ihū
oure lord Amẽ ¶ Here endip
pe firste pistle to corinthies &
here bigynnep a prologe on
pe secõde pistle to corinthies·

Ethu-peuaūce doon:
poul writip to corin
thies apistle of cōfo
rt· fro troade bi titus / and he
pisep hem: & exitip to bete pi
ugis / and shewip pat pei we
ren maad sorp: but Amen
did ¶ Jerom in his prolo
ge on pis pistle: seip pis:

exitip

C.p.

Poul apostle of ihū
crist· bi pe wille of
god· & tymothe bi
oper: to pe chirche
of god pat is at corīthip wip
alle seyntis pat bē ī al achie·
grace to zou & pees of god ou
re fadir· and of pe lord ihū crist
blessid be god & pe fadir of oure
lord ihū cſt: fadir of mercies and
god of al comfort / which comfor
tip us ī al oure tribulacoū: pat
also we moū comforte hem· pt ben
ī al disese· bi pe monestyng by
which also we ben monestid of
god / for as pe passiouns of crist
bē plenteuouse ī us: so also bi
cſt oure comfort is plētenouse
& whep we bē ī tribulacoū: for
youre tribulacoū & heelpe / eper
we bē comfortid: for oure comfort
ep we bē monestid: for oure
monestīg & heelpe / which wor
chip ī zou pe suffrīng of pe sa
me passiouns which also we
suffren: pat oure hope be sad
for zou / wetinge· for as ze ben
felowis of passiouns: so ze shu
le bē also of comfort / ffor
bripen we wolē pat ze wite· of
oure tribulacoū pat was don
ī Alye / for ou mā we were
greued ouer myzt: so pat it a
nopede us zhe to lyue / but we
ī us silf hadde answer of dey:
pat we triste not ī us but ī god
pat veisip deed mē which dely
ueride us· & delyuerip fro so
grete perelis: ī to whom we
hopen / also zit he shal delyuie:
while also ze helpē ī pier for
us / pat of pe persones of ma

ny faces: of pat ꝑyng pat is
ns panckingis ben don for us
bi many mẽ to god for oure gl
orie is pis: pe witnessing of
oure conscience pat i symplenes
se & clennesse of god & not i fleisly
ly wisdom: but i pe grace of god
we lyuedẽ i pis world but mo
re plẽteuously to zou & we wri
ten not oþe þingis to zou: þan
þo þat ze han red & knowe & y
hope þat i to þe ende ze schulẽ
knowe: as also ze han knowe
us apart/ for we ben zoure
glorie: as also ze ben oure i þe
day of oure lord ihũ cẽst & ni
þis trist̃eþing y wolde first
come to zou: þat ze schuldẽ hane
þe secoũde grace & passe bizou
i to macedoyne: & eft fro mace
doyne come to zou & of zou be
led i to iudee/ but wh̃ane y wol
de þis þing: wheþ̃ y vse vnst
idefastnesse: eþ̃ þo þingis þat
y penke þ̃ penke aft̃ þe fleisch:
þat at me be it is & it is not/
but god is trewe for oure word
þat was at zou is & it is not is
not þ̃ fine but is is nay/ forwhi
ihũ cẽst þe sone of god which is
þ̃chid among zou bi us bi me
& siluan & tymothe þ̃ was not
yhi is & is not: but is was in
hym/ forwhi hou many euer be
bihestis of god: i hym is ben
fulfillid/

And þfor bi hym we seien Amen
to god: to oure glorie/ lo þely it is
god þat cõfermeþ us wiþ zou in
crist & þe which god anoyntide
us & which marked us & zaf
erues of þe spirit i oure hertis/
for y dreþe god to witnesse azen
my soule: þat y sparinge zou
am not out to comynge/ not þat
we ben lordis of zoure iope:
but we ben helperis of zoure
ferþ/ for þorwiz bileue ze stondẽ
¶ iij
And y ordeyne þis þing
at me: þat y schulde
not come eftsoone in
heuynesse to zou/ for if y make
zou sory: who is he þat gladiþ
me: but he þat sorewful of me/
& þis same þing y wrote to zou
þat whanne y come: y hane not
sorewe on sorewe of þe which
it bihofte me to hane iope/ & y
triste in zou alle: þat my iope
is of alle zou/ for of myche tri
lacioũ & anguisch of herte: y
wrote to zou bi many teeris/ n
ot þat ze be sori but þat ze wite
what charite y hane more plen
teuously in zou/ ffor if ony
man hap maad me sorewful:
he hap not maad me sorewful
but apart þat y charge not
zou alle/ þis blamyng þat is
maad of manye: sufficiþ to hi
þat is such oon/ so þat azen

fulfillid

ward: ze may̆ forgyne & comforte
lest per auẽture the pat is lyche
amam̃ mã: be sorỹ by more
grete & hemynesse/ for which
thyng y bisechje zou: pat ze cõfer
me charite ẽ to hĩ/ forwhi per
for y wroot pis: pat y knowe
zoure pue. whep̆ ẽ alle thyngis
ze bẽ obedient/ ffor to whõze
han forgyne ouy thyng: also y
thane forgyne/ for y pat pt̃y for
zaf. zif y forzaf ouy thyng: tha
ne zoum̃ for zou ẽ the persoone
of crist/ pat we be not disceyu
ed of satha nas/ for we knowe
his ponztis/ but whane y wat
comm̃ to trowde for pe gospel
of ẽst & a dore was openyd to
me ẽ the lord: y hadde not reste
to my spirit. for y foud not
my brop̆ tite/ but y leide to hẽ
fare wel: & y passide ẽ to ma
cedonye/ & y do pankingis to
god pat euere more makip̆ us
to thane victorie ẽ ẽst ihũ: And
shewip̆ bi us pe odour of his
knowyng ẽ ech place/ for we
ben pe good odour of ẽst to god.
among pese pat ben maad sa
af: & among pese pat perishẽ
to ope sopely odour of deep m
to deep: but to pe ope we ben
odour of lif ẽ to lif/ & to pese
thingis: who is so able:/ ffor
we ben not as many pat don

amontrie bi pe word of god: but
we speken of cleenesse. as of god.
bifore god in crist

B gyuen we pfore eft so
one to pise us lik: or
whepere we neden as
sum̃en pistlis of pynge: to
zou or of zou: ze bẽ oure pistle.
writtẽ ẽ oure herte: which is
knowẽ & red of alle mẽ/ And
maad opyn for ze bẽ pe pistle
of ẽst: mynistride of us/ & wr
itẽ not wip enke: but bi pe
spirit of pe lyuynge god/ not
ẽ stonyn tablis: but ẽ fleischly
tablis of herte/ for we han such
trist bi ẽst to god. not pat we
ben sufficient to penke ouy
thyng of us as of us: but our
sufficience is of god/ which
also made us able mynystris
of pe newe testamẽt: not bi
lettre but bi spirit/ for pe lett
re sleep: but pe spirit quyke
nep̆/ & if pe mynistracioñ of
dep̆ wrypte bi lettris ẽ stonyn
was ẽ glorie/ so pat pe childre
of israel myzte not biholde ẽ
to pe face of moyses: for pe
glorie of his cheer. which is
anoidid/ hou shal not pe my
nistracioñ of pe spirit be more
ẽ glorie: for if pe mynystraci
oñ of dampnacioñ was ẽ glori:
mychje more pe mynistrie of

rightwisnesse is pleteuouse in
glorie for nep pat pt was deer:
was glorified i pis part for pe
excellet glorie / if pat pt is a
noiding was bi glorie: unpche in
ce pt pat dwellip stille. is in
glorie / pfore we pat han siche
hope: usen mpche trist / if not as
moises lepde a vepl on his face:
pat pe childre of israel shulde
not biholde i to his face / which
veil is anoiding: but pe wittis
of he ben a stonyed / for i to pis
day: pe same veil i reding of
pe olde testamet dwellip not
shewid. for it is anoiding i crist
but i to pis day whane moises
is red: pe veil is putt on her
hertis / but whane israel sh
al be conuertid to god: pe veil sh
al be doon awey / if pe spirit
is pe lord / if where pe spirit
of pe lord is: pere is fredom / if
alle we pat with oppn face
seen pe glorie of pe lord: ben
transformed i to pe same pm
age. fro clerenesse i to clere
nesse as of pe spirit of pe lord

Therfore we pat hane pis
admynistracion: as pis pt
we han getin mcy: faile
we not. but do we awey pe
pnp pingis of shame / not
walkinge i sutil gile neyer
doynge anountrie bi pe word
of god: but in shewing of pe
treupe comendinge us silf to ech
conscience of me: bifor god / for
if also oure gospel is kynerid
i pese pat perishe it is kyne
rid / i whiche god hap blend pe
soules of vnfeipful me of pis
world / pat pe lyztinyg of pe gos
pel of pe glorie of crist which is
pe pmage of god: shyne not /
but we preche not us silf: but
oure lord ihu crist. if us 3onre
seruauntis bi ihu / for god pat
seide lizt to shyne of derknes
sis: he hap 3one lizt i oure her
tis to pe liztnyge of pe science
of pe clerenesse of god i pe face
of ihu crist / if we han pis treasour
i vritil vessels: pe pt pe worpi
nesse be of godis vtu. if not
of us / i alle pingis we suffre
tribulacion: but we be not an
guysshed or annoyed / we be
maad pore: but we lacken
no ping / we suffre persecu
cion: but we be not forsaki
we ben maad lowe: but we be
not confoundid / we ben nat doin:
but we pevisshen not / if eue
re we berpn aboute pe sleyng
of ihu i oure body: pat also pe
lif of ihu be shewid in oure
bodies / for eue more we pt lyue:
ben taki i to dep for ihu: pat
pe lif of ihu: be shewid in

C. iij.

C.v.

our dedly flesh/ for deep war
ship is us: but liſt ī 3on/ & we ha
pe same spirit of feip: as it is
writtē/ I haue bileuyd: I haue
spoke/ & we bilene: wer for al
so we speken/ wittinge þ the
þat reiside shū: shal rise reise
us wiþ shū· & shal ordeyne wt
3on/ & alle þingis for 3on/ þat a
plēteuous grace by many þa
nkingis: be plēteuous ī to þe
glorie of god/ for which þing
we failen not/ but þouz oure
vtter mā be corruptiō: neþeles
þe ynner mā is renewid fro da
y to day/ but þat liȝt þing of
oure tribulacioū þat lastiþ no
w but as it were by amonet
worchiþ ī us ouer mesure an
eūlastinge birden ī to þe hyzu
esse of glorie/ while þat we bi
holden not þo þingis þat be
seyn: but þo þat ben not seyn/
for þo þingis þat ben seyn: be
but dureing for a short tyme/
but þo þingis þat ben not se
yn: ben euerlastinge

And we witen· þat if
oure erþely hous of
þis dwelling be disso
lued: þat we han abilding of
god· an hous not maad bi hon
dis eūlastinge ī heuenes/ for
wiþ ī þis þing we mornē: co
ueityinge to be clopid aboue
wiþ oure dwelling which is of
heuene/ if neþeles we be foūdē
clopid· & not naked/ for wh ī we
þat ben ī þis tabernacle: sore
wen wiþþinne/ & be heuyed for
þat we wolē not be spoilid:
but be clopid aboue/ þat þeilke
þing þat is dedly: be sopilid
of liſe/ but who is it þt makiþ
us ī to þis same þing: god· þat
3af to us þe erues of þe spirit
þ for we be hardy algatis & wi
ten þat ‡ þe while we ben ī
þis body: we goen ī pilgrimage
fro þe lord/ for we walken bi
feiþ: & not bi cleer siȝt/ but
we be hardy & han good wille·
more to be ī pilgrimage fro þe
body: & to be þsent to god/ and
þ for we stryuē· wheþ absent
wheþ þsent: to plese hī/ for
it behoueþ us alle: to be schē
id bifore þe troue of crīt/ þat
eiiy mā telle þe propre þingis
of þe body· as he hap doon: eþ
good eþ yuel/ þ for we witinge
þe drede of þe lord· cōuertē
mē: for to god we ben oppyn/
& I hope þat we ben oppyn also
ī 3oure conscheuns/ we comēden
not us silf eft soone to 3ou:
but we 3iuē to 3ou occasioū to
haue glorie for us/ þat ȝe haue
to hē þat glorien ī þe face: and
not ī þe herte/ for ouþ we bi myȝ

nde pallen: to god / euer we ben
lovve: to zou for pe charite of
crist dryuep us / gelling pis pi
ng · pat if oon dyed for alle:
pane alle were deed & pat died
for alle / pat pei yt lyue · lyue not
now to he silf: but to hi pat die
de for hem & roos azen / pfor we
fro pis tyme knowen no man
after pe fleisch / pouz we knowe
pat after pe fleisch: but now we
knowen not pfor if ony newe
creature is i crist: pe olde pingis
ben passid · & lo alle pingis ben of
god which reconsilide us to hi
silf: & zaf to us pe seruyce of
reconsilyng / & god was crist
reconsilynge to hi pe world:
not rettynge to hem her gil
tis / & puttide in us: pe word of
reconsilyng / pfor we vsen m
essage for crist: as if god monest
ip bi us / we biseche for crist: be
ze reconsilid to god / god pe fa
dir made hi synne for us: whi
ch knewe not synne · pat we sch
ulden be maad rightwisnesse
of god in hym

But we helpinge monest
en: pat ze resseue not
pe grace of god in veyn
for he seip / in tyme wel plesin
ge y haue herd pee: & in pe day
of heelpe y haue helpid pee /
lo now a tyme acceptable: lo
now a day of helpe / zine we to
no man ony offencioun: pat oure
seruyce be not repued / but in alle
pingis zine we us silf as pe my
nistris of god · in mychе pacience ·
in tribulacioun · in nedis · in angwis
chis · in betingis · in prisoun · in
discessiouns with ine · in trauelis ·
in wakingis · in fastingis · in chas
tite · in kunnyng · in long abidyng ·
in swetnesse in pe hooly goost ·
in charite not feyned / in pe word
of treupe · in pe vertu of god / by
armeris of rightwisnesse on pe
right half · & on pe left half / bi
glorie & vnoblei / by yuel fame &
good fame / as disseyueris and
trewe men / as pei pat ben vn
knowen: & knowen / as men dyn
ge: & lo we lyuen as chastisid:
& not maad deed / as sorewful:
euere more ioyinge / as hauynge ne
de: but makinge many men riche /
as no ping hauynge: & weldyn
ge alle pingis / A ze corynthis
oure mouth is opyn to zou · oure
herte is alargid / ze be not ang
wisshid in us: but ze ben angwis
chid in zoure owen entrailes / & y
seie as to sonys · ze pat han ye sa
me reward be ze alargid / as ple
ze bere pe zok with vnfeipful
men / for what partyng of right
wisnesse with wickidnesse · or
what felouschipe of liyt to der

kneſſis/ & what Acteding of ẽt
to belial· or what part of Aleiyf
ul: wiy ye vnfeiyful/ & what con
ſent to ye temple of god wiy m
Ametis/ & ze ben ye tẽple of ye
lyuynge god: As ye lord ſeiy ffor
y ſchal walke Among hem/ & y
ſchal be god of hẽ: & per ſchulẽ
be Apuple to me/ for which yig
go ze out of ye myddil of hem:
& be ze departid ſeiy ye lord/ &
touche ze not vndene ping: &
y ſchal reſſeyue zou/ & ſchal be
to zou i to a fadir: & ze ſchulen
be to me in to ſones & douztr
is ſeiy ye lord Almyzty

Wbelle i hẽ & y ſchal

C· vij·

Therfore moſt dereworye
bryben· we pat han pese
bihestis: cleñe we us fro
al filpe of ye fleiſchy & of ye
ſpirit· doynge holynelle i
ye drede of god/ take ze no·
we han hurt no mã· we han
Apeyrid no mã· we han bigil
id no mã/ y ſeie not to zoure
condẽpnyng/ ffor y ſeide bifore·
pat ze ben i zoure hertis: to di
e to gideve & to lyue to gidere
myche trist is to me Auentis
zou: myche glorying is to me
for zou/ y Am fillid wip comfort·
y Am plẽte nouſe i ioye in Al
oure tribulacion/ for whãne
we were comẽ to macedonye:
oure fleiſchy hadde no reſte·
but we ſuffriden Al tribulacion/
wip out forp fightingis: & dredis
wip yine/ but god pat confortip
meke mẽ: confortid us in ye
comynge of tite/ & not onely
i ye comyng of hi: but Alſo i
ye confort bi which he was con
fortid i zou/ telling to us zoure
deſire· zoure weping· zoure
lone for me: ſo pat y ioiede more
for zoiz pouz y made zou ſory i
apiſtle: it reuip me not· pouz
it reuide/ ſeynge pat pouz pilke
piſtle made zou ſory At An houre:
now y haue ioye/ not for ze were
en made ſoreuful· but for ze
were en made ſoreuful to pen
ãce/ forwhy ze ben made ſory
Aft̃ god: pat in no ping ze lik
fre peireuet of us/ for pe ſore
we pat is Aft̃ god: worchip pe
nañ i to ſtidfaſt heelpe/ but
ſorewe of pe world: worchip dep
ffor lo pis ſame ping· pat ze bẽ
ſoreful Aft̃ god: hou myche
buſyneſſe it worchip i zou· but
defending· but ĩdignacioñ· but
drede· but deſire· but lone· but
veniãnce/ in Alle pingis ze han
zoum̃ zou clẽ to be vndefoulid̃
i pe cauſe/ þfor pouz y wroot
to zou: y wroot not for hi pat
did pe iniurie/ ney for hi pat
ſuffride: but to schewe oure
buſyneſſe which we han for zou

to corynthys.

vifor god/ perfor we ben comfort
id/ but i zoure comfort more plẽ
teouslp/ we ioyedè more ou pe
ioie of tite: for his spirit is ful
fillid of alle zou/ & if y gloriede
ouy þing Anentis hi of zou: y
am not cõfoñdid/ but as we ha
n spoke to zou alle þingis: so al
so oure glorie þat was at tite·
is maad treu pe/ & pe mỹ ardn
esse of hi be more plẽteouslp
i zou/ whiche hap i mynde pe
obedience of zou alle: hou wt
dred & trẽblyng ze resseyuedẽ
hym/ y haue ioye: þat in alle
þingis y triste in zou

But bripen we make kn
owñ to zou pe grace of
god: þat is zoniñ i pe
chirchis of macedonye/ þat in
mychel asaying of tribulacioñ:
pe plentee of pe ioye of hem
was/ & pe hizeste point of hem:
was plẽteuouse i to pe riched
sis of pe symplenesse of hem/
for y bere witnessing to hem:
aft' myzt & a bone myzt per we
ren wilful/ wip mychel moned
tyng bisechinge us pe grace &
pe compayỹg of mynistrige:
þat is maad to hooly men/ &
not as we hopidẽ: but pei zaf
uen hẽ silf first to pe lord/ af
tirward to us: bi pe wille of
god/ so þat we þreden tite· þt
as he bigan: so also he parfour
me i zou þis grace/ but as ze
abouñdeñ i alle þingis· i feiþ· &
word & knowyng· & al bisynesse·
more ouñ & i zoure charite unto
us: þat also i þis grace ze abo
ũde/ y seie not as comaundinge:
but bi pe bisynesse of ope mẽ·
approuyng also pe good wit of
zoure charite/ & ze witẽ pe gra
ce of oure lord ihũ crist· for he
was maad nedy for zou whan
ne he was riche: þat ze schul
den be maad riche bi his nedy
nesse/ & y ziue conseil i þis þing
for þis is profitable to zou·
þat not onely han bigunne to
do: but also ze bigũne ta haue
wille ero pe formere zeer/ but
now perfourme zee i dede/ þt
as pe distrecioñ of wille is
redy: so be it also of parfour
myng of þat þt ze han/ efor if
pe wille be redy: it is acceptid
aft' þt þat it hap· not aft' þat
þt it hap not/ & not þat it be
remyssioñ to ope mẽ: & to zou
tribulacioñ/ but of euenesse· i
pe present tyme: zoure abũdã
ce fulfille pe myssed of hem/
þat also pe abũdañce of he':
be a fulfilling of zoure myse
se/ þat euenesse be maad: as
it is writi/ he þat gaderide
mychel: was not encreside/ &

he pat gaderide litil: hadde not
lesse/ & pou pauckingis to god· pat
zaf pe same bisynesse for zou in
pe herte of tite/ ffor he resseyue
de exortacioū/ but wyth̄ ware he w
as bisier: bi his wille· he wēte
forp to zou/ & we sēten wip hym
abrop· whos pising is in pe gos
pel bi alle chirchis/ & not onely:
but also he is ordeyned of chir
chis· pe felowe of oure pilgri
mage in to pis grace pat is min
istrid of us to pe glorie of pe
lord· & to oure ordeyned wille
eschewyng pis ping· pat no m
an blame us· in pis plentee pt
is minystrid of us to pe glorie
of pe lord/ ffor we purneie go
od pingis· not onely bifor god:
but also bifore alle mē/ for we
sentten wip hē also oure brop:
whom we han pued in many
pingis ofte· pat he was bisy
but now much bisyer: for my
che trist in zou ep for tite pat is
my felowe & helpere in zou: ep
oure briden apostlis of pe chir
chis of pe glorie of crist/ pfor sche
we ze in to hē in pe face of chirch
is: pt schewyng pt is of zoure
charite· & of oure glorie for zou
or of pe mynistrie pat
is maad to hooly mē:
it is to me of plente
to write to zou/ for y knowe
zoure wille: for pe which y ha
ne glorie of zou Ameritis mace
doynes/ for Alid Acaie is redy
for azeer passid· & zoure lone
hap stirid fill many pe/ & we ha
n sent briden· pat pis ping pt
we glorien of zou: be not auoi
did in pis party/ pat as y seide
ze be redy/ lest wyth̄ ware macedo
nyes comē wip me· & fynden
zou vnredy: we be schamed· pt
we seie zou not in pis ping sub
staūce/ pfor y gesside necessarie
to pie briden: pat pei come bi
fore to zou/ & make redy pis bi
hizt blessing to be redy: so as
blessing & not as auerise/ for
y seie pis ping/ he pat sowip
scarsely: schal also repe scarse
ly/ & he pat sowip in blessingis:
schal repe also of blessingis
ech man as he castide in his her
te: not of heuynesse or of ne
de/ for god louep a glad zyue
re ¶ And god is mygty: to
make al grace aboūde in zou/
pat ze in alle pingis eue moze
han al sufficeūce· & aboūde
in to al good werk as it is writ
tē/ he delyde abrood· he zaf
to poze mē: his rigtwisnesse
dwellip wip outē ende/ & he
pat mynistrip seed to pe sow
ere: schal zyue also breed to
ete/ & he schal multiplie zoure

seed: and make myche pe ence
ellingis of fruytis of zoure
riztwisnesse/ pat i alle thing
ze maad riche: in alle plente
nous i to al symplenesse/ whi
ch/ worchip bi us: doyng of
thankingis to god/ for pe min
istrie of pis office· not onely
fillip po pingis pat failen to
holy mē: but also multepli
ep mony thankingis to god·
bi pe purpose of pis my mist
re/ whiche glorifien god in
pe obedience of zoure knowle
chyng i pe gospel of crist: & in
symplenesse of comynycacion
i to hem & in to alle & in pe bi
sechyng of hē for zou pat des
ren zou for pe excellent grace
of god i zou· for pe thankingis
to god of pe first zifte of hym:
pat may not be teld

And y my self poul bise
che zou bi pe mylden
esse & softnesse of crist
which i pe face am vneke am
ong zou: & y absente bide i zou/
for y prie zou: pat left y present
be not bold bi pe trist i which
y am gessid to be bold in to
sum pat demē us: as if we
walkiden aft' pe fleischly/ for
pe armuris of oure knyzthy
od ben not fleischly: but myz
ty bi god to pe distruccion of

for we walking i fleischly: fightē
not aft' fleischly/

strengpis/ and we distrien co
nsels & al hizenesse pat hizep it
silf azen pe science of god: &
dryue in to caitifte al vndur
stonding i to pe seruyce of crist/
& we han redy to venge al vn
obedience: whanne zoure obedi
ence schal be fillid/ seze pe pin
gis pat ben aft' pe face· if ony
man tristip to hi silf· pat he is
of crist: penke he pis ping eft
sones hi silf/ for as he is
cristis: so also we/ for whi if y
schal glorie ony ping more of
oure power which pe lord zaf
to us in to edifiyng· & not i
to zoure distruccion: y schal
not be schamed/ but pat y be
not gessid· as to seme zou bi
epistlis· for whi per seien· pt
pe epistlis ben greuouse & stro
nge· but pe presence of pe body
is feble· & pe word worpi to be
dispisid: he pat is suche con·
penke pis/ for suche as we ab
sent bē i word bi pistlis: suche
we ben present i dede/ for we
dorē not· putte us among· or
compariloune us to sumē pat
comendendē hem silf/ but we
meswrē vs i vs silf: & compari
sonē us silf to us/ for we schulē
not haue glorie on mesure:
but bi pe mesure of pe reule
which god mesurede to us· pe

melure pat strecchip to zou for
we ou strecchen not for y nis: As
not strecchynge to zou for to zo
u we cam ẽ i pe gospel of cst:
not glorynge ou melure i ope
meũy trauels / for we han ho
pe of zoure feip pat wexip in
zou to be magnefied bi oure
reule i abũdaũce / Also to pche
i to po pingis pat ben bizen
dis zou: not to haue glorie i
ope maũy reule · i pese ping
is pat bẽ maad redy / he pat
glorifip: haue glorie i pe lord
for not he pat comendip hi
silf is ꝓuyd: but whom go
d comendip

I wolde pat ze wolden suff
re a litil ping of myn vnwi
dom: but also supporte ze me
ffor y loue zou bi pe loue of
god / for y haue spousid zou
to oon hesebonde: to zelde a
chast virgyn to cst / but y dre
de lest As pe serpent disseyn
ede eue wip his sutil fraude:
so zoure wittis ben corrupt
& falle doũ fro pe symplenes
se pt is i cst / for if he pat com
ep · pchip an op cst · whom we
pchiden not · or if ze take an
op spirit · whom ze token not ·
or an op gospel · which ze res
seyned not: rigtly ze schuld
suffre / for y weue · pat y haue
don no ping lesse pan pe grete
apostlis for pouy y be vnlerned
i word: but not i kũnyng for
i alle pingis y am opyn to zou
ward hey y haue doon shewe me
kynge my silf: pat ze be enhaũ
sid · for freely y pchide to zou pe
gospel of god: y made makid
ope chirchis: & y took loyde to
zoure seruyce & whanne y was
among zou & hadde nede: y
was chargeous to no man /
for bretheren pat camen fro macedo
nye fulfilliden pat pat failide
to me & i alle pingis y haue
kept & schal kepe me wip outen
charge to zou pe treupe of cst
is i me: for pis glorie schal not
be broken i me i pe cũtreis of
achaie wyly: for y loue not zou:
god woot for pat pat y do: &
pt y schal do is pt y kitte awey
pe occasioũ of hem: pat wolen occa
sioũ pat i pe ping i which pei
glorien: pei be foũdũ as we / for
siche falle apostlis · ben trecher
ous werk mẽ · & transfigur
yn hem i to apostlis of cst / & no
wondir / ffor sathanas hym
silf transfigurip hi i to an
aungel of lizt / ffor it is not
gret: if his mynistris ben
transfigurid · as pe mynistris
of rigtwisnesse · whos ende
schal be after her werkis eft

y seie: lest ony man gesse me
to me vnwise/ ellis take ze me
as vnwise: pat also y haue glor
ie alitil what/ pat pat y speke:
y speke not after god/ but as
i vnwisdom: i pis substaunce
of glorie/ for many mē glorien
aft' pe fleisch: & y shal glorie/
for ze suffrē gladly vnwise m
en: whanne ze sel be wise/
for ze susteynē yf ony mā dry
nep zou i to seruage· if ony m
an devouryp· if ouy mā takyp·
if ony mā is enhaūsid· if ony
mā smytip zou on pe face/ bi
vnoblely y seie: as if we werē
sike i pis party in what ping
ony mā dar· i vnwisdom y se
ie: & y dar pei ben ebrews: &
y pei ben israelitis: & y pei
ben pe seed of abraham: & y
pei ben pe mynistris of crist: &
y as lesse wisl y seie: y moze
in ful many trauels· i plonis
moze plētenously· i woundis
abone mete· in deepis ofte
tymes/ y resseyuede of pe iewis
is· fyue sypes fourty strokes:
oon lesse/ thries y was betē wit
zerdis: onys y was stonyd/
thries y was at shipbreche:
nyzt & a day y was i pe depp
nesse of pe see/ in weies ofte·
i perelis of floodis· i perel
s of pemis· in perelis of kyn·
in perelis of hepene mē· in pe
relis i cytee· i perels i desert· i
perels i pe see/ in perels amo
ng false bripen/ in trauel &
nedynesse: i many wakingis/
i hungur in pirst: i many fas
tingis/ i cold: & nakidnesse/
wip outē po pingis pat bē wit
out forp· myn eche dayes tra
uelyng· is pe bisynesse of al
le chirchis/ who is syk: & y
am not syk: who is sclaūd
rid: & y am not brent/ if it
bihouep to glorie: y shal glo
rie in po pingis pat ben of
myn infirmyte/ god & pe fa
dir of oure lord ihū crist· pt
is blessid i to worldis: woot
pat y lie not/ pe prouost of da
mask· of pe king of pe folk
aretha: kepte pe cytee of da
maskenes to take me/ & bi a
wyndow i a leep y was latoū
doū bi pe wal: and so y aste
pide his hondis

If it bihouep to haue glo
rie: it spedip not/ but' y
shal come to pe visiouns
and to pe reuelaciouns of pe
lord/ y woot a man i crist pat
bifore fourtene zeer· whepr i
body· whepr out of pe body y
woot not· god woot: pt sich
a man was rauyshid til to pe
pridde heuene/ & y woot sich

C. xij.

Aman · wheþ̄ in body or out of
body · y noot god woot : þt he
was rauyshid ī to paradis
& herde preyng wordis : whi
che it is not leueful to aman
to speke / for siche maner pi
ngis y shal glorie : but for
me no þing · no but ī myn
ſfirmytees / for if y shal wil
le to glorie : y shal not be
vnwijs / for y shal seie treu
þe / but y spare · lest ony man
gesse me oū þat þing þt he
seep ī me or herip ouy þing
of me / & left þe greetenesse
of reuelaciouns enhaūse me
ī þride : þe prickē of my fleis
ch an aungel of sathanas is
ȝouē to me · þat he buffete
me / for which þing pries y
þride þe lord : þat it shulde
go awey fro me / & he seide
to me / my grace suffiſip to
þee / for vertu is parfitly ma
d ī infirmytee / þfor gladly
y shal glorie ī myn ī firmy
tees : þat þe vertu of crist dwelle
ī me / for which þing y am
plesid ī myn ī firmytees · ī
dispisyngis in nedis · ī perse
cuciouns · ī angwyshis for crist
ffor whanne y am sike : þan
y am myȝti / y am maad vn
witty : ȝe constreyneden me
for þ ouȝte to be comendid of
ȝou / for þ oride no þing-lesse
þan þei : þat ben apostlis a
boue man / þouȝ þ am nouȝt :
nepeles þe signes of myn apos
tlehed ben maad ou ȝou in al
pacience · & signes & gretc wo
ndris & vertues / & what is it
þat ȝe hadden lesse þan oþe
chirchis : but þat þ my silf
greuyde ȝou not : forȝeue ȝe
to me þis wrong ¶ lo þis
þridde tyme þ am redy to co
me to ȝou : & þ shal not
be greuous to ȝou / for þ seke
not þo þingis þat ben ȝoure :
but ȝou / for nei̇ schuld owen
to tresour to fadir & modir :
but þe fadir & modir to þe so
nes / for þ shal ȝiue moost wil
fuly : & þ my silf shal be ȝouē
abone for ȝoure soulis / þouȝ þ
more lone ȝou : & ȝe lesse louyd
but be it / þ greuyde not ȝou : but
whanne y was sutil þ took ȝou
wip gile / whei̇ þ disseyuede
ȝou · bi ony of hē which y sente
to ȝou / þ þridē trite : & þ sente
wip hī Abroþ / whei̇ trite bigili
de ȝou : whei̇ we zedē not in
þe same spirit : whei̇ not in
þe same steppis : ¶ ī tyme ȝe
wenē þat we shulē excuse us
aueniis ȝou / bifore god in crist
we speken / & moost dere bri
þren : alle þingis for ȝoure edi

fiyng / but y drede · lest whan̄ ne y come: y shal fynde zou not suche as y wole · & y shal be foūdē of zou · suche as ze wolē not / lest paraūēture stryuyngis · ēuyes · sturdynes lis · distencions & detraccions · þuy speches of distord volnyg is bi ȳde · debatis ben among zou / & lest eftsoone whan̄e y come · god make me low anē tis zou: & y biweile manye of hem pat bifore syn̄ed̄ & dide not penaūce ou pe vnclēnesse and fornicacioū · and vnchast ite pat pei han don

¶ Iii

To þis þridde tyme: y come to zou / & in pe mouy of tweyne or of pre wituessis: euy word shal stonde / y seide bifore & seie bi fore as þ̄sent twies & now ab sent: to hē pat bifore han syn ned & to alle oþ̄e / for if y come eftsoone: y shal not spare / whey þ̄ ze seken pe pref of þt crist pat speki þ̄ in me: which is not febel in zou / for þouz he was crucified of infirmyte: but he lyuey of pe v̄tu of god for why also we ben sik in him: but we shulē lyue wiþ yȳ of pe v̄tu of god in us / Assaie zou silf if ze ben in pe feip: ze zou silf þ̄ne / whey þ̄ ze knowē not silf: / for crist ihū is in zou: but if̄ hap ze ben repr̄uable / but y hope pat ze knowē · pat we be not repr̄uable / & we þ̄ien pe lord: pat ze do no þing of yuel / not pat we seme þ̄ued: but pat ze do þt pat is good / & þt we ben as repr̄uable / for we moū no þing azeny treuþe: but for pe treuþe / for we iōpen whan̄e we ben sike: but ze ben myzti & we þ̄yen þis þing zoure per fectioū / þ̄for y absent write pese þ̄ingis: pat y þ̄sent do not hardere / bi pe power which ch̄ pe lord zaf to me in to edificacioū & not in to zoure destruccioū ¶ Brepen hēny / forward iope ze · be ze parfit · exorte ze vndirstonde ze / þe same þing hane ze þeed: & god of pees & of loue shal be wiþ zou / gre te ze wel to gidere in hooly cos / alle hooly men greeten zou wel / pe grace of oure lord ihū crist · & pe charite of god · & pe comy nyng of pe hooli goost: be wt alle zou amē / ¶ Here endiþ pe secounde pistle to corinthies: & here bygynneþ pe prologe on pe pistle to galathies:

Galathies ben grekis per token first of pe poostle: pe word of treupe / but aftir his going

albey þei weren temptid of
false apostlis: þat þei weren
turned fro to lawe & circumcisio
ñ/ þe postle azen clepiþ hem
to þe feiþ of treuþe: & writ
iþ to hem fro effesins ¶ Here
i þis prologe w galathies writiþ þis
C·m·m·p· Onle þe apostle n
ot of mẽ ne bi m
an: but by ihũ crist
& god þe fadir· þt
reisid hym fro dey/ & alle þe
briþren þat ben wiþ me: to þe
chirchis of gl galathie grace
to zou & pees of god þe fadir:
& of þe lord ihũ crist þat zaf hi
silf for oure synes: to delyu
us fro þe þsent wickid world
bi þe wil of god & oure fadir:
to whom is worshiþ & glorie
i to worldis of worldis amen
¶ I wondir þat ye sone so so
one ze be þus moued fro hi
þat clepide zou i to þe grace
of crist: i to anoþ euãgelie/
which is not an oþe: but þt
per ben some þat troublip
zou· & wolen mysturne þe
euãgelie of crist/ but þouz we
or an ãngel of heuene þsche
to zou bisidis þat þat we hã
þschid to zou: be he accursid/
as y haue seid bifor: & now
eftsoone y seie/ zif ony pre
che to zou bisidis þat þat ze
han vndirfongen: be he accur
sid for now whiþer conseil y mẽ
or god: whiþer y seche to plese
men: zif y plesid zit men: y
were not crist seruaũt/ for bri
þren y make knowe to zou· þe
euãgelie þat was þchid of
me: for it is not bi mã/ ne y
toke it of mã ne lernede: but
bi reuelacioñ of ihũ crist/ for
ze han herd my cõuersacioñ sum
time i þe iewe: & þat y pursu
ed passingly þe chirche of god·
& fauzt azen it & y profitid i
þe iewe above many of myn
eueneldes i my kynred: and
was more abũdauntly a folewer
of my fadirs tradicõnes/ but
whanne it plesid hi þat depar
tid me fro my modir wombe·
& clepide bi his grace· to schewe
his sone i me· þt y schulde pre
che hi among þe hepene: anoon
y drouzte me not to fleisshe
& blood/ ne y cam to ierlm̃ to
þe apostlis: but went into ar
abie· & eft
soones y turned azen in to
damask/ & lijr pre zeer· aft' y
y cam to ierlm̃· to see pet': &
y dwellid wiþ hi fiftene day
es/ but y sawz noon oþ' of
þe apostlis: but iames oure
lordis brop'/ & þese þingis wh
iche y write to zou: lo to for

god pat y lie not/ aftir ward
y cam i to pe coſtis of ſpirit & ca
lice/ but y was vnknowē vn
face to pe chirchis of iudee: pt
were i cſt/ & pei hadde oonly
an herpug· pat he pat purſu
ed us ſū tyme: preched now pe
feip· azen? which he ſauzt ſū
tyme· & ime pei glorifiden god
Cm. ii. And ſip fourteen zeer
aft'· eftſoones y wen
te up to ieruſalē wip ba
rnabas· & took wip me tite/ y
weute up bi reuelacioū & ſpa
ke wip hem pe euāgelie: whi
che y preche among pe hepen/ &
bi hē ſilf to pese pat ſemeden
to be ſūwhat: leſt y rūne or
hadde rūne i veyne/ & noper
tite pat hadde be wip me whi
le he was hepene: was comp
ellid to be circūſidid/ but for
falſe bripen pat wer' brouzt
ine· which eutervid to aſpie
oure fredom· which we han
i ihū cſt: to bryng us i to ſer
uage/ but we zine no place to
ſubiectioū: pat pe treupe of
pe goſpel ſchulde dwelle wip
zou But of pese pat ſemedē
to be ſūwhat: whiche pei wer
en ſūtyme· it perteny not to
me/ for god takip not pe perſo
ou of man/ for pei pat ſemedē
to be ſūwhat: zaue me no pug
hadde

but azenward· whāne pei had
de seyn· pat pe euāgelie of pru
cē was zouē to me: as pe euā
gelie of circūcīſioū was zomī
to petir/ ffor he pat wrouzte
to petir i apoſtelhed of circūci
ſioū: wrouzte also to me among
pe hepen/ & whāne pei hadde
knowe pe grace of god pt was
zouē to me: iames & pet' and
ioon which were seyn to be pe
pileres· pei zauen rizthan of
felouſchip to me & to barnabas/
pat we among pe hepen: & pei
i to pe circūcīſioū/ oonely pat
we hadde mynde of poze mē·
pe whiche pnig: y was fulwi
ſy to doon/ but whāne petir
was comē to antioche: y azen
stood hī i pe face· for he was
worpi to be vndirnōmē/ ffor
bifor pat per· camē cūmē fro
iames: he eete wip pe hepen
men/ but whāne pei weren
comē he wip drowz & departe
id hī: dredynge hē pat were
of circūcīſioū/ & pe opir iewis
assentid to his feynyg: so pat
barnabas was drawē of hē i to
pat feynyg/ but whāne y ſa
we pat pei walkide not riztly
to pe treupe of pe goſpel: y ſe
ide to petir bifor alle mē/ zif
pu pat art aiew· lyuest hepi
nlich· & not iewlich: hou constre

ynest pon hepen men to biwine
ielbis: ibe ielbis of kynde ⁊
not ſynful men of pe ꝓ hepene·
knoiben pat aun̄ is not iuſti
fied of pe iberkis of lalbe: but
bi pe feip of ihū cſt ⁊ ibe bilen
en i ihū cſt· pat ibe ben iuſtifi
ed of pe feip of cſt: ⁊ not of pe
iberkis of lalbe/ iberfor of
pe iberkis of lalbe: eche fleiſh
ſhal not be iuſtified/ ⁊ if ibe ſe
chen to be iuſtified i cſt: ibe
oure ſelf ben foūden ſynful m
en· ibhep cſt be unpuſt of ſyne:
god forbede/ ⁊ zif y bilde azen
pingis pt y hadde deſtruyed:
y make my ſelf a treſpaſſour
for bp pe lalbe· y am dede to pe
lalbe: ⁊ y am fastnid to pe croſſe
pat y lyue to god ibip cſt· and
now lyue not y: but cſt lyuep
i me: but pat y lyue now i fleiſ
ch: y lyue i pe feip of goddis
ſone/ pat louede me: ⁊ zaf hi
ſilf for me/ y caſte not awey
pe grace of god/ for if riztful
neſſe be porou3 lalbe: panne
crift died ibip out cauſe

C. iiij.

o unwitti galathiancs:
to for ibhos izen ihū
crift is exilid· ⁊ is cr
cified in3ou/ ibho hap diſcepned
3ou: pat 3e obeyen not to treu
pe: to bis oneip y wilne to leene
of 3ou/ ibhep 3e han vndirſon

ge pe ſpirit of iberkis of pe lalbe:
or of herīng of bilene: ſo3e be
foolis· pat ibhanne 3e han bigū
ne i ſpirit: 3e ben endid in fle
ſhe/ ſo grete pingis 3e han ſuf
ferid ibip out cauſe: 3if it be
ibip out cauſe/ he pat 3iuep to
3ou ſpirit ⁊ iborchip vtues i3ou:
ibhep of iberkis of pe lalbe· or
of herīng of bilene: as it is
iberitū abrahā bilened to
god: ⁊ it ibas rettid to hi to ry
tfulneſſe ⁊ þfor knoibe 3e pat
pes pat ben of bilene: ben pe
ſones of abrahā ⁊ pe ſcripture
ſeping after pat iuſtifiep pe
hepen: of bilene told bifore to
abrahā· pat i pee al pe hepē
ſhulē be bleſſid ⁊ þfor peſe pt
bē of bilene: ſhulē be bleſſid
ibip feipful abrahā· for alle
pat ben of pe iberkis of pe
lalbe: ben vndur curſe/ for
it is iberitū· eche uā is curſid
pat abidip not i alle pingis
pat ben iberitū i pe book of
pe lalbe: to do po pingis ⁊ pt
no uā is iuſtified i pe lalbe
bifor god: it is oppn· for ariſt
ful uā lyuep of bilene/ but
pe lalbe is not of bilene/ but
he pat doip po pingis of pe
lalbe: ſhal lyue i hem/ but
crift azenbouzte us fro pe cur
ſe of pe lalbe: ⁊ ibas maad a

curſid for us for it is writtē/
ech man is curſid pat hangip
i pe tree/ pat among pe heyp
ne pe blessing of abrahā:
were maad i crist ihū pat we
vndirfong pe hiz biheſt of spi
rit: porw bileue/ bripen y se
ie aft' amā/ no mā dispisip
pe testamēt of amā pt is con
fermed: or ordeyned abone
pe biheestis wherin seid to ab
rahā: & to his seed/ he seip
not i seedis as i many: but
as i oon· & to pi seed pat is
crist/ bint y seie pis testament
is cōfermed of god/ pe lawe
pat was maad aft' foure
hundred & pritty zeer: ne ma
kip not pe testament veyn· to
avoide alwey pe biheſt for zif
heritage were of pe lawe: it
weve not nouȝ of biheest/ but
god graūtide to abrahā:
porw biheest/ what pāne pe
lawe: it was sett for trespas
sing: til to pe seed come to wh
om he hadde maade his bihe
este/ whiche lawe was ordey
ned bi aūgelis: i pe hondе of
a mediatour/ but a mediato
is not of oon/ but god is oon
is pāne pe lawe azen pe bihe
estis of god: god forbede for
zif pe lawe were zouen pat
mygte quykene: vrily were
rigtfulnesse of lawe/ but ſt'p
ture hap concludid alle pingis
vndir synne: pat pe biheest of
pe feip of ihū crist were zouē to
hem pat bileuē & to foze pat
bileue cam: per were kept vn
dur pe lawe· enclosid i to pat
bileue pat was to be shewid/
& so pe lawe was oure vndir
maist' i crist: pat we ben iustifi
ed of bileue/ but aft' pat bile
ue cam: we ben not nouȝe vn
dir pe vndir maist'/ for alle ȝe
ben pe children of god porw
pe bileue i ihū crist ffor alle ȝe
pat ben baptisid: ben cloyid
wip crist/ þ is no ielwe ne greke:
no bondmā ne fre mā· no ma
le ne femmale· for alle ȝe ben
oon i ihū crist & zif ȝe ben oon i
ihū crist: þāne ȝe ben pe seed of
abrahā· & eires bi biheest

But y seie as longe ty
me· as pe eir is a litil
child: he dyffrip no pi
ng fro a seruaūt· whāne he
is lord of alle pingis/ but he is
vndir kepers & tutoris: i to
pe tyme determyned of pe fadir/
so we whāne we were litil chil
dren: we serued vndir elem
entis of pe world/ but aftir
pat pe fulfilling of tyme cam:
god sente his sone maad of a
wōman maad vndir pe lawe/

C. iiij.

pat he shulde azenbie hem pat
weren vndir pe lawe: pat we
shulde fonge pe adepcion of so
nȳ & faze ben goddes sones: god
sente his spirit ī to zoure hertis·
cryng abba fadir/ & so ꝑ is not
nowe a seruaūt but a sone/ & zif
he is a sone: he is an eir bi god/
but pānezе vnknowinge god:
seruedē to hem pat ī kinde we
ren not goddis/ but nowe wh
ānezе han knowe god· & ben
knowē of god· how ben ze turn
ed eft sones to pe febil and
nedy elemētes· to pe whiche
ze wolen eft seruе:/ ze taken
kepe to dayes & monepis & ty
mes & zeres/ but ꝑ drede zou:
lest wip out cause y haue tra
ueled among zou/ be ze as y:
for y am as ze/ bripen y bisechе
zou: ze han hurt me no ping/
but ze knowē pat bi infirmyte
of fleisch y hane ꝓchid to zou
nowe biforе: & ze dispisеden not
nep forsoken zoure tēptacioū
ī my fleisch/ but ze resseyuedē
me as an aungel of god: as ihū
crist/ wher pānezе is zoure blessy
ng:/ for ꝑ bere zou witnesse· pt
zif it myzte hane be doon· ze
wolde hane pit out zoure izen·
& hane zyuen hem to me/ am y pā
me maad an enmy to zou: seiyng
to zou pe sope: per lonē not zou
wel: but per wolen excludе zou pt
ze suen hem/ but sueze pe goodē
mōe ī good: & not oonly whan y
am ꝑsent wip zou/ my smale chil
dreu: whiche y bere eftsones
til pat crist be fourmed ī zou/
and y wolde nowe be at zou· and
chaūge my voyce: for y am confo
ūdid among zou/ seiē to me ze pt
wil be vndir pe lawe: ze hane
not red pe lawe:/ for it is writ
ten pat abraham hadde two so
nes oon of a seruaūt: & oon of
a free wōmā/ but he pat was of
seruaūt: was borē after pe fleisshy
but he pat was of pe free wōmā:
bi abihecste/ pe whiche pingis
ben seid bi an opir vndirstond
ing/ for pese ben two testaunē
tis/ oon ī pe hille of synay· gen
derīg ī to seruage: whiche is
agar/ for syna is an hille pat
is ī arabie: whiche hille is iop
ned to it pat is nowe ierlīu· & ser
wip his children/ but pat ierlīu
pat is aboue is fre: whiche is
oure modir/ for it is writen
be glad p̄ bareyn: pt berist n
ot brek out & crie: pat bringist
forp no childrē/ for many sonȝ
ben of hir: pat is left of hir ho
sebonde/ more pan of hir pat
hap an hosbonde/ but bripen
we ben sones of bihecste: after
ysaac/ but nowe as pis is pat

was born after ye flesh: purlyed hi pat was aft' ye spirit. so now / but what seip ye scripture / cast out ye seruaūt: & hir sone / for ye sone of ye seruaūt shal not be eir: but ye sone of ye free wife / & so bripen we ben not sones of ye seruaūt: but of ye free wife / bi whiche fredom: crist hap maad us free

Stonde ze pfor: & nyle ze eft soones be holde in ye zok of seruage loo y poule seie to zou. pat zif ze ben circūcidid: crist shal no ping profite to zou. And y witnesse eft soones. to ech mā pat circūcidip hi silf: pat he is dettour of alle ye lawe to be doon / & ze ben voidid alwey fro crist. & ze pat ben iustified i ye lawe: ze han fallē awey fro grace / for we poun ye spirit of bileue: abidē ye hope of riztfulnesse / ffor i ihū crist nep circūcision is ony ping worp vper prepucie: but ye bileue pat worchip bi charite / ze rūnen wel: who lettide zou pat ze obeyide not to treupe / consente ze to no mā. for pis counsel is not of hi pat hap clepid zou / a litil soure doup: alpeyrip al ye gobet / y trust on you i oure lord: pat ze shulde vndirstonde ony ping worpi vper / and who pat disturblip zou: shal bere dom. who euere ye be / & bripen zif y pche zit circūcision: what suffre y zit persecucioū: / pāne ye sclaūdre of ye crosse: is avoidid / y wolde pat pei were kyt a wepe pat disturblen zou / for bripen ze ben clepid i to fredom: oonly zine ze not fredom in to occasioū of fleishe. but bi charite of spirit serue ipe ze to gidere / for euery lawe is fulfillid in oo word pou shalt loue pi neizbore as pi silf / & if ze bite & eete ech op: se ze left ze ben wastid eche from op. & y sey zou i crist / walke ze in spirit: & ze shulē not perfourne e ye desires of ye fleish / for ye fleishe coueitip azen ye spirit: & ye spirit azen ye fleish / ffor pes ben adūsaries to gidev: pt ze doon not alle pingis pat ze wille / pat if ze be led bi spirit: ze be not vndir ye lawe / & ye werkis of ye fleishe ben open / wh iche ben fornycacioū. vnclēnesse. lecherie. seruy ce of false goddis. wiche craftis. enmytees. strynygis. nidignacioūs. wrappis. chidyngis. dissencioūs. sectis. envyes. mansclaunztris. dronkēnesses. vnmesurable eetingis. & pingis lijk to pese / whiche y seye to zou

bifore: as y haue tolde zou to
fore/ for yei þat doon siche þin
gis: shulẽ not haue þe kyng
dom of god/ but þe fruyt of
þe spirit: is charite·ioye·þe
es· pacience·long abidyng·
benignite·goodnesse·mylde
nes· feip·tẽperaũce·contin
ence·chastite/ azen siche þing
is no lawe·& yei þat ben of
crist: han crucified her flesh
with vices & coueitingis zif
we lyue bi spirit: walke we
bi spirit be we not maad co
ueitous of veyngloerie· stiry
nge ech oþ to wrathe-or ha
tynge enuye ech to oþ

Ciuj.

Briperen zif aman be
occupied in ony gilt:
ze þat ben spirituel
enfourme ze siche oon i spirit
of softnesse/ biholdyng þi si
lf: lest þat þou be tẽptid/
ech bere oþe chargis: & so ze
shulẽ fulfille þe lawe of crist/
for who þat troweþ þat he be
ouȝt· whanne he is nouȝt: he
begilþ hi silf/ but ech man
þue his owne werk: & so he
shal haue glorie in hi silf· & not
in an oþ/ for ech man shal bere
his owne charge/ he þat is
taust by word: comune he wiþ
hi þat techiþ hi in alle goodis/
nyle ze erre: god is nouȝt scor

ned/ for þo þingis þat a man
sowiþ: þo þingis he shal repe/
for he þat sowiþ in hi flesh:
of þe flesh he shal repe cor
rupcioñ/ but he þat sowiþ in
þe spirit: of þe spirit he shal
repe euerlastinge liif/ & doyng
good: faile we not/ for in his
tyme we shal repe: not faily
ng/ þerfor while we han tyme:
worche we good to alle men·
but most to hẽ þat ben hom
liche of þe feiþ/ se ze what ma
nere lettres y haue write to zou:
wiþ myn owen honde/ for who
euer wil plese in þe flesh: þes
constreynen zou to be circumcidd/
onely: þat þei suffre not þe
persecucioñ of crists crosse/ for
ney þei þat ben circumcidd: ke
pen þe lawe/ but þei wolẽ þat
ze be circumcidd: þat þei haue glo
rie in zoure flesh/ but ferbeit
fro me to haue glorie: no but
in þe crosse of oure lord ihũ crist/
bi whom þe world is crucified
to me: & y to þe world/ for in ihũ
crist· neiþer circumcisioñ is ony þing
worþ· ne prepuce: but a newe
creature/ & who euere schulen
þis reule: pees on hem & mi-
cy· & on israel of god/ & here after
noman be heuy to me/ for y be
re in my body· þe tokenes of
oure lord ihũ crist/ þe grace of

oure lord ihū cʰst: be wip zoure
spirit bripen. Amē ¶ Here
endip pe epistle to galathies:
¶ here bigynnep a prologe on
pe pistle to effelies:·
Ephesynes ben men
of asye/ pese whanne
pei hadden receyued
pe word of treupe: abidē sted
fastly i pe feip/ pe apostel pylep
hem: writyng to hē eft come
out of pldū· bi thritene pe
dekene/ ¶ Jerom i his pro
loge on pis pistle: seip pis:·
Oule pe apostle of
ihū cʰst bi pe wille
of god· to alle sep
ntis pat ben at ef
fesy· ¶ to pe feipful men i ihū
cʰst: grace be to zou ¶ pees of
god oure fadir· ¶ oure lord ihū
cʰst/ blessid be god ¶ pe fadir
of oure lord ihū cʰst: pat hap
blessid us i alle spiritual blec
sing i heuenly pingis i cʰst/ as he
hap chosen us in hī silf· bifor
pe making of pe world: pt we
were holy ¶ wip outē wem
i his sizt i charite/ whiche hap
bifore ordeyned us i to adopci
oū of sonȝ: bi ihū cʰst i to hī/ bi
pe purpos of his wille: i to pe
herying of pe glorie of his gr
ce/ in whiche he hap glorified
us i his derwarpe sone/ i whid
we han redempcioū bi his blo
od: forzifnesse of synes· after
pe richesses of his grace/ pat
aboūdide gretly i us i al wisdā
¶ prudēce: to make knowe to
us pe sacrament of his wille/ bi
pe good plesaūce of hī· pe whi
che sacrament he purposid i hī:
i pe dispencacioū of pleute of
tymes/ to enstore alle pingis i
crist: whiche ben i heuenes ¶
whiche ben i erpe i hym: in wh
om we ben clepid bi lozt/ bifor
ordeyned bi pe purpos of hī
pt worchip alle pingis· bi pe
counseil of his wille/ pat we be
i to pe herying of his glorie:
we pat han hopid bifor in cʰst
i whom also ȝe were clepid·
whanne ȝe herden pe word of
treupe pe gospel of zoure heelpe/
i whom ȝe bileuyng ben merkid
wip pe hooly goost of bihest·
which is pe erues of oure er
itage: i to redempcioū of purcha
sing in to herying of his glo
rie ¶ per for y herynge zoure
feip pat is i cʰst ihū· ¶ pe loue
i to alle seyntis: ceesse not to
do pankingis for zou· makynge
mynde of zou i my preyeris/ pat
god of oure lord ihū cʰst pe fadir
of glorie: zyue to zou pe spirit
of wisdom ¶ of reuelacioū i to
pe knowyng of hym/ ¶ pe izen

of youre herte lyztned: pat ye
wite which is pe hope of his de
pyng · & which ben pe ryches
sis of pe glorie of his eritage
i sepntis / & which is pe exælle
greetnesse of his vtu i to us pt
han bileued bi pe wozchyng of
pe myzt of his vertu / which
he wrouzte i crist: reisynge hym
fro deep / & settynge hym on hy
is rizthalf i heuenly ymgis:
Abone ech principat & potestat
& vtu & dompnacion / & Abone
ech name pat is named · not
onely i pis world: but Also in
pe world to comynge / & made
Alle pingis suget vndir his fe
feet: & zaf hi to be heed on Al
pe chirche pat is pe body of
hi / And pe plente of hi which
is Alle pingis i Alle pingis fulfillid

C. vj. And whanne ze weren
deed i youre giltis &
synnys · i which ze wan
dridē sumtyme: Aftir pe cours of
pis world · Aftir pe prince of pe
power of pis eir · of pe spirit
pat worchip now i to pe sonnis
of vnbileue / i which Also we
Alle lyueden sumtyme i pe desi
ris of oure fleisch: doynge
pe willis of pe fleisch & of po
ughtis / & we weren bi kynde pe sonys
of wrappe: As opre men / but
god pat is riche i mcy: for his
ful myche charite i which he lo
uyde us · zhe whanne we were
dede i synnys · quykenyde us to
gidere i crist · bi whos grace ze
ben sauyd / & azenreisede to gidre:
& made to sidē to sitte i heuenly
yngis · i crist ihū / pat he schulde
schewe i pe worldis Aboue comy
ng: pe plenteuouste richessis
of his grace i goodnesse on us
i crist ihū / for bi grace ze be sa
yd bi feip: & pis not of zou / for
it is pe zifte of god · not of wer
kis: pat no man haue glorie /
for we ben pe makinge of hym:
maad of nouzt i crist ihū i good
werkis / which god hath ordey
ned: pat we go i po werkis
for which ping ze mysseful:
pat sumtyme ze weren hepene
i fleysch / which were seid p
yncie: for pat pat is seid circū
cisiōn maad bi hond i fleisch
& ze weren i pat tyme with out
crist: Alienede fro pe lyuynge of
israel & gestis of testamentis /
not hauynge hope of biheest:
& with outē god i pis world / but
now i crist ihū · ze pat were sum
tyme fer: ben maad nyz i pe blo
od of crist / for he is oure pees:
pt maad bope oon · & vnbynd
ynge pe myddil wal o Alwal wt
out mater enemptes i his fle
isch / & avoide pe lawe of ma

ñdementiē · bi doines: pat he m
ake they i hī silf i to o newe m
an/ making pees: to reconsile
bope i o body to god bi pe cros ·
slepinge pe enemyties i hī silf/
& he compinge p̄chid · pees to
zou pat weren fer: & pees to hē
pat were nyz/ for bi hī we bope
han nyz coming: i o spirit to
pe fadir/ p̄for now ze bē not
gestis & straungeris: but ze bē
citeseyns of seyntis · & houshol
meynee of god/ Aboue bildid
on pe foundemēt of apostlis
& of profetis: vpon pat hizeste
corner stoon cr̄st ihū/ in whom
ech bildīng maad: wexip i to
an hooly tēple i pe lord/ i whō
also be ze bildid to gidere i to
pe habitacle of god i pe hooly
Ex pe grace/ goost
of pis ping y poul pe
bounden of cr̄st ihū for
zou hepene men: if nepeles ze
han herd pe dispensacioun of
goddis grace pat is zoun to
me i zou/ for bi venelacioun pe
sacrament is maad knowun to
me · as y Aboue wroot i schort
ping: as ze mouwē rede & vnd
rstonde my prudence i pe myst
ri of cr̄st/ which was not kno
wun to opere generacions to pe sonȝ
of men: as it is now schewid
to his hooly apostlis & proфe
tis · in pe spirit/ pat hepene men
ben eiris · & of oo body: &
parteneris to gidē/ of his bihe
est i cr̄st ihū bi pe e3angelie/ whos
mynistre y am maad bi pe 3ifte
of goddis grace: which is 3oun
to me bi pe wirching of his vtu/
to me leest of alle seyntis · pis
grace 3oun to p̄che among he
penne men · pe sch̄r vnserchable
richessis of cr̄st & to liztene
alle men which is dispensacioun
of sacrament hid fro worldis
i god: pat made alle pingis
of nouzt/ pat pe manyefold
wisdom of god be knowun to
p̄nces & potestatis i heuenly
pingis · bi pe chirche: bi pe bi
forn ordenaūce of worldis whi
ch he made i cr̄st ihū oure lord
i whom we han trist & nyz
coming: i tristeyng bi pe
feip of hī/ for which ping y
Axe: pat ze faile not i my tri
bulacions for zou which is
zoure glorie for grace of pis
ping y bowe my knees to pe
fadir of oure lord ihū cr̄st: of
whom ech fadirhed i heuen
es & i erpe is named/ pat he
3yue to zou aft̄ pe rychessis
of his glorie: vertu to be stre
ngpid bi his spirit i pe ynere
man/ pat crist dwelle bi feip:
i zoure hertis/ pat pe rootid

his

And growinge i charite: vnto com
pheñde wip alle sayntis which
is pe breede & pe lengpe & pe hy3
nesse & pe depnesse/ Also to wit
te pe charite of crist excel
lent pan science: pat ze be fillid
i al pe plentee of god & to hym
pat is mygti to do alle pingis m
ore plenteously pan we aske
or vndirstoudi bi pe vertu pat
worchip i vs: to hym be glorie in
to alle pe generacions of pe wor
ld of worldis amen

pe chirche & i crist
hym in
c. iij.

Therfor y beseche 3ou: pat ze walke
worpily i pe cleping i which
ze ben clepid/ wip al meken
esse & mylde nesse: wip pacie
nce supportinge eche op i chari
te: bisy to kepe vnyte of spirit:
i pe bond of pees/ o body & o
spirit: as ze ben clepid i oon hy
pe of 3oure cleping/ o lord o fe
ip· o baptym· o god & fadir of
alle: which is abone alle men
& bi alle pingis· & i vs alle/ but
to eche of vs grace is 3oue: bi pe
mesure of pe 3yfyng of crist/ for
which ping he seip/ he stiynge
an hi3: ledde captyfte captif· he
3af 3iftis to mē/ but what is
it pat he stiede up: no but pat
also he cam doun first i to pe lo
were partis of pe erpe/ he it
is pat cam doun & pat stiede ou

alle heuenes: pat he schuld fille
alle pingis & he 3af sume apost
lis: sume profetis/ opre euāgel
istis· opre schepperdis & techeris:
to pe fulendyng of sayntis· i to
pe werk of mynistrie: i to edifica
cion of crist is body: til we renen al
le i to vnyte of feip & of knowy
ng of godis sone: i to a parfit
man aft pe mesure of age of
of pe plente of crist/ pat we be
not now litle childrē mouyge
as wawis: & be not born about
wip eche wynd of teching· in pe
wetwardnesse of men· i slihtwit
to pe disseyuyg of errour but
do we trewpe i charite· & wexe
i him bi alle pingis pt is crist oure
heed/ of whom al pe body set to
gidere & bounden to gidere bi eche
iointure of vndir seruynge·
bi worchinge i to pe mesure of
eche membre: makip encreesyng
ng of pe body i to edificacion
of it self i charite/ for y sey
& witnesse pis ping i pe lord:
pat ze walke not now· as hepe
ne men walken i pe vanyte of
her wit pat han vnderstondy
ng derkned wip derknessis &
ben alienede fro pe lif of god· bi
ignorance pt is in hem: for pe
blyndnesse of her herte/ whiche
dispeirynge bitoken hem silf
to vnchastite: i to pe worchyng

of al vncleñesse in couetise/ but ze han not so lernd cst: if nepeles ze herden hi/ & be taust i hi: as is treupe i ihñ/ do ze a wey bi pe elde lyuyng pe elde man pat is corrupt bi pe desiris of erroure/ & beze renewlid i pe spirit of zoure soule: & clope ze pe new man which is maad aft god i rizthwisnesse & holynesse of treupe/ for which ping putte ze alwey alwei leesing: & speke ze treupe ech man wip his nei3bore. for we ben men bris ech to op/ be ze wrop: & nyle ze do synne/ pe sunne falle not doñ on zoure wrappe/ nyle ze 3eue stide to pe deuel/ he pat stal: now stele he not/ but more trauele he i wirchinge wip his hondis pat pat is good: pat he haue wher of he schal 3yue to nedy/ ech yuel word go not of zoure mouþ/ but if ony is good to pe edificacioñ of feip: pat it 3yue grace to heren/ & nyle ze make pe holy goost of god sory: i which ze ben mar kid i pe day of redempcioñ/ al bit nesse & wrappe and indignacioñ. and cry & blasfemye. be taki alwey fro zou: wip al malice/ & be ze to gidere benygne. mercyful. forzyuynge to gidere: as also god forzaf to zou i crist

Verfore be ze folowers of god: as most derewarpe sones/ and walke ze i loue: as crist louyde us/ & zaf hym silf for us an offryng & an offryng & a sacrifice to god: i to pe odour of swetnesse/ & fornycacioñ & al vncleñesse. or auerice be not named among zou: as it bicomep hooly men/ eper fil pe or foly speche or harlatrie pat pertoyuep not to pfit: but more doinge of pankyngis/ for wite ze pis & vndurstonde pat ech lechour. or vncleene man or couetous. pat serueip to mawmetis: hap not heritage i pe kyngdom of crist & of god/ no man disseyue zou bi veyn wordis/ for wip for pese pingis: pe wraape of god cam on pe sones of vnbileue/ for nyle ze be maad parteneris of hem/ for ze weren sumtyme derknesse: but now liʒt i pe lord walke ze as pe sonys of liʒt/ for pe fruyt of pe liʒt is i al goodnesse & rizthwisnesse & treupe/ & preue ze what ping is wel plesinge to god/ and nyle ze comyne to vnfruyto use werkis of derknesse: but more repue ze/ for what pingis bē don of hem i þup:

it is fonle ȝhe to speke / And alle
pingis pat bē reꝑued of pe liȝt:
ben oppenly shewed / for whi al pi
ng pat is shewed: is liȝt / for wh
ch ping he seip / rise pou pt slepist
& rise up fro dep: & ꝯst shal liȝtne
ȝee ¶ for bripē se ȝe how war
ly ȝe shulē go / not as vnwise
men: but as wise men redemyng
tyme · for pe dayes ben puele / p
for unpleȝe be made vnwise: but
vndirstōdinge which is pe wille
of god / & unpleȝe be drunkē of vp
u · in which is leccherie: but be ȝe
filled wip pe hooly goost / & speke
ȝe to ȝou silf in salmes & ympnes &
spiritual songis: singinge · & sey
ynge saluu ī ȝoure hertis to pe
lord / euere maad doynge pankim
gis for alle pingis in pe name of
oure lord ihū ꝯst: to god & to pe fa
dir / be ȝe suget to gidere in pe dre
de of ꝯst ¶ wymen be pei suget
to her housebondes: as to pe lord /
for pe man is heed of pe wom̄an:
as ꝯst is heed of pe chirche · he
is sauyour of his body / but as
pe chirche is suget to ꝯst: so wym
men to her housebondis in alle
pingis ¶ men loue ȝe ȝoure
wyues: as ꝯst louyde pe chirch
e / & ȝaf hi silf for it: to make
it hooly / & cleusid it wip pe
waischyng of wat': in pe word
of liif · to ȝiue pe chirche glori
ous to hym silf · pat it hadde no
wem ne ympelyng · or ony suche
ping · but pat it be hooly & vnde
filid / so & men shulē louen her
wyues: as her owne bodies / he
pt louep his wijf: louep hym silf
for no man hatide eu his owene
fleisch: but nurship & fostrip it ·
as ꝯst doip pe chirche / & we ben
membris of his body: of his fle
isch & of his boonis / for pis ping
a man shal forsake his fadir and
modir: & he shal drawe to his
wijf · & pei shulē be tweyne in o
fleisch / pis sacrament is gret ȝhe
p seie in ꝯst & in pe chirche / nepeles
ȝe alle · ech man lone his wijf
as hī silf / and pe wijf: drede
hir housebonde

¶ Sones obeishe ȝe to ȝour
fadir & modir; in pe
lord / for pis ping is ri
ȝtful onoure pou pi fadir & pi
modir pat is pe firste maundem
ent in biheest: pat it be wel to pee ·
& pat pou be long lyuynge on pe erpe /
& fadris unpleȝe terre ȝoure sou?
to wrappe: but nurche ȝe hem ī
pe techyng and chastisyng of
pe lord ¶ seruantis obeishe ȝe
to fleischly lordis wip drede and
tremblyng: in symplenesse of
ȝoure herte as to ꝯst / not seruy
nge at pe ize as plesing to men:
but as seruantis of ꝯst / doynge

pe wille of god vi discrecion wiþ
good wille: seruyng as to pe lord:
& not as to men/ wityng þ ech
man what eche good þing he
shal do: he shal resseyue þis of
pe lord. Whe þ seruaunt whepher
ye man/ & ze lordis do pe same
þingis to hem: forzyuyng manas
sis/ wityng þat bope her lord
& zoure is in heuenes: & pe tak
yng of persones is not anie
wise god/ hou affectuously wripen
ye ze comaundid in pe lord: & in pe m
yzt of his vertu/ clope zou wiþ
pe armure of god god: þat ze
moun stonde azenst aspyngis of pe
deuel/ for wyl strepyngis not
to us azenst flesch & blood: but
azenst pe princes & potestatis. azen
st gouernours of pe world of pe
se derknessis/ azenst spirituall
þingis of wickednesse: in heue
nly þingis/ þfor take ze pe armur
of god: þat ze moun azenstonde in pe
yuel day. & in alle þingis stonde per
fit/ þfor stonde ze & be girt aboute
zoure leendis in trust soþfastnesse
& clopid wiþ pe haburioun of rizt
wisnesse. & zoure feet shood in
making redy of pe gospel of pe
ce/ in alle þingis take ze pe shield
of feiþ: in which ze moun quenche
alle pe firy dartis of pe worste/
& take ze pe helm of helpe: & pe
sword of pe goost. þat is pe word
of god/ bi al þrey & bisechyng. þre
ze al tyme in spirit: & in hym wak
nge in al bisynesse & bisechyng
for alle hooly men & for me/ þt word
be zouen to me in openyng of my
mouþ: wiþ trist to make knowe
n pe mysterie of pe gospel for wh
ich y am set in message in achayne/ so
þat in it y be hardy to speke: as
it bihoue me/ & ze wite. what
þingis ben aboute me. what y
do: tichik my most dere breper.
& trewe mynistre in pe lord. shal
make alle þingis knowen to zou/
whom y sente to zou for þis same
e þing: þat ze knowe what þin
gis ben aboute us. & þt ze coforte
zoure hertis/ pees to bripen. &
charite wiþ feiþ of god oure
fadir. & of pe lord ihū crist/ gra
ce wiþ alle men: þat louen oure
lord ihū crist in vncorrupcion. a
men/ þt is so be it. Here
endiþ pe pistle to effesies: & her
biggynneþ pe plogge on pis pistel to philippēsis:

Philippēsis ben of macedoyne/
pese whanne pei hadden re
ceyued pe word of trewpe
stoden stedfastly in pe feiþ: & pei rece
yued not false apostlis/ pe a
postle preyseþ pese: writyn
ge to hem fro rome out of
prisoun. bi epafrodite/
Jerom seiþ þis

C. ꝑ.

Paul And tymothe ſer
uauntꝭ of ihū cꝛiſt: to
alle pe holy mẽ in
criſt ihū pat ben at
Philippis · wiþ biſſhopis & dekenes:
grace & pees to zou of god oure
fadir · & of pe lord ihū cꝛiſt / I do
þanckyngis to my god eu̇ry
de of zou ene more i alle my p̄i
eris for alle zou wiþ ioye: &
make abiſechyng on zoure co
mynyng i pe goſpel of cꝛiſt fro
pe firſte day til now / truſtyng
ynge þis ilke þing pat he pat
bigan i zou a good werk: ſchal
parfourme it til i to pe day of
ihū cꝛiſt / as it is iuſt to me: to fe
ele þis þing for alle zou / for
pat I haue zou i herte & i my
boondis · & i defendyng & cõfer
mynyng of pe goſpel: pat alle ze
be felowis of my ioye / for god
is a witneſſe to me: how I coue
te alle zou · i pe bowelis of
ihū cꝛiſt / & þis / þing I p̄ie: pat
zoure charite be pleteuouſe
more & more i kunnyng & in al
wit / pat ze p̄ue pe bete þing:
pat ze be clene & wiþout offe
nce i pe day of cꝛiſt / fillid wiþ pe
fruyt of riztwiſneſſe bi ihū
cꝛiſt: i to pe glorie & pe herynge
of god / ffor I wryten I wole pat
ze wite · pat pe þingis pat bẽ
a boute me: han comẽ more to
pe profit of pe goſpel / ſo pat
my boondis weren maad kno
wen i cꝛiſt: i ech moot halle & in al
le oþe places / pat no of bripen
truſtynge i pe lord more pleten
ouſly for my boondis: durſte
wiþ out drede ſpeke pe word
of god / but cũme for enuye &
ſtrif / cũme for good wille pre
chen cꝛiſt & cũme of charite ·
witynge pat I am put i pe de
fenſe of pe goſpel / but cũme
of ſtrif ſchewe cꝛiſt · not cle
uely · geſſynge hem to reiſe
tribulacion to my boondis / but
wiſt pe while on al maner
eþer bi occaſion eþer bi trewpe ·
cꝛiſt is ſchewid: & in þis þing
I haue ioye · but alſo I ſchal
haue ioye / & I woot pat þis
þing ſchal come to me in to he
lpe: bi zoure p̄iere & pe vnder
mynyſtryng of pe ſpirit of ihū
cꝛiſt · bi myn abidyng & hope / for
i no þing I ſchal be aſchamed / but
i al triſt as euere more & now · cꝛiſt
ſchal be magnefied i my body ·
eþer bi liif · eþer bi deep / for me to
lyue is cꝛiſt: & to die is wynyng /
pat if to lyue i fleiſthe · is fruyt
of werk to me: to what I ſchal
cheſe · I knowe not / but I am
conſtreyned of tweyn þingis ·
I haue deſire to be diſſolvyd:
& to be wiþ cꝛiſt / it is mychel more

vetere/ but to dwelle i fleisch:
is nedeful forzou/ & p tristynge
ynge: woot pat p schal dwelle·
& parfitly dwelle to alle zou/ to
zoure profit & ioye of feip: pt
zoure paunchynge abou i chſt ihū
i me· bi my comynge eftsoone
to zou/ onely lyue ze worpily
to pe gospel of chſt/ pt wheper
whāne p come & se zou eþ abse
nt: p here of zou/ pat ze stond
en i o spirit· of o wille: trauai
linge to gidere to pe feip of pe
gospel/ & nū no pyng be ze aferd
of aduersaries/ which is to hē
cause of perdicioū: but to zou
cause of heelpe/ & pis pyng is
of god ffor it is zoūn to zou
for chſt· pat not onely ze bileu
en i hym: but also pat ze suf
freu for hi/ haupynge pe same
strif: whiche ze sawe i me· &
now ze han herd of me
Therfor if ony coufort is
i crist· if ony solace of ch
arite· if ony felouschipe
of spirit· if ony mercyn
esse of myy doyngis: fille ze
my ioye/ pat ze vndirstonde
pe same pyng: & haue pe sam
e charite· of o wille: & feelyn
pe same pyng/ no pyng bi stri
yf· neþ bi veyn glorie: but i
mekenesse· demynge eche
oþ to be hizer pan hi silf not
biholdinge ech bi hym silf wh
at pingis ben his owne: but
po pingis pt ben of oþe men/
& feleze pis pyng i zou: which
also i chſt ihū/ pat whāne he
was i pe forme of god: demyde
not rauepu· pt hi silf were equ
ne to god/ but he lowide hym
silf: takynge pe forme of a ser-
uaūt/ & was maad i to pe like
nesse of mē: & in abite was foū
dē as anūs/ he mekide hym
silf & was maad obedient to
pe deep· zhe to pe deep of pe
crosse/ for which pyng god eu
hanūside hi: & zaf to hi name
pat is aboue al name/ pat i
pe name of ihū: eche kne be
bowid· of heuenly pingis of
erpely pingis· & of hellis/ &
ech tūge knouleche: pat pe
lord ihū chſt i is i pe glorie of
god pe fadir/ ¶ for my moost
derewarpe britren as euere
more ze han obeischid not i
my presence onely: but my
che more now i my absence·
worchhe ze wip drede & trem
blyng zoure heelpe/ for it is
god pat worchip i zou bope
to wilne· & to pacfourme
for good wille/ & do ze alle
pingis· wipoute grutchyngis
& doutingis: pat ze be wip
oute plaput/ & symple as pe

sones of god wtpout reprefe
ī pe mydꝺil of aſhyewid nacī
on ⁊ alwerward / among whic
he ze ſhyneu as ȝuerys of lyf
ī pe world: ⁊ holde ze to gidere
pe word of lyf to my glorie ī
pe day of cſt / for y haue not
rnnū in vepu: nep̄ y haue trā
uelid ī vepu / but pouȝ y be of
frid or clayn on pe ſacrifice ⁊
ſeruyce of ȝoure feip: y haue
ioye ⁊ y panck ȝon alle / ⁊ pe ſa
me pyng haue ze ioye: ⁊ panckꝺ
ze me / ⁊ y hope ī pe lord ihū: pat
y ſhal ſende tymothe ſoone to
ȝou / pat y be of good comfort:
whān̄e po pyngis ben knowū
pat ben abonte ȝou / for y haue
no mā ſo of o wille: pat is buſy
for ȝou wip clene affection / for
alle mē ſekeu po pyngis pat
ben her owne: not po pat ben
of cſt ihū / but knowe ze pe aſa
ie of hī: for as a ſone to pe fad
he hap ſeruyde wip me in pe
goſpel / for y hope pat y ſhal
ſende hī to ȝou: anoon as y ſe
what pyngis bē abonte me / ⁊
y triſte ī pe lord: pat alſo my ſ
elf ſhal come to ȝou ſoone / ⁊ y
gelde it nedeful: to ſende to
ȝou epafrodite my brop̄ ⁊ eme
ne worchere ⁊ myn eme kny
ȝt / but ȝoure apoſtle: ⁊ pe my
niſtre of my nede / for he deſir
ꝺe ȝou alle: and he was ſorow
ful. for pat ze herdē pt he was
ſiſk / for he was ſyk to pe dep:
but god hadde mcy on hī / ⁊ not
ouely on hī: but alſo on me. leſt
y hadde heuynelle on heuyne
lle / for more haſtily y ſende
hī: pat whān̄e ze ſhal ſeyn hyp
ze haue ioye eft. ⁊ y be wipoutē
heuynelle / for reſſeyue ze hī
wip al ioie ī pe lord: ⁊ haue ze
liche wip al onour / eſſe pe werk
of cſt he wente to dep / ȝuyuge
his lyf: pat he ſhulde fulfille
pat pat failide of ȝou anen
tis my ſeruyce

Remeforward my brip
eu haue ioye ī pe lord
to write to ȝou pe ſame
pyngis: to me it is not cloyꝺ. ⁊
to ȝou it is neceſſarie / ſe ze hou
dis. ſe ze yuele werk mē. ſe ze
ꝺuyſion̄ / for we bē circūciſion̄:
whiche bi ſpirit ſerue to god
⁊ glorien ī cſt ihū. ⁊ han not
triſt ī pe fleiſhe: pouȝ y haue
triſt ȝhe ī pe fleiſh / if ony ope
mā is seyn to triſte ī fleiſh: y
more / pat was circūciſid ī pe
eiȝtpe ꝺay. of pe kyn of iſrael.
of pe lynage of benāmyn: an
ebrew of ebrews / bi pe lawe:
a fariſee / bi loue purſuynge
pe chirche of god bi rigtwiſnes
ſe pat is ī pe lawe: lyuynge

wipout playnt/ but whiche ping
were to me wynnyngis: yhaue
demed pese apeyr-pingis for crist/
nepeles y gelle alle pingis to be
peirement: for pe cleer sience
of ihū cst my lord/ for whom
y made alle pingis peirement
& y deme as dryt: pt y wynne
cst/ & pat y be foūdū i hī: not
hauynge my rizt wisnesse pat
is of pe lawe/ but pat pt is of
pe feip of cst ihū· pat is of god
pe rizt wisnesse i feip: to knowe
hī· & pe vtu of his rising azē·
& pe felouschipe of his passioū
& to be maad lik to his deep:
if on ꝯ ony maū y come to pe
resurrecciōū pat is fro dep/ not
pat now y haue takū: or now
am parfit/ but y sue if i ony
maū y cōprehende· i which ping
also y am cōprehendid of cst ihū/
bripen y deme me not pat y
haue cōprehendid/ but o ping
y forzete po pingis pt ben bihy
ndis· & strecchen forp my silf to
po pingis pt ben biforē & pur
sue to pe ordeyned meede of pe
hiz cleping of god i cst ihū/ per
for who eue we ben parfit:
feele we pis ping/ & if ze vndur
stoudē i ony maner ony ping:
pis ping god schal schewe to zou
nepeles to what ping we haun
comū: pat we vndurstoude pe
same ping· and pat we pawfully
dwelle i pe same reule/ bripren
be ze my folowerid: & waite ze
hem pat walken so· as ze haue
our forme/ for many walkē:
which y haue seid ofte tozen/
but now y weppynge seie: pe ene
myes of cristis crois/ whos ende
is dep: whos god is pe wombe/
& pe glorie i cōfusioū of hem:
pat sauerē erpely pingis/ but
oure lyuynge is i heuenes/ fro
whennes also we abidē pe sauy
our oure lord ihū cst: which schal
al reforme pe body of oure me
keneſſe· pat is maad lijk to pe
body of his clereneſſe· bi pe wor
chīng bi which he may also mak
ke alle pingis suget to hym
Wherfor my bripren moost de
welworpe & moost desirid· my
ioye & my corown: so stōde
ze i pe lord moost dere bripē/
y prie euodian· & bisechе syn
tecem: to vndurstōde pe same
ping i pe lord/ also y prie & pee
germain felow: helpe pou pe
ilke wymen pat trauliden wt
me i pe gospel/ wip clement &
opē myn yelperis· whos na
mes ben i pe book of lijf/ ioye
ze i lord eue more: eft y seie ioye
ze/ be zoure pacience knowū
to alle mē: pe lord is nyz/ beze
no ping bisy: but i al pier &

C. iij.

besechinge wiþ doynge of þanck
ynges · be ȝoure affynges knowen
at god / & pees of god þat paſſiþ
al wit: kepe ȝoure hertis & wu
ȝur ſtondinges i cſt ihū / fro hē
no for þ vnpeu · what euē þin
gis be hope · what euē þīgis ch
aſt · what euē þingis iuſt · wh
at euē þingis hooly · what euē
þingis able to be loued / what
euē þingis of good fame · if
ony vertu · if ony þeching of diſ
cipline: penke ze pese þingis ·
þat also ze han lernd · & take
& herd & ſeyn i me / do ze pese
þingis: & god of pees ſchal be
wiþ ȝou / but þ i ſpede gretely
i pe lord: þat ſittynge aft aft
ward ze floured azen to ſeele
for me · as also ze ſeeliden / but
ze weren occupied · þ ſeie not
as for nede / for þ haue lernd
to be ſufficient: i whiche þin
gis þ am / & þ can also be low
id: þ can also haue plētee / in
alle þingis: þ am tau
ȝt / to be fillid · & to hungre: & to
aboūde & to ſuffre myſeiſte / þ
may alle þingis: i þi þat con
fortiþ me / nepeles ze han doon
wel: comynynge to my tribu
lacion / for also ze filipenſis · wi
ten þat i þe bigynnyng of þe go
ſpel · whanne þ went fro
macedoyne: no chirche comy
nede wiþ me i reſon of ȝyng
ȝouñ & takū · but ze aloone /
whiche ſentē to tellalonyk: o
nys & tweyes also i to vſe to me /
not for þ ſeke ȝifte: but þ redre
ſempt aboūdinge in ȝoure reſo
ū / for þ haue alle þingis: & aboū
de / þ am fillid wiþ þo þingis ta
kū of epafrodite · whiche ze ſen
ten i to odour of ſwetnelle aw
enable ſacrifice pleſinge to god /
& wiþ god fil alle ȝoure deſire
bi hiſe richeſſis i glorie i cſt ihū /
but to god & oure fadir: be glo
rie i to worldis of worldis am
en / grete ze wel euery hooly
man i cſt ihū / þo bretheren þat
ben wiþ me gretē ȝou wel / alle
holy mē gretin ȝou wel: moſt
ſpecialy þei þat ben of þe emper
ours hous / þe grace of our
lord ihū crift be wiþ ȝoure
ſpirit amen / Here endiþ
þe piſtle to filipēſis: & here bigy
nneþ þe ꝓloge on þe piſtle to colocēſ

Colocenſis ben also iac
obites: þeſe ben of
galie / & þei haddon be
deceyued bi falſe apoſtles / þe
apoſtel hem ſeie wolde not to hem:
but he bryngeþ hem azen to
correccion bi epiſtle / for þei had
den herd þe word of archipp: ·
þat hadde vnder-fonge þe min
iſtrie in to he / þfore þe apoſtel ·

holy bonden wroot to hem fro
in epheſie: bi tidyngis pe delyne
and oneliinnis pe aclolyt:

Jeroim ſeip pis
C·iii· Paule apoſtel of ꝺ̄ſt
ihū· bi pe wille of
god· & tymothe bi
oper· to hē pat bē
at colosse· holy & feipful bre
pen i ꝺ̄ſt ihū: grace & pees to
zou of god oure fadir· & of pe
lord ihū ꝺ̄ſt we don pankyngis to god & to pe fadir of oure
lord ihū ꝺ̄ſt: euere more pi nge
for zou herynge zoure feip in
ꝺ̄ſt ihū· & pe loue pat ze han to
alle holy men: for pe hope pat
is kept to zou i heuenys/ whi
ch ze herden i pe word of treu
pe of pe gospel pat cam to zou:
as also it is in al pe world· and
makip fruyt & wexip as in zou
fro pat day· in whiche ze her
den & knewen pe grace of god
i treupe/ as ze lernyden of
epafras oure felawe moost
derewoꝛpe: which is a trewe
mynistre of ihū crist for zou/
which also schewide to us: zo
ure loupng i spirit/ for we
fro pe day i which we herden:
ceesseu not to pre for zou & to
axe/ pat ze be fillid with pe kn
owing of his wille: in al wisd
om & goostly vndirstonding pt
ze walke worpely to god plesinge
in alle pingis· & make fruyt in
al good werk· & wexe i pe science
of god/ & be conforti ꝺ̄ to al vtu
in pe mygt of his clerenesse:
in al pacience & long abidyng
with ioye/ yat ze don pankyn
gis to god & pe fadir: which m
ade zou worpi to pe part of
eritage of holy men in lizt/ whi
ch delyneride us fro pe power
of derknessis: & tiſlatide in to
pe kingdom of pe sone of his
lovyng· in whom we han aze
nbiyng & remyssioū of synnis/
which is pe ymage of god vnp
sible: pe firste bigetin of ech
creature/ for in hi alle pingis
ben maad· i heuenes & in erpe:
visible & vnpsible· eyper trones
eyper dompnacions· eyper princehod
es eyper powers/ alle pingis
ben maad of nouzt bi hi & in
hi: & he is bifore alle· & alle
pingis ben i hi & he is heed
of pe body of pe chirche/ whi
ch is pe bigynnyng· & pe firste
bigetin of deed men: pat he hol
de pe firste dignyte i alle pingis
for i him it plesside al plentee
to inhabite: & bi hi alle pingis
to be reconsilid in to hi & made
pees bi pe blood of his crosse:
po pingis pat ben i erpis· eyper
pat ben i heuenys/ & whanne

ze weren sumtyme alienyd and enemyes bi wit in yuele werk is: now he hap reconsiled 3on in ye body of his fleisch bi dep to haue 3on hooly & vnwemmyd: & wipoute vepek bifor hi: if ne peles ze dwellen in ye feip: foū did stable · & vnmouable fro ye hope of ye gospel pat ze haū herd which pchid in al creat ure · pat is vndur heuē · of w hich y poul am maad mynistre: & now y haue ioye in passiōn for 3ou & y fille po yingis pat faile n of ye passiōns of crist in my fleisch: for his body pat is ye chirche / of which y poul am maad mynistre bi ye dispensa cioū of god pat is 3omē to me in 3ou: pt y fille pe word of god · pe pnyte pt was hid fro worldis & generacions / but now it is schewid to his seyntis · to wh iche god wolde make knowē pe richessis of pe glorie · of pis sacrament in hepene mē which is crist in 3ou: pe hope of glorie / wh3 we schewē · repnyge ech mā · & techinge ech mā in al wis dom: pt we offre ech mā perfit in crist ihū / in which pig also y trucle in stirpinge: bi pe worchig of hi· pt he worchip in me in vertu

C. ij.

nt y wole pat ze wite · what bisynesse y haue

for 3ou

and for hem pat ben at laodice · & which eue sawen not my face in fleisshe: pat her hertis ben con fortid & pei ben taust in charite · in to alle pe richessis of pe ple tee of vndurstondyng · in to pe knowing of mistrie of god pe fadir of ihū crist: in wh3 alle pe tresouris of wisdō & of scyence ben hid / for pis pung y seie: pat no mā disceyue 3ou in heizpe of wordis / for pouz y be absent in body: bi spirit y am wip 3ou / ioyinge & seynge 3oure ordre: & pe stadnesse of 3oure bilefe pt is in crist / pfor as ze haū takē ihū crist oure lord: walke ze in hi· & be ze rootid & bildid aboue in hi / & confermyd in pe bilefe as ze haū lernd: haboundinge in hi in doing of pankingis / se ze pt no mā disceyue 3ou · bi filosofie & veyn fallace: after pe tradicioū of mē · after pe elemētis of pe world · & not after crist / for in hi dwellip bodili che al pe fulnesse of pe godhed / & ze ben fillid in hi: pt is heed of al principat & power / in wh3 also ze ben ar cumcidid · in circumcisioū not maad wip hond in dispoilinge of pe bo dy of fleisch: but in circumcisioū of crist / & ze ben biried to gidre wip hi in baptym: in wh3 also ze han risen azen bi feip of pe worchig

of god· pat reisede hym fro
dep/ & wha̅ne ze were deed i
giltis & in pe prepuce of zour
fleisch· he quykenyde to gidere
zou wip hi̅/ forzyuyge to zou al
le giltis· doynge awey pat wr
itynge of decre· pat was azy
ns· pat was co̅trarie to us/
& he took awey pat fro pe myd
dil puttynge it on pe croos/
& he spuylide principatis & pow
eris· & ledde out trystily· opy
nly ouercomynge hem in hi̅ self/
¶for no man deme zou in mete or
in drynk or in part of feeste day
or of neomenye or of sabotis·
which ben schadewe of pingis
to comynge· for pe body· is
of crist· no man disseyue zou
willynge to teche in mekenesse
& religio̅n of aungels· pe pingis·
which he hap not seyn walky
nge· veynly valued wip wit
of his fleisch & not holdinge
pe heed· of which· al pe body
bi boondis & iopyngis to gide
re vndur mynistrid & maad·
wexip in to encreessyng of god
for if ze ben deede wip crist fro
pe elemētis of pis world· why
at zit as me lyuynge to pe w
orld demē ze· pat ze touche
not ney taaste ney trete wip
hondis· pe pingis· which alle
ben in to deep bi pe ilke vss· at

tir pe comaūdementis & doc te
chyngis of men/ which hap
a reson of wisdom in veyn reli
gioun & mekenesse· & not to spa
re pe body/ not in ony honour
to pe fulfillyng of pe fleisch

¶ Ca. iij.

¶ Therfor if ze han risen to gidere
wip crist· seke ze po pingis·
pat ben above· where crist is
sittynge in rizthalf of god· sa
uere ze po pingis pat ben abo
ue· not po pat ben on pe erpe/
for ze ben deede· & zoure lif is hid
wip crist in god· for whanne crist hi
al appere zoure lif· pan also
ze schulen appere wip hi̅ in glorie
¶for slee ze zoure membris which
che ben on pe erpe· fornycac
cioun vnclennesse· lecchirie· yuel
coueitise & mawmetrie/ for whi
che pingis· pe wrappe of god
cam on pe sones of vnbileue
fin which also ze walkiden
sum time· whan ze lyuyden in
hem/ but now put ze awey alle
pingis· wrappe in dignacioun·
malice· blaspheme· & foule
word of zoure mouye/ uptake ze
not to gidere/ spoyle ze zou
silf to pe elde man wip his dedis/
& clope ze pe newe man· pat is
maad newe azen in to pe kno
wyng of god· after pe ymage
of hi̅ pat maad hi̅ where is

not male and female· here ne
ma & selue· circūcisiō & ꝓpuce.
barbarus & scita· bonde ma &
fre man: but alle thingis & i
alle thingis crist/ for ze as he ch
osene of god· holy & lomyd clo
the zou with the entrailis of m
cy· benygnyte & mekenesse·
temperaūce patience & suppor
te ze ech on oth· & forzyne to zou
silf: if ony ma azeyn ony hab
aquerele/ as the lord forzaf to
zou: so also ze/ & vpon alle pese
thingis haue ze charite: that is
the bond of perfectiō/ & the pe
es of crist: eu̇ore i zoure hertis
i which ze ben clepid to body:
& be ze kynde/ the word of crist
dwelle i zou pleuteuosly in al
wisdom· & teche & mouneste
zou silf i salmes & ympnes &
spiritual songis i grace· syn
gynge i zoure hertis to the lo
rd· al thing what euer thing
ze don i word or i dede: alle
thingis i the name of oure lo
rd ihū crist· dowge thank-y
ngis to god & to the fadir bi
hym/ whanne ze suget
to zoure housebondis: as it
bihoueth i the lord/ me loue
ze zoure wyues: & nyle ze
be bitter to hem/ sonnis: ob
eie ze to zoure fadir & mo
dir bi alle thingis/ for this
is wel plesynge i the lord/ fad
ris nyle ze terre zoure sonnes
to ōdignacioū: that ne be not
maad feble hertid/ seruaūtis:
obeie ze bi alle thingis to fle
shly lordis· not seruynge
at ize: as plesynge to men·
but i symplenesse of herte·
dredynge the lord/ what euer
ze doen: worche ze of wille
as to the lord: & not to men
whanne: that of the lord ze
shulē take zeldynge of eritā
ge/ serue ze to the lord crist/
for he that doth i iniurie: shal
resseyue that that he dide vnre
le/ And accepcioū of persoo
nes: is not at hym god
ordis zyue ze to seru
aūtis that that is ri-
ght & euene wrytinge:
that also ze han a lord i heue
ne/ be ze bisy i preier: & wak
ke in it i doing of thankyng
is/ & pie eche for oth & for me:
that god opene to me the dore of
word· to speke the mysterie
of crist for which also y am bo
ūdin/ that y shewe it: so as
it bihoueth me to speke/ wal
ke ze i wisdom to hem that be
without forth: azenbiyng
tyme/ zoure lord word be
sauerid i salt euer more in
grace/ that ze wite: how it

vihonep zou to answere to
ecclesiā, titicius most dere bro
per & feipful mynistre and
my felawe i pe lord: shal ma
ke alle pingis knowūn to zou
pat ben aboute me, whom y
sent to zou · to pis same ping:
pat he knowe what pingis
ben aboute zou · & cōforte zo
ure hertis, whip onesymus m
ost dere & feipful brober:
which is of zou, whiche shal
en make alle pingis pat bō
don here: knowūn to zou, ar
istark p̄soner whip me: gre
tip zou wel, & mark pe cosyn
of barnabas: of whom ze
haue take maundemētis, if he
come to zou: resseyue ze him
& ilke pt is seid nust: whiche
ben of circūcisiōn pei aloon
e ben myn helperis i pe kyn
dom of god: pat weren to
me i solace, epaphras pat is
of zou pe seruaūt of ihū cst:
gretip zou wel, euē busy for
zou i pieris: pat ze stonde per
fit & ful i alle pe wille of go
dis p bere witnessing to hi:
pat he hap myche trauel for
zou, and for hem pat ben at
laodice: and pat ben at ier
apolym, link pe leche moost
dere & demas: greten zou
wel, grete ze wel pe bripen:
pat ben at laodice and pe wom
an nymfam: & pe chirche pat is
i hū ihōs & wibsāme pis pistle
is red among zou: do ze pat it
be red i pe chirche of laodicēsiū·
& rede ze pat pistle pat is of la
odicensiū, & seie ze to archippus
se pe mynistrie pat pou hast ta
kū i pe lord: pat pou fille it,
my salutacioū: bi pe hond of
paul bere ze myndeful of my bo
ondis, pe grace of pe lord ihū
be whip zou amē. Here endip
pe pistle to colocēsis: & here bi
gynep pe prologe on pe furste
pistle to tessalonycenses:

Thessalonycenses ben
macedonypes: in ihū
crist, whām pei hadde
receyued pe word of trewpe:
pei stode stedfastly i pe feip
& also i persecucioū of her ow
ne cyteseynys ferpinore pei
receyued not false apostles: ne
yo pingis pt were seid of false
apostles, pese pe apostel pylip:
writing to hem from athem
ys · bi timothicus & onesimus
sendō i his prologe: seip al pis
oul and siluan and
thymothe · to pe chir
che of tessalonycen
sis · i god pe fadir &
in pe lord ihū crist: grace & pees
to zou, we don pankyngis to god

C. pr.

euere more for alle zou And we m
aken mynde of zou i oure ꝑieris
wip ontē ꝙelling hamyng my
nde of pe werk of zoure feip &
trauel & charite & abiding of pe
hope of oure lord ihū cst biforе
god & oure fadir ze louyde bri
ꝑen of god: we writyng zoure
chelyng for oure gospel was
not at zou i word onely: but
also i vtu & i pe hooly goost & i
myche plentee as ze wite: wh
che we weren among zou for
zou & ze ben maad foloweris
of us & of pe lord: resseyuyng ge
pe word i myche tribulacioū wt
ioye of pe hooly goost so pat ze
ben maad ensaūple to alle m
en pat bileuē: i macedonye &
i achaie for of zou pe word of
pe lord is pupplischid: not one
ly i macedonye & achaie but zou
re feip pt is to god: i ech place
is gon forp so pat it is ^ nede to
us for to speke ouy ping ffor
pei schewē of zou: what man
eure we hadde to zou & hou
ze ben conuertid to god fro mawm
etis: to seruе to pe lyuynge go
d & very & to abide his sone fro
heuenes. whō he reisede fro dey:
pe lord ihū pat delyueride us
fro wrappe to comynge

Capitulum ij.

For bripen ze witen oure
entre to zou: for it was

^ not

not veyn but first we suffrid
& weren pupplischid wip wrong
is as ze witen i filippis. And
hadde trist i oure lord to spe
ke to zou pe gospel of god i my
che bisynesse & oure exortaci
oū: is not of errour. nep of
vnclēnesse. nep i gile but as
we ben preued of god. pat pe
gospel of god schulde be takū
to us: so we speken not as ple
singe to mē: but to god pat p
ꝙep oure hertis. for nep we
weren ony tyme i word of glo
sing: as ze witē nep i occasio
ū of auerise: god is witnesse.
nep seking glorie of mē: nep
of zou nep of oþe. whan we
as cristis apostlis myzten hau
be i charge to zou but we we
ren maad litle i pe myddil of
zou: as if a nurse fostre her
sonus. so we desiryng zou wt
greet loue: woldē haue bita
ke to zou. not onely pe gospel
of god but also oure lyues:
for ze ben maad moost dere
worpe to us. for bripen ze
ben myndeful of oure trau
le & werynesse. we wrechidē
nyzt & day. pt we schuldē not
greue ony of zou & ꝓchiden
to zou pe euāgelie of god.
god & ben witnessis: hou
holyli & iustly. & wip outen

playnt we weren to zou pat bi
lempden as ze writen. how we
preden zou & confortiden ech of
zou as pe fadir his sonȝ: & we
han witnessid pat ze schulen
go worpily to god: pat clepide
zou i to his kingdom & glorie
for we dou pankingis to go
d: wipouten ceesling for whan
ne ze hadde take of us pe wo
rd of pe herynge of god: ze to
ken it not as pe word of me
but as it is verily pe word of
god: pat worchip i zou pat bi
leuyd for bripen ze ben ma
ad folowerid of pe chirchis
of god pat ben i iudee i crist ihū
for ze han suffrid pe same pin
is of zoure euene lynagis: as
pei of pe iewis which slowe
bope pe lord ihū & profetis: &
pursuyde us & pei plesen not
to god: & pei ben aduersaries to
alle me forbedinge us to spe
ke to hepene men: pat pei be
maad saaf pat pei fille her
synnis euere more for pe wrappe
of god cam ou3 hem: in to pe
ende for bripen we desolat fro
zou for a tyme bi mouy. & in
biholdinge but not i herte: ha
hized more plenteuously to se
zoure face wip greet desire
for we wolden come to zou
whe y poul ones & eftsoone:
but satanas lettide us for whi
what is oure hope: or ioye or
coroun of glorie: wher3 ze ben
not bifore oure lord ihū crist:
in his comyng: efor ze ben ou
re glorie and ioye
or which ping we suffr
iden no lengere: and it
pleside to us to dwelle
aloone at ateupis & we senten
tymothe oure brop. & mynistre
of god i pe euangelie of crist: to
zou to be confermyd & to be tauȝt
for zoure feip: pat no man be
moued i pese tribulacionis for
ze silf witen: pat i pis ping we
ben sette for whanne we weren
at zou: we bifore seiden to zou
pat we schulde suffre tribulaci
onis as it is don: & ze witen for
y poul no lengere abidinge: se
nte to knowe zoure feip lest
peraduenture he pat tempti temp
te zou: & zoure trauele be maad
veyn but now whanne tymothe
schal come to us fro zou: & telle
to us zoure feip & charite and
pat ze han gode mynde of us:
euere desiringe to se us. as we
also zou for bripen we ben
confortid i zou i al oure nede
& tribulacioun: bi zoure feip
for now we lyuen: if ze stonden
i pe lord for what doynge of
pankingis. mowen we zelde

C. iij.

to god for you: in al ioye · in wh
ich we ioyen for you · biforе ou
re lord: nyzt & day · moze pleute
uously þrynge: þt we se youre
face · & fulfille þo þingis þat
failen to youre feiþ / but god
him silf & oure fadir & þe lord
ihū cst: dresse oure weie to yo
u / & þe lord multiplie you: and
make youre charite to be pleu
tenous of eche to oþe & in to
alle me · as also we i you / þat
youre hertis ben confermyd ·
wiþouten plepnt i holynesse
biforе god & oure fadir: in þe
comynge of oure lord ihū cst
wiþ alle his seyntis Amen

C. iiij. Therfor bripen fro hennefor
ward we þien you: and
biseechen i þe lor ihū / þat
as ze han resseyued of us ·
how it bihouep you to go &
to plese god: so walke ze þt
ze abounde þe more / for ze
witen what comaundemen
tis þ haue youn to you: bi
þe lord ihū / for þis is þe wil
le of god · youre holynesse:
þat ze absteyne you fro for
nycacioun / þat ech of you
kunne welde his vesse: in
holynesse & honour / not i
passioun of lust: as heþen
e men þat knowen not
god / & þat no man ouʒ go:
neþer disseyue his brooþer i þat
þarung / for þe lord is vengeve
of alle þese þingis: as we biso
re seiden to you · & han witnes
sid / for god clepide not us i to
vnclennesse: but i to holynesse
þfor he þat dispisiþ þese þingis:
dispisiþ not man · but god þt
also zaf his hooly spirit in
us but of þe charite of bre
þerhed: we hadden no nede
to write to you / ze silf han
lernd of god: þat ze loue to
gidere for ze don þat i to alle
bripen i al macedonye / and
bripen we þien you: þat ze
habūnde more & take kepe: þt
ze be quyet & þat ze do youre ue
de · & worche wiþ youre hondis:
as we han comaundid to you / &
þat ze wandre honestly to hem
þat ben wiþouten forþ: & þat
of no man ze deliue oup þing
for bripen we wolen not þat
ze vnknowe · of hem þat dien:
þat ze ben not sorowful as oþe
þat han not hope / for if we bi
leuen þat ihc was deed & roos
azen: so god schal lede wiþ hi-
hem þat ben dede bi ihū / and
we seien þis þing to you: i þe
word of þe lord / þat we þat
lyuen þat ben left i þe com
yng of þe lord schulē not co
me biforе hem þat ben dede /

for pe lord hym silf shal come
doũ fro heuene: ũ pe cõmaũd
ement & ĩ pe voiꝺ of an archaũ
gel· & ũ pe tvũpe of god/ & pe
dede men pat ben ĩ cst: shulẽ
rise azen first/ afterward we pat
lyuen pat ben left: shulen be
vanysshid to gideren wip hem ĩ
clouꝺis· metũge cst ĩ to pe eir/
& so eue mare we shulẽ be wip
pe lord/ perfor be ze conforted
to gideren: ũ pese wordis

But bripen of tymes &
monẽtis: ze nedẽ not
pat y write to zou/ for
ze silf wite diligently: pat pe
day of pe lord shal come as
a pef ĩ pe nyzt/ for whanne pei
shulẽ seie pees is & sikirnesse:
pãne sudeyn dep shal come
on hem/ as sorowe to a wõmã
pat is wip childe· & pei shulẽ
not shape/ but bripen ze ben
not ĩ derknessis: pat pe ilke
day as a pef cacche zou/ for
alle ze bẽ pe sonys of lizt: and
sones of day we ben not of
nyzt: nep of derknessis/ pfor
clepe we not as ope: but wa
ke we & be we sobre/ for pei pt
clepen: clepen ĩ pe nyzt/ & pei
pat ben drũkũ: ben drũkũ
ĩ pe nyzt/ but we pat ben of
pe day: ben sobre/ clopid ĩ pe
haburiown of feip & of cha
rite: and ũ pe helm of hope of
helpe/ for god puttide not us ĩ to
wrappe: but ĩ to pe purchasinge
of heelpe bi oure lord ihũ cst· pt
was dede for us/ pat whepr we
waken· whepr we slepẽ: we ly
ue to gideren wip hym/ for which
ping conforte ze to gideren: and
edefie ze ech op· as ze don/ & bripẽ
we prey zou: pat ze knowe hem
pat trauelen among zou/ & ben
souereyns to zou ĩ pe lord· & teche
zou: pat ze han hem more abũd
antly ĩ charite/ & for pe werk
of hem: haue ze pees wip hem/
& bripen we prey zou: repue
ze vnpesible men· conforte ze men
of litle herte· resseyue ze sike
men· be ze pacient to alle men/
se ze pat no man zelde yuel for
yuel to ony man: but eue more
sue ze· pat pt is good eche to ope
& to alle men eue more ope ze·
wipout ceesing prey ze: ĩ alle
pingis do ze pankingis/ for
pis is pe wille of god ũ crist
ihũ: ĩ alle zou/ nyle ze quenche
pe spirit: nyle ze dispise pro
fecies/ but preue ze alle pingis/
& holde ze pat ping pat is go
od: abstepue zou fro al yuel
spice/ & god hym silf of pees ma
ke zou holy bi alle pingis: pt
zoure spirit be kept hool· &
soule & body wipout playnt

pe firste pistle to
tessalonycēsis: &
yet bygynneth pe
prologe on pe seco
nde/

C. pm.

in pe comyng of oure lord ihū
cst god is to trewe pat departe zo
u: which also shal do vengeau-
ce zef for us Gretez wel alle
bretheren in hooly cos/ y cōmu-
ne zou bi pe lord: pat pis pistle
be red to alle hooly bretheren/
pe grace of oure lord ihū cst:
be with zou Amen ¶ Here bigy
nneth pe apostle writip pe secōn
de epistel to thessalonycē
sis: & makep knowē to hē
of pe laste tymes/ & of pe co
mynge of pe aduersarie: & of
pe prowing doū of hī/ he wr
itip pis epistel from athenys:
bi tytyca pe dekene & onely
un pe scolpt ¶ pis seip iero-
nim and siluan &
tymothe: to pe ch
urche of thessalo
nycensis in god
oure fadir: & in pe lord ihū
cst/ grace to zou & pees of god
oure fadir: & of pe lor ihū cst/
we owen to do þankingis euer
more to god for zou bretheren: so
as it is worpi/ ffor zoure feip
ouū wexip: & pe charite of ech
of zou to ope abouūdip/ so pat
we silf gloriem̄ in zou in pe chir
chis of god: for zoure pacien
ce & feip· in alle zoure persecu
cioūs & tribulacioūs/ which
ze sustenen in to pe ensāple
of pe iust dom of god: pat ze
be had worpi in pe kingdom
of god· for which ze suffren/
if nepeles it is iust to fore god:
to quyte tribulacioū to hē pat
trobleu zou/ & to zou pat ben
troblid: reste with us/ in pe shy
ning of pe lord ihū fro heuē·
with angels of his vtu: in pe
flawme of fier/ pat shal zyue
veniaūce to hem pat knowen
not god: & pat obeyen not to
pe euangelie of oure lord ihū
cst/ whiche shulen suffre eūla
stinge peynes: in perishing
fro pe face of pe lord & fro pe
glorie of his vertu: whanne he
shal come to be glorified in
his seyntis· & to be maad wo
nderful in alle mē pat bileu
den/ for oure witnessing is
bileuyd on zou: in pat day/ in
which ping also we prien euer
more for zou: pat oure god ma
ke zou worpi to his clepyng/
& fille alle pe wille of his good
nesse: & pe werk of feip in vtu/
pat pe name of oure lord ihū
cst be clarified in zou & ze in hī:
bi grace of oure lord ihū cst
and bretheren we prien
zou bi pe comyng of
oure lord ihū cst· and
of oure congregacioū in to pe
same comynge: pat ze be not

monyd soone fro youre wytt/ ne
þ̄ be afeerd· nei̇þ̄ bi spirit· neper
bi word· nei̇þ̄ bi epistle as sent bi
us: as if̄ ye day of ye lord be n
þ̄/ no mā disseyue you on ony
maner/ but for diffencioū come
first· & ye mā of synne be schewd
wid ye sone of perdicioū: þt
is aduersarie & is enhaūsid oū
al ping þat is seid god· or þt is
worshipid/ so þat he sitte in ye
tēple of god: & schewe hī silf·
as if he were god/ wheper ze
holden not· þat zit whanne y
was at zou: y seide pese ping
is to zou:/ & now what wiþ
holdiþ ze writen: þat he be schewd
i his tyme/ for ye þuyte
of wickidnesse worchip now/
onely þat þt he þat holdiþ n
ow· holde til he be do awei/ &
pānne pe ilke wicked mā schal
be schewid: whom ye lord ihū
schal sle wiþ pe spīrit of his
mouþ· & schal distrie wiþ liȝt
ning of his comyng/ hī whos
comyng is bi ye worching of
sathanas· in al vertu & signes·
& grete wondris falle & in al
disseit of wickidnesse: to hem
þat perischē/ for þat pei resse
yuedē not ye charite of treu
pe: þat pei schuldē be maad
saaf· & þfor god schal sende to
hem· a worching of errour:
þat pei bileue to leesyng/ þat
alle be demed: whiche bileuy
den not to treupe but consen
tiden to wickidnesse/ but briþ
en loued of god· we oiȝen to do
gō þankingis ēuermore to god
for zou: þat god chees us ye fir
ste fruytis i to helpe i halewy
ng of spirit & i feiþ of treupe/
in which also he clepide zou bi
our gospel: i to getyng of ye
glorie of our lord ihū crist/ þfor
briþen stonde ze & holde ze ye
tradicioūs þat ze han lernd:
eiþ bi word eper bi our pistle/
& oure lord ihū crist hī silf· & god
oure fadir· which louyde us &
zaf euerlastinge cōfort & good ho
pe i grace: stire youre hertis &
confermе in al good werk & word

C. iij.

Briþen fro hennis/ forwa
rd þie ze for us: þat ye
word of god renne & be
clarified· as it is anentis zou/
& þat we be delyuerid: fro noy
ous & yuele mē/ for feiþ is not
of alle mē/ but ye lord is treuwe
þat schal confermе zou: & schal
kepe fro yuele/ & briþen we triste
of zou ī ye lord: for what ēuе þu
gis we comaūden to zou hope ze
þat ze don & schulē do/ & ye lord dreg
se youre hertis in ye charite of
god: & in ye pacience of crist/ but
briþen we denoūcen to zou in

epistle: ꝑ wrote vnto ꝑe grace of
oure lord ihū cꝛist: be wip alle zour
auē. ¶ Here ꝑe secōde pis
tle to tessalonicēsis: And
here bigynnep ꝑe ꝓloge on
ꝑe firste pistle to tymothe

Ce enformep and techep
tymotheе· of ꝑe ordre
naūce of bisshopes offi
ce· & of dekenes office· & of ꝑe
riche disciplyne of hooly chirche:
writinge to hī from macedoyne
bi titicꝰ ꝑe dekene ¶ ꝑis seip ierō
Ē
oul apostle of ihū
cꝛist· bi ꝑe cōmaūde
ment of god oure
sauyour· & of ihū
cꝛist oure hope· to tymotheе
biloued soue ī ꝑe feip: grace &
mercy & pees· of god ꝑe fadir &
of ihū cꝛist oure lord. As ꝓ ꝓiede
pee ꝑt pou shuldist dwelle at
effesi· whāne ꝓ wente in to m
acedoyne· ꝑat pou shuldist de
noūse to cōmen. ꝑat pei shuldē
not teche oꝰ wyse· nep zyue te
nt to fablis· & genologies ꝑat
ben vnꝓfitep: whiche zyuē que
stiōns more ꝑan edificacioū of
god ꝑat is in ꝑe feip. for ꝑe en
de of comaūdemēt is charite
of cleue herte & good conscience·
& of feip not feyned. fꝙ fro
whiche pingis sōmen han er
rid & ben turnyd in to veyn

ꝑe name of oure lord ihū cꝛist:
ꝑat ze wip drawe zou fro eche
broꝰ ꝑat walkip out of ordre
& not aft ꝑe teching: ꝑat hou it
bihouep to sue us. for we were
not vnpesible among zou: nep
wip outē oure owne trauel· we
eetē breed of oup mā. but itra
uel & werynesse wacchīde nyzt
& day: ꝑat we greuyde noon of
zou. not as we hadden not pow
er: but ꝑat we shuldē zyue us
silf ensaūple to zou to sue us. for
also whāne we were at zou: we denoūsiden vis ping to
zou. ꝑat if oup mā wole not wo
rche: nep ete he. for we han herd
ꝑat sūme among zou goon in
reste· & no ping wacchin but do
on curiously. but we denoūcen
to hem ꝑat ben siche mē: and
bisechen ī ꝑe lord ihū cꝛist. ꝑt pei
wacchen wip silence· & ete her
owne breed ¶ but vnple ze bri
pen faule: wel doyng. ꝑat if oup
mā obeiep not to oure word bi
epistle: marke ze hī. & coupne
ze not wip hī: ꝑat he be shamd
yd· & vnple ze gelde hī as an ene
mye: but repreue ze hī as a
broper. & god hī silf of pees:
zyue to zou euerlastinge pees
ī al place. ꝑe lord be alle wip
zou. nup (Auntacioū: bi ꝑe hon
d of ꝑoul. which sigue in ech

speche and wille to be techeris
of pe laue: & vndurstondyn n
ot what pingis pei affermē
& be writyn pat pe laue is go
od: if ony man vse it lauefu
ly & wrytis pis ping. pat pe
laue it not sette to amist mā:
but to vnmist mē & not suget.
to wicked mē & to spuueris. to
cursid men & defoulid. to slee
ris of fadir & sleeris of mo
dir. to men sleeris & lechou
ris. to hem pat don leccherie
wip mē. lesingmongeris. &
forswornē. & if ony ope ping
is contrarie to pe hoolsū tech
ing. pat is aftir pe euangelie
of pe glorie of blessid god.
which is bitakid to me. y do
pankingis to hī pat confortid
de me ī crist ihū oure lord: for
he gesside me feipful & puttе
me ī mynysterie. pat first
was a blasfemye & a pursuere
& ful of wrongis. but y hadde
getē pe mercy of god: for y vnk
nowinge dide ī vnbilefe. but
pe grace of oure lord: ōn abo
ūndide wip feip & loue pat is
ī crist ihū. a treewe word & wor
pi al resseyuynge. for crist ihū
cam ī to pis world: to make
synful men saf. of whiche
y am pe firste. but ¶for y ha
ue getē mercy: pt crist ihū shu
de shewe in me first. al pa-
cience to pe ensaumplynge of he
pat shulē bileue to hī in to
euerlastinge lif. & to pe king
of worldis. vndedly & vnbili
ble god alone: be onour & glo
rie in to worldis of worldis
Amen. y bitake pis comaūde
ment to pee ¶ sone tymothe ac
cir pe profecies pat wan be he
ve to fore ī pee: pat pou trau
le ī hem a good trauel. hauy
nge feip & good conscience. wh
ich summe caston away: & peris
chiden about pe feip. of whi
che ymeney & alisaūdre: whi
che y bitook to sathanas. pat
pei lerne to not blasfeme
Therfore y biseche first of
alle pingis pat biseching
is. ¶preris. axingis. ¶ping
is of pankingis ben ma
ad for alle men. for kingis.
& alle pat ben sett in hizhnes
se: pat we leden aquyet & a
pesible lif ī al pite & chastite.
for pis ping is good & acceptid
bifore god oure sauyour: pat
wolle pat alle men ben maad
saf. & ¶pt pei come to pe knowl
ing of treupe. for o god & a
mediatour is of god & of mē.
a man crist ihc: pat 3af hī self
redēpciōn for alle men. whos
wytnessing is cōfermyd ī his

C.iij.

tymes· in which y am sett apre
chour & an apostle/ ffor y seie
treupe· & y lie not· pat am ate
cher of hepene mē i feip & in
treupe/ yfor y wole pat mē pie
i al place: liftinge up· cleene
hondis wip outen wrappe and
stripf/ also wymē in comenable
abite· wip shamefastnesse &
sobrenesse arayinge hē silf·
not i wripīn heeris eper in go
ld· ep peerlis· ep ꝑcious cloye:
but ꝑt pat bicomep wymen·
bihestinge pitee bi good werk
is/ a wōman lerne i silence
wip al subiection/ but y suffre
not a wōmā to teche: neper to
haue lordship on pe hosebon
de· but to be in silence/ for a
dam was first formed: aftir
ward eue/ & adam was not
disseyued: but pe wōmā was
disseyued i breking of pe lay
e/ but she shal be sauyd bi ge
nacion of children: if she di
ellip perfitly i feip and ione
& hoolynesse wip sobrenesse
feipful word· if ony
man desirip a bischop
riche: he desirip a go
od werk/ ffor it bihoueb a bis
chop to be wip out vepe pe ho
sebonde of o wipe· sobre· pru
dent· chast· ꝓtelbous· holdin
ge hospitalite· a techeve· not

ȝouñ myche to wyn· not a lyare
ve but temperat· not ful of chi
ding· not coueitous· wel reu
lynge his hous· & haue sonȝ
liget wip al chastite/ ffor if ony
man kan not gouerne his hous:
hou shal he haue diligence of
pe chirche of god/ not newe con
uertid to pe feip/ lest he be vañ
up i to pride· & falle i to dom of
pe deuel/ for it bihoueb hym
to haue also good witnessing·
of hem pat ben wip out for
pat falle not i to repreef· & in
to pe snare of pe deuel/ Also it
bihoueb dekenes to be chast·
not double tungid· not ȝouñ my
che to wyn· not cupinge foule
wynynge pat han pe mysterie
of feip i clene conscience/ but
be pei preued first: & mynistrē
so: hauynge no crymc/ Also it
bihoueb wymen to be chast·
not backbitinge sobre· feipful
i alle pingis/ dekenes be hose
bondis of o wipe: whiche gou
ne wel her sonȝ & her houshō
for pei pat mynistrē wel: shul
en gete a good degree to hē silf·
& myche trist i pe feip· pat is
i crist ihū/ lone tymothee· y wri
te to pee pese pingis: hopinge
pat y shal come soone to pee/
but if y tarie: pat pou wite hou
it bihoueb pee to lyue in pe hous

C. iij.

of god / pat is ye chirche of lyuy
ng god: apiler & ladnesse of tre
uthe & oppinly it is agreet sacra
ment of pitee / pat ping pt was
shewid i fleisth: it is iustified i
spirit· it apperide to aungels· it
is pchid to hepene me· it is bile
uyd i pe world it is takū up u
But pe spirit glorie
ly openly / pat in pe
laste tymes· sūmen
shulen departe fro pe feip· 3i
uyuge tent to spiritis of erro
ur· & to techingis of deuelis·
pat speekin leesyng i ypocrisi
e· & haue her conscience cau-ipt
forbedinge to be weddid· to ab
stepne fro metis whiche god m
ade· to take wip doyng of pan
ckingis to feipful me & hem
pat han knowe pe treupe / for
ech creature of god is good: &
no ping is to be cast awey· w
hich is takū wip doyuge of pa
nckingis / for it is halewid bi
pe word of god & by pier / pon
puttyuge forp pese pingis to br
pen: shalt be a good uyuistre
of crist ihū / nurischid wip wor
dis of feip & of good doctryne:
which pou hast gete / but esche
we pou uncouenable fablis &
elde wymēn9 fablis: haūte
pi silf to pitee / for bodily exer
citacioū: is profitabe to litle
ping· but pitee is profitable to
alle pingis: pat haue abihest
of lijf pat now is· and pat is
to come A treupe word & wor
pi al accepcioū / & ui pis ping
we traueleu & ben cursid: for
we hopen i lyuyng god pat is
sauyour of alle me· most of
feipful men / comaūde pou pis
ping & teche / no mā dispise pi
3oungpe: but be pou ensaūple
of feipful mē in word· i lyuyg
i charite· i feip in chastite / til y
come take tent to redinge· to
exortacioū & teching / wyle pou
litil charge pe grace which is
i pee: pat is 3ouū to pee bi pro
fecie wip puttinge on pe hond
is of pbithod / penke pou pese pi
ngis· in pese be pu: pat pi profi
tinge be shewid to alle mē / take
tent to pi silf & to doctryu: be
bisy i hem / for pou doynge pe
se ping?: shalt make boye pi
silf saaf· & hem pat heren pee /
blame pou not an elder man:
but biseche as a fadir / 3ounge
men: as britheu / elde wymen:
as modris / 3ounge wymen:
as sistris in al chastite
Honoure pou widewis:
pat be very widewis /
but if ony widewe hap
children of 3oun?: leerne schi
first to gouerne her hous and

shryte to fadir and modir/ ffor
this thing is acceptid bifore god
& she that is a widewe verily &
desolat: hope i to god & be bisy
i bisechingis & preris nyzt and
day/ for she that is lyuynge in
delices: is deed/ and comaunde
pou this thing: that þei ben with
outē reprefe/ for if ony man
hap not cure of his owne: &
moost of his houshol men: he
hap denyed the feip & is worse
than an vnfeipful mā & a wide
we be cholī not lesse than sixti
zeer· that was wyf of oon
housebonde· & hap witnessing i
good werkis/ if she nurshide
childrē· if she resseyuede pore
mē to herbore· if she hap was
shū the feet of hooly mē· if she
mynistride to mē that suffrid
tribulacioū· if she folewide
al good werk/ but eldre wide pou
zongē widewis/ for whanne þei
han do lecherie: þei wolē be
wedded i crist/ haujnge dāpna
cioū: for þei han maad voide
the first feip/ also þei idil lern
en to go aboute housis· not
onely idil but fol of wordis
& curiouse: spekinge thingis
that bihoueþ not/ þ for y wole
that zongē widewis bē wed
did· & bringe forp children·
& ben housholdynes/ to zyue
noon occasioū to the aduersarie:
bi cause of cursid thing/ for now
sūme ben turnyd abac after
sathanas/ if ony feipful man
hap widewis· mynistre he to
hem/ that the chirche be not gre
ued: that it suffice to hem that bē
wery widewis/ the þat bē
wel gouernours: ben þei had
worþi to double honour/ most
þei that trauelen i word and
techinge/ for scripture seip/ thou
shalt not bridele the mouth of
the oxe threischynge: & werk
mā is worþi his hire/ vpon þt
reclepne accusyng azens a
þrest: but vndur tweyne or þre
witnessis/ but reproue thou
men that synnen bifore alle mē:
that also ope hane drede/ y þe
bifor god & crist & his chosī
aungels: that thou kepe these thin
gis without þiudice· & do no
thing bowynge i to the ope side/
yit thou houdis to no man·
nep̄ anoon commune thou with
ope men? sin? kepe þi silf
chast/ vpon thou zit drynke
water: but vse a litil wyne
for thi stomak· & for thin ofte
falling infirmytees/ cū men?
sin? ben openly bifore goynge
to doom: but of sūme þei go
men aft̄/ & also goode dedis
ben opyn: and þo þt han ben

to hymselfe.

Wyll ope man nolden not be hid
ben vndur zoure zerdome
pei her lordis wor-
pi al honour · left pe name
of pe lord ℔ pe doctryn be blas
femyd ℔ pei pat han feipful
lordis: dispise hem not for pei
ben bripen but more serue
pei: for pei be feipful ℔ louyd
wlyche ben parceneris of ben
eritage techip you pese pingis: ℔
moneste you pese pingis if on
y man techip ope wise · ℔ acor
dip not to pe holsum wordis of
oure lord ihū cst · ℔ to pat tech
ing pat is bi pitee: he is pro
ud ℔ kan no ping but langlyn
isship about questiouns ℔ stri
uyng of wordis: of pe wlyc
he ben brouzt forp enuyes · stry
ues · blaskenuyes · yuele suspi
couns · fizztingis of mē pat be
corrupt in soule; ℔ pat ben
pryued fro treuye: pat deu
yn wypyng to be pitee but
a grete wypyng is pitee · wip
suffisaence for we brouzten
in no ping ī to pis world · ℔
no doute · pat we moun not be
re alwey ouy ping but we ha
uyngc fodis ℔ wip wlyat pin
gis we shulen be hild: be
we pated wip pese pingis for
pei pat wolen be maad riche:
fallen in to temptacioū · and ī to
snare of pe deuel ℔ in to many
vnprofitable delirid ℔ nopous:
wlyche drenchen men ī to dey
℔ perdicioū for pe vote of alle
yuelis: is couetise wlych ūi
mē coueitinge: erriden fro pe
feip · ℔ bisettide hem wip ma
ny sorewis but pou man of
god fle pese pingis but sue ꝑ
viztui suelle pitee feip charite
pacence myldenesse stryue ꝑ
a good stryf of feip · cacche en
lastinge lif · ī to wlych ꝑ art
clepid: ℔ hast knowlechid a go
od knowlechinge bifore manp
witnessis y comaūde to pee
bifor god · pat quykeney alle
pingis · ℔ bifore ihū̄ cst ihū · pt
zeldide a witnessing vndur pi
lat of poūce · a good cōfessioū:
pat pou kepe pe comaūdemē
nt wipout wem wipoute re
preef · ī to pe comyng of oure
lord ihū cst wlyom pe blessid
℔ alone myzty king of kingis ·
℔ lord of lordis schal schewe ī
his tymes wlych aloone hap
vndedlynesse: ℔ dwellip ī lizt
to wlych no man may come
wlyō no mā say: nep may se)
to wlyom: glorie ℔ honour ℔
empirie be wipout ende am
en, comaūde pou to pe richc
men of pis world pat pei vn

durstonde not lyghtly ney yat yei
hope i vncertayntee of richessis:
but i ye lyuynge god yat ʒiuep
to us alle yingis plentenously
to use to do wel to be maad
riche i good werkis lightly to
ʒiue to comyne to tresoure
to hē silf a good foundemēt i to
tyme to comyngе: yat yei cacche
eūlastinge lyf. Thou tymothee
kepe ye ping bitakū to pee eſ
chewinge cursid noueltees of
voices & oppynyouns of falsnа
me of kunyng which sūmen
bihetinge: Aboute ye feip fellē
doū ye grace of god be wt pee
Amen. ¶ Here endip ye firste
pistle to tymothee: & here bi
gynnep ye pologe on ye secoūde

¶ Paul apostle of ihū
crist bi ye wille of
god bi ye bihest
of lyf yat is i crist
ihū: to tymothee his moost de
relwape sone; grace mercy and
pees of god ye fadir & of ihū
crist oure lord; y do þanking
is to my god to whom y serue
fro my progenitours in clene
conscience: yat wipoutē ceessing
y haue mynde of pee in my pri
vis nyʒt & day desirynge to see
pee hauynge mynde of yi tee
rs: yat y be fillid wip ioye &
y wipeuke of yat feip yat is in
pee not feyned which also dwe
lede firste i yin aunte loide: & i
yi modir eunyce & y am certeyn:
yat also i pee for which cause
y moneste pee yat pou reise aʒē
ye grace of god: yat is in pee
bi ye setting on of myn hondis
for why god ʒaf not to us ye spi
rit of drede: but of vertu and
of loue & of sobrenesse þ for
nyle pou schame pe wytnessyng
of oure lord ihū crist: neyper
me his þ louer but trauele þ
to gidere i ye gospel bi ye vertu
of god: yat delyuerede us & cle
pide wip his hooly clepinge
not aft oure werkis but bi his
purpos & grace yat is ʒouē i
crist ihū bifore worldly tymes
but nouʒ it is opyn bi ye lyʒt
ynge of oure sauyour ihū
crist which distriede dep: & lyʒt
nyde lyf & vncorrupcioū bi
ye gospel & in which y am set
a þechour & apostle: & maist
of heþene men for which ca
use also y suffre pese pingis:

but y am not coforidid / ffor y
woot to whom y haue bileiyd·
& y am certeyne pat he is myzti to
kepe pat ib take to my keping
i to pat day / haue pou pe foun
me of hoolich wordis: whiche
pou herdist of me i feip and
loue i crist ihū / kepe pou pe go
od takū to pi kepīng· bi pe ho
ly goost pat dwellip in us / pt
woost pis pat alle pat ben in
asie ben turned awey fro me:
of whiche is figelus & ermog
enes / pe lord zyue mcy to pe ho
us of onesyforus: for ofte he
refreischide me· & schamyde
not my chayne / but whanne
he cam to roome: he sowzte me
bisily & foond / pe lord zyue to
hī to fynde mcy of god in pat
day / & hou gvete pingis he my
nystride to me at ephesy: pou
knowest bettre

Ca. ij. Therfor pou my sone be con
fortid in grace pat is in crist
ihū / & what pingis pou
hast herd of me bi many
witnessis: bitake pou pe
to feipful men· whiche schal
ben able also to teche oper
men / trauele pou as a good
knyzt of crist ihū: no man holdīn
ge knyztlood to god: wlappip
hī silf with worldly nedis / pat
he plese to hī: to whom he hap
preued hym silf / for he pat fiz
tip in batel: schal not be crowñ
ed· but he fizte lawfully it bihō
ueb au erpetilieue to resseyue
first of pe fruytis / vndirston
de pou what pingis y seie / for
pe lord schal zyue to pee vndirstō
dyng in alle pingis / be pou myn
defull· pat pe lord ihū crist of pee
seed of dauy hap risen azen fro
dep aft my gospe / in which y
trauele til to boondis· as woor
dynge pncle: but pe word of
god is not boūdū / pfor y suffre
alle pingis for pe chosenе: pat
also pei gete pe heelpe pat is in
crist ihū with heuenly glorie / a tre
we word / pat if we ben deed to
gidere: also we schulē lyue to gi
dere / if we suffren: we schulē
regne to gidere / if we denen:
he schal denye us / if we bileuē
not: he dwellip feipful· he may
not denye hī silf / teche pou pese
pingis: witnessynge bifore god /
nyle pou stryue in wordis / for to
no ping is it is profitable: but
to pe subuertyng of meñ pat heryn
bisily kepe to zyue pi silf approued
pfitable werk man to god· with
oute schame· riztly tretynge pe
word of treupe / but eschewe pō
vnhooly & veyn spechis / for whi
po profiten mychе to vnseipful
nesse: & pe word of hem crepip

as a kankir / of which-filete
is & pinene?: which felden doñ
fro pe treupe-leiyuge / pat pe
vising azen is now don-& pei
subuertiden pe feip of cristē / but
pe sted fondement of god ston
diy: hauyuge pis mark / pe
lord knowip which ben his /
& ech man pat nemip pe name
of pe lord: departip fro wicke
nesse / but in agrete hous ben
not onely vessels of gold & of
silu: but also of tree & of erpe /
& so sumen ben in to honour-&
sume in to dispit / for if ony m
an cleusip hi silf fro pese: he shy
al be a vessel halewid in to hono
ur-& profitable to pe lord-redi
to al good werk / & ese pou desi
rid of zonpe / but sue pon rigt
wisnesse-feip charite-pees w^t
he pat inwardly clepen pe lord
of aclene herte / & eschewe pn
foltishe questiouns & wipout
kunyng: wityuge pat pei gen
dren chidyngis / but it bihon
ep pe seruaunt of pe lord to chi
de not: but to be mylde to alle
men-able to teche-pacient-
wip temperaunce repuyuge
hem pat azenstonden pe treu
pe / pat sumtyme god zeue to he
forpinking: pat pei knowen
pe treupe / & pat pei rise azen
fro pe snaris of deuel: of

Whom pei ben holdun prisо
neris at his wille

But wite pou pis ping:
pat in pe laste dayes-pe
perilouse tymes shulē
neize / & men shulē be louyuge
hem silf-couetouse-hij of bery
ng-proude-blasfemeris-not
obedient to fadir & modir-vn
kynde-cursid-wipoutē affeccioū-
wipoutē pees-falce blameris-
uncontynet-vnmylde-wipout
benygnite-traitours-holdyng
vollū wip proude pouztis-bly
nde loueris of lustis-more pā
of god-hauyuge pe lickenesse
of pitee: but denyinge pe vtu
of it-& eschewe pou pese men /
of pese pei ben pat persen hou
sis-& leden wymmen caitifs char
gid wip synn-which ben led
wip diuerse desiris / euere more
lurnynge: & neuere perfitly com
yuge to pe knowe of treupe / &
as iannes & mambres azenstod
den moises: so pes azenstodē
treupe / men corrupt in vndur
stonding reprouyd aboute pe
feip: but ferpe pei shulen
not profite / for pe vnwisdom
of hem shal be knowū to alle
menē: as her was / but pou
hast getū my teching-ordeyn
ance-purposing-feip-longa
biding-lone-pacience-perse

ciciõis · passiõis · whiche wer
en unto me at Antioche · at
yconij · at listris · what unkuer
persecuciõis y suffride : & pe
lord hap delyuerid me of alle
& alle men pat wolen lyue ferp
fully i ẽst ihũ : shulẽ suffre per
secuciõn / but yuele mẽ & disse
ducris : shulẽ encreesse un to
worse · erryng & sendyng i to
errour / but dwelle pou i pese
pingis pat pou hast lernid : and
pat ben betakũ to pee / wityng
of who pou hast lernid · for pu
hast knowen hooly lettris fro
pi zoupe : whiche moun lerne
pee to helpe · bi ferp pat is in
ẽst ihũ / for al scripture i spirit
of god : is profitable to teche
to repreue · to chastise · to lyue
ne i rigtwisnesse / pat pe man
of god be perfit : lernid to
al good werk

I witnesse bifore god & crist
ihũ · pat shal deme pe quyk
ke & pe dede · & bi pe comyng
of hi · & pe kingdom of hym:
preche pe word · be pou bisy co
nenably wipouten veste / re
preue pou · biseche pou · blame
p' in al pacience & doctryn /
fortyme shal be whanne mẽ
shulẽ not suffre hoolsũ te
ching : but at her desiris
pei shulen gadere to gidere
to hem silf maistris ziching
to pe eeris / & trenly pei shulen
turne awey pe hering fro tre
upe : but to fablis pei shulen
turne / but wake pou · i alle pi
ngis trauele pou / do pe werk
of an euũgeliste fulfille pi ser
uyce · be pou sobre / for y am
sacrifisid now · & pe tyme of my
departing is ons / y haue fouȝt
a good strijf · y haue endid pe
cours · y haue kept pe feip / in
pe toþ tyme acordyng of rit
isnesse is kept to me : which pe
lord a iust domesman shal zelde
to me i pat day / & not onely to
me : but also to pese pat louen
his comyng / hize pou to come
to me soone / for demas louyn
ge pis world hap forsakũ me :
& went to tessalonyk / crescens
i to galathie · titꝰ i to dalmacie :
luyk aloone wip me / take p'
mark : & bryng wip pee / for he
is profitable to me i to seruy
ce / forsope y sente tichicus to ef
fesi / pe clop which y lefte at
troade at carpe : whanne pou
comest bringe wip pee and pe
bookis but most parchemyne ·
Alisaũdre pe tresorer : shewide
to me muche ynele / pe lord
shal zelde to hi aft' his wer
kis whom also pou eschewe /
for he azenstood ful gretly

oure wordis in my firste defence.
no man helpide me: but alle for
soken me / be it not arettid to hē
but pe lord helpide me & confor
tide me: pat pe ꝑching be fillid
bi me / & pat alle folkis here-
y am delyneris fro pe mouþ
of pe lioū / & pe lord delyneride
me fro al yuel werk: & schal m
ake me saaf in to his heuēly
kyngdom to whom be glorie in
to worldis of worldis Amen
grete wel prisca & aquyla · & pe
hous of oneseforus / er ani mē
lefte at corynthy / & y lefte trio.
fym?. sik at mylete / yize pon
to me bifore wynt? / embolmis &
prudēte & lynus & claudia & al
le bri-þren gretin pee weel / on
pe lord ihū cr̄t be wiþ þi spirit
pe grace of god be wiþ 3ou a
men / / Here endiþ pe se
coūde pistle to tymothee: &
here bigynneþ ą ploge o pe pistle to tite

Pe warnep tite & enbe
mep hī of pe ordynaū
ce of ꝑsthood: & of spiri
tual coūsaoū / & of heretikis
to be eschewed: pt seemep i pe
wis writyngis / writyng to hī
fro myc opolim / Paul seruaūt of
god & apostle of ihū
cr̄t: bi pe feiþ of
pe chosene of god /

and bi pe knowing of pe treupe:
which is aft? pitee · in to pe hope
of eūlastinge liif / which lyf god
pat lyep not bihizte: bifore tymes
of pe world / but he hap schewid
i hise tymes his word i ꝑching:
pat is bitakū to me bi pe comaūd
ement of god oure sauyour / to
tite most derewurpe sone bi pe
comyn feiþ: grace & pees of god
pe fadir · & of cr̄t ihū oure sauy
our / for cause of pis ping · y lef
te pee at crete: pat pou amende
po pingis pat failē & ordeyne
ꝑsris bi cytees: as also y dispos
to pee / if ony mā is wipout cry
me: an housebonde of o wiꝑ /
and haue feiþful sonȝ: not in
accusacioū of lecchirie · or not
suget / for it bihoueþ a bischop no
to be wiþ out cryme: as ispend
our of god / not proud · not wr
aþful · not dronkelew · not smy
tere · not coueitous of foul wy
nyng: but holdinge hospitalite ·
benygne · prudente · sobre ·
iust · holy · contynent takinge
pat treuwe word · pat is aft? doc
trin / pat he be mizti to amone
ste in hoolsū teching: & to repre
ue hem pat azen seien / for ꝑ
ben many vnobedient & veyn
speceris · & disseyueris · most
pei pat ben of circūcisioū: wh
iche it bihoueþ to be repreued /

to yte.

Whiche ſiduerten alle houſis-
techinge whiche ꝑnſis it bih
oueꝑ not for ꝑe loue of foul
wꝫnyng / & oon hem her ꝓ-
ꝓr ꝓfete: ſeide / men of cre
te ben euermore liers· vyle be
ſuele beeſtis of ſlowe wom
be / pis witneſſiñ is treiwe /
for what cauſe blame hē ſore-
pat pei be hool i feiꝫ / not zu
ynge tent to fablis of iewis·
& to mañdemētis of men:
pat turneñ awey hem fro
treupe / & alle ꝑnſis ben cle
ne to deme mē / but to vncle
ne men · & to vnſeiꝫful: no
ꝓng is deme · for ꝑe ſoule &
conſcience of hem ben mad
vnclene / pei knowlechen· ꝑt
pei denyen / whānne pei bē
abhominable & vnbileeful:
& repꝫable to al good werk

But ſpeke pou po ꝓn
ſis: pat biſemeñ ho
lyñ techinge / pat el
de mē be ſobre · chaſt · prud
ent · hool i feiꝫ in loue & pac
ence / alſo olde wꝫmē i hooly
abite · not ſclañdereris · not
ſeruynge myche to wꝫn / wi
el techinge: pat pei teche ꝑ
udence moneſte pou zonge
wꝫmen: pat pei loue her ho
ſebondis · pat pei loue her
children · & pat pei ben ꝓu

dent · chaſt · ſobre · hauynge cu
re of pe hous · beynge ſuget
to her ſebondis: pat pe word
of god be not blaſfemyd / Alſo
moneſte youngе mē: pat pei
be ſobre / in alle ꝓnſis ſiue ꝑ
ſelf enſaūple of good werkis·
i techinge · i hoolnelle · in ſadn
elle · an hoolſū word & vnꝛpre
nable / pat he pat is of pe cou
trarie ſide be aſchamed: hauy
nge noon yuel ꝓng to ſeie of
zou / moneſte pon ſeruañtis·
to be ſuget to her lordis in
alle ꝓnſis: pleſing not azen
ſeiꝫng · not defraudyng / but
i alle ꝓnſis ſchewinge good
feiꝫ: pat pei honour i alle pin
ſis pe doctryn of god oure
ſauyour / For pe grace of
god oure ſauyour hath ape
rid to alle men: & tauzte us /
pat we forſake wickidnelle
& worldly deſiris: lyue ſobre
ly & riſtly & pitenouſly i pis
world / abidynge pe bleſſid ho
pe & pe comynge of pe glorie
of pe grete god: & of oure ſauy
our ihū cſt / pat zaf hym ſelf
for us: to azenbie us fro al
wickidnelle · & make clene to
hī ſelf a ꝓuple acceptable and
ſuere of good werkis / ſpeke
pou peſe ꝓnſis & moneſte p:
& repne wiꝫ al comañdemēt /

41

to tite.

C. iij.

no man dispise pee

AMONESTE hem: to be
subgetis to þinces & to
powerid, to obeisshe
to pat pat is sepd & be redy to
al good werk· to blaspheme
no man to be not ful of chi
ding: but temperat sheiwī
ge al mylde nesse to alle mē/
for we weren sūtyme vnwise·
vnbileueful· errynge & ser vy
nge to desiris & to dyuerse lus
tis· doynge in malice & enuye
wozpi to be hatid· hatyng eche
oþe/ but whanne pe benygnyte
& pe manhed of oure sauy
oure god apperide: not of we
rkis of riztwisnesse pat we
diden· but bi his mcy he nā
de us saaf bi wasshyng of
azenbigetyng & azen newyng
of pe hooly goost· whom he
sheddc in to us pleuteuously
bi ihū crist oure sauyour/ pat
we iustefied bi his grace: bē
epris bi hope of euerlastyng
lyf/ a treuwe wordis & of pe
se pingis y wole pat pou con
ferme ope/ pat pei pat bileuen to
god: be bisi to be aboue ope in good
werkis/ pese pingis ben good·
& profitable to men: & eschewe
pon foolisshe questiouns & genelo
gies & stryues/ & fizt ingis of
pe lawe: for þo be vnprofitable

to filomene.

And veyn eschewe pou aman er
tik· aftir oon & pe secounde ner·ec
cioun/ witynge pat he pat is sich
amanū man: is subuertid/ & trec
pasiip: & is dampned bi his owne
doom/ whanne y sende to pe ar·te
mas or tichicus: hize pou to come
to me to nycopolis/ for y haue
purposide: to dwelle i wynt̄ pere/
bisily bifore sende zenam lawe
man of lawe & apollo: pat no
thing faile to hē/ pei pat ben of
oures: lerne to bē gouernouris in
goode werkis to necessarie vsis:
pat pei be not wip outē fruy
t/ alle men pat bē wip me: gre
eten pee wel/ greete pou wel hē
pat louen us in feip/ pe grace of
god be wt̄ zou alle amē Here
endip pe pistle to tite: & here bigynnep
pe prologe ou pe pistle to filemon:

PAUL preisoner of ihū crist
& timothe brooper: to filemon vilo
ue & oure helpere·
And to appia most dere sist̄ & to
archip oure euene knyzt· & to
pe chirche pat is in pin hous/
grace be to zou & pees of god

oure fadir: And of ye lord ihū
crist/ y do þanckingis to my
god euer more: makinge myn
de of ye in my prieris/ herynge
þ̄s charite & feip þat þou hast
in ye lord ihū: & to alle hooly m
en/ þat ye comynyng of pi fe
ip· be maad oppn: i knowing
of al gode þing in crist ihū/ And y
hadde greet ioie & confort in pi
charite: for ye entrailis of ho
oly mē resting bi yee broper
ffor which þing y hampuge my
che trist in crist ihū to comaūde
to yee· þat þat perteyneþ to pr
ofit: but y biseche more for cha
rite/ sipen þou art sich as ye el
de paul: & now ye boūdis of ihū
crist/ y biseche yee for my sone on
esyme· whom y haue boondis big
at: which sūtyme was vnpro
fitable to yee/ but now profita
ble boþe to yee & to me: whō
y sende azen to yee/ & resseyue
þou hī: as myn entrailes/ wh
om y wolde wip holde wip me:
þat he shulde serue for yee to
me in boondis of ye gospel/ but
wipoute pi counseil y wolde not
do ony þing: þat pi good shul
de not be as of nede· but wil
ful/ ffor peraūenture· þfore
he departide fro yee for a tym
e: þat þou shuldist ressеyue
hī wip outē ende/ now not as
a seruaūt: but for a seruaūt· an
oft dere brop̄· most to me/ & hou
myche more to yee: boþe in flesh
& in ye lord: þfor if þou hast me
a felowe: ressеyue hī as me/ for
if he hap ony þing anoied yee·
ep̄ owip· arette þou þis þing
to me/ y paul wroot wip myn
hond/ y shal ȝelde· þat y seie not
to yee: þat also þou owist to me
pi silf/ to brop̄ y shal vse yee
in ye lord: fille þou myn entra
ilis in crist/ y triste þou my
obedience: wroot to yee/ wity
inge þat þ̄u shalt do: and þat
þ̄t y seie/ also make þou redy
to me an hous to dwelle ine/
for y hope þat bi ȝoure þyeris
y shal be ȝouē to ȝou/ ep̄afras
þ̄soner wip me in crist ihū gretip
yee wel/ & marc· aristark· de
mas· lucas· myn helperis/
ye grace of oure lord ihū crist:
be wip ȝoure spirit. amen//

Here endip filemon: & here bigynnep ye prologe on ye pistle to ebrews:

First it is to sepe· whi
paul ye apostel in pis
epistel· in writinge
kepep not his vsage: distry
inge his name or ye dignp
of his ordev/ pis is ye cause
þat he writynge to hē þat
weren of circūcisiōn: bileeue

den · wroot as ye apostle of he
yene men ꝑ not of ieiwiꝭ/ ꝑ he
knowinge her pride · ꝑ shewy
inge his owne hymselfe: nol
de not putte biſore ye dissert
of his office/ ꝑ in like mañ also
soon ye apostel for hymselfe
i his epistel · for ye same skyle
sette not his name to foze/ as
it is seid ye apostel sente pis ep
istel to ye ebreiwes write in he
breiw tunge/ ꝑ aft' ye deep of po
il ye apostel: luyk ye euãgeliste
made it in greke speche · holdy
inge ye vndirstondinge and
ye ozder of it. Therꝰ seiꝑ al pis:
od pat spak sundrym
e bi prophetis · in
many maneꝭ to
oure fadres: at ye
laste in pese dayes he hap spo
ken to us bi ye sone/ whom he
hap ordeyned eir of alle pin
gis: ꝑ by whom he made ye
worldis/ which whane also he
is ye bri3tnesse of glorie: and
figure of his substaunce · ꝑ berp
alle pingis bi word of his vtu·
he makip purgacion of synnis
ꝑ sittip on ye vi3thalf of ye ma
ieste i heyenes/ ꝑ so mychel is
maad bette than aungels: bi hon
mychel he hap eu eritid a more
dyuise name · biſore hem/ for
to which of ye aungels seide god

ony tyme: pou art my sone · p
I haue geendrid pee to day: ꝑ eft
soone/ p shal be to hi in to a fa
dir: ꝑ he shal be to me i to a sone
ꝑ wh̃ne eft soone he bringip
yn · ye firste bigetin sone · i to ye
world: he seip/ ꝑ alle ye aungels
of god worschipe hi/ but he seip
to aungels/ he pat makip his
aungels spiritis: ꝑ his mynist'
flawme of fier/ but to ye sone
he seip · god pi trone is i to ye
world of world: 3erde of equy
te is ye 3erde of pi reiwme/ p'
hast loued rigtwisnesse · and
hatidist wickidnesse: ꝑfor ye
god pi god · anoyntide pee wt
oile of ioye · more than pi felo
wis/ ꝑ pou lord i ye bigynnyng
fondedist ye erpe: ꝑ heyenes
ben wevkis of yin hondis/
pei shulen perishe: but pou
shalt perseuerly dwelle · ꝑ alle
shulẽ wexe elde as clop/ and
pou shalt chaunge hem as a
clop: ꝑ pei shulen be chaungid/
but pou art ye same pi silf:
ꝑ pi 3eeris shulẽ not faile/
but to which of ye aungels sei
de god at ony tyme: sitte p'
on my vi3thalf · til y putte pi
enemyes a stool of pi feet:
whep pei alle ben not seruy
nge spiritis · sent to seruen:
for hem pat taken ye erita

tage of heelpe
Ver for more plentenously
it bihoney us to kepe po
pugris pat we han herd:
left peraventure we fle
ten awey/ ffor if pe like w
ord pat was sewe bi auge
ls. was maad sad. & eche
breking of pe lawe. & vnob
dience took ust retribua
oñ of mede: hou shulē we
ascape. if we dispisen so gre
et an helpee? which whanne
it hadde takñ bigynyng to be
told out bi pe lord. of he pat
herdē: is conferrmyd i to us/
for go witnesside to godere
by myracls & wondris and
grete miteles & diuise vtuis: &
departingis of pe holy goost
bi his wille/ but not to aug
els. god sugetide pe world
pat is to comyng: of which
we speken/ but simman wit
nesside i a place: & seide wh
at ping is man. pat pou art
myndeful of hi. or mañ? so
ne. for pou visitist hym:/ p'
hast maad hi a litil lesse pañ
aungelis: pou hast coroned
hi wip glorie & honour. & pou
hast ordeyned hi ou pe werkis
of pi houdis/ pou hast maad al
le pingis suget vndur hise fe
et/ & in pat. pat he sugetide al
le pingis to hym: he lefte no pig
vnsuget to hi/ but now we seen
not zit alle pingis suget to hym/
but we seen hi. pat was maad
a litil lesse pan aungels. thurgh
pe passioñ of dep. coroned wip
glorie & honour: pat he porouz
grace of god shulde taaste de
ep for alle men/ for it bisemed
hi for whom alle pingis. and
bi whom alle pingis weren
maad which hadde brouzt ma
ny sonys i to glorie: & was auc
tour of pe heelpe of hem. pat
he hadde an eende bi passioñ/
for he pat halewid: ben alle of
oon/ ffor which cause he is not
shamed: to clepe hem bripen-
seiynge/ y shal telle pi name
to my bripen: i pe myddil of
pe chirche. y shal herie pee/ &
eft soone y shal be trist eniyge
i to hi/ & eft soone/ loo i & my chil
dre: whiche god zaf to me/ pfor
for children comyned to fleisch
& blood: & he also took part of
pe same/ pat bi dep he shulde
distrie hi pat hadde lordship
of deep: pat is to seie pe deuel/
& pat he shulde delyne hem pr
bi drede of dep bi al lyf: were
boñdñ to seruage/ & he took ne
not aungels: but he took pe seed
of abrahan/ wherfor he ouzte
to be lickned to bripen by alle

halewip & pe
pat ben

pnigis: pat he schulde be mad
merciful & feipful bischop to
god/ pat he schulde be mindful to
pe trespassis of pe puple/ for in
pat ping ī which he suffride
& was tempti: he is mizti to
helpe also hem pat be tepti
er for hooly bridden · & par
teneris of heuenely clepy
ing: biholde ze pe apostle &
pe bischop of oure confessi
oun ihū which is trewe to hī
pat made hī: as also moises
was in al pe hous of hī/ but pis
bischop is had worpi of more
glorie pan moises: bi as mychе
as he pat made pe hous/ for ech hous
is maad of sūmē/ he pat made
alle pingis of nouzt: is god/ &
moises was trewe ī alle pe hī
hous · as a seruaunt ī to witnes
sing of po pingis pat were
to be seid seid/ but crist as a
sone in his hous/ which hous
we ben: if we holden sad trist
& glorie of hoope ī to pe ende/
wherfor as pe hooly g goost seip
to day/ if ze han herd his voic:
nyle ze hardne zoure hertis ·
as ī wrappyng · lyk pe dai of
temptacioun ī desert/ where zoure
fadris temptiden me · & pupden
& sizen my werkis fourty zee
ris/ wherfor y was wroop to
pis generacioun: and y seide euermore
pei erren in her te/ for pei knowe
wen not my weies · to which
y sq swoor ī my wrappe · pei schu
len not entre ī to my reste/
bridren se ze · lest peraduenture
ī oup of zou be an yuel herte of
vnbileue: to departe fro pe liu
ynge of god/ but monestе zou
silf bi alle dayes · pe while to
day is nemed: pat noon of zou
hardned bi fallace of synne/ for
we ben maad parteneris of
crist: if nepeles we holden pe
biginnyng of his substaunce stid
fast in to pe ende/ while it is seid ·
to day · if ze han herd pe voic
of hī: nyle ze hardne zoure
hertis · as in pat wrappyng/
for sūmē herynge wrappide:
but not alle pei pat wenten
out of egipt bi moises/ but
to which was he wrappid
fourty zeeris: whepер not he
pat synneden: whos caryns
weren aft doun in desert: &
to which swoor he: pat pei
schulden not entre ī to pe
reste of hī · not but to hem
pat weren vnbileuefil: &
we seen · pat pei myzten not
entre ī to pe reste of hī for vnbileue
erfor drede we lest per
auenture · while pe biheest
of entring ī to his reste

is lefte: þat ony of us be
gessid to be aWey/ for it is
teld also to us: as to hem/ þ
þe word þat was herd pro
fitide not to hẽ: not meynd
to feip· of þo þingis þat þei
herden/ for we þat han bile
ued· schulẽ entre in to reste:
as he seide/ as y swoor i my
wrappe: þei schulen not ent
re i to my reste/ þ wyfine þe
werkis weren maad parfit
at þe ordeinaũce of þe world:
he seide þus i aplace of þe sen
euþe day/ þ god restide in þe
seuenþe day· fro al his werk
is/ þ i þis place eftsoon/ þei
schulẽ not entre i to my rest
te/ þfor for it suey· þat sũme
schulen entre i to it· þ þei to
whiche it was teld to bifore
entriden not for her vnbile
ue: eftsoon he limyneþ sũ da
y þ seip· i dauid to day aft' so
mychel tyme of tyme· as it is
biferen/ to day if ze han herd
his vois: nyle ze harde ȝour
e hertis/ for if ilk' hadde ȝo
uñ reste to hẽ: he schulde neu
ere speke of ope aftir· þis day/
þfor þe sabot is left to þe pu
ple of god/ for he þat is entrid
i to his reste: restide of his
werkis as also god of hise/
þfor haste we to entre in to
þat reste: þat no man falle ĩ
to þe same ensaũple of vnbile
ue/ ffor þe word of god is quyk
þ spedi in wordching· þ more
able to perse þan ony tweyne
egged swerd· þ stretchiþ forþ to
þe departing of þe soule þ of
þe spirit/ þ of þe ioynturis þ
meruelis þ demer of þouȝtis
þ of ỹentis of hertis/ þ no cre
ature is vnsyble ĩ þe siȝt
of god/ for alle þingis ben naked þ opyn to his izen· to whõ
a word to us/ þfor we þat han a great bischop þat perside he
uenes· ihũ þe sone of god: hol
de we þe knowleching of oure
hope/ for we han not a bischop
þat may not haue compassiõn
on our infirmytees: but was
tẽptid bi alle þingis· bi licke
nesse· wiþ oute synne/ þfor go
we wiþ trist to þe trone of
his grace: þat we gete mercy·
þ fynde grace i conuenable help
Eor ech bischop takiñ
of mẽ: is ordeyned for
mẽ· i þese þingis þat
ben to god· þat he offre ȝiftis
þ sacrifices for synnes/ which
may to gidere sorewis wiþ hem
þat ben vnkũnyng þ erren/
for also he is ẽuyronned wiþ
infirmytee/ þ þfor he owiþ· as
for þe puple: so also for hym

ix

silf to offre for synn̄ys / ney ouy m
An takiy to hī honour: but he pt
is clepid of god as aaron was
so ẽst clarifide not hī silf· pt he
were bischop: but he pat spak
to hī· pou art my sone· to day y
gendride pee as i anoy̆e place
he seip / pou art ꝑst weyonte
ende aft̄ pe ordre of melchised
ech / which ī pe dayes of his fle
isch offeride wip grete cry & tee
ris· preris & bisechingis to hī pt
mygte make hī saaf fro dey· &
was herd for his reuerence And
whanne he was goddis sone: he
lernede obedience of pese ping
is pat he suffride & he browgt
to pe ende: is maad cause of
eūlastinge heelpe to alle pt obe
isshen to hī & is clepid of god
abischop: bi pe ordre of melchi
sedek / of whō ꝑ is to us hgre
et word forto seie & hard to be
expounyd: for ze ben maad feb
le to here / for whanne ze ouzt
en to be maistris for tyme· eft
soone ze neden pat ze be taugt·
whiche ben pe lettris of pe
bigynnyng of goddis wordis
& ze ben maad pilke to whiche
is nede of mylk· & not sad me
te / for ech pat is parteneꝛ of
mylk: is wip out part of pe
word of rigtwisnesse / for he
is a litil chid / but of parfit
men is sad mete: of hem pat
for custom han wittis exercisid·
to discrecioñ of good & of pyfel
Wher for we brynginge
un a word of pe bigyn
nyng of ẽst: be we borñ
to pe perfeccioñ of hī / not eft
soone leggynge pe foundement
of penaūce fro dede werkis &
of pe feip to god· & of pe techyng·
of baptymis· & of leiynge on of
hondis· & of risyng ayen of de
ed ne· & of pe eūlastinge doom
& pis ping we shulē do: if god
shal suffre / but it is impossi
ble pat pei pt ben onys lyʒtned·
& han taastid also an heuenly
ʒifte· & be maad parceneꝛs of
pe hooly goost· & nepeles han
tastide pe good word of god·
& pe vertues of pe world to comy
nge· & ben fallyn fer awey: pat
pei ben reuewid eft soone to pe
naūce / whiche eftsoones cruci
fien to hem silf pe sone of god:
& han to scorn / for pe erpe pat
drynkip reyn ofte comynge
on it· & brungip forp conenable
erbe to hem of whiche it is
tilid: takip blessing of god /
but pat pat is brynginge forp
pornes & breris: is repuable·
& nept to curs· whos ending
shal be in to brēnyng / but
we moost dere wœye we trist̄

of zou bete pnugis · And neer to
heelpe: ponz we speken so fer
god is not vnmyst: pat he forze
te zoure werk & lone · which
ze han shewid in his name
fer ze han mynistrid to sepntis
& mynistren & we coueiten pt
ech of zou shewe pe same bi
sywelle to pe fillyng of hope:
i to pe ende pat ze be not mad
slowe: but folweris of
hem which bi feip & pacience
shulen enherite pe biheestis
for god bihetynge to abrahame
for he hadde noon gretir bi
hom he shulde swere: swoor
bi hi silf & seide / y blessynge
shal blesse pee: & y multiplyp
nge shal multiplie pee / & so
he longe abidyng: hadde pe bi
heeste / for men swerun bi a gr
etter pan hem silf: & pe ende
of al her plee is an oop to confir
macioun / in which pyng god wil
lynge to shewe pleteuousner
to pe eiris of his biheest · pe sa
dnesse of his counsel: puttide
betwixe an oop / pat bi twey
pyngis vnmeuable · bi whiche
it is impossible pat god lye:
we haue strengeste solace ·
we pat fleen to gidere · to hol
de pe hope pat is putt forp to us
which hope as an ankir we ha
n sikir to pe soule & stid & goyn
ge pu · to pe eyn pnere pyngis of
hidyng where pe bifore goere
ihc pat is maad bischop wipou
ten ende · bi pe ordre of melchi
sedech: entride for us
and pis melchisedech
king of salem: & prest
of pe hizeste god whi
ch mette wip abrahame · as he
turned azen fro pe sleyng of
kingis: & blesside hi / to whom
also abrahame departide tipis
of alle pingis / first he is seid
kyng of rigtwisnesse: & aftir
ward king of salem pat is to
seie kyng of pees / wipout fad
ir wipoute modir · wipoute geno
logie: ney hauynge bigynnyng
of daies ney ende of lif / & he
is licknyd to pe sone of god · &
dwellip pis wipoute ende / but
biholde ze hou gret · is pis: to
whom abrahame pe patriarke
zaf tipis of pe beste pingis / for
me of pe spoyl of leny takynge
pisthod: han maundement to take
tipis of pe puple bi pe lawe / pt
is to seie of her bripen: pouz also
pei weren out of pe leendis of
abrahame / but he whos gene
acioun is not noumbrid i hem: took
tipis of abrahame / & he blesside
pis abrahame which hadde re
promissiouns / wip oute ony aze
nsepng: pat pat is lesse is

was

bicelid of pe vete/ & heere dedly
men taken tipid: but peve he
very witnellinge pat he lpuep/
& pat it be seid so: bi abraham·
also leuy pat took te tipis was
tipid/ & zit he was ī his fadris
leendis: wh̄ane melchidedy
mette wip hi/ p̄for if perfectiō
bi pe p̄sthod of leuy· for vndir
hi pe pitple took pe lawe: what
zit was it nedeful· nu op p̄st
to rise bi pe ordre of melchised
ech· & not to be seid bi pe ordre
of aaron/ for whi wh̄ane pe p̄st
hod is trauslatid: it is nede· pt
also trauslacioū of lawe be mad
but he ī whom pese pingis
ben seid: is of nu op lynage· of
which no mā was p̄st to pe au
ter/ for it is oppu· pat oure lord
is borū of iuda: ī which lynage
moises spak no ping of prestis
& more zit it is knowū/ if bi
pe ordre of melchisedech· nu op
p̄st is risiū up: which is not maad
bi pe lawe of fleischly maūde
ment· but bi vertu of lif pt
may not be vndon/ for he wit
nessip· pat pou art ap̄st wip
outen ende: bi pe ordre of m
elchisedech/ pat repreuyinge
of pe mañdemēt bifore gonge
is maad: for pe vnstrouelle &
vnprofit of it/ for whi pe lawe
e brouzt no ping to perfectiō/
but p̄ is abreuīging pu of abe
tere hope· bi which we neizen
to god/ & hou grete it is: not w̄t
out swerīng: but pe op̄e bē ma
ad p̄stis wip outen an ooy: but
pis p̄st wip an ooy bi hi pat sei
de to hi/ pe lord swoor· & it shal
not reewe hi: pou art ap̄st wip
outē ende· bi pe ordre of melchi
sedech/ in so myche iesꝰ is ma
ad bihoote of pe bete testam
ent/ & pe op̄e were maad ma
ny pe p̄stis p̄for for pei weren
forbedū bi dep to dwelle stille
but pis· for he dwellip wip
outen ende: hap an euerlastīge
p̄sthod/ wher for also he may
saue wip outē ende· comynge
nyz bi hi silf to god & eure li
ue to pie for us for it
bisemede pat such a mā wer
a bishop to us. holy innocent·
vndefilid· clene departid
fro synful mē: & maad hizer
than heuenes/ whiche hap
not nede· eche day as p̄stis·
first for his owne giltis to
offre sacrifices: & afterward
for pe puple/ for he dide pis
ping ī offrīg hi silf onys/ &
pe lawe ordeynede mē p̄stis·
hauynge sikenesse but pe
lord word of swerīnge· which
is aft̄ pe lawe: ordeynede/
pe sone p̄fit wip outē ende·

C. viij.

But Aarpille on po pi
ngis pat ben seid/ pe
han sich abiſchop· pt
sat in pe rizthalf of pe seete·
of greteuesse i heuenes: pe
mynistre of seyntis & of pe
verp taberuacle pat god mad
de & not mañ for ech bischop is
ordeyned to offre· zifts and
sacrifices/ wherfor it is nede
pat also pis bischop haue sum
ping: pat he schal offre/ pfor
if he were on erpe: he were
no pst/ whanne pe were pat
schuldē offre zifts bi pe lawe
e: whiche seruē to pe sam̃pler
& schadewe of heuenely pīgis
as it was answerid to moy
ses· whanne he schulde ende
pe taber nacle/ se he seide· m
ake pou alle pingis: bi pe sa
m̃pler pat is schewid to pee i
pe mouñt/ but now he hap ge
tē abetre mynistrie: bi so mych
as he is amediatour of abe
tere testamēt· which is confe
rmed wip betre bihestis/ for
if pe ilke firste hadde lacku
blame: pe place of pe secōde
schulde not haue be sowt/ for
he repynynge hem: seip/ lo da
ies comen seip pe lord: & y sch
al make perfit anewe tes
tamēt on pe hous of israel·
& on pe hous of iuda not ly
ke pe testament pat y made
to her fadris i pe day i which
y cauzte her hond: pat y schu
lde lede hem out of pe lond
of egipt/ for pei dwelliden
not perfitly i my testament:
& y haue dispisid hē seip pe lord
wnt pis is pe testament· whi
ch y schal dispose to pe hous
of israel· aftir po daies seip pe
lord: i zuynge my lawis i to pe
soulis of hē· & in to pe hertis
of hem· y schal awone write hē/
& y schal be to hem i to a god: &
pei schulē be to me i to a puple
& ech mañ schal not teche his ne
zebore: & ech mañ his broper·
seipynge/ knowe pou pe lord:
for alle mē schulē knowe me·
fro pe lesse to pe more of hem/
for y schal be merciful to pe wic
kednesse of hem: & nowe y schal
not bipenke on pe synnes of hē/
but i seipynge anewe: pe form
ere wexide eeld/ & pat pat is
of many daies and wexip
eel: is nyz pe deep

C. ix.

Hud pe former testam
ent hadde iustefiyng
is of worschip & hooly
pyng duryng/ for atyme/ for
pe taberuacle was maad first·
i which were candilstikis &
boord & settyng forp of loones·
which is seid hooly/ & after pe

vepl: pe fyrſte tabernacle· pat
is ſeid ſtā ſtructurā· pat is hooly
of hooly pingꝭ / hauynge agol
dīn encenſer: & pe arke of pe teſta
mēt· keuerid aboute on ech
ſide wip gold / in wlyche was
a pot of gold· hauynge manna
na: & pe zerde of aaron pat
flouriſhide· & pe tablis of pe te
ſtament / on wlyche pingis
weren cherubyns of glorie
ouſ ſchadewynge pe propiciā
torie: of wlyche pingis it is
not now to ſeie bi alle / but
wlyānne pese were mand pus
to gidere: þ̄ſtis entriden eche
owre i pe fyrſtere tabernacle· do
ynge pe offices of ſacrifices / but
i pe ſecōnde tabernacle pe biſh
op entride oonys i pe zeer not wt
out blood: wlyche he offrid for
his ignorāūce & pe puplis; for
pe hooly gooſt ſignefiede pis
ping· pat not zit pe wei of ſe
yntis· was openyd· while pe
fyrſte tabernacle hadde ſtaat
wlyche parable is of pis þ̄ſet
tyme: bi wlych also ziftis & ſa
crifices ben offrid wlyche ma
ȳ not make aūnd̄ ſeruynge
parfit bi cōſcience: oneli in
metis & drynkis & diuerſe was
ſchyngis· & riztwiſnellis of
fleiſch· pat were sett to pe ty
me of correccioū / but crist be

beynge abiſchop of goodis to cum
ynge: entride bi alargerē & perfite
pe tabernacle· not maad bi hond·
pat is to ſeie not of pis makyng
nesh bi blood of goot buckis or of
calues· but bi his owne blood
entride oonys i to hooly pingis þ̄
were foūden bi an euerlastinge
redempcioū / for if pe blood of
goot buckis & of boolis: & pe aſh
ch of a cow calf ſprengid· hale
wip vnclene men to pe cleſig
of fleiſch / hou muche more
pe blood of crist wlych bi pe
hooly goost offride hī silf
vnbēmyd to god· ſchal deuſe
owre cōſcience fro dede werk
is to ſerue to god pat lyuey
& þ̄for he is a mediatour of pe
newe testamēt· pat bi dep fal
lynge bitwixe ī to redēpcioū
of po trespaſſyngis pat we
ren vndir pe formere testamū
ent: pei pat ben clepid· take
pe bihest of eūlastynge eri
tage / for wlyere a testamēt is·
it is nede· pat pe dep of pe tes
tamēt is cōfermed ī dede mē
ellis it is not worp: while he
lyuep· pat made pe testamēt
wherfor nep̄ pe fyrſte testamū
ent was halewid wipoute blo
od / for wlyānne ech maūdement
of pe lawe was red of moiſes
to al pe puple: he took pe blo

od of calues · and of buckis
of geet · wip wat & reed wolle
& yslope & by spreynde bope pil
le book & al pe puple & seide
pis is pe blood of pe testaune
nt: pat god comaundide to you
also he spreynde wip blood pe
taberuacle · & alle pe vessels
of pe seruyce & lijk wise and
almest alle pingis ben clensid
& blood bi pe lawe: & wipoute
shedyng of blood · remyssioũ
of sy̅n̄ is not maad / for it is
nede · pat pe samplaris of heu
enly pingis be clensid wip pe
se pingis: but pilke heuenly
pingis · wip bettre sacrifices
pan pese / for ihc̄ entride not
i̅ to hooly pingis maad bi hon
dis · pat ben samplaris of very
pingis: but i̅ to heuene it silf
pat he appere now to pe cheer
of god for us / nep̄ pat he offre
hi̅ silf ofte: as pe bishop entr
ide i̅ to hooly pingis · bi alle ze
eris i̅ alien blood / ellis it bihy
ofte hi̅ to suffre ofte: fro pe
big̅inyng of pe world / but n
ow onys · i̅ pe endyng of world
dis · to destruccioũ of sy̅ne · bi
his sacrifice he apperide & as it
is ordeyned to mẽ onys · to die
but aft̄ pis is pe dom: so crist
was offrid onys · to auoide
pe sy̅n̄s of many men / pe seco
nde tyme he schal appere wip
outen sy̅ne: to mẽ pat abiden
hym in to heelpe

Or pe laste hauynge
a schadewe of good
pingis pat ben to co
me · not pe ilke pymage of pin
gis: may neuer make mẽ nei3
nge parfite · bi pe ilke same
sacrifices · whiche pei offren
wip out ceessing bi alle zeeris /
ellis pei schulden̄ haue ceessid
to be offrid: for as onyche as pe
worschipers clensid onys · had
den not ferpermore conscience
of sy̅nne / but i̅ pẽ mynde of sy̅n
nes is maad bi alle zeeris for
it is impossible: pat sy̅nes be
doon awey bi blood of boolis &
of buckis of geet / for pe entr
inge i̅ to pe world: seip / pou wol
dist not sacrifice & offryng:
but pou hast schapn̄ a body to
me / brent sacrifices also for syn
ne: pleside not to pee / pan̄e y
seide / lo y come / in pe bigynyng
of pe book it is writn̄ of me:
pat y do pi wille god / he seiyng
bifore pat pou woldist not sacri
fices & offryngis & brent sacri
fices for sy̅ne · ne po pingis ben̄
plesaunt to pee · whiche ben of
frid bi pe lawe: pan̄e y seide /
lo y come: pat y do pi wille god /
he doip awei pe firste pat he

C. f.

make stedfast ye secõd/ in which
wille we ben halewid: bi ye
offering of ye body of ꝯst ihũ
onys/ & ech ꝑst ihc is redy· ury
nistrynge ech day· & ofte tymes
offrynge ye same sacrifice: whi
che mow̃ neue do awey synnis/
but yis mã offrynge o sacrifi
ce for syn? for euermore: sittip
in ye rizthalf of god ye fadir/
fro pens? for abidynge: til his
enemyes ben put a stool of
his feet/ for bi oon offrynge
he made perfit for euermore
hem̃ men/ & ye hooly goost wi
tnessip to us/ for aft̃ pat he sa
yde/ yis is ye testamẽt· which
y schal wittnesse to hem̃ aftir
yo dayes· ye lord seip/ ziuynge
my lawis i ye hertis of
hem̃· & in ye soulis of hẽ y sch
al awrite hẽ· & now y sch
al no more penke on ye synnes &
ye wickidnessis of hẽ/ & whe
re remissiõ of pese is: now
is per more offrynge for syn
ne/ ꝑfor bripen hauynge ꝯfi
dẽce to ye entrynge of hooly pin
gis i ye blood of crist· which
halewide to us a newe weye
& lyuynge bi ye hilynge ꝑt is
to seie his fleisch· & we hauy
nge ye grete ꝑst on ye hous
of god: neize we with wery
herte in ye pleute of feip/ &

ben oure hertis sprenyde fro
al yuel conscience· & oure bo
dies waischĩ with clene wat?
and holde we ye confessiõ of
oure hope bowynge to no side/ for
he is trewe: pat hap maad ye
bihestis/ & biholde we to gidere
i ye stirynge of charite & of go
od werkis: not forsakynge oure
gaderynge to gidere· as it is of
custom to sum̃/ but counfortige·
& bi so mych ye more: bi how my
che ze seen ye day neizynge/ for
why now a sacrifice for syn? is
not left to us pat synne wilfuly:
after pat we haue take ye knowe
ing of treuye/ for why sum̃ abid
ing of ye doom is dredeful· & ye
synging of fier: which schal waste
aduersaries/ who pat breky mo
ises lawe: dieþ why outẽ ony
mercy bi two or pre witnessis/
how mych more gessen ze
pat he disserue worse turmẽ
tis: which defoulip ye sone of
god: & holdip ye blood of ye tes
tamẽt pollut: i which he is ha
lewid: & dop dispit to ye spirit
of grace: for we knowen him
pat seide/ to me veniaunce: & y
schal zelde/ & eft/ for ye lord sch
al deme his puple/ it is ferdful
to falle i to ye hondis of god ly
uynge/ & haue zemynde on ye
formere dayes· i which ze were

lyuied and suffriden greet strijf
of passiõũs / & in pe toper ze we
ren maad a spectacle bi reuelyn
gis & tribulaciõũs: & an oþ ze we
ren maad felowis of men lyu
yngе so / ffor also to bondmen
men ze haddẽ compassiõũ: & ze
resseyuedẽ wip ioye · pe robb
ing of zoure goodis: knowin
ge pat ze han abetre & abidelly
nge substaunce / þ for wyle ze lee
sezoure trist: which hap greet
reward ing / for pacience is ne
dedful to zou: pat ze don pe wil
le of god · & brungen azen pe bi
heste / for zit a litil & he pat is
to comynge schal come: & he
schal not tarie / for wip inst m
an lyuey of feip / pat if he wit
drawip hi silf: he schal not
plese to my soule / but we be
not pe soun of wip drawing
awey i to perdicioũ: but of
feip i to getynge of soule

But feip is pe substaũ
ce of pingis pat ben
to be hopid: & an argu
ment of pingis not apperyn
ge / & i pis feip: elde men han
gete witnessing / bi feip we vn
derstondũ pat pe worldis we
ren maad bi goddis word: pt
visible pingis were maad of
vnvysible pingis / bi feip: Ab
el offeride auntcrist more ſac

fice pan caym to god / bi which
he gat witnessing to be iust:
for god bar witnessing to hise
ziftis / & bi pat seip: he deed spe
kup zit / bi feip enok was tra
nslatide: pat he schulde not
se dey / & he was not fouchi: for
pe lord translatide hi / for bifore
translacioũ he hadde witnesss
ing: pt he pleside god / & it is
impossible: to plese god wip
out feip / for it bihoneþ pat a
nẽ comynge to god · bilene pt
he is: & pat he is reward ere
to mẽ pat seken hym / bi feip·
noe dredde pingis not sen / & bi
lyuede pesen iniquite pingis pat zit
weren not sen · & schapide a
schip · i to pe heelpe of his hous /
bi which he dampnede pe world:
& is ordeyned eir of riztwis
nesse which is bi feip / bi feip·
he pat is clepid abraham: obe
iede to go out i to a place · wh
ich he schulde take i to eritage /
& he went out: not witinge
whidir he schulde go / bi feip
he dwelte i pe lond of bihest
as in an alien lond: dwellin
ge i litil hous is wip ysaac and
iacob enene eirs of pe same
bihest / for he abood a citee
haujnge fondemẽtis: whos
crafty man & maker is god /
bi feip also pe silf sara bareyn:

took: vertu in conceyuynge of seed·
ȝhe azeyn ok ye tyme of age·for
she bileuyde hi treuwe þat had
de bihizte/for wlych ymg· of oõ
& ẑt upz deed ỳ ben bozn as ỹ
riõ of heuene i multitude· &
as gyanel þat iõ at ye see side
out of noũbre/ bi ferỹ alle yese
ben deed: whãne ye bihestiõ
weren not takñ/ but pei bih
elden hem afer· & gretiug he
wel: & knowlechide þat pei
were pilgrymis & herbozid
men on ye erpe/ & pei þat sa
yn yese pñgis: signefien þat
pei sechen a cñtree/ if pei had
den mynde of ye ilke· of wh
ich pei went out: pei hadde
tyme of turnynge azen/ but
now pei desiren abeteve: þat
is to seie heuenly/ þfor god is
not confoñdid: to be clepid
ye god of he/ for he made redy
to he a cite/ bi ferỹ abraham
offride ysaac: whãne he was
tẽptid/ & he offride ye oon bi
getñ: which hadde takñ ye bi
heestiõ/ to whom it was seid·
for ỉ ysaac ye seed shal be cle
pid to yee/ for he demyde þat
god is mygti to reise hi: zhe fro
deep/ wherfor he took him
also of pñgris in to a parable
bi ferỹ also of pñgris to com
ynge· ysaac blesside iacob

and esau/ bi ferỹ· iacob dyn
ge· blesside alle ye sonȝ of io
seph: & onouride ye heizuel
le of his ẑerde/ bi ferỹ· ioseph
deiynge: hadde mynde of ye
passinge fozy of ye children
of israel & comaundide of his
bonys/ bi ferỹ moyses bañ
was hid pree monethis of his
fadir & modir· for þat pei sizen
ye ẑonge child fair: & pei dred
den not ye maundemẽt of ye
king/ bi ferỹ· moises was m
ade greet: & denyede þat he
was ye sone of faraos doȝt
& chese more to be turmẽtid
with ye pple of god: than to
haue myrthe of tẽporal lyue
demynge ye repref of crist· m
ore richessis: than ye tresour
is of egipcians/ for he bihelde
ỉ to ye rewardinge/ bi ferỹ
he forsook egipt: & dredde not
ye hardynesse of ye king/ for
he abood as seynge hi þ was
vnmyglible/ bi ferỹ he halewide
pask & ye shedyng out of ỹ blo
od/ þat he þat distrie de ye firste
pñgis of egipcians: shulde
not touche hem/ bi ferỹ peipal
liden ye reed see as bi drie lo
nd: which pñg egipcians as
ayngе weren deuourid/ bi fe
rỹ· ye wallis of iherico felden
doñ: bi cõpassinge of seuene

dayes | bi feip · rash hoore vesse
yinde pe Aspieris wiy pees · &
perisshide not wiy vitbilefiil
men | & wiyat zit shal y seie |
for tyme shal faile to me telly
nge of iedeon · barak · sampson ·
iepte dauyp & samuel & of oþe
profetis : wiyche bi feip ouer
quen reiwmes · wroujte riztwis
nesse gaten repromyssioun
pei stoppiden pe mouþis of li
onis · pei quenchiden pe feerc
nesse of fier · pei dryneden a
wey pe egge of swerd · pei ko
neriden of sikenesse · pei we
ren maad strong i batel | pei
turneden pe oostis of aliens :
wymmen resseyueden hey de
ed children fro dep to liif | but
oþer were holden nou foop not to
kunge redempcioun : pat pei shj
nlden fynde abetre azenrisyng |
& oþer assayeden stozmyngis &
betyngis : moze ouer & boondis &
þoolis | pei weren stonyd · pei we
ren sawid · pei were tempti · pei
weren deed i slepyng of swerd |
pei wenten aboute i broc skyn
nes : & in skynes of geet | nedy-
ng wiþstondyd · turmentid : to wiyche
pe world was not worpi | pei er
ride i wildirnessis · i mountepnis
& dennys & caues of pe erpe | and
alle pese þnied bi witnessing of
feip : token not repromyssioun

ffor god purueyede sum betre þing
for us : pat pei shuldē not be maad
al perfit wiþ oute us
Therfore we pat haun so greet
a cloude of witnessis put
to : do we away al charge
and syne stoudyinge aboute
us | & bi pacience renne we to pe
batel purposid to us : biholdinge
ihū to pe maker of feip & pe parfit
endere ihū | wiyche wiyan ioye
was purposid to hym · he suffri
de pe croos · & dispisede confusioun |
& sittip on pe riztyalf of pe sete
of god | & bipenke ze on hym pat
suffride swich azen seiyinge of
synful men azenst hym silf : pat
ze be not maad weery · faylinge
in zoure soulis | for ze azenstoden
not zit til to blood : fyztinge
azenst synne | & ze han forzete pe
confort pat spekip to zou as to
sonys & seip | my sone nyle pou
dispise pe techinge of pe lord : ne
þ be pou maad weery · pe wiyle
pou art chastisid of hym | for pe
lord chastisip hym pat he loueþ |
he betip euery sone : pat he resse
yneþ | Abide ze stille i chastisinge :
god profercip hym to zou as to so
nys | for wiyat sone is it : wiyom
pe fadir chastisip not : | parte
neres be ze alle maad : | pauue
ze ben auoutreris & not sonys |
& afterward · we hadden fadris

pt if ze ben out of chastisinge ·
wiyos

C. xij

of oure fleisshi techeris: and we
wip reuerence dreddeu hem/ whe
per not mychc more we shuleu
obeischc to pe fadir of spiritis:
& we shulē lyue:/ & pei ī tyme
of felwe dayes: tauztē us bi
her wille/ but pis fadir techip
to pat ping pat is profitable:
ī resseyuynge pe halewynge of
hī/ & ech chastising ī p̄sent tyme:
seuep to be not of ioye but of
sorewe/ but afturward it shal
zelde fruyt of rizthwisnesse mos
pesible: to men exercisid bi it
for which ping reisez clowe
hondis · & knees vnbowīdū: and
makic ze rizt steppis to zou
re feet: pat no man halting
erre · but more be heelid sue
ze pees wip alle mē & holy
esse: wip out which no mā
shal se god/ biholde ze p̄ no
man faile to pe grace of god·
pat no roote of bitternesse·
bur-iowynge upward lette:
& manye ben defoulid bi it/
pat no mā be leccheour eper
vnhooly as esau: which for o
mete seelde his firste pungis
for wite ze · pat afterward · he
coueitinge to enherite blessi
ng: was repuyd/ for he fo
ond no place of penaūce: pow
he souzte it wip teeris/ but
ze han not come to pe hier

able to be touchid & able to
come to · & to pe whirlewynd
& mistyst & tempest & soun of
trūpe · & voys of wordis/ whi
ch yei pat herden excusiden
hem: pat pe word shulde not
be maad to hē/ for yei baren u
ot: pat pat was seid & if abe
este touchide pe hil: it was sto
nyd & so dredful it was: pat
was seyn/ pat moyses seide
y am aferd · & ful of tremblyng/
but ze han come upz to pe hil
lion · & to pe citee of god lyuy
nge · pe heuēly ierlū · & to pe
multitude of many pousynde
aungelis · & to pe chirche of pe
firste mē: whiche ben writtū
ī heuenes & to god domesma
of alle · & to pe spirit of iust per
fit men: & to ihū mediatour
of pe newe testamēt · & to pe
sprinqing of blood · bete spe
kinq pan abel/ seze pat ze for
sake not pe spekere for if yei
pat forsakē hī pat spak on pe
erpe · aschapid not: mychc more
we pat turnē aweī fro hī pat
spekip to us fro heuenes/ wh
os voys pan moupde pe erpe·
but now he seip zit onys · y shal mone not one
ly erpe: but also heuene/ & pt
he seip zit onys: he declarip
pe translacioū of mouable pin

gris as of mad pilgris / pat
po pilgris dibelle: pat ben vn
mouable / ꝑfor we relleyinꝫ
pe kingdom vnmouable ysme
we grace: bi which serue we
pleisinge to god wip drede & re
uerence / for oure god is fier yt
consumeth. The charite of wastyn
g vnperfyed dibelle in zou:
& nyle ze forzete hospitali
te / for bi pis: sum̃e pleisid̃e
to angels pat were̅ relley
ned to herbozeis / penke ze
on boidi̅ men: as ze weren
to gidere boidi̅ / & of traue
linge me̅: as ze silf dwellin
ge i pe body / wedlingis mal
le pilgris onourable: & bed
vnbe̅mpd / for god schal dem
e fornicatouris & aduoutre
ris be zoure maneres wipout
couetise: apaied wip ꝑsent
pingis / for he seide / y schal
not leue pee nyꝑ forsake: so ꝑt
we seie tristily / pe lord is an
helpere to me: y schal not dre
de· what man schal do to
me / haue ze mynde of zoure
soueyns: pat han spokn̄ to zo
u pe word of god / of whiche
biholden ze pe goynge out of ly
uyng & sue ze pe feip of hem /
ihn̄ est zistˢ day & to day: he is
also i to worldis / nyle ze be led
awei· wip diuise techingis &
straunge / for it is beste to stable
pe herte wip grace not wip me
tes: whiche profiteden not to
me̅ wandringe i hem / we han
an aut̄ of which pei pat serue̅
to pe tabernacle· han not pow
er to ete / for of whiche beestis
pe blood is bor̄n yn for synne
i to hooly pingis bi pe bisshop:
pe bodies of hem ben brent
wipoute pe castels / for which
ping· ihn̄ pat he schulde hale
we pe puple bi his blood: suffri
de wipoute pe zate / ꝑfor go we
out to hi̅ wipoute pe castels: be
rynge his repꝑf / for we han n
ot here abyde dwellinge: but
we seken ayen to comynge / ꝑfor
bi hi̅ offre we a sacrifice of lo
ynge euere more to god: pat is
to sey· pe fruyt of lippis knou
leching to his name / & nyle ze
forzete wel doynge & comynyng /
for bi siche sacrifices god is dis
seruyd / obeie ze to zoure sufire
ynis· & be ze suget to hem: for
pei perfitly waken· as to zel
ding reson̄ for zoure soulis /
pat pei do pis ping wip ioye:
& not forewynge / for pis ping
spedip not to zou / ꝑeze for us
& we triste· pat we han good
conscience i alle pingis willy
nge to lyue wel / more oun̄ y
biseche zou to do: pat y be restord

pe ſſinnere to zou And god of
pees pat ledde oute fro dey pe
greet ſſhepherd of ſſheep i pe
blood of euerlaſtinge teſtament
oure lord ihū cſt: ſſhape zou
i al good þing· þat ze do pe
wille of hī· & he do i zou þat
þing þat ſſhal plese biforē hī:
bi ihū cſt· to whom be glorie
i to worldis of worldis Amē
& bripen y þie zou: þat ze ſſuf
fre alwei of solace) for bifui
lede þingis þ hane writtī to
zou) knowe ze oure brop̄ ty
mothe þat is leid forp: whi
whom if he ſſhal come more
haſtely· y ſſhal se zou) grete
ze wel alle zoure soūpnis: &
alle holy men) pe bripen of
italie: greten zou wel) pe g̈ce
of god be wt̄ zou alle Amen)

Here endiþ pe pistle to ebr
ieus: here bigynneþ pe
prologe on pe dedis of apostlis:

Luyk of antioche· of pe
nacioū of syrie) whos
preþing is teld ī pe
gospel: at antioche he was a
worþi man of leche craft· &
afterward a disciple of cristis
apostlis & serued poul pe apos
tel he serued god ī maydeñ
hod wiþ oute blame: & whā
ne he was foure score zeer
olde & foure· he dyed i bythi

nye ful of pe holy goost & he
yaue stirpyng of pe holy go
ost ī pe coostis of achaye· wr
ot pe gospel to feipful grek
is: & schewed pe īcarnacioū
of pe lord bi a tretue tellinge·
& schewed also pat he was
come of pe kynrede of dauip
to hī not wipoute differt was
zine power: to whom pe doyn
gis of pe apostles miþer my
stie: pat god beynge ful ī
god whanne pe lone of perdi
cioū was deed· & pe apos
tes hadde maad her þier pro
uz lot of pe lordis electioū:
pe noūber of pe apostles we
re fulfillid) And also pat po
ul schulde ecluden pe doyngis
of pe apostles whom pe lord
hadde chosene: pat longe ty
me wynsid azeen pe pricke)
And to hem pat redep and se
chep god he wolde schewen ri·
bi schort telling rap̄ pan sche
we forp ouy þing more lenger
to hem pat wlatep longe þin
gis knowing pat it whonep
pe tylier pat worchip: to ete
of his owne fruytis) & he fo
ond so muche grace of god·
pat not oonly his medicyne
profitid to bodies: but also
to soulis) Jerom here
in his prologe: seip pis

C·p·

Theofle firſt y mad ad ſermoñ of al le ymagis yt ihñ bi gan to do & to teche vn to ye dai of his aſcencioñ i which he comandide: bi ye hooly gooſt to his apoſtlis wh ich he hadde choſen to whiche he ſhewide hi ſelf alyue aft' his paſſioñ bi many argum entis: apperinge to hẽ four ty daies & ſpekinge of ye veiw me of god & he ete wip hem & comaundide pat pei ſhuldẽ not departe fro ierliñ but abiden pe biheeſt of ye fadir: which ze herden he ſeide bi my mouþ for ioon baptiſid i wat': but ze ſhulen be baptiſid i ye hooly gooſt: aft' peſe feiwe daies per for pei pat weren come to gid ir: aſkidẽ him & ſeidẽ lord whe þ i þis tyme pou ſhalt reſtore pe kingdom of iſrl: & he ſeide to hem it is not zoure to knowe pe tymes op̃ moment is: which pe fadir hap put i his pouwer but ze ſhulẽ ta ke pe vertu of hooly gooſt cõmynge fro a boue in to zou: & ze ſhulẽ be my wit nes i ierliñ· & i al iudee & ſam arie· & to pe vttireſte of pe er pe & whãne he hadde ſeide peſe pingis· i her ſizt· he was

lift up· and a cloude reſceyuede hi fro peir izen & wh̃ane pei bi heldẽ hym goinge i to heuene: lo tweiẽ mẽ ſtoodẽ bi ſidis hem i white clopinge· & ſeidẽ mẽ of galile: what ſtoondẽ ze bihold ynge i to heuene: / pis ihñ which is taki̇n up fro zou i to heuene: ſchal come· as ze ſayen hi̇m goinge i to heuene / pãne pei turneden azen to ierliñ fro pe hille pat is cleped pe hille of olyuete: which is bi ſidis ierliñ an hali daies iourney / & wh̃ane pei weren entrid i to pe hous whe re pei dwelliden pei wenten up i to pe ſoler / petre & ioon· iames & andrew· philip & tho mas· bar tholomew & mathew· iames of alpheꝰ & ſymoñ zelo tes· & iudas of iames / alle peſe weren laſtyngly couty nuynge wip o wille i þyer· wip wymmen & marie ye mod' of ihñ· & wip his britheren / in þo daies petre roos up in pe myddil of pe britheren: & ſeide / & þ was a company of mẽ to gidir almeſt and hũdrid and twenty / britheren it bihoued pat pe ſtripture be fillid: wh ich pe hooly gooſt bifor ſeide bi pe mouþ of dauid· of iudas pat was leder of hem pat token ihñ / & was noñbrid amo

ing us: and gat a part of pis seruy
ce & pis was hadde a feelde of
pe hire of wickednesse & he was
hanged · & to barst pe mydil: &
alle his entrailes weren sched abro
od & it was maad knowen to al
le men pat dwelten i ierlim: so
pat pe ilke feelde was clepid Ach
eldemak in pe langage of hem·
pat is pe feelde of blood & it is
writen in pe book of salmes pe
abitacioun of hem be maad deser
t: & be pe noon pat dwelle in it
And an op take his bischoprich/
pfor it behoued of pese men·
pat ben gaderid to gidir with us·
i al pe tyme · i which pe lord ihū
entride & weute out among us·
& bigan fro pe baptym of ioh
n til i to pe daye which he w
as takū up fro us · pt
oon of pese be maad awitnes
se of his resurrectioun with us/
& pei ordeyneden tweyn/ ioseph
pat was clepid barsabas · pt
was nameed iust: & mathie/
& pei pidden: & seiden/ pou lord
pat knowest pe hertis of al
le men: schewe whom pou hast
chosen of pese tweyne · pt oon
take pe place of pis seruyce·
& apostlehede · of which mid
no trespalide: pat he schuld
de go i to his place/ & pei zaf
ren lottis to hem/ & pe lot
felde on mathie & he was
nūbrid with enleuen apostlis
And whanne pe dayes
of pentecoste weren
fillid: alle pe disci
pls weren to gidere in pe
same place & sodeinly pt was
maad a soun fro heuene:
as of a grete wynde comyn
ge/ & it fillide al pe hous:
where pei saten/ & diuise tou
gis as fier apperide to hem
& it sat on ech of hem/ & alle
weren fillid with pe hooly
goost: & pei bigunnen to spe
ke with diuise langagis · as pe
hooly goost zaf to hem for to
speke & pei weren i ierlim dw
ellinge iewes religious m
en of ech nacioun pat is un
dir heuen/ & whanne pis voi
ce was maad: pe multitu
de came to gidir/ & pei weren
astoned i pouzt: for ech man
herde hem spekinge · i his
langage/ & alle weren astony
ed: & wondriden & seide to gid
re/ whi not alle pese pat spe
speken ben men of galile: &
hou herden we ech man his lan
gage i which we ben born: of
parthis & medy & elamyte and
pei pat dwellen at mesopota
my · iudee & capadocie & pon
te & asie · frigie & pamfilie ·

egipt· and ye parties of libie
yat is abone cirenen· and
komelynges romanys/ and
iewes and proselitis men
of crete & of arabie we ha
n herd hem spekinge i oure
langagis ye grete yngis
of god/ & alle were astonyed·
& wondriden & seiden to gid
r/ what wole pis ping be:
& oŷ scorneden & seiden: for pese
men ben ful of must/ but pe
tre stood wip ye enleuen: & re
isede up his uois & spake to
hem/ ze iewis & alle yat dwe
llen at ierlm; be pis knowe
n to zou· & wip eris parcey
ue ze my wordis/ for not as
ze wenen pese ben dronken:
whanne it is pe pridde our of
ye day/ but pis it is: pat
was seid bi pe profete ioel/
& it shal be in pe laste dayes
ye lord seip/ y shal helde out
my spirit on ech flesh: and
zoure sonys & zoure doustris
shulen profecie/ & zoure zonge
men shulen se visiones: & zoure
eldris shulen dremen dremes
nes/ & on my seruauntis· &
myn handemaydens· in po
dayes y shal shede out of
my spirit: & pei shulen pro
fecie/ & y shal zyue grete wo
ndris i heuen aboue & tigues

n erpe bineþe: blood & fier
& heete of smoke/ pe sunne sh
al be turned in to derknessis·
& pe mone in to blood: bifor þt
pe grete & pe oppyn daye of
pe lord comep/ & it shal be/ ech
man which eue shal clepe to
help pe name of pe lord: shal
be saaf. ze men of israel here
ze pese wordis/ ihu of nazareth
a man preued of god bifor zou
in vertues & wondris & tokun
es· which god dide bi hym in pe
myddil of zou as ze witen/ ze
turmentiden & killiden hym bi
pe hoondis of wickidnes: bi
counseil determyned· & bifaln
bi pe forknowyng of god/ who
god reisede· whanne sorewes
of helle were vnbounden/ bi þt
pat it was impossible pat he
were holdun of it/ for dauy
seip of hym y syz a fer pe lord
bifor me euermore: for he is on
my rizthalf· pat y be not mo
ued/ for pis pyng myn herte
ioyede & my tunge made ful
out ioye· & more on my flesch
shal reste in hope/ ffor pou sh
alt not lefe my soule in helle:
ne3þer pou shalt zyue pin hooly
to se corrupcioun/ pou hast ma
ad knowun to me pe weyes of
lijf: pou shalt fille me in mur
re with pi face/ bripen be it

tirannly

Ieuefful boldly to seie to zou of
pe patriark Dauip: for he is de
ed & biried & his sepulcre is a
mong us i to pis Daie/ pfor
whanne he was a profete· and
wiste pat wip ogreet oop god
hadde swore to hi pat of pe fr
upt of his leende· shulde oo
sitte on his sete: he spynge a
fer spake of pe reisureccioñ
of cst/ for nep he was left i
helle: nep his fleisly shyzt sa
upcioñ/ god reisede pis ihū: to
whom we alle ben witnesse
is ¶ perfor he was enhaūsid
bi pe rizthond of god· & paron
pe biheest of pe hooly goost
pat he tooke of pe fadir: he
shedde out pis spirit pat ze
seen & heren/ for Dauip stiede
not i to heuene/ but he seip
pe lord seide to my lord: sitte
pou on my rizthalf/ til y put
te pin enmyes: pe stool of pi
feet/ pfor most certeynly wi
te alle pe hous of isrl: pt god
made hym bope lord & cst· pis
ihū whom ze crucifiedē whan
ne pei herden pese pingis: pei
weren cōpunct i herte/ & pei
seiden to petre· & to op apost
lis/ bripen: what shulē we
do·/ & petre seide to hē/ do ze
penaūce & echo of zou be bap
tizid i pe name of ihū crist·
in to remissioñ of zoure synn:
& ze shulē take pe zifte of pe
hooly goost/ for pe biheest is
to zou & to zoure sonn & to alle
pat ben fer: which en oure lord
god hap clepid/ Also wip ope wor
dis ful many he witnessid to
hē: & monestide hem & seide/
be ze saued fro pis shrewid ge
naciōn/ pānne pei pat resseyuedē
his word: weren baptisid/ & i
pat Daie soulis weren encreesid:
about pre pousaude/ & werē
lastynge stabily i pe techyng
of pe apostlis· & in coupnyng
of pe breking of breed & in
pieris & drede was maad to
echo nā/ & many wondris &
signes· weren don bi pe apost
lis i ierlūm: & grete drede was
i alle & alle pat bileuedē werē
to gidere: & hadden alle pingis
comyn/ pei seldē possessiones &
catel: & departidē po pingis to
alle mē· as it was neede to ech
& echo Daie pei dwellidē stably
wip o wille i pe tēple· & breken
breed about housis: & token
meete wip ful out ioie & sym
pleneesse of herte· & herydē to
gidir god: & hadden grace to al
le pe folk & pe lord encreesidē hō:
pat weren maad saaf ech Daie
in to pe same pyng

nd petre and ioon we
nten up ī to pe tẽple:
at pe vyrpe our of
preiyng / And a man pat was
lame fro pe wombe of his mo
dir: was bꝛoū / & was lepd ech
dale at pe ȝate of pe temple pt
is seid feir: to axe almes of m
en pat entriden ī to pe tẽple
pis whãne he sy petre & ioon
big̃ynyng to entre ī to pe tẽp
le: ꝓiede pat he shulde take
almes / & petre wip ioon biheł
de on hi: & seide / biholde pou ī
to us / & he biheelde ī to hem:
& hopide pat he shulde take sũ
what of hem / but petre seide /
y haue ne᷑ siluer ne gold / but
pat pt y haue y ȝiue to pee / ī
pe name of ihc̃ ᵉst of nazareth:
ryse up & go: & he toke hi bi pe
rizthonde & heeld hi up / And a
noon his leggis & his feet we
ren sondid to gidir / & he lippide
& stood & wandride / & he entri
de wip hẽ ī to pe tẽple · & wan
dride & lippide & heride god / &
alle pe puple say hi walkyng
& heryng god / & pei knewen
hym: pat he it was pat sat
at almes at pe fier ȝate of
pe temple / & pei werẽ fillid
wip wondryng & wondryng:
ī pat ping pat bifelde to hi /
but whãne pei seien petre

and ioon: alle pe puple ran
to hem at pe porche pat is
clepid of salamon · & wondri
den gretly / & petre siz: & answ
erde to pe puple men of isra
el: what wondren ȝe in pis
ping e᷑ what biholden ȝe
us · as bi oure ỽtue e᷑ power
we maden pis man forto wal
ke: / god of abr̃aham & god
of isaac & god of iacob · god
of oure fadris: hap glorifi
ed his sone ihc̃ / whom ȝe bitra
iden & denyedẽ bifor pe face
of pilat: whãne he demyde
hi ī to be delyuerid / but ȝe
denyedẽ pe hooly & pe riztful:
& axidẽ a mañ cleere to be ȝo
uen ī to ȝou / & ȝe slowen pe ma
ker of liif: whom god reisede
fro dep of whom we ben wit
nessis / & ī pe feip of his na
me: he hap confermede pis
man whom ȝe seen & knowẽ /
pe name of hi & pe feip pat
is bi hym: ȝaf to pis man
ful helpe ī pe siȝt of alle ȝou /
& now knowen y wood: pat
bi vnwityng ȝe didẽ as also
ȝoure princis / but god pt bi
fore telde bi pe moup of alle
profetis · pat his ᵉst shulde
suffre: hap fillid so / perfore
be ȝe repentaũt & be ȝe cõ
uertid: pat ȝoure synnes be don

aluey · pat whanne pe tymes
of refreschyng schulē come
fro pe sizt of pe lord / & he schal
sende pilk ihū cst pat is now
p̄chid to zou / whō it bihoueþ
heuene to resseyue : i to pe ty
mes of restitucioū of alle
pingis · which pe lord spak bi
pe mouþ of his hooly profe
tis fro pe world ffor moises
seide / for pe lord zoure god
schal reyse to zou a profete of
zoure britheren : as me ze schul
ou here hī bi alle pingis ·
whatz eu he schal speke to zou
& it schal be pat euery mā pat
schal not here pe like profe
te : schal be destruyed fro pe
puple / & alle profetis fro sa
muel & aftirward pt spakē :
telden pese daies / but ze bē
pe sonȝ of profetis · & of pe
testamēt pat god ordeyned
to oure fadris : & seide to ab
raham / in pi seed : alle pe ma
eynes of erpe schulē be bles
sid / god reisid his sone first
to zou · & sente hī blessinge
zou : pat ech mā conuerte hym·
fro his wickednesse /

¶ And while pei spakē
to pe puple : pe prest
tis & magistratis
of pe temple & pe sadducees
camen up on hem & sorowe

den pat pei taȝten pe puple :
& telden ī ihū pe ayenrisyng
fro deep / & pei leyden hoondis
on hē · & puttedē hē in to ward
de ī to pe morewe / for it was
now euētid / but many of
hem pat herdē his word :
bileueden / & pe noūbir
of mē was maad fyue pousy
ndis / & amorewe it was don·
pat pe princis of he & eldre
me & scribis weren gaderid
ī ierusalē / & annas prince of pe
tis & caypas & ioon & alisandre :
& hou many euer weren of pe
kynde of princis / & pei settiden
hem ī pe myddil : & axiden
whatz vertu eyþ ī whatz name :
han ze don pis pyng : / pānne
petre was fillid with pe hooly
goost : & seide to hē / ze princis
of pe puple & ze eldre men :
here ze / if we to dai be demd
ī pe good deede of a syk m
an · ī whom pis mā is maad
saaf : be it knowē to zou alle ·
& to alle pe puple of israel /
pat ī pe name of ihū cst of
nazareth · whom ze crucifiede ·
whom god reiside fro deep :
ī pis pis man stondip hool ·
bifor zou / pis is pe stoon : wh
ich was repued of zou bildy
ngis / which is maad ī to
pe heed of pe corner : & helpe

is not in ony oper / for neper
of name vndir heuene is 3o
uen to men: i which it bihoue
vs to be maad saaf / & per sien
pe stidfastnesse of petre & of
ioon. for it was foundn pt per
weren mē vnlettrid & lewid
men. & per woundriden & knu
wen hem pat per were wip
hūn / & per sien pe man pt was
heelid stondynge wip hem: &
per nyzten no pyng azen seie
but per counseilidden hem to
go fro wip out pe cōsel: &
per spaken to gidere & seiden
what shulen we do to pese
men / for pe signe is maad
knowen bi hem: to alle men
pt dwellen at ierlm / it is op
yn: & we moun not denye / but
pat it be no more puplischid
i to pe puple: manasse we
to hem. pat per speke no mo
re i pis name to ony men /
& per defenden hem: & demen
seden to hem. pat on no ma
ner per shulden speke. ney
teche i pe name of ihū / but
petre & ioon answeride: &
seiden to hem / if it be rizt
ful in pe siz of god to heere
3ou raper pan god: deme 3e /
for we moten needis speke
po pyngis: pat we han seyn
& herd / & per manasside &
leften hem: & foūden not hou
per shulden punysshe hem:
for pe puple / for alle mē clari
fiden pat pyng pat was don
i pat pat was bifalle / for pe
man was more pan of four
ty zeer: i which pis signe of
helpe was maad / & whanne
per weren delyuerid per cam
en to her felowis & telde to
hem. hou grete pingis pe pri
es of pistis & pe eldere men had
den don seid to hem / & whanne
per herden: wip oon herte
per reisiden voys to pe lord
& seiden / lord pou art pat ma
dest heuene & erpe see & alle
pingis pat ben i hem: which
seidest bi pe hooly goost bi pe
mouy of oure fadir dauy
pi child / why hepē men gnas
siden wip teep to gidere: &
pe puplis pouytē vepu pingis
kyngis of pe erpe stoodun upz:
& princis comē to gidir i oon
azen pe lord. & azenes his crist
for verili eroude & pounce pil
at wip hepen men & puplis of
isrl camē to gidere in pis citee
azen3 pin hooly child ihū whō
pou anoyntidist: to do pe pin
gis pat pin hoond & pin cōsel
demeden to be don / & now lord
biholde in to pe pretynyngis
of hem & graūte to pe seruā

pi

nes to speke pi word wip al pat
in pat ping pat pou holde keep
pin hoond pat helpip & kepip
& wondrip be maad · bi pe nam
e of pin hooly sone ihū / & wha
ne per hadden preied: pe place
was moued · i which per wer
en gaderid / & alle werē fillid
wip pe hoolp goost: & spaken
pe word of god wip trist / and
of pe multitude of men bilen
ynge: was oon herte & oon wi
lle / nep ony mā seide ony pin
gis of po pingis · pat he wel
dide to be his owne: but al
le pingis weren comū to hē
& wip greet vertu pe apostl
is zeldidē witnessing of pe
azenrising of ihū crist oure
lord: & greet grace was in
alle hem / for nep ony man
was among hem / for hou m
any eue werē possessourisē
of feeldis ep of housis: pei
seelden & broustē pe pricis
of po pingis pat pei seelden
& leyden bifor pe feet of pe
apostlis / & it was departid
to ech: as it was neede to
ech / forpope ioseph pat was
nemed barsabas of apost
is pat is to seie pe sone of
coūfort of pe lynage of leuy
a man of cipre: whanne he
hadde a feelde seelde it and
broustе pe prijs: and leyde
it bifor pe feet of apostlis
But anā a man
une wip safira his
wijf: seelde a feelde
and defraudide of pe prijs
of pe feeld & his wijf was
wityinge & he broustе apart
& leyde bifor pe feet of pe a
postlis & petre seide to him
ananay whi hap satanas te
nupted pin herte pat pou lye
to pe hooly goost: & to defrau
de of pe prijs of pe feelde:
whep it vnseld was not pyn·
& whanne it was seld · it was
i pi power: whi hast pou put
te pis ping in pi herte: pou
hast not lyed to mē: but to
god ananay herde pese wor
dis: & felde doū & was dede
& greet drede was maad on
alle pat herdē / & zonge men
risen & monydē him & beren
beren him out & birieden /
pere was maad as aspice
of pre owris: & his wijf fuie
zede not pat ping pat was
don · & entride / & petre anke
rede to hir / wōmā seie to me:
whepper ze seeldē pe feeld for
so mychе: / & she seide zhe for
so mychе / & petre seide to hir
what bifelde to zou: to tēpte
pe spirit of pe lord: lo pe

nedy

feet of hem pat han buried
pin housebonde ben at ye dor
e: & pei schulē bere yee out/
anoon she felde doñ at his
feet: & died/ & ye yonge men
entriden & foñden hir dede
& pei baren hir out & buriden
to hir housebonde & greet dre
de was maad i al pe chirche:
& m to alle pat herden pese pin
gis/ & bi pe hoondis of pe apo
stlis: signes & many wondr
is weren maad i pe puple/ &
alle weren of oon acord i pe
porche of salamon/ but no
mañ of opir durste ioyne hym
silf wip hem: but pe puple
magnefiden hem/ & pe multi
tude of meñ & of wymen biley
ynge i pe lord: was more en
cresid/ so pat pei brouzten
out sike meñ in to stretis: &
leyden in litil beddis & couch
is/ pat whanne petre cam
namely pe schadewe of him
schulde schadewe ech of hem:
& pei schuldē be delyuerid fro
her seeknessis/ & pe multitu
de of citees nyz to ierlim ran:
brynging sike meñ & pt we
ren trauelid of vnclene spi
ritis· which alle weren heelid/
but pe prince of prestis roos
up· & alle pat weren wip him·
pat is pe ereste of sadducis:
and weren fillid wip enuie/ and
leiden hoondis on pe apostlis: &
puttiden hem i pe comyn warde/
but pe aungel of pe lord openyde
by nyzt pe zatis of pe prisoñ: and
ledde hem out & seide/ go ze and
stoondeze & speke i pe tēple to
ye puple: alle pe wordis of pis
lyf/ whom whanne pei hadden
herd pei entriden eerly i to pe
temple & tauzte/ & pe prince of
preestis cam & pei pat weren
wip him: & clepiden to gidir
pe coñsel· & alle pe eldre men
of pe children of israel/ & senten
to pe prisoñ: pat pei schulden be
brouzt forp/ & whanne pe mynys
tris camen· pei foñden hem not·
& for pe prisoñ was openyd: pei
turneden azen/ & teelden & seiden/
we foñden pe prisoñ schitte wip
al diligence: & pe keperis stoo
ndinge at pe zatis/ but we
openeden· & foñden no man p
yne/ & as pe magistratis of
pe tēple· & pe princis of prestis he
erden pese wordis: pei doutiden
of hem pat what was doon/
but aungel cam: & teelde to hem/
for lo po men whiche ze hadden put
i to prisoñ: ben i pe tēple & stoo
den & techen pe puple/ pane
pe magistrat went wip pe
mynistris: & brouzte hem wt
out violence/ for pei dredden pe

puple: lest pei shulden be stoon ed / & whanne pei hadden brouzt hem: pei settiden hem i pe coũ sel / & pe þuce of þstis: & ide hem & seide ni counsũdemet we comaũdide zou: þt ze shul den not teche i þis name / & lo ze han fillid ierslim wiþ zoure techyng: & ze wolẽ bryngge on vs pe blood of þis mã / & petre answeride & pe apostlis & seid eu / it bihouep to obeie to god: more pan to mẽ / god of oure fadris reisside ihũ whom ze slowen: hangyng i a tre / god enhaũside wiþ his rizt hoond pis þuce & sauyour: þat pen nice were zyue to israel & re mission of synn / & we ben witnessis of pese wordis & pe hooly goost whom god zaf to alle obeyshyng to hi / whanne pei herden pese pingis: pei weren turmẽtid. And ponzte to sle hem / but a mã rood i pe coũsel. a farisee ha maliel bi name. a doctour of pe lawe. & worshipful mã to alle pe puple: & com aũdide pe mẽ to be putt out forp. for a while / & he seide to hem / ze men of isra el take tent to zou self ou pese men: what ze shulen do / for bifor pese dayes two das þat seide hym self to be sũ mã: to whom a noũbre of mẽ consentide. about foure hũdrid / which was slayn: & alle þat bileuedẽ to hi. were disparpilid & brouzt to nouzt / aftir pis iudas of galilee was i pe dayes of professioũ: and turnyde alsei pe puple aft hi / & alle hem pat weren consentidẽ to hi: weren scatterid & he perischide / & now þfor y seie to zou: departe ze fro pese men & suffre ze hem / for if pis coũsel ep werk is of mẽ: it shal be vndoon / but if it is of god: ze moũ not vndo hẽ. lest peraũ ture ze be foũdũ to repugne god / & pei consentidẽ to hi. & pei clepidẽ to gidẽ pe apostlis / & deuoũside to hẽ þat weren bet̃: þat pei shulden no mo re speke i pe name of ihũ. & pei leten hem go / and pei wẽ ten ioyngge fro pe sizt of pe coũsel: þat pei werẽ had worpi to suffre dispisyng for pe na me of ihũ / but eche day pei ceesside not i pe tẽple & abou te housis: to teche and to preche ihũ crist

But in po dayes. whã ue pe noũbre of disci plis encreside: pe gre kis grutchiden azen pe ebrew

for pat her widewis weren
despisid i eny dates ministry
nge & pe twelue clepiden to gi
dere pe multitude of disciplis
& seiden it is not riztful pt we
lemē pe word of god: & mynis
tren to wordis ꝑfor bripen bi
holde ze mē of zou· of good fa
me ful of pe hooly goost & of
wisdom: whiche we schulen
ordeyne on pis werk· for we
schulē be bisy to ꝑier & ꝑche
pe word of god & pe word ple
side bifor alle pe multitude &
pei chesiden stemē ma̅ful of
feip & of pe hooly goost· & filip
& procore & nycanor· & tymon
& parmenan & nycol a comme
lyng ma̅ of antioche pei
ordeyneden pese bifor pe sizt of
apostlis: & pei ꝑieden· & leidē
hoondis on hem & pe word of
pe lord wexide: & pe nōbre
of pe disciplis i ierlim was
myche multiplied also myche
company of ꝑstis: obeyide to
pe feip & stemē ful of grace &
of strengpe: made wōdris and
grete signes i pe puple/ but
sum risen of pe synagoge
pt was clepid of lybertyns·
& cirenensis· & of mē of Ali
sandre· & of hē pat weren of
silice & of asie· & disputiden wt
steuene & pei myzten not wt
stonde pe wisdom and pe spirit
pat spak pāne pei ꝑuely seiden
men pat schulden seie pat pei herden
hi seiynge wordis of blasfemye aze
n moyses & god & so pei moneden
to gidere pe puple: & pe eldre mē
& pe scribis & pei comen to gidir
& token hi: & brouzten m to pe cōi
sel & pei ordeyneden false witnes
sis· pat seiden pis man ceesip
not to speke wordis azens pe ho
ly place & pe lawe for we herden
hi seiynge pat pis ihc of nazar
eth schal destruye pis place: and
schal chaunge pe tradicions· whiche
moises bitook to us & alle men
pat sitten i pe cōsel bihelden hi:
& sayen his face as pe face of an angel

C. viij

And pe ꝑce of ꝑstis seide
to steuene whi ꝑ pese
pingis han hem so: wh
ich seide briper & fadris here ze/
god of glorie apperide to oure
fadir abraham· whanne he was
i mesopotamye· bifor pat he
dwelte i carran: & seide to hi
go out of pi loond· & of pi kyn
rende: & come in to pe lond
which y schal schewe to pee/ pāne
he wente out of pe loond of calde
is: & dwelte i carran & fro pēn
aftir pat his fadir was deed:
he translatide hi m to pis loond·
& which ze dwelle now & he zaf
not to hi· eritage i it· ney a

56

pas of a foot: but he bihizte to zine hi it i possessiõn & to his se ed aft hi. whãne he hadde not a sone & god spak to hi pt his seed shal be coumlyng i an alien loond & pei shulẽ make hẽ in get to seruage & shulẽ vnel trete hem foure hundrid zeris and pritty & p shal nuge pe folk: to whiche pei shulẽ serue seip pe lord & aft pese pingꝫ: pei shulẽ go out & pei shulẽ serue to me i pis place & he zaf to hi pe testa mẽt of circũcisiõn & so he gen drid ysaac: & circũcidide hi in eizt daie & ysaac gendride iacob: & iacob gendride pe twelue pa triarkis & pe patriarkis had den envie to ioseph: & selden hi to egipt & god was wip hi & delyueride hi of alle his tri bulaciõus: & zaf to hi grace & wisdom i pe sizt of farao king of egipt & he ordeynede him soueyn on egipt: & on al his hous & hi̅gre cam i to al egipt & canaan & grete tribulaciõn: & oure fadris foũden not mete but whãne iacob hadde he rd pt whete was i egipt: he sente oure fadris first & in pe secũde tyme ioseph was knowẽ of his bripen: & his kyn was maad knowẽ to far oo & ioseph sente & clepide ĩ

^m

cob his fadir & alle his kynrede seuẽty & fyue men & iacob cam doñ i to egipt & was ded: he & oure fadris & pei were trans latid i to sichem & were leyd in pe sepulcre pat abraham boui3te by prys of siluꝛ of pe sonis of emor pe sone of sichem And whãne pe tyme of biheste cam nyz which god hadde knowle chide to abraham: pe pople wexide & multipliede i egipt til an opir kyng rood i egipt: which knewe not ioseph pis bigilide oure kyn & turmenti de oure fadris: pat pei shuld den putte awey her zonge chil dren for pei shulde not lyue in pe same tyme moyses was borñ: & he was loued of god & he was norischid pre moue pis: i pe hous of his fadir & whãne he was put out in pe flood: pe doutr of farao tok hi up & nurischide hym i to hir sone & moyses was lernid i al pe wisdom of egip cians: & he was myzti i his wordis & werkis but whã ne pe tyme of fourty zeer was fillid to hi: it roos up i to his herte pat he shulde visite his bripen pe sonꝫ of isrl & whãne he say a man suffrynge wrongꝭ he vẽgide

him · and dide vengaunce for hi
pat siffride pe wrong ⁊
he killide pe egipcian / ffor he
gessidе pat his bretheu shuldе
vndurstonde · pt god shuldе
zeue to hem helpe bi pe hoond
of hi / but pei vndurstodē not /
ffor i pe daye sopynge : he app
ride to hem chidynge : ⁊ he
accordide hem i pees ⁊ seide /
men ze ben bretheu / whi nopeu
ze eche ope : / but he pat dide
pe wronge to his neizboze :
puttide hi awaye ⁊ seide / who
ordeynede pee prince ⁊ domeisma
an on us : / wheper pou woldist sle
me : as zistirdai pou killidist
pe egipcian : / ⁊ in pis word
moyses fley : ⁊ was maad a
cōmelyng i pe loond of madi
an wher he bigat twey sones
⁊ whanne he hadde fillid four
ty zeer : an angel apperide to
hi in fier of flawme of a buy
sch i desert of pe mount of synay
⁊ moyses siz : ⁊ wondride ou pe
sizt / ⁊ whanne he neizide to bi
holde : pe voys of pe lord was
maad to hi ⁊ seide / y am god
of zoure fadris · god of abra
am · god of ysaac · god of iacob /
moyses was maad tremblyngе :
⁊ durste not bihoolde / but god
seide to hi / do of pe shoon of
pi feet / for pe place i which pou

stoondist : is hooly erpe / y seyu
ge say pe turmentinge of my
puple pat is i egipt · ⁊ y herde
pe mournyng of hem : ⁊ x y cam
doū to delyure hem ⁊ now come
pou : ⁊ y shal sende pee i to egipt /
pis moyses was whom pei de
nyeden seyinge / who ordeynede
pee prince ⁊ domeisman ou us : god
sente pis prince ⁊ azenbiet · wip
pe hoond of pe angel · pat app
ride to hi in pe bupsch · pis moy
ses ledde hem out : ⁊ dide won
dris ⁊ signes i pe loond of egipt ·
⁊ in pe reed see ⁊ in desert four
ty zeeris / pis is moises pt seide
to pe sonys of israel / god shal reise
to zou a profete of zoure breper
en : as me ze shulē here him /
pat it is pat was i pe chirche
i wildirnesse wip pe angel pt
spak to hi in pe mount synay ⁊
wip oure fadris : which took
wordis of lijf to zeue to us /
to whom oure fadris woldē
not obeie : but puttidē hym
awey · ⁊ werē turned awey i
hertis i to egipt · seyinge to aa
ron / make you to us goddis
pat shulē go bifor us / for to
pis moyses pat ledde us out
of pe loond of egipt : we witen
not what is doon to hi / ⁊ pei
maden a calfe i po daies : ⁊
offriden a sacrifice to pe mawm

ner · & pei weren glad in pe werk
is of her hoondis / & god turne
de & bitoke hem to serue to pe
knyzthod of heuene: as it is wr
itē i pe book of profetis / whep
ze hon of israel offridē to me·
slayn sacrifices ep sacrifices fo
urty zeeres i desert: / & ze han ta
ke pe tabernacle of moloc & pe
steere of zoure god remfam: fi
gures pat ze han maad to wor
shipe hē & y shal translate zou
i to babiloyn / pe tabernacle of
witnessing was wip oure fa
dris i desert: as god disposide
to hem & spak to moises / pt he
shulde make it aft pe fourme
pat he sai / which also our fa
dris token wip ihū & brouzten
i to pe possessioū of hepē men:
which god puttide awey fro pe
face of oure fadris · til i pe dai
es of dauip / pat foonde grace
anentis god: & aside pat he sh
ulde fynde a tabernacle to god
of iacob / but salamon bildide
pe hous to hī / but pe hiz god /
dwellip not i pingis maad bi ho
ndis: as he seip bi pe profete / he
neue is a seete to me · & pe erpe
is pe stool of my feet / what
hous schulē ze bilde to me seip
pe lord: ep what place is of
my resting: / whep myn hoo
nd made not alle pese pingis:

wip hat· not and vncircūcidid
hertis & eris ze wip stoodē · eū
moor pe hooly goost / as zoure
fadris so ze / whō of pe profetis
han not zoure fadris pursued:
& han slayn hem pt bifor teldē
of pe comyng of pe riztfulmā:
whos traitouris & mākeleris
ze weren now / which token pe
lawe · i ordinaūce of aungelis:
& han not kept it / & pei herdē
pese pingis & weren duūly tur
mentid i her hertis · & gremne
den wip teep on hī / but whā
ne steuē was ful of pe holy go
ost: he bihelde i to heuene & sai
pe glorie of god · & ihū stoondy
nge on pe riztsalf of pe vtu of
god / & he seidē / lo y se heuenes
openyd: & mānis sone stondinge
on pe riztsalf of pe vertu of
god / & pei crieden wip agreet
voys: & stoppeden her eris ·
& runden wip o wille an assaut
i to hī / and pei brouztē hym
out of pe citee: and stounden
and pe witnessis diden of her
clopis · bisidis pe feet of a
zong mā: pat was clepid saū
le / and pei stoniden steuene ·
pat clepid god to help & seiyng /
lord ihū receyue my spirit &
he knelide & criede wip agre
et voys & seide / lord sette not
to hem pis synne / and whān

he hadde seid þis þis he diede
Saul was consent
c.v. nge to his dep & gre
et persecucioñ was
mad þat dai ẽ ye chirche þt
was i ierlm & alle men were
scatered bi ye cõtrees of iudee
& samarie: outakñ ye apostlis
but good men birid ẽ stenene:
& mad ẽ greet mornyng ou hi
but saul greetly distrupde ye
chirche & entride bi housis: &
droive me ẽ & wymẽ · & bitoke
hem i to þ̄soñ / & þei þat were
scatered: passid ẽ forþ · þchyng ye
word of god / & filip cam doñ in
to a citee of samarie: & þchide
to hẽ crist / & ye puple zaue tent
to þese þingis þat were ẽ seid of
filip: whi o whille herynge & sey
nge ye signes þat he dide / ffor
many of hem þat hadde vncle
ne spiritis: crieden with agreet
voys & went ẽ out / & many syk
i ye palsy & crokid were heelid
þ̄for greet ioye was maad in
þat citee ¶ but þ̄ was a man
i þat citee whos name was sy
mõn a wicche þat hadde dille
ued ye folk of samarie · seiyn
ge þt hi silf was sũ greet man
whõ alle herkenedẽ · fro ye leeft
to ye moost: & seiden / þis is ye
vertu of god: which is clepid gre
et / & þei lenedẽ hi ẽ for long ty
me he hadde maddid hem with
his wicche craftis but whanne
þei hadden beleued to filip þat
þchide of ye kyndom of god:
men & wymen were ẽ baptizid
i ye name of ihũ crist / & þan also
symõn hi silf beleuede / & whã
ne he was baptizid: he dwelt
to filip / & he say also þat signes
& greet vertues were don: he was
astonyed & woundride / but whã
ne ye apostlis þat were at ierlm
hadden herd þat samarie had
resseyued ye word of god: þei
sente ẽ to hem petre & ioon / And
whanne þei came ẽ · þei þidẽ for
hẽ þt þei schuldẽ resseyue ye hoo
ly goost / for he cam not zit in to
ony of hem: but þei were ẽ bap
tizid oonly i ye name of ye lord
ihũ / þan þei leyden hoondis
ou hẽ: & þei resseyneden ye hoo
ly goost / & whanne symõn hadde
seyn · þat ye hooly goost was zo
uñ bi leyng ou of ye hoondis
of ye apostlis: & he profride
to hẽ money & seide / ziue ze also
to me þis power þt whom eũ y
schal leye ou my hoondis: þat
he resseyue ye hooly goost / but
petre seide to hi / þi money be
with þee i to perdicioñ: for þou
gessidist ye zifte of god schulde
be had for money / þ̄ is no part
ne lot to þee: i þis ẽ word / for

yin herte is not riztful bifor god
for do pon penaūce for pis wickednesse of yee · & pie god: if peraūen ture pis pouzt of yui herte be forzonū to yee/ for y se pat you art ī ye galle of bitternesse: & in ye bond of wickednesse/ & symoūt answeride: & seide/ pie ze for me to pe lord: pat no ping of pese pingis pat ze han seid to me on me/ & pei wenten forp & spaken pe word of pe lord: & zeden azen to ierlū & prechidē to many cāstrees of samaritanis/ & an aūgel of pe lord: spak to filip & seide/ rise & go azens pe soup · to pe weye pat goip doū fro ierlū ī to gasa · pis is desert & he rood & weute forp/ & lo an man of ethiopie · a mygti man seruaūt ageldinge of candace pe queen of ethiopiens · which was on alle his richessis: cam to worshipe ī ierlū · & he turnede azen sittynge on his chare: & redinge ysaie pe profete/ and pe spirit seide to filip/ neize pis: & ioyne pee to pis chare/ & filip ran to & herde hī redinge ysaie pe profete/ & he seide/ gessist pu: wher pou vnderstondist · what pingis pou redist: & he seide/ hou may y if no man shewe to me: & he prede filip: pat he shulde come up · & sitte wip hī/ & pe place of pe scripture pat he redde: was pis/ as a shep he was ledd to clepyng/ & as a lombe bifor him pat sherep hī: is doūb wip out voic: so he openyde not his mouy/ in meekenesse his doom was takū up/ who shal telle out pe generacioū of him; for his lif shal be takū away fro pe erpe/ & pe geldinge answerde to filip: & seide/ y biseche pee: of what profete seip he pis ping/ of hī silf: ep of ony op̄/ & filip openyde his mouþe · & bigan at pis scripture: & prechide to hī ihū/ & pe while pei weenten bi pe weye: pei camē to a water/ & pe geldinge seide/ lo water/ who forbedip me to be baptisid: filip seide/ if pu bileuest of al pe herte: it is leueful/ & he answeride & seide/ y bileue pat ihū crist is pe sone of god/ & he comaūdide pe chare to stonde stille/ & pei weenten doū bope ī to pe watr̄ · filip & pe geldinge: & filip baptizid hī/ & wip̄ame pei were cōme up of pe watr̄: pe spirit of pe lord rauysshide filip · & pe geldinge say hī no more/ & filip was foūdū ī azotus/ & he passide forp · and prechide to alle citees: til he cam to cesarie

But sum zit ablowers of mawmetis & of betyngis azenus pe disciplis of pe lord: cam to pe pūce of

prestis · and aside of hym · letter
is ī to damask to ye synagogis / pt
if he fouid ony mē of ỹ weye
pis weye he shulde leede hē bouidi
to ierlm / & whanne he made his
iourney : it bifelde pat he cam
upi to damask / & suddenly alizt
fro him heuene shoon about hī:
& he fallide to ye erpe · & herde
a voic seiynge to hī / saul saul
what pursuest pu me ? & he sei
de / who art pou ? & he seide y
am ihū of nazareth : whom pu
pursuest / it is hard to pee · to ky
ke agen ye pricke / & he treublid
de & wondride : & seide / lord wh
at wolt pou pt y do / & pe lord sei
de to hī / rise up & entre i to citee:
& it shal be seid to pee · what it
behoueb pee to do / & po mē pat
weren wip hī: stoden astonyed /
for pei herden a voic : but pei
se no man / & saul roos fro ye
erpe : & whanne his izen weren
opned : he sei no ping & pei dro
wen hī bi ye hoondis : & ledden
hī in to damask / & he was pre
dayes not seynge : & he eete not
ney dronke / and a disciple was
ape bi name : was at damask
& pe lord seide to hī in a visiōn / a
nanye / & he seide / lo y lord / & pe
lord seide to hī / rise pou & go in
to a strete pat is clepid rectus:
& seke i ye hous of iudas saule
by name of tharse / for lo he pre
yep / & he sai & hath seyn bi name
entringe & leiyuge on hī hoondis:
pat he resseyue sizt / & ananye an
swerde / lord y haue herd of ma
ny of pis mā · how greet yuels
he dide to pi seyntis i ierlm / &
pis hap power of pe princis of
prestis : to bynde al me pat clepē
pi name to help / & pe lord seide
to hī / go pou for pis is to me a
vessel of chesing : pat he bere
my name bifor heyen mē & kingis
& to sone pe sonis of isral / for y shy
al shewe to hī : hou greet pingis
it behoueb hī to suffre for my
name / & ananye went & entri
de i to ye hous : & leyde on hym
his hoondis & seide / saule brop
pe lord ihū sente me pat apperide
to pee i ye weye i which pu camest:
pat pou se & be fulfillid wip ye
hooly goost / & anoon as pe skalis
felden fro his izen : he resseyue
de sizt / & he roos : & was bapti
zid / & whanne he hadde taken me
ete : he was confortid / & he was
bi fiu dayes wip ye disciplis pt
were at damask / & anoon he
endride i to ye synagogis : &
prechide pe lord ihū · for pis is
pe sone of god / & alle men pt
herden hī wondriden : & seidē /
whey pis is not he pat inpug
nede i ierlm · he pat clepide

to helpe þis name: And hidir he cam for þis þing: þat he shuld de leede hē boūdīn to ye þuces of þēis / but sanl nyche ye more wexide strong: & confoūdide ye iewis þat diswelledē at damask & afferwarde þat þis is crist / & whāne many dāies were fill id: iewis madē a cōsel· þt þei shulden sle hī & ye aspies of hem: wereu maad knowīn to saul & þei kepteu ye zatis day & nyzt: þat þei shuldē sle hym / but his disciplis tokē hym by nyzt: & delyuereden hī & leetē hī doū in a cleep bi ye wal / And whāne he cam ī to ierlm: he assayde to ioyne hī to ye disciplis: & alle dredden hī· & leue den not þat he was a disciple / but barnabas toke & ledde hī to ye apostlis: & telde to hem how ī ye wey he hadde seyn ye lord: & þat he spak to hī & how ī damask he dide fulily ī ye name of ihū & he was wt hē & entride & zede out ī ierlm: & dide fully ī ye name of ihū & he spak wip hepen men: And disputide wip grekis & þei soȝten to sle hī which þing whāne ye bripeu hadde kno we: þei ledden hī by nyzte to cesarie· & letten hī go to tarsi is & ye chirche bi al iudee & galilee And samarie hadde pe es & was edefied· & walkide ī ye drede of ye lord: & was fil lid wip coufort of ye hooly go ost & it bifelde þat petre· ye whyle he passide aboute alle: cam to ye hooly men þat dwellide at lidde & he foond a man cleped by name þat was eijte zeer· he had de leye ī bed: & he was sijk ī pal sie & petre seide to hī eneas ye lord ihū crist heele pee ryse pou & arraye pee & anoon he roos & al le men þat dwellidē at lidde & at saronе sayen hī: which were cōuertid to ye lord & ī ioppe was a disciplē whos name was tabi ta: þt is to seie dorcas þis was ful of good werkis & almesdedis þat she dide & it bifelde in ye da ies: þat she was sijk & diede & whāne þei hadden wasshī hir þei leiden hir ī a soler & for lid da was nyz ioppe ye disciplis herden þat petre was pere pīne & sentē twey men to hī & þis dē: þat þou warie not to come to us & petre roos up: & cam wip hē & whāne he was comū: þei ledden hī in to ye soler· & alle widewes stoden aboute him: wepinge & shewinge cotis & clopis· which dorcas made to hē & whāne alle men were putt wip out forp: petre knelide &

preide And he turnede to ye bo
die: & seide tabita rise p̄l & she
openyde hir izen: & whān she
sij petre she sat up azen & he
took hir bi ye hoond: & reysde
hir & whān he hadde cleyde
ye hooly men & wydewes: he at
singnede hir alyue; & it was m
and knowīn bi al ioppe: & many
bileueden in ye lord & it was
maad pat many daies he dwel
lide i ioppe. at oon symoūt A cor
nan was i Cesarie. cornelye bi
name: a centurien of
ye cūpanye of kuyztis. pat is
seid of ytalie a religious man:
& dredinge ye lord wip alle his
nei3e3 doynge many almessis
to ye puple: & p̄ynge ye lord ou
mere Pis say i a visioū oppenly
as i pe nynpe our of ye daye: An
aūgel of god entrynge i to hī: &
seynge to hī cornelye & he bise
de hī & was a dred & seide who
art pou lord & he seide to hī pi
p̄eris & pin almesdedis: han sti
ed up i to mynde i pe sizt of pe
lord & now sende p̄l mē i to ioppe:
& clepe oon symoūt. pt is nam
ed petre; pis is herbozid at An
an symoūt cornour: whos ho
us is bisidis pe see; pis shal seie
to pee: what it bihouep pee to
do; & whān ye aūgel pat spak
to him. was goon awey: he cle
pide tweyne men of his hous &
a kuyzt pat dredde pe lord. whi
che weren at his biddinge: And
whān he hadde tolde hem alle
pese p̄ynge: he sente hem i to iop
pe; & on ye daie suynge while pei
maden iourney & neizide to ye
citee: petre weente up i pe hiest
place of pe hous to p̄ie aboute
pe sixte our & whān he was
hūgride: he wolde haue ete
but while pei maden redy: and
upfallyng of spirit feide on hi
& he say heuene opened: & a vel
sel comynge doū as a greet shet
et wip foure cornerys to be lette
doū fro heuene i to erpe i which
were alle foure footid beestis.
& creppynge of pe erpe: & vola
tils of heuē & a vois was ma
ad to hī ryse pou petre & slē &
ete & petre seide lord forbede:
for y neu ete ouy comyn ping &
vnclene & eft pe secōnde tyme
pe vois was maad to hī pat
ping pat god hap clēsid: seie p̄l
not vndeene & pis ping was
doon bi pries & anoon pe vessel
was vesseymed azen i to heuene
& while pat petre doutide wip
inne hī self what pe visioū was
pat he say: lo pe mē pat were
sent fro cornely. soūtē pe hous
of symoūt & stoodē at pe 3ate

And whanne pei hadden clep
id: pei axiden if symoñ pat
is named petre hadde pe he
rboze / & while petre pouzte
ou pe vision: pe spirit seide
to hī / lo pre men seke pee / p
foz rise pou & go doñ & go wt
hem & poute pou no ping for
y sente hem / & petre cam doñ
to pe mē: & seide / lo y am wh
om ze seken / what is pe cause
for which ze ben come: & pei
seiden: / cornely pe centurien
a iust mā & dredinġ god · And
hab good witnessinge of alle
pe folk of iewis: toke answer
of an hooly aungel to clepe pee
ī to his hous & to heere word
is of pee / pfor he ledde hem
pīne: & restepnede i herboze /
& pat upzt pei diuellidē whp
hī / & in pe daye suynge he ro
os & weente forp whp hem / &
sūm of pe britpen folewede hī
fro ioppe · pat pei ben witnes
sinġ to petre / & pe opir dai
he entride ī to cesarie / & corne
lye abood hē: whp his cosyns
& necessarie freendis pat we
ren clepid to gidir / & it was
doon whanne petre was come
pīne: cornelie cam metinge
hī / & felle doñ at his feet: &
worshipide hī / but petre rep
side hī: & seide / arise p': also
y my silf am a man as pou / &
he spak with hī & went pīne & fo
ond manp pat weren come to
gidir / & he seide to hem ze wite
hou abhominable it is to a man
to be ioyned · eþ to come to an a
lien / but god shewide to me
pat no man schal cleepe coumyn eþ
vncleene: for which thing y cam
m · whanne y was clepid: whp
out doutinġ / pfor y aske zou: for
what cause han ze clepid me:
& cornelie seide / to dai foure
dai3 to pis our y was fastinge
& fastinge ī pe nynp our ī my
hous / & lo a man stood bifor me
ī a white clop: & seide cornelie
pi preier herd: & pin almesdedis
ben ī mynde ī pe siȝt of god /
pfor send pou ī to ioppe: & clepe
symoñ pat is named petir
pat is pis is herbaid ī pe hous
of symoñ corsour bi side pe
see / pis whanne he schal come:
schal speke to pee / pfor anoon
y sente to pee: & pou dedist wel
ī comynge to us / now pfor
we alle ben pleint ī pi siȝt to
here pe wordis what eu ben
pleint comanded to pe of pe
lord / & petre openyde his mu
ouþ: & seide / i treuþe y haue
foñdoñ: pat god is not acep
tor of persones / but i ech
folk he pat dredip god And

worchip rightwisnesse: is acept
to hi/ god sente a word to ye
children of israel: shewinge
pees bi ihū crist/ pis is lord of
alle pingis/ ze witē pe word·
pat is maad pesun al indee·
& bigan at galile· aftir pe bap
tym pat ioon p̄chide: ihū of
nazareth/ hou god anoyntide
hi wip pe hooly goost & vertu/
which passide forp i doynge
wel· & heelynge alle mē oppi
sid of pe deuel: for god was
wip hi/ & we bē witnessis of
alle pingis: whiche he dide
i pe cuntre· eye of ierusalē and of
ierusalē· whō pei slowen hangy
ngē i a tre/ & god reisside
pis i pe pridde daye: & zaf
hi to be maad knowun/ not
to alle puple: but to witnessi
is bifor ordeyned of god/ to
us pat diden eeten & drunkē wt
hi: aft pat he roos agen fro
deep/ & he comaūdide to us·
to p̄che to pe puple & to witn
esse pat he it is pat is ordey
ned of god domesman of pe
quyk & of p. deede/ to pis alle
profetis beren witnessing·
pat alle mē pat bileuē i hi·
shulē resseyue remissiōn
of synnis bi his name/ and
zit while pat petre spak pe
se wordis: pe hooly goost fel
de on alle pat herden pe word/
& pe feipful men of circūcisiōn
pat camen wip petre wondri
den pat also i to nacionis pe
grace of pe hooly goost is sched
out/ for pei herden hem
spekynge i langagis: & mag
nifiynge god/ pānne petre an
sweride/ whēp ony man may
forbede watir· pat pese pe
not baptisid· pat hau also rec
seyued pe hooly goost as we:
& he comaūdide hē to be bapti
sid· i pe name of pe lord ihū
crist/ pānne pei p̄iden hi· pt he
shulde dwelle wt hem sūm dayes

And pe apostlis & pe bri ℭ. fj.
pren pat weren in iu
dee herden pat also
hepen men resseyueden pe
word of god· & pei glorifieden
god/ but whānne petre cam to ierusā·
pei pat weren of circūcisiōn dis
puteden agens hi· & seiden
whi entridist pu to mē pat ha
uen p̄puce· & hast eete wip hē/
& petre bigan & expownede to
hem bi ordre· & seide/ y was i
pe citee of ioppe & p̄yede· and
y say i rauysshyng of my mynd
de a visiōn· pat a vessel cam
doun as a greet sheete wip foure
cornes· & was sent doun fro he
uene· & it cam to me/ i to whi
ch y lokynge bihel and say

foure footid beestis of pe erpe
& beestis & creppinge beestis &
volatilis of heuen & y herde al
so a voys pat seide to me petre
ryse pl & sle & eete but y seide
nay lord: for comyn ping & pur
vnclene: entride neu i to my
mouy & pe vois answeride pe
secounde tyme fro heuene/ pt
ping pt god hap cleunsid: seie
pou not vncleene & pis was
doon bi pries: & alle pingis
were reclepned azen i to hem
en & lo pre men anoon stoode
i pe hous i which y was: and
pei were sent fro cesarie to me
& pe spirit seide to me: pat y shu
lde go with hem & doute no pp
ing/ pese vi bretheren camen
with me: & we entriden in to
pe hous of pe man & he telde
to us hou he sigh an aungel i
his hous: stondinge & seiynge
to hi/ sende pl i to ioppe & clepe
symount: pt is named petur
which shal speke to pee word
is: i which pou shalt be saf
& al pin hous/ & whanne y had
de biginnun to speke: pe hooly
goost felle on hem as i to us
i pe biginnynge/ & y bipouzte on
pe word of pe lord: as he seide/
for ioon baptisid i wat: but
ze shulen be baptisid i pe hooly
goost/ pfor zif god zaf to hem
pe same grace as to us pt bile
euen i pe lord ihu crist: who
was y pat myzte forbeede pe
lord pat he zune not pe hooly go
ost to hem pat bileuedun in pe
name of ihu crist/ whanne pese
pingis/ weren herd: pei helde
pees & glorifieden god & seide
pfor also to hepene men god
hap zouun penaunce to lijf and
pei pt weren scaterid of pe
tribulacioun pat was maad vn
dur steuene: walkiden forp to
fenice & to cipre & to antioche
& spaken pe word to no man
but to iewis aloone/ but sum of
hem weren men of cipre &
of cirenen/ whiche whanne
pei hadden entrid i to antio
che: pe spaken to pe grekis
& prechiden pe lord ihu/ & pe ho
ond of pe lord was with hem/
& mychc noumbre of men bileu
ynge was conuertid to pe lord/ & pe
word cam to pe eris of pe chir
che pat was at ierlm on pese
pingis: & pei senten barnabas
to antioche/ & whanne he was
come & seiz pe grace of pe lord:
he ioyede & monestide alle men
to dwelle i pe lord i purpos of
herte/ for he was a good man:
& ful of pe hooly goost and of
feip/ & myche puple was encre
sid to pe lord: & he went forp

to Hyerlis: to seke saul/ And
whanne he hadde foũdũ hym:
he ledde to Antioche ꝑ al a zeer
pei lyuedẽ per ĩ pe chirche: ꝑ
taujtẽ myche puple so þat pe
disciplis weren named first
at Antiochie cristẽ mẽ ꝑ ĩ pese dai
es: prophetes camen oũ fro ie
rusalẽ to Antioche ꝑ oon of
hẽ rood up Agabus bi name:
ꝑ signefiede bi pe spirit· hgre
et hũgre to comynge ĩ al pe
world which hũgre was ma
d vndir claudi? ꝑ alle pe dis
ciplis purposiden eft' þat eche
hadde: forto sende ĩ to mynu
stre· to britren þat dwelliden
ĩndee whiche þing also pei
didẽ· And sẽte it to eldre me
n: bi pe hoondis of barna
bas And saul

C. xij.

And in pe same tyme
eroude pe king sente
power to turmente
sũ men of pe chirche/ And he
slowe bi swerd: sawes pe bro
þ' of ioon ꝑ he siz þat it plesi
de to iewis: ꝑ keste to take al
so petr' ꝑ pe daies of erf loo
wes weren ꝑ whanne he hadde
mynt petr' he sente hi ĩ to þlou
ꝑ bitoolde to foure quatrũons
of knyztis to kepe hi: ꝑ wolde
eft' pask bringe hi forp to pe
puple ꝑ petre was kept in
þlou but þer was maad of
pe chirche wipoute ceessyng: to
god for hi· but whanne eroude
shulde bringe hi forp: ĩ þat nyzt
petre was sleppynge bitwix tweyn
kuyztis ꝑ was bouñdũ wt tweyn
cheynes: ꝑ pe keperis bifore pe
dore kepten pe þlou ꝑ lo an añ
gel of pe lord stoode upz: ꝑ list
shoon ĩ pe þlou hous ꝑ whanne
he hadde smyte pe syde of petre:
he reisede hi ꝑ seide· rise pou
swiftly ꝑ anoon pe cheynes fel
den doñ fro his hoondis· ꝑ pe
añgel seide to hi· girde pee: ꝑ
do on pi hoolis ꝑ he dide so ꝑ
he seide to hi· do a boute pee pi
clopis: ꝑ sue me ꝑ he zede out
ꝑ suyde hi: ꝑ he wiste not þat
it was soþ þat was doon bi pe
añgel ffor he gesside hi self
to haue seie a visioñ ꝑ pei pas
sidẽ pe first ꝑ pe secoñde ward
ꝑ camẽ to pe iren zate þ' ledip
to pe citee whiche anoon was
openyd to hẽ ꝑ pei zeden out ꝑ
camẽ ĩ to oo street: ꝑ anoon pe
añgel passide aweie fro hi· And
petre turnede azen to hi self: ꝑ
seide· now y woot verily þat pe
lord sente his añgel: ꝑ delyue
ride me fro pe hoond of eroude:
ꝑ fro pe abidyng of pe puple
of iewis ꝑ he bihelde ꝑ cam
to pe hous of marie modir of

al

ioon · pat is nãmed marku⁹:
wher̃ many weren gadered to
gidere & þ̀ preyinge / & whãne he
knockide at þe dore of þe ȝate:
a damysel rode bi name · come
forþ to se & whãne sche knewe
þe voys of petre: for ioye sche
openyde not þe ȝate · but ran
ỹne & teelde pat petre stood
at þe ȝate / & þei seidẽ to hir þou
madest / but sche affirmyde þt
it was so / & þei seidẽ it is his
ãngel / but petre alwoode stille
& knokide / & whãne þei hadde
openyd þe dore þei sawen hym
& wondridẽ & he bekenyde to
hẽ wiþ his hoond to be stille:
& telde hou þe lord hadde ledd
hi out of þe pr̃oũ / & he seide tel
leze to iames & to þe britẽ þe
se þingis / & he zede out: and
wente ĩ to anoþ̀ place / & whã
ne þe dai was come: þ̀ was
not litil troublyng among
þe knyztis · what was doon of
petre / & whãne erode hadde
souzt hi & foonde not: aft̃ pat
he hadde mad enquerynge
of þe keperis · he comãndide
hẽ to be brouzt to hi / & he cam
doũ fro iudee ĩ to cesarie: and
dwellide þer̃ / & he was wrop
to mẽ of tyre & of sydon / and
þei of oon acord camẽ to him
whãne þei hadde cõsseilid wt
blastus þat was þe kynges cha
mberlayn þei asidẽ peese · for
as myche þt her cõtrees were
vitaylid of hi & in adai pat
ordeyned · eroude was clopid
wiþ kyngis clopyng: & satt for
domelimã & spak to hẽ / & þe pu
ple cr̃yede þe voicis of god: &
not of mã / & anoon an ãngel
of þe lord smote hi: for he hadde
not ȝove onour to god / & he was
wastid of wormes & diede / & þe
word of þe lord wexide: &
was multiplied / & barnabas
& saul turneden azen fro ierlim·
whãne þe mynistrie was fillid:
and token ioon pat was na
med marku⁹

And profetis & doctouris
weren ĩ þe chirche þt
was at antioche: in
whiche barnabas & symoũ
pat was clepid blac · & lucius
cirenense & manaen þt was
þe sonkyng feve of eroude te
trarke & saule were & whan
ne þei mynistridẽ to þe lord &
fastidẽ: þe hooly goost seide
to hẽ / departe ȝe to me saul
& barnabas ĩ to þe werk to
which y haue takñ hem / þã
ne þei fastidẽ & prieden & leidẽ
hoondis on hem & letẽ hem
go / but þei weren sent of
þe hooly goost: & wentẽ forþ

to seleucia / & fro pēnȳ pei weenten
bi boot to cipre / & whānne pei camen
en to salamyne: pei p̄chidē pe wo
rd of god i pe synagogis of iewis /
& pei hadde also ioon i mynistrie /
& whānne pei haddeen walkid bi
alle pe yle to paphum: pei foūdēn
aman a wycche a fals profete
a iewe to whom pe name was
barie-ju pat was whip pe procon
sul sergius paule a prudēt mā /
pis clepide barnabas & poule: &
desiride to here pe word of god /
but elymas wicche wipstoode hī
for his name is expowned so:
& he souzte to turne awey pe pro
consul fro bileue· but saul whi
ch is seid also poul was fillid wi
pe hooly goost: & bihelde i to hī
& seide / a pou ful of al gyle & al
falsnesse pou sone of pe deuel·
pou enmye of al riztwisnesse:
pou leuest not to turne vpsodo
ū pe riztful weies of pe lord / &
now lo pe hoond of pe lord is
on pee: & pou schalt be blynd &
not seynge pe sunne i to a tyme /
& anoon mysti & derknesse fel
den doū on hī / & he zede aboute
& souzte hī pat schulde zyue ho
ond to hī / pān pe proconsul·
whānne he hadde seyn pe dede:
bileuede wondrynge on pe
techyng of pe lord / & whānne
fro paphī poule hadde go bi a
boot· and pei pat weren with
hī: pei camen to pergen of pam
filie / but ioon departide fro hȳ:
& turnede azen to ierusalē / & pei
zeden to pergen: & camen to antio
chie of pisidie / & pei entriden
i to pe synagoge i pe dai of sa
both: & saten / & aft pe redyng of
pe lawe & of profetis pe princis
of pe synagoge senten to hē and
seiden / britheren if ony word of
exortacioū to pe puple is in zou:
seie ze / & poul roos & with hond
bad silence: & seide / men of
israel & ze pat dreden god: here
ze god of pe puple of israel chi
es oure fadris· & enhaūside pe
puple: whānne pei weren comen
lyuyng i pe lond of egipt· & in
an hiz armne he ledde hē out of
it / & bi pe tyme of fourty zer
is· he suffride her maneres in
desert / & he destrupede seuene
folkis i pe loonde of canaan:
& bi lot departide to hem her
loond as aftir foure hundrid
& fifty zeeris / & aftir pese yy
ngy he zaf domesmē to saml
uel pe profete / & fro pat ty
me pei axiden a king / & god
zaf to hem saul pe sone of
cys: a man of pe lynage of
beniamyn· bi fourty zeeris·
& whānne he was doon awey:
he reysede to hē dauid king·

to whom he bare witnessing
& seide/ y haue foundē dauid
pe sone of iesse · a man after
myn herte: which shal do
al myn willis/ of whos seed
bi pe biheeste god hap led
out to iſrael a sauyour ihū:
whanne ioon ꝑchide bifor
pe face of his comyng pe
baptym of penaūce to alle
pe puple of iſrael/ but whi
anne ioon fillide his cours:
he seide/ y am not he: whō
ze demē me to be/ but lo he
comep after me · & y am
not worpi to doon of pe sch
oon of his feet/ britren &
sones of pe kynde of abra
ham · & whiche pt i zou dre
den god: to zou pe word
of helpe is sent/ for pei pt
dwelliden at ierlū & pair
of it · pat knewen not pis
ihū & pe voyces of profe
tis · pat by euy sabot ben
red: demyden & filliden/ and
pei foundē i hym no cause
of deep: & axiden of pilat
pat pei schulden sle hi/ and
whanne pei hadden endid al
le pingis pat were writtē
of hi · pei token hi doun of
pe tree · & leyden hym in a
graue/ & god reyside hi fro
deep i pe pridde dai: which

was seyn bi manyp dayes · to
he pat weenten up to gidir wt
hī fro galilee i to ierlū whi
ch ben til now his witnessis
to pe puple/ & we schewen to
zou pe bihest pat was mad
ad to oure fadris/ for god hap
fulfillid pis to her sonys · i azen
reysid ihū · as i pe secōnde
salme it is writtē/ pou art
my sone to day y bigate pee
& he pt azenreisid hī fro deep
pat he schulde turne azen in
to corupcioū · seide pus/ for y
schal zyue to zou pe hooly tre
we pingis of dauid/ & perfit
& ou an opir stide he seip/ pou
schalt not zyue pin hooly to se
corupcioū/ but dauid in his
gen̄acioū · whanne he hadde
mynistrid to pe wille of god:
diede/ & was leyd whi his fa
dris: & say corupcioū/ but he
whō god reysid fro deep: say
not corupcioū/ for bripen be
it knowē to zou · pat bi hym
remissioū of synnys is told to
zou · fro alle synnys · of whiche
ze myzte not be iustified i pe
lawe of moyses/ in pis ech
man pat bileuep is justified
pfor se ze pat it come not to
zou pat is biforseid in pe pro
fetis ze dispisers se ze and
wondre ze & be ze scatered abro

od: for y worche a werk i zoure
dayes / a werk yat ze schulen
not bilene: if ouy man schal
telle it to zou / & wyfine yei ze
den out: yei ȳfedē yt i ye sabot
tuyngc yei schuldē speke to hē
yese wordis / & wyfine ye synā
gogc was left: many of iewis
is & of comelyngis worschipi
ngc god sueden poul & barna
bas / yat spaken & cousseldeu
hem: yat yei schuldē dwelle i
ye grace of god / & i ye sabot
tuyngc. Almest al ye citee cam
to gidir: to here ye word of
god & iewis sien ye ȳple & &
were fillid wip enuye: & azen
seiden yese ȳngis yat were
seid of poul & blasfemyden /
fane poul & barnabas stidfa
stly seidē to zou it bihofte first
to speke ye word / but for ze
putte it awey & wan demed
zou vnworpi to eūlastinge li
f: lo we turnen to hepē mē
for so ye lord comaūdide us / y
hane sette yee i to liȝt to hepē
mē: yt pou be i to helpe to ye
vttirest of erpe & hepen men
herdē: & iopedē & glorifiden
ye word of ye lord & bileuedē
as many as weren bifor ord
eyned to eūlastinge lif & ye
word of ye lord was sowū bi
al ye cūtre / but ye iewis stiri

den religious wymmen & oneſt
& ye wexpriest mē of ye citee:
& stridē persecucion azens
poul & barnabas & dryuē hem
out of her cūtreys / & yei schy
ken awey i to hem ye doste of
her fete: & camē to yconye / &
ye discyplis were fillid wip io
ye and ye hooly goost

Cap. xiij.

Bi it bifelle at yconye
yat yei entridē to gi
dir i to ye synagoge
of iewis & spaken: so yt ful
greet multitude of iewis &
grekis bileuedē / but ye iew
is yat were vnbileuefful yei
giden persecucioū & stirideu
to wrappe ye soulis of hepē
mē azens ye britren / but ye
lord zaf coone pees / for yei
dwelliden wyche tyme & dideu
trifily i ye lord berynge wit
nessing to ye word of his ȝra-
zynge signes & wondris to
be maad bi ye hoondis of hē /
but ye multitude of ye citee
was departid: & sūm were wyt
ye iewis & sūm wip ye apostlis /
but whan yis was maad an a
saute of ye hepen men and
ye iewis wip her ȝuris to tor
mēten & to stonē hem: yei vn
dirstodē & fledde to gidir to
ye citees of licaonye & listris
& derben & in to al ye cūtre

of God

Abonte · And per ꝑchiden peire
pe gospel: & alle pe multitude was
moued to gidr̃ i pe techyng
of hȳ / poul & barnabas dwellē
at listris / & amā at listris was
lyk i pe feet: & hadde lete crok
id fro his modris wombe wh
ich neu hadde goen / pis herde
poule spekinge / & poule biheld
hī & siȝ pat he hadde feip pat
he schulde be maad saaf: &
seide wip a greet vois / ryse
p̄ up rizt ou pi feet / & he lep
de & walkide / & pe puple whā
ne pei hadde seyn pat ꝑ poul
dide: reridē her vois i lycaon
tīge & seiden / goddis maad
lyk to mē ben comī doū to us /
& pei depidē barnabas mid
& poul mercurp: for he was le
dere of pe word / & pe preest
of mid ꝑ was bifor pe citee:
bronzte boolis & coroūes bi
for pe ȝatis wip puplis · And
wolde haue maad sacrifice /
& whānne pe apostlis barna
bas & poul herden pis: pei tar̃
te her cootis / & pei skipte out
among pe puple: & cridē and
seiden / men what doen ze pis
ping: / & we ben deedly mē lyk
zou: / & schewen to zou / pat ze
ben cōuertid fro pese veyn pi
ngis · to pe lyuyng god pat
maade heuene & erpe & pe see
and al pingis pat ben in hem /
which i generacioūs passid: suf
fride alle folkis to goon i to her
owne weies / & zit he lefte not
hī silf wipout witnessing in
weldoyng · for he zaf reyn
fro heuē · & tymes bernge fr
upt: & fulfilde zoure hertis
wip meete & gladnesse / & pei
seiynge pese pingis: vnepis
swagedeu pe puple pat pei of
friden not to hem / but sum re
wid camē oū fro Antioche &
pompye: & conseridē pe puple
& stonyedē poul: & drowdē out
of pe citee · & gessiden pat he
was deed / but whānne disciplis
weredē comī abonte hī: he rood
& weente i to pe citee / & i pe dai
siynge: he weente forp wip bar
nabas i to derben / & whānne
pei hadden ꝑchid to pe ilke citee ·
& tauzte many: pei turneden
azen to listris & pompye and to
Antioche / confermynge pe sou
lis of disciplis & monestīge: pt
pei schuldē dwelle i feip · and
seiden / pat bi many tribulaci
oūs: it bihoueb us to entre i
to pe kingdom of heuenes / &
whānne pei haddē ordeyned pres
bis to hem bi alle citees: & had
den ꝑied wip fastingis: pei
betoken hem to pe lord i whom
pei bileuedē / & pei passidē per

lichē· and camen to paurfilie/ & pei spaken ye word of ye lord i pergeu: & camen doñ ni to ytalie & fro pēu9 pei weute bi bot to antiochye: fro whēn9 pei weren takñ to ye grace of god i ye werk pat pei fillidē and whāne pei werē comen & hadd eu gaderid ye chirchye: pei teldē hon greet pingis god dide wip hem· & pt he hadde openyde to heyen men ye dore of feip And pei dwelliden not a littil tym e wip ye disciplis

And sūme camen doñ fro iudee· & tauztē bri pen/ pat but ze ben circūcidid aft̄ ye lawe of moy ses: ze moñ not be maad saaf pēr whāne p was maad not a litil discencioñ to poul & bar nabas azen9 hē: pei ordeynedē pat poul & barnabas· & sūme opir of hem shuldē go up to ye apo stlis & prestis ī ierūsalē on pis questi oñ/ & so pei weren led forp of ye chirchye: & passiden bi fenice and samarie/ & pei teldeu ye cōuersaci oñ of heyen men: & pei madeu greet ioye to alle ye bripen/ & whāne pei camen to ierūsalē: pei weren resseyued of ye chirchē & of ye apostlis & of ye elder mē· & teldeu hou greet pingis god dide wip hem/ but sūme of ye eresie of farisees pat bileuedē: risen up & seidē· pat it bihouey hem to be circūcidid: & to kepe also ye lawe of moyses/ & ye apostlis & elder men camen to gidir: to se of pis word/ & whāne p was maad agreet seking here of/ petir rood and seide to hem/ bripren ze witen· pat of elde dayes ī zou: god chee se bi my mouy heyen to here ye word of ye gospel & to bileue/ & god pat knewe hertis bare wit nessing: & zaf to hem ye hooly goost as also to us/ & no ping di ūside bitwix us & hem: & cleusi de ye hertis of hem bi feip/ now pānne what tempten ze god· to putte azok on ye necke of ye disciplis: which ney we neyer oure fadris mizte bere: but bi grace of oure lord ihū crist· we bileuē to be sauued: as also pei/ & alle ye multitude helde pees: & herden barnabas & poul· tel lynge hou greet signes & wond ris god dide bi hem ī heyene mē & aft̄ pat pei helden pees: iames answeride & seide/ bripren here ze me/ symoun teelde hou god visitide first to take of ye peple to his name: & ye lord̄ wordis of profetis accorden to hī/ as it is writtē aft̄ pis p schal turne azen· &

vielde pe tabernacle of dauid
pat felde doñ: & y shal bilde aze
n pe cast doñ pingis ot it / and y
shal reyse it: pt op̃ me̅ seke pe
lord: & alle folkis on whiche my
name is clepid to helpe· pe lord
doynge pis ping seip fro pe wor
ld pe werk of pe lord is knowñ
to pe lord for whych ping y de
me hem pat of hepe̅ me̅ be con
uertid to god: to be not diseisid
but to wrpte to he̅: pat pei abste
yne he̅ fro defoulpingis of mau
mentis· & fro fornycacioñ and
strangild pingis & blood / for mo
yses of elde tymes· hap in alle
cites hem pat ꝑchen hi i synag
gogis: wher̅ bi eche sabot he
is red / pane it pleside to pe apo
stlis & to pe eldre me̅ wip alle pe
chirche: to chese me̅ of he̅· and
sende to antiochie̅ wip poul &
barnabas / judas pat was na
mpd barsabas· & silas pe firste
men among bripen & writen
bi pe handis of he̅ apostlis &
eldre bripen to he̅ pat be̅ at an
tioche & syrie & silice· bripen of
hepene me̅: gretynge for we her
de̅ pat sume wente̅ out fro us·
& troublide̅ zou wip wordis and
turneden vpsodoñ zoure soulis
to whiche me̅ we comañdiden
not: it plesid to us gaderid u
to oon· to chese me̅ & sende to
zou wip oure moost derelbarpe
barnabas & poul / me̅ pat zafe̅
her lyues: for pe name of oure
lord ihū crist / ꝑfor we senten in
judas & silas · & pei shulē telle pe
same pingis to zou bi wordis /
for it is seyn to pe hooly goost &
to us to putte to zou no ping
more of charge pan pese nede
ful pingis: pat ze absteyne zou
fro pe offrid pingis of mau
mentis· & blood strangild & forny
cacioñ fro whiche ze kepinge zou:
shulē do wel fare ze wel / perfor
pei were̅ let go & came̅ doñ to an
tioche: & whanne pe multitude
was gaderid: pei token pe epist
le· whiche whanne pei hadden red:
pei ioyden on pe confort & iudas
& silas· & pei for pei were̅ profe
tis: confortide̅ bripen & confer m
eden wip ful many wordis / but
after pt pei hadden be pere a lit
til while: pei were̅ let to go of
bripen wip pees to hem pat had
den sent hem / but it was seyn
to silas: to dwelle pe / & judas
went aloone to ierlm & poul &
barnabas dwelte̅ at antioche·
techinge & ꝑchinge pe word of
pe lord· wip oper many / but aft
ir̅ sume dayes: poul sende to barn
abas turne we azen & visite bri
pen bi alle cites i whiche we
haue ꝑchid pe word of pe lord:

hon pei hau heu and barnabas
wolde take wip hi toon: p^t was
nemed marku. but poul p^rede
hi· pat he p^t departide fro heu
fro pamfilie· & weute not up^t he
u to pe werk: schulde not be vefe
ued & dissencioũ was maad: so
pat pei departideu atwynny &
barnabas took mark: & cam bi
boot to cipre & poul chees sylas
& weute forp fro pe bripen· &
was bitakũ to pe grace of god·
& he wente bi sirye & cilice· and
coufermyde pe chirche: cõma
ũdinge to kepe pe heestis of a
postlis and elder men

And he cam in to derb
eu & listram and lo
adisciple was peer bi
name timothe pe sone of an
wesse cristen & of pe fadir hepẽ
& bripen pat weren i listris
& conye: zeldide good witnes
sing to hi & poul wolde p^t pis
mã schulde go forp wip hym:
& he took & circũcidide hi· for
ewis pat were i pe placis
for alle wisten: pat his fadir
was hepen whanne pei passi
deu bi citees: pei bitoken to
hẽ to kepe pe techyngis p^t we
ren deuisid of apostlis & elde
mẽ pat weren at ierlũ and
pe chirchis were confermed
i feip & encreseden in noũbre
ech day

And pei passideu
frigie & pe cũtre of galatie:
& weren forbedũ of pe hooly
goost to speke pe word of god
i asie & whanne pei camẽ in to
mysie: pei assaiden to go i to bi
thynye· & pe spirit of ihũ suf
fride not hẽ but whanne pei
haddẽ passid bi mysie: pei
camẽ doũ to troade· & avisioũ
bi nyzt was schewid to poule
but a man of macedonye· pat
stood p^rede hi & seide go pou
i to macedonye & helpe
us & as he hadde say pe visi
oũ: anoon we souzten to go
forp i to macedonye & were
war certeyn pat god hadde
clepid us to p^reche to hẽ & we ze
den bi ship fro troade
& camen to samatracie wip
streizt cours: & pe day suynge
to neapolis & fro pẽn^e to filip
pis· pat is pe firste part of
macedonye· pe cite colonye
& were in pis cite sũme dayes:
& we seten & spaken to
wymmen pat camen to gidir
& a woma lidde bi name a
purpurere of pe cite of tia
tires: worshipinge god

herde / whos herte pe lord openy
de: to zine teinte to pese pingis·
pat weren seid of poul / & whāne
she was baptisid & hir hous:
she pide & seide / if ze han demyd
pat y am feipful to pe lord: entre
ze i to my hous & dwelle / & she
cōstreynede us / & it was doon
whāne we zeden to piev: pat a
damysel pat hadde a spirt of
dyuynacioū mette us: which
zaf greet wynyng to her lordis
i dyuynyng pis suede poul & us:
& criede & seide / pese mē ben ser
uātis of pe hiz god: pat tellē
to zou pe weie of helpe / & pis
she dide ī manȳ dayes / & poul
sore wide & turnede: & seide to
pe spirit / y comāude pee in pe
name of ihū crist pat pou go
out of hir / & he wente out in
pe same our / & pe lordis of hir
sizen pat pe hoope of her wyn
yng wente awaye: & pei to
ken poul & silas & ledden i to
pe doom place to pe princis &
pei brouzten hē to pe magistra
tis: & seidē / pese mē disturblē
oure citee · for pei ben iewis·
& shewē manyfestli which it is
not leueful to us to resseyue
ne̊ do: sipen we ben romayn
us & pe puple & magistratis
rūnen azeyn hem: & whāne
pei hadden tozeint pe cootis
of hem · pei comāndiden hem
to be beten wip zerdis & whāne
pei hadde zouē to hē many wou
dis: pei senten hem i to prisoū &
comāndidē to pe keperis: pt he
shulde kepe hē diligently & whā
ne he hadde take siche apeept · he
putte hē in to pe yner̄ prisoū and
streynede pe feet of hē i stre &
at mydnyzt poul & silas wirshi
piden & herieden god: & pei pat
weren i kepyng · herden hem
& sudenly agreet erpe mouyng
was maad: so pat pe foūdemē
tis of pe prisoū were̊ moued &
anoon alle pe dozis were̊ open
ed: & pe boondis of alle weren
loosid & pe kepere of pe prisoū
was awakid waknd · & siz pe zatis
of pe prisoū opened: and whā
he sword drawē out he wolde
haue slawe hi̊ self · & gessidē pt
pe mē pat weren boūdoū had
den fled / but poul crydede wt
greet voice & seide / do pou no
harm to pi silf: for alle we hē
here / & he axide liȝt & entride:
& tremblide & felle doū to poule
& to silas at her feet / and he
brouzte hem wipout forp: &
seide / lordis what bihoueb
me to do: pt y be maad saaf:
& pei seidē / bileue pou in pe lord
ihū: & pu shalt be saaf & pin
hous / & pei spaken to hi̊ pe

ward of ye lord: why alle þat
were i his hous & he tooke
hem i ye ilk our of ye nyzt: &
waschide her woũdis & he
was baptisid: & al his hous
anoon & whanne he hadde led
hem i to his hous: he settide
to hem a boord & he was glad
wip al his hous: & bileuyde
to god & whanne day was co
me: ye magistratis senten
serieaunts & seidẽ delyuere
þ yo mẽ & pe kepere of pe þ
soñ telde pese wordis to poul:
þat pe magistratis hann sent
þt ze be delyũed now perfor
go ze out: & go ze i pees And
poul seide to hem þei senten
us mẽ of voure i to þ soñ þat
were ỽetũ opynly & vndisp
uyd & now þuely þei brugẽ
us out: not so but comẽ þei:
hem silf & delyũe us out &
deu þ pe serieaunts teel
deu pese wordis to pe magist
ratis & þei dreddẽ: for þei her
dẽ þt þei were romayns And
þei comẽ & bisechidẽ hem And
þei brouztẽ hem out of pe ci
tee & þei zeden out of pe þ soñ:
& entridẽ to lidie & whanne þei
sizẽ bretẽ: þei cõforteidẽ hẽ & zedẽ
And whanne þei ⁊ kep
hadde passid bi amfi
polis & appolonye: þei

& þidẽ þt þei schulden go out

comen to thessolonyk· where
was a synagoge of iewis &
bi custom poul entride to hẽ:
& bi þre sabotis he declaride
to hẽ of scripturis· & openyde
& schewide þat it bihofte crist
to suffre: & vise azen fro deep
& þt þis is ihc crist: whom y telle
to zou & sum of hẽ bileueden:
& were ioyned to poul & to silas
& a greet multitude of hepen
me ỽirschipide god: & noble
wymmen not a fewe but pe
iewis hadden enuye· & token
of pe comyn puple sum yuel
me & whanne þei hadde mand
acupsuny þei moneste pe citee
& þei camẽ to iasons hous &
souzten hem to brynge forp am
ong pe puple & whanne þei
foũden hem not þei drowen
iason & sum bretren to pe þu
ris of pe citee & cryden þt pese
it ben þat monẽ pe world &
hidir þei comẽ: which iason
resseyuede & pese alle doen
azens pe mandemẽtis of pe
emperour: & þei seien þt ihc
is an oþr king & þei moneden
pe puple & pe þuris of pe citee
herige pese þingis & whanne
satisfaccioñ was takũ of iason:
& of oþr þei leten poul & silas
go & whanne þei camẽ þidir
anoon by nyzt bretren leten

silas go in to beroan & whan
ne pei came pidir pei entride
i to pe synagoge of pe iewis
but pese were pe worpier of
he pat be at thessolonyk whych
resseyuede pe word wip al de
sire: ech dai sekinge scripture
is · if pese pingis hadde ben
so & many of he bileuedeu ·
& of hepe wymen onest & mè
not afeibe but whanne pe ie
wis i thessalonyk hadde kno
we · pat also at bero · pe word
of god was preched of poul: pei
came pidir moupge & distrybi
pinge pe multitude & po anoo
wipen delyuede poul: pat he
schulde go to pe see but silas
& tymothe dwelten pere & pei
pat ledde forp poul: ledde hi
to ateues & whanne pei hadde
take a maundement of hi to silas
& to tymothe · pat pei swyftly
pei schulde come to hi: pei wè
ten forp & while poul abood
hem at ateues: his spirit was
as moued i hi · for he saiz pe a
tee zouñ to ydolatrie for he
disputide i pe synagoge wip
pe iewis & wip mè pat wer
schipidè god & in pe doom pla
ce bi alle dayes to hem pat
hem mette; & certeyne epicureis and
stoisens & filosofris disputidè
wip hi & summe seidè what
wole pis lowere ſ of wordis
sein & ope deidè he semep to be
a teller of newe fendis: for
he telde to hè ihū & pe ayenri
singe & pei token & ledden hi
to ariopage & seide mowē we
wite what is pis newe doctry
ne pat is seid of pee: for pou
brynyst ynne certeyne newe pin?
to oure eeris; & for we wolen
wite: what peese pingis wolè
be for alle mè of ateues and
comlyngis herborid zauè tent
to noon oper ping: but ep to seie
ep to here sum newe ping & poul
stood i pe mydel of ariopage
& seide men of ateues bi alle
pingis y se zou as veyn wir
schipers; for y passide & siz
zoure maumetis: & foond an
auter i wych was writen to
pe vnknowen god & pere whidre
ping ze vnknowynge wirschi
pen: pis ping y schal pre-
che to zou; god pat made pe
world · & alle pingis pat ben in
it: pis for he is lord of heuè
& of erpe: dwellip not i tẽplis
maad wip hoond: nep is wir
schipid bi mannis hoondis nep
hap nede of ouy ping: for he
zeuep lijf to alle mè · & breep
inge & alle pingis & maad of
oon alle pe kynde of mè to
enhabite on al pe face of pe erpe ·

dettuynyuge tyuues dzdeyned·
& tuues of ye dwelling of hē
to seke god / if yaraūcture yei
feelen hym hī eyer fynden: po
uh he be not fer fro echo of zou
for ī hym we lyuē & uouē & bē
as also sume of zoure poetis
seidē & we bē also ye kynde of
hī / ffor sipen we ben ye kynde
of god: we shulē not denc yat
godly ping is lyk gold & silū
ep stoon ep to grauyng of cra
ft & pouzt of mā / for god dispi
sip ye tymes of yis vnkūnyg:
& nowe shewip to mē· pat alle
eny where don penaūce / for pt
he hap ordeyned a day· ī wlyche
he shal deme ye worlđ ī equy
te· ī aman ī wlych he ordeyne
de & zaf feip to alle mē: & reis
de hī fro deep / & wlyame pei ha
dden herd ye dzeuriyng of de
ed mē sūme scornedē· & sūme
seiden / we shulē ye eft of yis
ping / so poul we cute out of ye
nyddil of hē / but sūmē drowe
en to hī: & bileuedeu among
wlyche dyonyse ariopagite wa
s and a wōman bi name
damaris· & op mē wip hem
ftir pees pingis poul
zede out of ateneis:
and come to corynth
ie And he foonde a man a kelde
aquyla bi name of ponte bi

kynde· pat late came fro italie
& pris dylle his wif: for pat
claudi⁹ comaūdide alle iewis
to ye departe fro rome / and
he cam to hē / & for he was of
ye same craft: he dwellide
wip hē & wrouzte / & ye were
of roop makeris craft / & he
disputide in ye synagoge
bi echo sabot puttyng pe na
me of ye lord ihū / & he coūseili
de iewis & grekis / & wlyame
silas· & tymothe came fro ma
cydonye: poul zaf bisynesse
to ye word / & witnessidde to ye
iewis: pat ihū is crist / but wlya
me pei azenseidē & blaspheuedē:
he shoke aweie his clopis and
seide to hē / zoure blood be on
zoure heed: y shal be deme
fro hēnȝ forp & shal go to he
pen mē / & he passide fro pē
nes: & entride ī to ye hous
of a man tite bi name pt
worshipide god wlyos hous
was ioyned to ye synagoge
& crispe duce of ye synagoge:
bileuede to ye lord wip al his
hous / & many of ye corynthi
es herdē & bileuedē: & werē
cristenedē / & ye lord seide by
nyzt to poul bi a visiōn / nylle
pou drede: but speke & be
not stille / for y am wip pee:
& no man shal be putt to pee

among

to nope pee: for nyche puple is to
me i pis citee / & he dwellide pere
ayeer & lyf moneth techynge am
ong hem pe word of god / but
whanne gallion was procoulil
of achaie · telde risen up wip
oo wille ayen? poul: & ledden
hi to pe doom & seidē / ayen? pe
lawe: pis counselip mē to wor
shipe god / & whanne poul bigā
to opene his mouy: gallion
seide to pe iewis if pere wer?
ony wickid ping eb evel trec
pas ze iewis · rizthly y shulde
suffre zou · but if questiouns bē
of pe word & of names of zour
lawe: bisee zou self / y wole
not be domesman of pese pyn
gis: & he droof hē fro pe
doom place / & alle token soone
nes pyce of pe synagoge: and
suoten hi bifor pe doom place
& no ping of pese was to charge
ge to gallion / & whanne poul
hadde abidē many dayes: he
seide faire wel to bripren and
yu boot cam to syrye / & pristille
& aquyla camen wip hi whiche
hadden clippid his heed i cencris
for he hadde a vow / & he cam
to effesye & pere he lefte hē /
& he zede yn to pe synagoge:
& disputide wip iewis / and
whanne per pridē pat he shul
de dwelle more tyme: he con
sentide not / but he made fare
wel & seide eft y shal turne
ayen to zou if god wole · & he
wente forp fro effesy / & he cā
doun to cesarie: & he zede up &
grette pe chirche & cam doun
to antioche / & whanne he hadde
dwellid pere sum whyle of tyme
he wente forp walkynge by
ordre pesou pe cuntrey of gala
cie · & frigie · & confermyde alle
pe disciplis / but a iew apollo
bi name · aman of alisandre
of kynde ama eloquent cam to
epheseye: & he was myzti i scrip
turis pis man was taust pe
weie of pe lord: & was fervēt
i spirit & spak · & tauzte diligē
tly po pingis pat were of ihū
& knew oonly pe baptym of
ioon / & pis man bigan to do
trustly i pe synagoge / whom
whanne pristille & aquila herdē:
pei token hi & more diligently
expowneden to hi pe weie of
pe lord / & whanne he wolde go
to acaie: bripren exortidē & wro
tē to pe disciplis · pt pei shuldē
resseyue hi / which whanne he
cām: gat mychel to hē pt bileuedē
for he greetly ouercām iewis: & shew
de openly bi scripturis pt ihū is crist

And it befelle whanne
apollo was at corinthe
pat poul whanne he

hadde go pe hyzer coostis he
cam to efesie & foond sum of dis
ciplis & he seide to hem/ wheper
ze pat bileuē han resseyued
pe hooly goost :/ & pei seiden to
hi/ but nei we han herd: if
pe hooly goost is/ & he seide/
to what ping ben ze bapti
zid/ & pei seidē/ in pe baptym
of ioon/ & poul seide/ ioon bap
tizide pe puple i baptym of pe
amēnce: & tauzte pt pei shulde
bileue in hym/ pat was to com
ynge aftē hi: pt is i ihū/ whā
ne pei herden pese pingis: pei
weren baptizid i pe name of
pe lord ihū/ & whanne poul ha
dde leyd on hem his hoondis:
pe hooly goost cam i hem: &
pei spaken wip langagis and
profeciedē/ & alle weren almest
twelue menē & he zede i to pe
synagoge & spak wip & ful pre
mones dispuityng & trety
ng of pe kingdoome of god/
but whanne sume weren
hardid & bileuedē not & cur
siden pe weie of pe lord bi
fore pe multitude: he zede a
wey fro hem & departide
pe disciplis/ & disputide i pe
scole of cumpzty manē eche da
ie/ pis was don bi twei zee
ris/ so pt alle pt dwelliden i
asie herdē pe word of pe lord·
ielis and hepen men/ and god
dide vertues not smale bi pe ho
ond of poul: so pat on sik menē
pe sudaries weren born fro
his bodie/ & seknessis depar
tiden fro hē: & wicked spiri
tis wentē out/ but also sum
of pe ielis exorcistis zeden a
boute & assaiden to clepe pe
name of pe lord ihū ouer hē
pat hadde yuel spiritis & seidē/
y comure zou bi ihū whom poul
prechip/ & yeue were seuene so
nes of sceue steuene a prince
of prestis: pt didē pis ping/
but pe yuel spirit answeride:
& seide to hē/ y knowe ihū &
y knowe poul: but who ben
ze? & pe man in which was pe
worste deuel·lippide on hē·
& hadde victorie of hem and
was strong azen? hem: pt
pei naked & woundid fleddē
awey fro pt hous/ & pis yy
ng was maad knowūn· to alle
ielis & to hepen men: pt dre
dedē at effesi/ & dreede felle
doū on hē alle: & pe magnyf
fidē pe name of pe lord ihū/
& many menē bileuedē & camē
knowlechynge & telling her
dedis/ & many of hem pt suedē
curious pingis· bronztē to
gidir bookis & brēnedē hem
bifore alle men/ & whanne pe

prynces of po iberen acoūtid: per
foūdīl money of fyfty pouſſand
peus ſo ſtrongly pe ibord of
god ibexide & ibas cōfermyd
& ibhāne pefe pungis ibere fil
lid: poul purpoſide i ſpirit
aft pat macedonye ibas paſ
ſid & acrie to go to ierlū and
ſeide for aftir pt y ſchal be
pere: it bihoueth me to ſe alſo
rome & ſye ſeruȳ to macedonye
tibeyne me pt miniſtriden to
hi tymothe & eraſte: & ſye dwel
lide for atyme i aſie & agreet
troublyng ibas maad in pat
daie: of pe ibeie of pe lord for
amā demetrie bi name a ibor
chere i ſilū · makide ſilū hous
is to dyane · & zaf to craftȳ
me muych wyūyng ibhich he
clepide to gidir hem pat ibe
ren ſiche man iberkmen: &
ſeide me ze ibte: pt of pis
craft ibyūyng is to ns / &
ze ſeen & heren pat pis poul
cōſeilip & turnep awey wp
che puple not oonly of eſeſie.
but almeſt of al aſie & ſeip
pt pei be not goddis pat be
maad wip hoondis / & not
oonly pis part ſchal be in
perel to ns to come i to re
preef: but alſo pe tempil
of pe greet dyan ſchal be a
cōſeid i to nouȝt / ſiȝe and pe
maieſte of hir ſchal bigyne
to be diſtrupd: whō al aſie &
pe world iburſchipip whane
pefe pungis ibere herd: pei
ibere fillid wip ire & crydē
& ſeidē greete is pe dian of
effeſiens: & pe citee ibas fillid
wip cōfuſioū & pei maden an
a ſaint wip oon will i to pe tea
atre & token gayus & ariſtark
mē of macedonye felawis
of poul · & whāne poul ibolde
haue entrid i to pe puple pe
diſciplis ſuffridē not / & alſo
ſū of pe princis of aſie pt ibere
his freendis: ſenten to hi and
pridē pt he ſchulde not ȝyue
hī ſilf i to pe teatre / & opere
mē cridē opir pung / for pe
chirche ibas cōfuſid: & wiſuy
ibiſtē not for ibhat cauſe pei
ibere come to gidir / but of
pe puple pei drowen awey
oon aliſaūdre ibhile iewis
puttidē him forp & aliſaūdre
axide wip his hoond ſilence:
& ibolde ȝelde areſoū to pe pu
ple / & as pei knewen pat he
ibas a iew: oo voiz of alle
mē ibas maad crynge as
bi abeyn ouris / greet dyan
of effeſians / & whāne pe ſcribe
hadde ceeſſide pe puple: he
ſeide / mē of effeſie ibhat
man is he pat knowip not

yat ye cite of effesiáns is ye
wirshipere of greete dyan
& of ye child of wibit þ fell
whanne it may not be azen
seid to yese þingis: it bihoued
zou to be ceelid & to do no þi
ng foliy for ze han brouzt ye
se mẽ neyer sacrilegeris nei
þer blaspheme zoure goddesse þ
if demetrie & ye werk mẽ þ
ben wiþ hi han cause azen
ony mã. þere ben courtis of
domes & iugis: accusen ei
ther oyir if ze seken ouzt of
ouy of þing: it may be allo
þid i ye lawful chirche for
whi we ben in perel to be reþ
ued of þis dayes dissencioũ:
syen no mã is gilty of whom
we moũ zelde reson of þis
cũpyng to gidir & whanne
he hadde seid þis þing he le
te ye puple go

And after ye noyse
ceesside: paul clepi
de ye disciplis & nou
estride hem: & seide fair wel
& he went forp to go i to ma
cedonye & whanne he hadde
walkid bi þo coostis & hadde
nouestride hẽ bi many wor
dis. he cam to greece where
whanne he hadde be pre mo
neþis ye iewis leiden aspies
for hi þat was to saile into
syrie and he hadde coũsel to
turne azen bi macedonye &
sopatir of pirry boroense
folowide hi & of thesaloniceis
aristark & secundus & gayus
derbeus & timothe & asians.
tichicus & trofym þese for þe
went bifore: abiden us at
troade. for we schipide aft
ye dayes of perf loones fro
filippis & camẽ to hẽ at troade
in fyue dayes & in ye firste day
of ye woke whanne we camẽ
to breke breed: paule disputide
wiþ hẽ & schulde go forp in ye
morewe & he drouz along ye
sermoũ til i to mydnyzt & wa
ry lanþis were in ye soler:
where we were gederid to gi
dir & azong wan eutichus bi na
me: satt on ye windowe whã
ne he was fallen in to an heuy
sleep. whyle paul disputide longe.
al slepynge he felle doũ fro ye þrid
de stage & he was takẽ up: and
was brouzt deed. to whom whã
ne paul cam doũ: he lay on hym.
& enclyppide & seide nyle ze be tur
blid for his soule is in hi. And he
went up & brak breed & eete
& spake ynouz vnto ye day. & so
he went forp & þei brouzten
ye child alyue: & þei were con
forted greetly & we wentẽ up
i to a schip: & schipidẽ in to asson.

wher we dwelli
de seuene dayes

to take possessyon/ for so he
hadde disposid to make iourn
ey bi loond/ & whanne he foond
ing ĩ Asson: we token hym & cam
en to nuntiene/ & tro pẽu9 we
schippidẽ in pe date suynge: &
we camẽ Rzeu9 chyñ/ & an oþ
date we hamenpdẽ at samñ:
& in pe date suynge we camẽ
to nuiete/ & poul purposide
to schippe on to efesi: lest ony
tarying wer2 maad to hĩ in Asie
for he hizede · if it were possibul
to hĩ: þat he schulde be ĩ pe da
ie of penteconste at ierlñ/ fro
nuiete he sente to efesi: & cle
pide pe gretteste mẽ of bir pe
of pe chirche/ & whanne per cn
mẽ to hĩ & were to gidir: he
seide to hẽ/ ze witẽ fro pe firste
date ĩ whiche þ cam to Asie:
how wiþ zou bi eche tyme þ
was seruynge to pe lord wiþ
Al meknesse & mylduesse And
teeris & tẽptacoũs yt felde
to me · of aspryngis of ielbis/
how þ wiþ drouhe not of profi
table þingis to zou: yt þ teel
de not to zou & trauzte zou opẽ
ly & bi housis/ & þ witnessyde
to ielbis & to hepẽ mẽ penaũ
ce ĩ to god: & feiþ ĩ to oure lord
ihũ cst/ & now lo þ am bouñdñ
ĩ spirit & go ĩ to ierlñ/ and þ
knowe not what þingis schu

len come to me ĩ it: but yt pe
holi goost bi Alle citees wit
nessiþ to me · & seiþ/ þt boondis
& tribulacoũs at ierlñ Abiden
me/ but y drede no þ ping of pe
se · nei þ y make myn lijf precious
pẽne myn silf/ so þat þ ende myn
cours & pe mynistrie of pe word·
which y resseyuede of pe lord ihũ:
to witnesse pe gospel of pe gra
ce of god/ & now lo þ woot þat
ze schulẽ no more se my face · Alle
ze bi whiche þ passide prchynge
pe kyngdom of god/ wherfor
þ witnesse to zou pis date: þat
þ am clen of pe blood of Alle
mẽ/ ffor þ fleiy not Awei þat þ
telde not to zou Al pe cũsel of
god/ take ze teente to zou & to Al
le pe flocke ĩ which pe holy go
ost hath sett zou bischopis to reu
le pe chirche of god: which he
purchasside wiþ his blood/ þ
woot þat aftir my departing
schuyngge wolues schulẽ entre
ĩ to zou · & spare not pe flock/ &
mẽ speking schewid þingis·
schulẽ vyse of zou silf: þat pei
ledẽ Awei discyplis aftir hem/
for which þing wake ze holdy
nge ĩ mynde: þat bi þre zeer·
nyzt & day y ceesside not wiþ
teeris monestynge eche of zou &
now þ bitake zou to god & to pe
word of his grace: þt is mysti

to edifie & zine eritage in alle
yat ben mand hooly & of no
mā y coueytide silū & gold eyer
clop as zou self wite / for to po
yugis yat were needful to
me & to yese yat ben wip me:
yese hoondis unyminstride / alle
yese yugis y shewide to zou:
for so it bihoueb men trauely
uge to resseyne suyk mē / and
to hane unynde of ye word of
ye lord ihū: for he seide / it is
more blisful to zine pāne to
resseyne / & whāne he had se
id yese yugis: he knelide & he
yede wip alle hem / & greet
wepyng of alle mē wan ma
id / & yei felden on ye necke
of poul: & kissiden hi / & sorowb
de mooste i ye word yt he seide:
for yei shulē no more se his
face / & yei ledde hi to ye shippe

And whāne it was do
on yt we shulde serle
& were passid albey
fro hem: wip streizt cours
we camē to choū · & ye dai
suynge to vodis · & fro pēnē to
patiram · & fro pēnē to mirā
& whāne we foūden a shup
passynge on to fenice we we
ten up i to it: & sayldē forp ·
whāne we aperide to capre:
we leftē it at ye left half &
sayledē in to sirye & camen

to tire / for yere ye shup shulde
be vnchargid & whāne we so
mē disciplis: we dwelliden
yere seuene daiēs / whiche sei
den bi spirit to poul: yt he
shulde not go up to ierusā / &
whāne ye daies were fillid:
we zedē forp / & alle mē wip
wymes & chyldrē leddeu forp
ug wip outē ye citee / & we kne
leden i ye see brynke and we
pydē / & whāne we haddē ma
id fare wel to gidir: we we
ten up i to ye shup / & yei turne
den azen i to her owne placis /
& whāne ye shup saylinge
was fillid fro tyre: we camē
doū to tolomayda / & whāne
we haddē gret wel ye bripē:
we dwelliden oo daye at hem /
& an op daie we zedē forp: and
camē to cesarie / & we entridē
i to ye hous of filip euāngelist
yat was oon of ye seuene: &
dwelliden at hi & to hi weren
foure douztris vgynis yat pro
fecied / & whāne we dwelliden
pere bi fil daies: a profete ag
bus bi name cam doū fro iudee /
& whāne he cā to us: took
ye girdil of poul · & boonde to
gidir his feet & hoondis & seide /
ye hooly goost seip yese yugis /
pus ielwis shulde bynde in
ierlū ye mā whos is pis girdil:

71

and þei schulen bitake ẽ to hepene
mẽn? hoondis/ which þing whã
ne we herden: we þidẽ ꝑ þei þt
weren of þt place þt he schulde
not go up to ierlũ/ þãne poul
answeride: ꝑ seide/ what doen
ȝe weppynge ꝑ turmẽtynge myn
herte;/ for y am redy not oonly
to be boũdũ: but also to die in
ierlũ for þe name of þe lord
ihũ/ ꝑ whãne we myȝtẽ not co
nseile hi: we weren stille ꝑ seidẽ/
þe wille of þe lord be doon/ and
aft' þese daies we weren maad
redy ꝑ wentẽ up to ierlũ/ and
sũme of disciplis camẽ with us
fro cesarie: ꝑ leddẽ with hẽ amã
ason of cipre an elde disciple
at whõ we schuldẽ be herbard/
ꝑ whãne we camẽ to ierlũ: bre
þren resceyuedẽ us wilfully/ ꝑ
in þe dai suynge poul entride wt
us to iames: ꝑ alle þe eldre mẽ
weren gederid/ whiche whãne
he hadde grett: he telde bi alle
þingis· what god hadde don
in hepene mẽ bi þe mynistrie of hi
ꝑ whãne þei herdẽ: þei magny
fiden god ꝑ seidẽ to hi/ brop' þou
seest hou many þousyndis bẽ in
ielbis· þt han bileued to god: ꝑ
alle bẽ louers of þe lawe/ ꝑ
þei herdẽ of þee· þt þou techist
departynge fro moyses· of vilk
ielbis þat ben bi hepene mẽ· þat

seiẽ/ þat þei owen not to circũ
cide her sonȝ: nep' owen to en
tre bi custom/ þãne what is:
it bihoueþ þat þe multitude
come to gidir/ for þei schulen
here: þat þou art come come/
þãne do þi þis þing: þt we seiẽ
to þee· þ ben to us foure mẽ·
þat haue a vowe on hẽ/ take
þi þese mẽ: ꝑ halowe þee with
hem/ houge on hẽ þat þei schã
ne her hoondis/ ꝑ þt alle men
wite: þt þe þingis þt þei her
den of þee be falle/ but þat
þou walkist ꝑ þi silf kepist
þe lawe/ but of þese þat bile
euen of hepene mẽ· we writen
demynge: þat þei abstey
ne hẽ fro þing offrid to idols
ꝑ fro blood ꝑ also fro strangld
þing ꝑ fro fornycacioũ/ þãne
poul took þee mẽ ꝑ in þe dai
suynge he was purified with
hem: ꝑ entride ĩ to þe tẽple/
ꝑ schewide þe fillyng of daies
of purifiyng: til þe offrynge
was offerid for ech of hem
ꝑ whãne seuene daies weren
endid: þe ielbis þt weren of
asie· whãne þei sayen hi in þe
tẽple· stirideẽ alle þe puple· ꝑ
leyden hoondis on hi· ꝑ crydẽ
men of isrl helpe ȝe us/ þis is
þe mã þt ayenȝ þe puple ꝑ þe
lawe ꝑ þis place techiþ euy

where alle men/ mete on & hap led hepen mē in to pe te mple: & hap defoulid pis ho ly place/ for pei seien trofym? of efesi i pe citee wt hi: whom pei gelidē pt paul hadde bro ugt i to pe tēple/ & alle pe citee was mouyd: & ri?ēpuge to gidir of pe puple was made/ & pei token paul & drowen hi out of pe tēple: & anoon pe zat is weren closid/ & whanne pei souzte to sle hi: it was teeld to pe tribune of pe cūpany of knyztis · pt al ierlūm is cōfoūdid which anoon took knyztis and cēturiens: & ran to hē & whā ne pei hadde seen pe tribune & pe knyztis · pei ceesside to smyte paul pānne pe tribune cam & cauzte hi: & comaūdide pat he were boūdin with thre chaynes/ & axide who he was: & what he hadde don/ but op cryedē op pinis among pe pu ple/ & whanne he myzte knowe no certeyntee for pe noyse: he comaūdide hi to be led in to pe castels/ & whanne paul cā to pe grees · it bifel pt he was borē of knyztis for strengpe of pe puple/ for pe multitude of puple suyde hi: & dede take hi awey/ & whanne paul bigā to be led i to pe castels: he sei de to pe tribune wheper it is leueful to me: to speke ony pig to pee/ & he seide/ canst p̄ greek: wheper pou art not pe egipcian· which bifore pese dayes mouedist stoyle: & leddist out i to pe desert foure powsynd of mē mencleuris: & paul seide to hi/ for y am a man of tharse of cilicie a citee vnknowen/ & y bē pee: suffre me to speke to pe puple/ & whanne he suffride: paul stood i pe grees · & bekenede with pe hoond to pe puple/ & whanne gret silence was maad: he spak i ebrew tunge & seide

C. xxij.

Britheren & fadris: here ze what resoū y zelde now to zou/ & whanne pei hadden herd pt i ebrew tunge he spak to hē: pei zauē pe more silence/ & he seide/ y am a man of tharse of cilicie nurischid & i pis citee bisidis pe feet of gamaliel taust bi pe treupe of fadris lawe alo myer of pe lawe: as also ze alle be to day/ & y pursuyde pis weie til to pe deep: bynd ynge & bitakynge i to holdis mē & wymmē/ as pe prest of pis zeldip witnessing to me· & alle pe grettest of birp/ of whom also y took pistlis to

brygen: and weren to damask
to brynge fro pēm mē boñon n
to ierlū: pat pei shuldē be pey
ned/ & it was doon whyle y zede
& neyzide to damask: at mydday
pe sudenly fro heuene a gret
pleute of lizt shon abonte me
& y felde doñ to pe erpe: & herde
a voys fro heuene seyinge to me
saul saul what pursuest p̄ me:
it is hard to pee to kepe azens
pe pricke/ & y answeride who
art p̄ lord/ & he seide to me/ y
am ihū of nazareth: whom
pou pursuest/ & pei pt were
wip me: sien but pe lizt but pei
herden not pe voys of hī: pat
spak wip me & y seide/ lord wh
at shal y do/ & pe lord seide to
me/ rise pou & go to damask:
& peve it shal be seid to pee
of alle pīngis whiche it bihon
ep pee to do/ & whanne y saie n
ot for pe clerete of pt lizt: y
was led bi pe hond of feloȝ
is & y cam in to damask/ & an
an ananye pt bi pe lawe had
de wytnessing of alle iewis
dwellinge i damask: cam to
me & stood nyz· & seide to me/
saul brop biholde/ & y in pe
same our biheld i to hī/ & he
seide/ god of oure fadris hap
bifor ordeyned pee: pat pou
shuldest knowe pe wille of
hym and shuldest se pe riztful
man & here pe vois of his moup
for p̄ shalt be his witnesse to
alle mē of po pingis: pat pou
hast seyn & herd/ & now whyat
dwellist pou: rise up & be bap
tisid & waische awey pi synn bi
pe name of hī clepid to help/
& it was doon to me as y turnyde
azen i to ierlū & preide i pe tēple:
pat y was maad i a rauyshing
of soule/ & y siz hī seiyinge to me/
hize p̄ & go out faste of ierlū:
for pei shulē not resseyue pi wit
nessing of me/ & y seide/ lord pei
witē pt y was closinge to gryr
i to ploñ· & betynge bi synagog
gis: heu pt bileuedē i to pee/ &
whanne pe blood of steuene pi
witnesse was shed out: y sto
od nyz & cōsentide & kepte pe
clopis of mē pat slowen hī/
& he seide to me/ go p̄ for for y
shal sende pee fer to nacions/
& pei herden hī til pis word: &
pei reisdē her voys & seidē/ take
awey fro pe erpe sich a man
nā/ for it is not leueful: pt he
lyue/ & whanne pei cōden & kestē
awey her clopis· & pei wē dust
i to pe eyr: pe tribune comaūdi
de hī to be led i to castels· & to
be betū with scourgis· & to be
turmētid: pt he wiste for wh
at cause pei cōden so to hī/ and

wh̄ne per hadden boũdñ hym
wip wordis: poul seide to Cen
turien stondinge nyz to hym
whey it is leueful to zou to
scourge a romayn & vndampn
ned: & whanne pis pyng was
herd: pe centurien weute to
pe tribune & telde to hi & seide/
whast art p' to doynge: for
pis man is Cateleyn of rome/
& pe tribune cam nyz: & seide to
hi/ seie p' to me whepe p' art
a romayn: & he seide/ ye & pe
tribune answerde/ y wip mychc
sũme gat pis fredom/ & poul
seide/ & y was born Cateleyn
of rome/ pfor anoon per pat
shulde haue turmẽted hym:
departide alpey fro hi/ & pe
tribune dredde· after pat he
wiste pt he was Cateleyn of
rome: & for he hadde boũdñ hi
but i pe daie suynge· he wolde
wite more diligẽtli for what
cause he were of pe iewis· &
vnboonde hi/ & comaũdide pl
tis & al pe cõsel: to come to
gidir/ & he brouzte forp poul
& sette hym among hem
ud poul bihelde in to
pe cõsel: & seide/ bri
per y wip al good con
sience haue lyued bifor god:
til i to pis daie/ & anampe pn
ce of pstis: comaũdide to mẽ
pat stoden nyz hym pat per sch
nidẽ smyte his mouy/ pãne
poul seide to hi/ pou whitid wal
god smyte pee/ pou sittist and
demyst me bi pe lawe: & azen
pe lawe pou comaũdist me to
be smytñ/ & per pt stoden nyz:
seidẽ/ curssist p' pe hizest pst of
god: & poul seide/ bretren y wiste
not: pt he is pnce of pstis/ for
it is writñ/ pou schalt not cur
se pe pnce of pi puple/ but poul
wiste pat oo parti was of sadu
cẽis· & pe op of fariseis: & he cride
i pe cõsel/ bretren y am a farisee·
pe sone of farisẽis: y am demed
of pe hope & of azenrisyng of
deed mẽ/ & whanne he hadde seid
pis pyng: dissencioñ was ma
d bitwixe pe fariseis & pe sa
duceis· & pe multitude was de
partid/ for sadduceis seien pt no
risyng azen of deed mẽ is· ne
aũgel ne spirit/ but fariseis
knowlechen eiper/ & a greet cry
was maad: & sũme of fariseis
roseu up· & fouzten seiynge/ we
fyndẽ no pyng of yuel i pis man/
whast if a spirit ep an aũgel sp
ak to hi: & whanne greet discen
cioñ was maad: pe tribune dred
de lest poul schulde be to drawñ
of hem/ & he comaũdide knyztis
to go doñ: & to take hi fro pe
myddil of hem· & to lede hi in to

castels and in pe nyzt sayinge: pe
lord stood nyz to hi & seide/ be pou
stedfast/ for as þ' hast witnessid
of me i ierlm: so it bihoued pee
to witnesse also at rome/ And
wh̃ne pe day was come: sum̃e
of pe ielwis gadiredè hè & maden
avow & seidè/ þt pei shuldè neþ
eete ne drynke: til pei slowen
poul/ & þe were mo þan fourty
mè þt maden pis conspiracie to
gidir/ & pei wentè to pe princis
of þ'ists & elder mè & seidè/ wip
deuocioñ we han avowid þat
we shulè not taste ouy þing:
til we sleen poul/ now þfore ma
ke ze knowñ to pe tribune wip
pe counsel: þt he bringe hi forp
to zou as if ze shuldè knowe
sum̃e þing moore certeynly of
hi & we ben redi to sle hi: bifo
re þt he come/ & wh̃ne pe sone
of poulis sist' hadde herd pe
aspies: he cam & entride i to pe
castels · & telde to poul & poul de
pide to hi oon of pe centurieus
& seide/ lede pis zonge m̃ to
pe tribune: for he hap sum̃e þing
to shewe to hi/ & he took hi: &
ledde to pe tribune: & seide/ poul
þt is bondi prisoner me: to lede
to pee pis zonge m̃. þt hap si
me þing to speke to pee/ & pe
tribune took his hoond: & wẽte
wip hi aside half & axide hi/
wh̃at þing is it þat pou hast
to shewe to me: & he seide/ pe
ielwis ben acordid to þe pee· þt
to morewe pou bringe forp poul
i to pe counsel: as if pei shuldè
enquere sum̃ þing more certeynly
of hi/ but bileue þ' not to hem
for mo þan fourty mè of hem
aspien hi: wh̃iche han avowid
þt pei shulè not eete neþ dryn
ke· til pei sleen hi & now pei be
redi abidinge pi biheest/ þfore pe
tribune lefte pe zonge m̃: & com
m̃ide þat he shulde speke to
no m̃· þt he hadde maad pese
þingis knowñ to hi/ & he dep
ide to gidir tweyn centuriens: &
he seide to hẽ/ make ze redi twey
hũdrid knyztis: þt pei go to cesa
rie/ & hors mè seuenty & spere
mè tweyn hũdrid: fro pe pridde
our of nyzt/ & make ze redy
hors for poul to ryde on to le
de hi saff to felix pe þ'ident/
for pe tribune dredde lest pe
ielwis wolden take hi wh pe weye
& sle hi: & aft'ward he myzte
be chalengid as he hadde take
money & wroot hi epistle:
conteynynge pese þingis/ clau
dius lisias · to pe veste felix
þ'ident: heelpe/ pis m̃ pat
was take of pe ielwis & wolde
to be slayn: y cam̃ up on hẽ
wip myn oost & delyueride

him fro hem whanne pt ne
pt he was aromapn/ & pt whol
de write pe ranke. which pei
puttide azens hi: & pt ledde hi
to pe counsel of hé/ & pt foond pt
he was accusid of questiouns
ac hey lawe/ but he hadde no
crpme worpi pe deep eþ boo
nds/ & whanne it was teeld
me of pe alyes pt pei aryaid
en for hi: pt sente hi to pee/ &
pt warnede also pe accusaris:
pt pei seie at pee fiire wel/ &
so pe knyztis as pei weren com
aundid token poul: & ledde hi
bi nyzt i to antipatriden/ & i
pe day suynge whanne pe hors
mé weren left pt schulde go wt
hi: pei turneden azen to pe cas
tels/ & whanne pei camé to cesa
rie. pei token pe pistle to pe pri
dent. & pei setten also poul
bifor hi/ & whanne he hadde rad
& aside of what prouynce he
was. & knewe pt he was of ci
licie: pt schal here pee he seide.
whanne pin accusers comé &
he comaundide hi to be kept i
pe moot hal of eroude

And aftir fyue daies
ananaye pnce of pris
cam doun wip sume el
dere men. & terculle aseir spe
kere: whiche weenté to pe pri
dent azens poul & whanne po
ul was comened: terculle bigá
to accuse hi & seide/ whanne t my
chi pees we doon bi pee. & many
pingis bé amendid bi pi wisdom:
eu moor & euy where pon beest
felix we han resseyued wip
alle doyng of pankingis/ but
lest y tarie pe lenger: y þyne pee
schortly. here us for pi meekn
esse/ we han foundn pis wicchid
man stirynge dissencioun to alle
iewis pt al pe world: & auctour of
dissencioun of pe secte of nazaren?
& he also enforside to defoule pe tep
le/ whom also we token & wolden
deme aftir oure lawe/ but lili
as pe tribune cam wip gret stre
ngpe aboue: & delyueride hi fro
oure hondis/ & comaundide his
accusers: to come to pee/ of
whom pt demynge maist knowe
of alle pese pingis: of whiche
we accusen hi/ & iewis puttén
to & seidé: pat pese pingis had
den hem so And poul answe
ride: whanne pe prident gra
tide hi to seie/ of many zeeris
y knowe pee pt pon art domes
man to pis folk: & y schal do y
nouzt for me wip good resoun/
for pt maist knowe. for to me
bé not moze pan twelue daies:
sipen y cam up to worschipe
i ierlm/ & nei i pe tenple pei
foundn me disputynge wt ony

man nep̄ makynge couenaūt of
pupple nep̄ i synagogis nep̄ i cite
nep̄ pei moū prene to pee of pe
whiche pingis pei now accusen
me/ but y knowleche to pe pis
ping· pt aftir pe secte which
pei seien ereſie: so y serue to
god pe fadir/ & y bileue to alle
pingis pt ben writtī ī pe la
we & pfetis/ & y haue hoope
ī god: whiche also pei hē self
abidē pe azenrisyng to comy
nge of iust mē & wicked/ in
pis ping y studie wip outen
hirtyng· to haue conscience to
god & to mē euermore/ but aft
many zeeris· y cam to do alm
es deedis to my folk & offrīng
is & anothis: ī which pei foū
dīn me purified ī pe tēple: not
wip company nep̄ wip noyse/ &
pei cauztē me & pei ēdē & seiden
take awey oure enmye/ & sinne
ſeruis of alle whiche it bihofte
to be noly pfetit at pee· & actu
se if pei hadde ony ping azens
me/ ey pese hē silf seie if pei fo
nden ī me ony ping of wicked
nesse: sipen y stoode ī pe cōi
sel/ but onely of pis voīs: bi
which y ēde stondynge among
hē/ for of pe azenrisyng of de
ed mē: y am demyd pis dai of
zou/ lopely felix delayede hē:
& knewe moost certenly of
pe wey· and seide/ whanne liſias
pe tribune shal come doū: y shal
here zou/ & he comaūdide to acu
tureūn to kepe hī & pt he hadde
reste: nep̄ to forbede ony mā to
mynistre of his owne pingis
to hī/ & aftir fiue dayes· felix
cam wip drusille his wif pt
was a iewesse: & clepide poul &
herde of hī pe feip ī pt is ī crist
ihū/ & while he disputide of
rigtwisnesse & chastite & of do
me to comynge: felix was ma
d trēblynge & answeride/ pat
perteynep̄ nowe go: but ī tyme
conuenable y shal clepe pee/ also
he hopide: pat money schulde
be zouī to hī of poul/ for which
ping eft he clepide hī: & spake
wip hī/ & whanne tweyne zeeris
weren fillid: felix took a iuge
cessour porcius festus/ & felix
wolde zyue grace to iewis:
and lefte poul bouīdī
Therfor whanne festus cam
ī to pe prouynce aftir pe
thridde dai: he wente up
to ierlm fro cesarie/ & pe
princis of prestis & pe worpiestis
of iewis wentē to hī azen?
poul: & pidē hī & asidē grace
azen? hī/ pat he schulde wole
nide hī to be led to ierlm· and
pei settidē aspies to sle hī in
pe weie/ but festus answeride:

pat poul shulde be kept i cesarie/
sopely pt he hi silf shulde procede
more auisily/ pfor he seide/ pei
pt i3on ben myzty: come doñ
to gidde/ & if ony crymne is i pe
mañ: Accuse pei hi/ & he dispellide
among hẽ no more pan eizte
op ten daies: & cam doñ to cesa
rie/ & pe top daie he sat for do
melmañ: & comaundide poul to
be brouzt/ & whañe he was
brouzt forp: pelpis stodẽ abou
te hi whiche camẽ doñ fro ie
rusalẽ/ puttynge azenes hym
many & greuous cauliõ: whi
che pei myztẽ not pne/ for poul
zeldide reson i alle pingis pt
nep azenp pe lawe of pe ielp
is nep azenes pe tẽple· neper
azenes pe emperoure y cyne
de ony ping/ but festus wol
de do grace to pe iewis: & ans
weride to poul· & seide/ wolt
p' go up to ierlm: & pe be de
mydde of pese pingis bifor
me/ & poul seide/ at pe dome
place of pe emperour y stonde:
whep it bihoueth me to be dem
pd/ y hane not noyed pe iewis:
as p' knowest wel/ for if y ha
ue noied· ep don ony ping
worpi deep: y forsake not to die
but if no ping of po is· pt pei
accusẽ me: no mañ may zeue
me to hẽ: y appele to pe empe
rour/ pane festus spak: with pe
counsel: & answerde/ to pe em
perour p' hast appelid: to pe em
perour p' shalt go/ & whañe
fyi daies were passid: agrippa
king & berouice camẽ doñ to
cesarie to welcome festus/ &
whañe pei dwelliden pere ma
ny daies: festus shewide to pe
king of poul· & seide/ a man is
left bondñ of felix· of whych
whañe y was at ierlm: pan
of pistis & pe eldere mẽ of iew
is camẽ to me· & axiden dampna
cioñ azens hi/ to whiche y ans
weride/ pat it is not custom
to romayns to dañpne ony m
an: bifor pt he pat is accusid
haue his accusaris present· and
take place of defendyng to put
awey pe crymes pt ben put
azen hi/ pfor whañe pei cam
en to gidiw: whi ontẽ ony de
laye i pe daie suyinge· y sat
for domelmañ· & comaundide pe
mañ to be brouzt/ & whañe his
accusaris stoden: pei seiden no
cause· of whiche pingis y had
de suspicioñ of yuel/ but pei
hadden azens hi sum questiouñs
of her veyn worshipping· &
of oon ihñ deed· whom poul af
fermyde to lyue/ & y doutide
of such manr questioñ· & seide/
whep he wolde go to ierlm· &

Iudei

pere to be demyd of pese pinges
bint for pom Appelide pt he shuld
be kept to pe knowinge of pe em
perour: p comaūdide hī to be
kept · til p sende hī to pe emper
our / & Agrippa seide to festus /
y my silf wolde here pe mā / &
he seide · to morowe p' shalt he
re hī / & on pe top' dai wbanne
Agrippa & bernyce came wt
great delire / & entride in to pe
auditurie with tribunes & pe pn
cipal mē of pe citee: wbanne
festus badd · pom was brouzt /
& festus seide / king Agrippa &
alle mē pt bē wt us: ze seen pis
mā of wbich al pe multitude
of iewis prede me at ierlū / &
Aside & zede / pt he shulde lyue
no lenger / but p fond pt he
hadde doon no ping worpi of
dep / & y deme to sende hym to
pe emperour: for he Appelide
pis pig / of wbich mā: p haue
not certeyne wbat pig y shal
write to pe lord / for wbich pig
y brouzte hī to zou · & moost to
pe king Agrippa: pt wbanne
Axing is made · y haue wbat y
shal write / for it is ley' to me if
ont reson: to sende a bond mā
& not to signifie pe cause of hī
nd Agrippa seide to
pom / it is suffrid to
yee: to speke for pi
self / pānne pom lyelde hī
nd: & bigan to zelde reson of alle
pinges ī wbiche y am accusid of
pe iewis / p' king Agrippa y gel
se me wel'cid at pee: wbanne y
shal defende me pis dai / no
oft for p' knowest alle pinges
p' ben at among iewis: custo
mes & questiōs / for wbich ping
y biseche: here me pacientli /
ffor alle iewis pt bifor knewe
me fro pe bigynnyng knowe
my lyf fro zongpe · pt fro pe
bigynnyng was ī my folk in
ierlū · if pei wolde bere wit
nesse: pt bi pe moost certeyn
secte of oure religiō · y lyuyde
a Farisee / & now for pe hope of
reprouisciō pt is maad to
oure fadris of god: y stoonde
suget ī doom · ī wbiche hope
oure twelue lynagis seruyng
nyzt & dai hopen to come / of
wbiche hope · sir king y am
accusid of pe iewis / wbat
vnbileeful ping is demed at
zou: if god reisip deed mē; &
sopely y gesside pt y ouzte do ma
ny cōtrarie pinges azens pe na
me of ihū nazarene / wbich pig
silo y dide ī ierlū / & y enclosid
many of seyntis ī pisoū: wbā
me y hadde take power of pe
princis of prestis / & wbanne pei be
ren slayn: y brouzte pe sentēce /

pon

C. xxv.

And bi alle synagogis ofte y
punyshide hē: & cōstreynede
to blaspheme/ & more y was
wood azeū hem: & pursuede
i to alien cites/ in which ye
while y went to damask wt
power & leuere of þnces of
þstis: at mydday i ye weie y
saw sir king yt fro heuene list
shynede abonte me passinge ye
shynīge of ye sunne· & abonte
hē yt were wt me/ &
when we alle hadde falle doū
i to ye erpe: y herde a voys sei
ynge to me i ebreus tonge/ saul
saul what pursuest þ' me:/ & y
seide who art þ' lord/ & ye lord
seide/ y am ihc who þ' pursu
est/ but rise up & stond on pi
feet/ ffor whi to þis pnig y ap
perede to pee: yt y ordeyne pee
mynistre & witnesse of po þīg
is yt pou hast seyn· & of po īn
which y shal shewe to pee/
& y shal delyure pee fro puplis
& folkis to which now y sende
pee· to opene ye izen of hem:
yt þei conuertid fro derknesse
to lizt/ & fro power of sathan
as to god: yt þei take remissi
oū of synn· & part among se
yntis bi feip yat is i me/ wher
for sir king agrippa· y was
not vnbileuefful to ye heuenly
visiōn/ but y tolde to hē yt bē
at damask first & at ierlm & bi
al ye cūtre of iude & to hepene
me: yt þei shulde do penaūce·
& be cōuertid to god: & do worpi
werkis of penaūce/ for þis
cause ielwis token me: whanne
y was i ye tēple· to slen me/ but
y was holpyn bi ye help of
god & to þis dai: & stonde wit
nessinge to lesse & to more/ & y
seie no þing ellis: þanne which
þingis ye prophetis & moises spa
ken yat shulē come/ if crist is to
suffre· if he is ye firste of ye
azenrisyng of deed mē· yt shal
shewe lizt to ye puple & to he
pene me/ whanne he spak pese
þingis· & zeldide reson: festus
seide wip greet voys/ poul þ'
maddest/ many letteris turnē pee to woodnesse/ & poul
seide/ y madde not þ' beeste
festus: but y spekē out pe wor
dis of treupe & of sobernesse/
for also ye king to whō y speke
frēdfastly: woot of pese þīgis/
for y deme yt no þing of pese
his hid fro hī/ for nei ī a cor
nere: was out of pese þingis
don/ bileuest þ' king agrippa
to profetis: y woot yt pou
bileuest/ & agrippa seide to
poul/ in litil þing pou counselist
me to be maad a cristene man/
& poul seide/ y desire anentis

god hope in litil And in greet
not oonely pee· but alle pese pt
herein to dwelle to be mARd sich As
y am: out takñ pese woondris
& pe king woos up· & pe pñcet
& beronyke: & pei pat satẽ nyz
to hẽ/ & whÀne pei weren a
wey/ pei spaken to gidre & seidẽ/
pat pis mã hap not doon ouy
ying waxpi deep: nep woondris
& agrippa seide to festus/ pis
mã myzte be delyuyed: if he ha
dde not appelid te pe ẽperour
[illegible]nt As it was demyd
hi to shippe i to ytalie:
pei bitoken poul wip
oyir keperis to A centurien
bi name iulius of pe cũpeny
of kaysris of pe emperour·
& we wenten up i to pe ship
of Adrymetis & bigunnen to
seile: & were ẽ hozũ Aboute pe
places of Asie· whyle Aristark
of macedoyne te ssalonycẽce
dwellide stille wip us/ & in
pe day suyng we camen to
sydon/ & iulius tretide cur
teisly poul: & suffride to go to
freendis & do his nedis/ And
whÀne we remoonede fro
pẽnt: we vndirsailedẽ to cy
pre· for pt wyndis weren
contrarie/ & we seildẽ in pe
see of silicie & pamfilie: And
camẽ to listris pt is lycie/ &

were pe centurien foond A ship
of Alisaũdre seilyng i to ytalie:
& pinttide us oñ i to it/ & whÀne
i many dayes we seildẽ slowly·
& vnepe camẽ Azens gnydõ· for
pe wynde lettide us: we seildẽ
to crete bisidis salamona/ And
vnepe we seildẽ bisidis & camẽ
i to A place pt is clepid of good
hauene· to whos pe citee tessala
was nyz/ & whÀne myche tyme
was passid· & whÀne seilyng
pÀne was not siker· for pat
fastyng was passid: poule cõ
fortide hem & seide to hẽ/ men
y se pt seilyng bigynnep to be
wip wrong & myche harm·
not only of charge & of pe ship
but Also of oure lyues/ but pe
centurie bileuyde more to pe
gouernour· & to pe lord of pe shi
pAn to pese pingis pt were
seid of poul/ & whÀne pe hauene
ne was not able· to dwelle in
wyntr: ful many ordeyneden
cõseil· to seile fro pẽnt/ if on
ony man pei myzte come to
fenyce: to dwelle i wyntr At
pe hauene of crete which bi
holdip to Affrik· & to chozũ·
whÀne pe sowp blew: pei gessi
den hem to holde purpos/ &
whÀne pei hadde remoued
fro Assou: pei seildẽ to crete/
& not Aftir myche· pe wynd

nfonyk pat is clepid nacthcest:
was ageus it/ & whan ye ship
was vanyshid· & myzte not en
forse ageins ye wynd· whan
ye ship was zomn to ye blowyn
gis of ye wynd/ we weren bacn
wip cours i to an yle pat is cle
pid canda: & vnepe we mpzten
gete alitil boot/ & whan pis
was takn up pei vsedo helpis:
girdynge to gidre pe ship and
dreddeu left pei shuldē falle i
to sondy placis/ & whan pe
vessel was vndir sett: so pei w
eren bacn/ & for we weren pro
wen wip stroong tepest: i pe
day suynge pei maden castyng
out/ & pe pridde daie: wip her
hoondis pei castiden awey pe
instrumentis of pe ship/ and
whan pe sunne nep pe steveris
weren seie vi many daies· &
tepest not alitil neizide: now
al pe hope of oure helpe was
doon awey/ & whan unpche
fastynge hadde we: pan poul
stood i pe myddil of hē & side/
a meu it bihofte whan ze her
den me not to haue take awey
pe shippe fro crete: & gete pis
wrongе & castyng out/ & now
y warne zou to be of good cou
fort/ for los of no persoone of
zou shal be outakn of pe shi
ppe/ for an aungel of god· wh
os y am and to whom y serue:
stood nyz to me i pis nyzt & seide)
poul dreede pu nouzt: it bihoueb
pee to stoonde bifore pe emperō/
& lo god hab zouē to pee· alle pat
bē in pe ship wip pee/ for which
ping ze mē beze of good cōfort/
for y bileue to my god: pat so
it shal be as it is seid to me/ &
it bihoueb us to come i to sū
ile/ but afturward pt i pe four
tenpe daie pe nyzt cam on us
seilynge i pe stoup see: about
nyddnyzt pe shipmē supposidē·
sū cūtre to apere to hē/ & pei sel
ten doūn aplōmet: & foūden tw
eutī pais of depnesse/ & aftir
alitil· pei weren departid fro
pēnē & foūdē fifteu pais/ &
pei dredden left we shulden
haue falle i to sharp placis:
& fro pe laste party of pe ship
pei seutē foure ankeris & desi
ridē pt pe day hadde be come/
& whan pe shipmē soustеu
to fle fro pe ship· whan pei
hadden sent alittil boot into
pe see vndir colour as pei shul
dē bigynne to strecche forp pe an
keris fro pe forme part of pe
ship: poul seide to pe centurie
& to pe knyztis/ but pese dwellē
i pe ship: ze moun not be maad
saf/ pan knyztis kittiden
awey pe cordis of pe littil

boot: And suffriden it to falle a
wey / & whanne pe day was come.
poul preide alle me to take mete
& seide / pe fourtenpe day pis
day ze abide & dwelle fastyng.
& take no ping wherfore zoure
helpe: for of noon of zou pe her
er of pe heed shal perishe / &
whanne he hadde seid pese pin
gris: poul took breed & dide
pankyng to god i pe siht of
alle me / & whanne he hadde
broken: he bigan to eete / & alle
were maad of bet coufort:
& pei token mete / & we were
alle me i pe ship: two hundrid
seuenty & sixe / & pei were fill
id with mete: & diskargiden
pe ship & casten whete in to
pe see / & whanne pe day was
come: pei knewe no lond /
& pei biheelden an hauene pt
hadde a wat bank: i to wh
ch pei ponzte if pei muzte to
bringe up pe ship / & whanne
pei hadde take up pe ankeris:
pei bitoken hem to pe see. & slaki
den to gidir pe ioynturis of
gouernayls / & rerd a litil seil lift
up: bi blowyng of pe wynd
pei weren to pe bank / & wh
ne we felde in to a place of gr
uel gon al aboute with pe see:
pei hurtlide pe ship / & whanne
pe former part was fastned

y pie zou to take mete for

it dwelide vnmouable: And pe
laste part was broken of strengpe
of pe see / & counsel of pe knyztis
was: to sle me pt were i warde
lest ony schulde ascape: whanne
he hadde chosen out but pe
centurien wolde kepe poul: &
forbeed it to be don / he comaun
dide hem pat mizte swymme:
to go i to pe see & schape. & go
out to pe lond / & pei bare hime
self on boordis sume on pe pis
pt were of pe ship / & so it was
doon: pt alle me ascapiden to pe lond
And whanne we hadde
ascapid: panne we knewen
wen pt pe ile was
clepid mylitene / & pe heepene
men didden to us not litil curte
sie / & whanne aren was kyndle
lid: pei refreischiden us alle for
pe reyn pt cam & pe wold / but
whanne poul hadde gedrid a
quantite of kittyngis of vynes
& leide on pe fier: An eddre sche
cam forp fro pe heete & tokc
hi bi pe hoond & whanne pe he
pen me of pe ile sizen pe beest
hangyng i his hoond: pei seide
to gidir / for pis man is sum
queller / & whanne he ascapide
fro pe see: goddis veniaunce suf
frip hi not to lyue i erpe / but
he schoke awey pe beest i to pe
fier: & hadde noon harm / And

pei gelliden pat he shulde be
turned i to swellyng: & falle
doñ sudenly & die/ but whãne
pei abidẽ longe & sien pt no pnig
of yuel was don ī him: pei tur
nedẽ hem to gidir & seidẽ pt he
was god/ & i po placis wherẽ ma
neris of pe þnce of pe ple-pu
plins bi name-which ressepu
ede us bi pre daies benygnly
& hond us/ & it bifel pt pe fadir
of pnplins lay travelid with
feneris & blody flux/ to whom
poul entride-& whãne he had
de þied-& leyd his hoondis on
hī: he helide hī/ & whãne pis
ping was don-alle pt ī pe ile
hadde sekenesse: camẽ & wherẽ
helid/ which also onouride us
in many wirshipis: & puttide
what pingis were necessarie
to us whãne we shippiden/ &
aft pre monepis we shippidẽ
a ship of alisaũdre-pt hadde
wyntrid ī pe ple-to whiche ih
as an excellent signe of cas
tozus/ & whãne we camen to
siracusa: we dwelliden pere
pre daies/ fro pẽnes we seile
dẽ aboute: & camen to regyū/
& aft oo day whyle pe soup
bleih: ī pe secoñde day we ca
mẽ to puteoles/ wher whãne
we foũden britþen: we wherẽ
þied to dwelle pe aneutis hẽ-
seneue daies/ and so we camen
to rome/ & fro pẽny whãne bri
þen hadden herd: pei camen
to us to pe chepyngе of appiũs-
& to pre tauernes/ & whãne
poul hadde sepn hem: he dide
þankyngis to god & tok trist/
& whãne we camẽ to rome:
it was suffrid to poul to dwel
le bi hī self-with a kny3t kepy
nge hī/ & aft pe pridde daie he
clepide to gidere-pe worþieste
of pe iewis: & whãne pei camẽ-
he seide to hẽ/ britþen y dide
no þing ayen3 pe puple eþer
custom of fadris: & y was
bowndī at ierlm & was bitakī
ī to pe hondis of romayns/
& whãne hadde axid of me:
wolde hane delyuerid me-
for pat no cause of deþ was
ī me/ but for iewis ayenseidẽ:
y was constreynyd to appele
to pe emperour not as hauy
nge ouy þing to accuse my
puple/ þer for þis cause y þi
ede to se3 ou & spekе to 3ou/ for
pe hope of israel: y am girdd aboñ
te with þis chayne/ & pei seiden
to hī/ nei we han resseyued
letteris of pee fro iudee: nei
ouy of britþen comynge shewe/
wide eþ spake ouy yuel þing
of pee/ but we preien to here
of pee: what þingis pou felist/

for of pis sect it is knowē to us: þt eny where we rehersep it / & whāne pei hadde ordeyned a day to hī: many mē comen to hī in to pe yu / to whiche he ex poundyde vertuesliche pe kyng dom of god: & cōfermede hē of ihū· of pe lawe of moyses & profetis· fro pe morowe til to euentyd / & līi bileuedē to pese pingis: pat weren seid of paul līi bileuedē not / & whāne pei weren not consentynge to gi ve: pei departiden· & paul seide o word / for pe hooly goost spak wel bi ysaie pe profete to oure fadris: & seide / go þ^u to pis puple: & sei to hē / wt eve ze schulē here: & ze schulē not vndirstonde / & ze seynge schulē se: & ze schulē not biholde for pe herte of pis puple is gretely fattid· & wip eris pei herdē heuyli· & pei closiden to gidir her izen: lest perauen ture pei se wip izen & wip eris here· & bi herte vndir stonde· & be cōuertid· & pat he pfor be it knowē to zou· þt pis helpe of god is sent to he pen mē: & pei schulē here / & whāne he hadde seid pese pīgis: iewis went out fro hī· & hadde mych questiōn ey mongē among hē self / &

he dwellide ful twey zeer· in his hīrid place: & resseyuede: alle þt entriden to hī· & þchide pe kingdom of god· & tauste pe pingis þt ben of pe lord ihū crist: wip al trist wt out forbeding amen / Here eendeh pe deedis of apostl es: And here bigynneh a prologe on pe pistlis of cat̄e seip: þt bē seuene in ordre

The ordre of pe seuene epistles· whiche ben de ped camonli: is not so among pe grekis· þat ful ly schuerē pe seip & sewen pe riȝt order of pe epistles· as it is foūdī i latyn bokis / for as nyche as peter is pe firste i pe order of pe apostlis: his epistles bē pe firste of hē i order / but as we not longe sippen correctidē pe euāgelis tes to pe liif of treuþe: so we haue sette pese pingis pe help of god i her owne ordre / for pe firste of hē is an epistel of iames: two of petres: pre of ioūys· & oon of iudee / pe whiche epistles: ȝef pei had den be trewly turnyd of pe translatoris i to latyn spech as pei werē maad of pe apos tlis / pei schuldē haue maad no doute to pe rederis: ne

ye vanitie of wordis schulde
not haue in pis pistle itself
namely i pat place i pe firste
epistle of ioon: where we ve
den of ye ooulyed of ye finite
where we fynden pt p hap
pe grete erro of vntrewe tra
uslatoures: fro pe treupe of
pe feip/ while pei setten i her
tradicciouis· ooly pe vnkun
es of pre kingis: pt is of wa
ter· of blood· & of pe spirit/
& leuep pe witnessing of pe
fadir: & of pe sone· & of pe spi
rit/ in whiche witnessing:
oure comun bileue is moost
strengpid/ & it is pried pat p
is oon substance of godhed
of pe fadir: & of pe sone· &
of pe hooly spirit/ but i ope
epistles how mychc oure tr
aduccioun diuisip from opis:
p leeue to pe prudence of pe
rederis/ but pou goddis may
de eustochyn while pou enque
rist bisily of me pe treupe
of scripture: pou pinkest out
myn elde to be gnawe of eu
myous men? teep/ whiche
seyn pat y am an apeyrer
of hooly scriptures: but y in
sch such a werk direde not pe
enpe of myn enemyes/ ne
y schal not deupen to he: pt
aseu pe treupe of holy scripture

Here· on pis pistle: seip al pis:
here bigynnep pe pistle of iames:

Iames pe seruaunt of god·
and of oure lord ihu
crist: to pe twelue kynre
dis pt beu i straterynge
abrood· heelpe/ wip pe
perpn deuezc al ioye: whā
ne ze falle in to diuerse temptac
ouns/ wityngc pt pe prupng of
youre feip: worchip pacience/
& pacience hap a parfit werk:
pat ze be parfit & hoole and
faile i no ping/ & if ony of zou
nedip wisdom: axe he of god/
whiche zyuep to alle men largely
& vpbreidip not· & it schal be zo
uen to hi/ but axe he i feip: and
doute no ping/ for he pat doutip:
is lijk to a wawe of pe see· whi
ch is mouyd & born about of
wynd/ pfor gelle not pe ilke
man: pat he schal take ony ping
of pe lord/ a man double in
soule: is vnstable i alle his
weies/ & a meke brop: haue
glorie i his enhaunsyng/ and
riche man in his lowenesse/
for as pe flour of gras he sch
al passe/ pe sunne roos up wt
heete: & driede pe gras/ & pe
flour of it fel doun: & pe faire
nesse of his chere perischide/
& so a riche man welewip in
his weies/ blessid is pe man

pat sufferyp tẽptacioñ for wh
ñne he shal be ꝓued: he sh
al receyue pe corooñ of lyf·
which god bihiste to men pat
louen hi / no mã whãne he is
temptid seie: pt he is temptid
of god: for whi god is not a
tẽptere of yuele pingis / for
he tẽptip no mã / but ech mã
is tẽptid drawñ & drawid of
his owne coueityng / afterwa
rd coueityng whãne it hap
cõceyued: bringip forp synne /
but synne whãne it is fulfild:
gendrip deep / & perfor my
moost derworpe bripren: myle
ze erre / ech good ziftc & ech
parfit ziftc is from aboue &
comep doñ fro pe fadir of
liztis: anentis whom is noon
oper chaungyng ne pt̃ of schi
dowyng of schaud / ffor wil
fully he bigat us bi pe word
of treupe: pat we be a bigynn
ing of his creature / wite ze my
bripren moost loued / be ech mã
swift to here · but slow to spe
ke · & slow to wrappe / for pe
wrappe of mã: worchip not pe
riztwisnesse of god / for which
ping caste ze awey al vnclẽne
sse & pleute of malice: & in
myldenesse resseyue ze pe wo
rd pt is plantid · pt may saue
zoure soulis / but be ze doeris

of pe word · and not heeris
onely: disseyuyng zou silf / ffor
if ony mã is an heresi of pe
word · & not a doer: pis schal
be lickned to a mã pt biholdip
pe cheer of his birpe i a myr
rour / ffor he biheld hi silf &
went awey: & anoon he for
zat which he was / but he pat
biholdip i pe laue of pe parfit
perfit fredom & dwellip ther in
& is not made forzetiful he
rere · but a doere of werk:
pis schal be blessid in his dede /
& if ony man gessip hi silf
to be religious · & refreynep
not his tunge · but disseyuep his
herte: pe religioñ of hi is veyn /
a clene religioñ & an vnwemmed:
anentis god & pe fadir is pis /
to visite fadirles & modirles
children & widewis in her tri
bulacioñ: & to kepe hym silf:
vndefoulid fro pis world

By bripren myle ze haue
pe feip of oure lord
ihũ crist of glorie in
accepcioñ of persones / for
if a mã pt hap a goldñ ryng
& an feire cloping comep in
zoure cõpeny · & a pore man
entrip in a foul cloping & if
ze biholden in to hi pat is cloped
with clere cloping / & if ze seie
to hi · sitte pou here wel / but

to ye pore man ze seien: stonde
yon pere · eꝑ sitte vndir ye sto
ol of my feet / whey ze demē
not anētis zou silf: ꝑ bē ma
ad domeling of wickid pouz
tē: / here ze my mooste dere
wrpe breþen / whey god chees
not poze mē i þis world: / ri
che i feiþ · ꝑ eiris of ye kyngdō
þ god bihizte to mē þat louē
hī / but ze han dispisid ye pore
man / whey riche mē oppressen
not zou bi power: ꝑ per dra
wen zou to domes: / whether
per blasfemē not ye good na
me þt is clepid to zou / /
nevelees if ze perfourmē ye
kingis lawe · bi sꝑpturis · þu
shalt lone þi neiȝbore as þi
silf: ze doen wel / but if ze ta
ken persones: ze wrechen sy
ne · ꝑ be repreuyd of ye lawe ·
as trespassouris · ꝑ who euere
kepiþ al ye lawe · but offen
diþ i oon: he is maad gilty
of alle / for he þat seide pou
shalt do no leccherie: seide
also pou shalt not sle / þt if
pou doist not letcherie · but
pou sleest: pou art maad tr
espassour of ye lawe / þus
speke ze ꝑ þus do ze: as bigy
nynge to be demyd bi pe la
we of fredom / ffor with dom
with out mercy: is to hī þat
doiþ no mercy / but mercy aboue re
isiþ doom / my breþen what
schal it profite · if ony man ſ
ie þat he hab feiþ: but he hab
not þe werkis / whey feiþ schal
mowe sane hī: / ꝑ if a brooper
eyer sīt be nakid: ꝑ haue nede
of ech daies liflode / ꝑ if ony
of zou sei to hē · go ze in pees ·
be ze warmd hoot ꝑ be ze fillid /
but if ze zeue not to hē þo þi
ngis þat bē necessarie to body:
what schal it profite / / so also
feiþ if it hab not werkis: is
deed i it silf / but sum schal
seie / þu hast feiþ: ꝑ y haue wer
kis schewe pou to me þi feiþ
with out werkis: ꝑ y schal schе
we to pee my feiþ of werkis /
pou bileuest þt o god is: pou
doist wel / ꝑ deuelis bileuen:
ꝑ treumblen / but wolt pou wi
te pou veyn man: þat feiþ wt
out werkis is ydul: / whether
abraham oure fadir was not
iustified of werkis: offrynge
ysaac his sone on pe auter / /
for pou seest · þat feiþ wrouȝte
with his werkis: ꝑ his feiþ
was fillid of werkis / ꝑ pe
scꝑpture was fillid: seiynge /
abraham bileuede to god: ꝑ
it was arettid to hī to riȝtwy
snesse · ꝑ he was clepid pe
freend of god / ze seen þt a man

is iustified of werkis: and not
of feip onely / in lyk maner and
whepeu also pe hoore was
not iustified of werkis · & rec
seyuede pe messangeris: & sē
ten lyē oute bi anoper weie: / for
as pe body wip out spirit is deed:
so also feip wip out werkis is deed

Ly brepen wyle ze be ma
ad many maistris: wi
tynge pat ze taken pe
more doom / for alle we offen
den i many pingis / if ony man
offendip not i word: pis is a
perfit man / for also he may lede
aboute al pe body wip a bridil /
for if we putten bridlis in to
horsis moupis · for to consēte
to us: & we ledē aboute al pe
body of hem / & lo schippis wip
alle pei bē grete · & bē dryuen
of stronge wyndis: zit pei bē
turnid a boute of a litil gouernau
le: whipere pe meuyng of pe gou
nour wole / so also pe tunge is
but a litil membre: & reisep gre
te pingis / lo hou litil fier bren
nep a ful grete wode / & oure
tunge is fier: pe vniuersite of
wickidnesse / pe tunge is ordey
ned i oure membris · which de
foulep al pe body / & it is enfla
wmed of helle: & enflawmep
pe wheel of oure birpe / & alle
pe kynde of beestis & of foulis
and of serpentis and of opere
is chastisid · & po bē maad tame
of mankynd / but no man may
chastise pe tunge / for it is an vn
pesible yuel & ful of deedly ve
nym / i it we blessen god pe fa
dir: & in it we cursen men · pat
ben maad to pe licknesse of
god / of pe same moup passip
forp blessyng & cursyng / my
brepren it bihouep not pat pese
pingis be don so / wheper a welle
of pe same hoole · bryngip forp ·
swete & salt watir / my brepren whe
per a figre tre may make gre
pis · eper a vyne figis: / so neper salt
watir may make swete watir /
who is wijs & taust a mong
zou: / schewe he of good lyuyng ·
his werching i myldenesse of
his wisdom / pat if ze haue bitter
enuye · & stryuyngis bē i zoure
hertis: wyle ze haue glorie &
be lieris a zenes pe treupe / for
pis wisdom is not fro aboue
comynge doun: but erpely · and
beestly · & feendly / ffor wheve
is enuye & strijf: pe is vnstidfast
nesse · & al schrewid werk / but
wisdom pat is fro aboue · firste
it is chast · afterward pesible ·
mylde · able to be conseilid · to
ben tynge to good pingis · ful
of mercy & of goode fruytis ·
demynge wip out feynynge /

& ye fruytis of rightwisnesse is
sowin in peese: to hem yt make peese

Wherof ben batels and
chydyngis among zou:
whens not of zoure to
neytises: yt fyzten in zoure me
bris: ze coueyte & ze han not
ze sleen & ze han enuye: & ze ne
con not gete: ze chyde & make
batel: & ze han not for ze aske
not: ze aske & ze resseyue not:
for yt ze aske yuele: as ze sche
wen openly in zoure coueytisis
and wrongwisenesse. wite not ze. yt
ye frendschip of pis world is
enuye to god: for who euer
wole be frend of pis world:
is maad ye enemy of god:
whi wene ze yt ye scripture
seip veynly: ye spirit yt dwel
lip in zou coueitip to enuye:
but he zyueth ye more grace:
for which thing he seip: god
withstondip proude men: but
to meke men he zyueth grace:
for be ze suget to god: but
withstonde ze ye deuel: and he
schal fle fro zou: neize ze to
god: & he schal neize to zou:
ze synneris clense ye hondis:
& ze double in soule purge ze
ye hertis: be ze wrecchis and
wepe ze: zoure leizing be
turned in to wepyng: & ioye
in to sorewe of herte: be ze me

kid in ye sizt of ye lord: and he
schal enhaunse zou: ny bripren
nyle ze backbite eche ope: he yat
backbitip his brop. eyer yat
demep his broyer: backbitip
ye lawe. & demep ye lawe:
& if pou demest ye lawe: but ^ pou art not a doer of ye lawe.
a domeman: but pou is ma
kere of ye lawe & iuge: yat
may lese & delyue: & who art
pou yt demest pi neizbore:
lo now ze yt seien. to day eyer
to morewe we schal go in to
pilke citee: & ye we schal dwe
elle a zeer: & we schal make
marchandise: & we schal ma
ke wynning: whiche wite not.
what is to zou in ye morewe:
for what is zoure lyf: a smoke
apperynge at a litil: & afterward
it schal be wasted: for yt ze
seie: if ye lord wole. & if we
lyue: we schal do pis ping
eyer yt ping: & now ze make
glorie ioye in zoure pride: eny
siche ioyng is wicked: for
it is cyue to hi yat kan do
good: and doip not

Do now ze riche men:
wepe ze zellynge in
zoure wrecchednessis
yat schal come to zou: zoure
richessis ben roten: & zoure clo
pis ben etin of mothis: zoure
gold & silu is al rusted: & ye rust

C. v.

of hem shall be to zou in to
iudgyng · & shall ete zoure
fleishis as fier / ze han tred
vnto zou vengeaunce i the laste
daies / lo the hire of zoure werk
men · that repiden zoure feeldis ·
which is defraudid of zou: crieth
& the cri of hem hath entrid: in to
the eeris of the lord of oostis /
ze han eten on the erthe: & in zoure
lecheries ze han norischid
zoure hertis / in the day of sle
yng ze demyden & slowen the iust
man: & he withstood not zou /
therfor brithren be ze pacient til
to the comyng of the lord / lo
an erthetilier abidith the precious
fruyt of the erthe: pacientli
suffrynge til he resseyue the erli
& laat fruyt / & be ze pacient
& confermen zoure hertis:
for the comyng of the lord nyh
eth / brithren nyle ze be
sorewful ech to oth: that ze be
not demed / lo the iuge stondith
biforn the 3ate / brithren
take ze ensaumple of yuel goy
ng out & of long abidyng &
trauel & of pacience: the pro
fetis that spaken to zou in the
name of the lord / lo we blessen
hem that suffriden / ze herden the suf
frynge eth pacience of iob · &
ze seyen the ende of the lord:
for the lord is merciful & 3euyng

mercy / bifore alle thingis nyl
brithren nyle ze swere · neyther
bi heuene neyther bi erthe: neyther
bi what ooth oth / but be zo
ure word zie zie · nay nay: that
ze fallen not vndur doom / &
if ony of zou is sorewful: pri
he with pacient soule · & sing he
salm / if ony of zou is sijk:
lede he the prestis of the chirche /
& pri for hi · and anoynte
with oyle in the name of the
lord: & the preier of feith shall
saue the sijk man / & the lord shall
make hi list / & if he be in synnes:
thei shulen be forzouen to hym /
for knowlechith ech to oth
zoure synnes · & pray ech for
oth: that ze be sauyd / for the ma
tyuel preier of a iust man: is
myche worth / eliz was a deedly
man like us · & in preier he piede ·
that it shulde not reyne on the
erthe / & it reynede not pre ze
eris & sixe monethis / & eft
soone he piede: & heuene 3af
reyn & the erthe 3af his fruyt /
& brithren if ony of zou erryd
fro treuthe · & ony conuerti hym:
he owith to wite / that he that
makith a synnere to be turned
fro the errour of his weie:
shall saue the soule of hym
fro deeth · & hyliep the multitu
de of synnes. Here endith

ye pistle of iames / & here bi
gynneþ ye firste pistle of petre:

Petre apostle of ihū
crist · to ye chosen mē
to ye comelingis of
scattyng abrood · of
ponte of galathie · of cappadocie
of asie & of bitynye · bi ye bifor
knowyng of god ye fadir · i ha
lewyng of spirit · bi obedience
& sprynging of ye blood of
ihū crist: grace & pees be mul
tiplied to zou / blessid be god
& ye fadir of oure lord ihū
crist: which bi his grete merci
bigat us azen i to lyuyng
hope bi ye azenrisyng of ihū
crist fro deep / i to eritage vncor
ruptible: & vndefoulid & pat
shal not fade pat is kept in
heuenes for zou pt i ye vertu
of god ben kept bi ye feip: i
to heelpe & is redy to be shew
id i ye laste tyme / i which
ze shulen make ioye: pouz it
bihoue3 now a litil to be sori
i dyuerse temptacioun / pt ye pre
uyng of zoure feip be myche
more precious than gold: pt is
put by fier / & be foundun in
to heryng & glorie & honour:
i ye reuelacioun of ihū crist / whi
om whanne ze han not seyn:
ze louen / i to whom also now
ze not seynge: bileuen / but ze
pat bileuen shulen haue ioye
& gladnesse pt may not be told
out / & ze shulen be glorified &
take ye ende of zoure feip · ye
helpe of zoure soulis / of which
helpe prophetis souzten & enser
chiden: pat prophecieden of ye grace
to comyng i zou / & souzten which
eiþer what man tyme ye spirit
of crist signifiede i hem: & bifor
telde po passiouns pat ben i crist ·
& ye laten glories / to whiche it
was shewid · for not to hem silf ·
but to zou pei mynistriden po
pingis pat now ben teld to zou
bi hem pat prechiden to zou bi ye ho
ly goost sent fro heuene · i to
whom aungelis desiren to biholde /
for which þing be ze girid ye le
ndis of zoure soule · sobre · per
fit · & hope ze i to ye ilke grace pt
is profrid to zou bi ye shewyng
ynge of ihū crist / as sones of obe
dience · not maad lijc to ye for
mer desiris of zoure vnkunyng
nesse / but lijk hi pt hap clepid
zou hooly: pt also ze silf ben hooly
i al lyuyng / for it is writun / ze
shulen be hooly: for y am hooly /
& if ze i wardly clepen hi fadir ·
which demeþ with outen accep
cioun of persones bi ye werk
of ech man: lyue ze i drede i ye
tyme of zoure pilgrymage /
wityngе pat not bi corruptible

gold e3 silu-ze ben bouzt azen
of zoure vepu lyuynge of fadr
is tradicion: but bi pe p̄cious
blood as of pe lombe vndefoul
id & vnspottid cst ihū/ pat was
knowē bifore pe makyng of
pe world: but he is shewid in
pe laste tymes for zou pt bi hī
ben feithful ī god/ pat reisid
hī fro deep & zaf to hī eternalty
ne glorie: pt oure feip & hope
were ī god/ & makeze clensit
zoure soulis ī obedience of
charite: ī loue of briperhod
of symple herte loueze to gi
dere more bisily & beze born
azen not of corruptible seed
but vncorruptible bi pe lyuy
ng word of lyuynge god & dwel
lynge ī to wip outē ende/ for
ech fleisch is hey: & al pe glor
ie of it is flour of hey/ pe
hey driede up: & his flour
felde doū/ but pe word of pe
lord dwellip wip outē ende/ &
pis is pe word: pt is p̄chid to zou
Therfor puttē ze awey al
malice & al gile & feynyn
gis & envyes & alle bac
bitynges as now born
zonge childrē resonable
wip out gile coueyte ze myl
k: pt in it ze wexe ī to helpe
if nepeles ze han tastid pat
pe lord is swete & heize ze to
him pat is a lyuynge stoon &
repud of mē: but chosū of
god & onourid/ & ze silf as quyk
stones be ze abone bildid
ī to spiritual houses & an
hooli p̄sthod: to offre spūal
sacrifices acceptable to god
bi ihū cst/ for which ping pe
scripture seip/ lo y schal sette
ī syon pe hieste· ceū stoon·
chosū & p̄cious/ & he pt schal
bileue ī him: schal not be
confoūdid/ p̄for to zou pat
bileuen/ but to mē pt bileuē
not: pe stoon which pe bilde
ris repud· pis is made
ī to pe hed of pe cornē/ & pe
stoon of hirtyng & stoon
of schaūdre: to hem pt offē
den to pe word· nep bileuē
it ī which pei bē sett/ but
ze ben chosū kyn· a kyngly
p̄sthod· holi folc· a pople of
purchasing: pat ze telle pe
vertues of hī pat diside
zou fro derknessis ī to his
wondirful liȝt/ which sū
tyme were not a pople of
god: but now ze ben pe pu
ple of god/ which hadden
not mercy: but now ze han
mercy/ moost dere y biseche
zou as comelyngis and pil
grymis to absteyne zou fro
fleischly desiris pat fiȝten

ayens ye soule/ And haue
ye zoure cõuersacion good· amo
ng heþene mẽ/ þat i þat þing
þt þei backbite of zou as of
mysdoeris: þei biholdẽ zou
of good werkis & glorifie
god i ye day of visitacion
be ye suget to eche creature
for god/ eþ to ye king as to
hi þat is hizer i state/ eþer
to duykis: as to pilke þt be
sent of hi to ye vengaunce
of myscoeris & to ye þrisyng
of good mẽ/ for so is ye wil
of god: þat ze do wel & ma
ke ye vnkunnyngnesse of vn
prudent men to be doũb
as fre mẽ & not as hauyng
fredom ye keuering of malic
e/ but as ye seruaũtis of
god/ onoure ze alle mẽ· loue
ze bretherhod· drede ze god· on
oure ze ye king/ seruaũtis
be ze sugetis i al drede to lor
dis· not onely to goode & to
mylde but also to tryuaũtis
for þis grace: if for conscien
ce of god· ony mã suffrip
hevynesses & suffrip vnrigh
ly for what grace is it: if
ze synẽ & ben buffetid and
suffrẽ/ but if wel ze doen
wel & suffren pacientli:
þis is grace anentis god
for to þis þing ze ben clepid
for also crist suffride for us and
lefte ensaumple to zou: þat ze
folewe ye steppis of hi/ which
dide not synne: neiþer gile was
foũdũ in his mouþ & whanne
he was cursid· he cursede not
whanne he suffride: he manas
sidde not but he bitook hi
silf to hi þat demyde hym ri
wufli/ & he hi silf bar
oure synnis in his body on a
tre: þat we be deed to synnis &
lyue to rigtwisnesse· bi whos
wan woũde ze be heelid/
for ze weren as schepe erryng:
but ze ben now turned to
ye schepherde and bischop
of zoure soulis

And wymmen be pei
suget to her housebo
ndis/ þat if ony mã
bileue not to ye word: bi þe
cõuersacioũ of wymmen· pei
ben wonnen wiþout word· &
biholde ze i drede zoure hooly
cõuersacioũ/ of whiche þer be
not wiþ out fayr enpoins
ouryng of heere· eþer do
ynge aboute of gold· eþer
ouryng of cloþing: but
pilke þat is ye hid man of
herte i vncorrupcioũ and
of mylde spirit· whiche is riche
i ye siȝt of god/ for so sityn me
hooly wymmen hopyng in god

C. iij.

onvneden hem lijf: And weren
lyget to hjer owne hosebondis/
as sare obeiede to Abraham:
& clepide hj̄ lord/ of whom ze
ben doyngis wel doynge: &
not dredynge ony pertvrba
cioñ Also mē dwelle to gid-
ve & bi kñuyng zme ze onour
to pe wom̄an/ freelle as to
pe more feble & as to eiren
eirid of grace & of lijf: pat
zoure pier̄is beyerid be not
lettid/ & help alle of oon wil
le/ i pyes be ze ech̄e suffr̄inge
wrip ope-loues of bripnyed-
merciful-mylde meke/ not
zeldinge pniel for pniel-nep
cursing for cursing: but a
zenwarde blessynge for i pis
ping ze ben clepid pat ze welde
blessing bi eritage/ for he pat
wole lone lijf & se goode dai
es: cōstreyne his tunge fro pniel-
& his lippis pat pei speke not
gile/ & bowe he fro pniel & do
good: seeke he pees & pursue
it/ for pe izē of pe lord bē
on iust mē: & his eris on pe
pieris of hē/ but pe cheer of
of pe lord is on mē pat don
yniels/ & who is it pt shal a
noye zou: if ze ben swer̄is &
louperis of goodnesse/ but
also if ze suffrē ony ping for
rightwisnesse: ze ben blessid/

but drede ze not pe drede of
hē: pat ze be not disturblid/
but halowe ze pe lord crist in
zoure hertis· & eñ more be ze
redy to satisfaccioñ to ech̄ m̄
an axynge zou reson of pat
feip & hope pat is ī zou/ but
wip mylduesse & drede: hā
uynge good conscience/ pat
ī pt ping pat pei bacbiten of
zou: pei ben confoñdid· whi
che chalengen falsly zoure
good conuersacioñ ī crist/ for it is
bettr pat ze do wel & suffre
if pe wille of god wole: pan
doynge pnele/ ffor also crist
ones died for oure synn̄· pe
iust for vniust: pat he shulde
offre to god us mand deed
ī fleisch· but mand quyk in
spirit/ for which ping he cām
ī spirit & also to hē pat were
closid to gidere ī prisoñ: pchide/
whiche were sū tyme vnbi
leuefful whanne pei abidid
pe pacience of god ī pe dais
of noe/ whanne pe ship was
mand: ī which fewe pt is
to seie eizte soulis were mā
ad saaf bi wat̄/ & so bapty
of lijk̄ foone makip us saaf
not pe puttyng awey of pe
filpis of fleisch: but pe axyng
of a good conscience ī god/
bi pe azenrisyng of oure

lord ihū cſt · pat is in pe rizthe
lf of god · & ſholeibip deep : pt
we ſhuldē be maad eiris of
eūlaſtinge life / he zede in to
heuene : & aūgelis & poiberis
& vtues bē maad ſubgetis to hī
Verfor for cſt ſuffride in
fleiſh : be ze alſo armed
bi pe ſame penkyng / for
he pat ſuffride ī fleiſh :
ceſſide fro ſyn / pat pat
is left now ī fleiſh : ſpue
not now to pe deſiris of m
en / but to pe wille of heyene
me to be endid : whiche wal
kiden ī letcheries · & luſtis ·
ī myche drynkyng of wyn ·
in vnleſurable etyngis &
drynkyngis & vnleueful
worſhippyng of maūmetis
ī which pyng yei now yei
ben aſtonyſt / ī which pyng
yei wondre for ze rēnen not
to gidere ī to pe ſame pyng
cōfuſiōn of letcherie & blaſ
feme / & yei ſhulē zyne reſon
to hī : pt is redy to deme pe
quyke & pe deed / forwhi for
pis pyng it is p̄chid alſo to
deed mē : pat pei be demed
bi men ī fleiſh & pt pei lyue
bi god ī ſpirit / ffor pe ende
of alle pyngis ſhal neize /
p̄for be ze prudent : & wake
ze ī p̄eris / bifore alle pyngis

haue ze charite ech to op in zou ſilf :
algatis laſtyuge : for charite cou
ep pe multitude of ſynes / holde
ze hoſpitalite to gidere wip oute
grutchyng / ech mā as he hap
reſſeyued grace · miniſtrige it
ī to ech oper : as goode diſpen
deris of pe manyfold grace of
god / if oup mā ſpeki p : ſpeke
he as pe wordis of god / if oup
mā miniſtrip : as of pe vertu
which god miniſtrip · pt god
be onourid ī alle pingis by
ihū cſt oure lord / to whom is
glorie & lordſhip ī to worldis
of worldis āme / it mooſt de
re breþen · whyle ze go ī pilgry
mage ī forthoute pt is maad
to zou to tēptacioū : as if ony
newe ping bifalle to zou / but
comyne ze wip pe paſſiōis of cſt
& haue ze ioye : pat alſo ze be glad
& haue ioye ī pe reuelacioū of
his glorie / if ze ben diſpriſid for
pe name of cſt : ze ſhulē be ble
ſſid / ffor pt pat is of pe onour
& of pe glorie & of pe vertu
of god · & pe ſpirit pat is his :
ſhal reſte on zou / but no mā
of zou ſuffre as aūā ſleere ·
eper a pef · eper curſed · eþ
as hirere of opere mēs goo
dis / but if as a cſtē man :
ſhame he not / but glorifie
glorifie he god in pis name /

for tyme is pat doom bigynne
firſt at us: what ende ſchal be
of hē pat bileuē not to ye goſpel:
& if it auſt nūt. vnneye ſchal be
ſaued: wher ſchulē ye vnfeipt
ful mā & ye sīnere appere/ ſtor
& pei pat ſuffren bi ye wille
of god: bitaken her ſoulis in
good dedis. to ye feipful ma
ker of nouzt

Therfor y am eldre
mā. & a witneſſe of crīs
paſſiouns/ which alſo am a
partyner of pat glorie. pt
ſchal be ſchewid i tyme to
comyng/ biſeche ze ye eldre
mē pat bē among zou/ fede
ze ye flok of god: pt is among
zou/ & purueiē ze not as cōſtre
ynyd but ful wilfully bi god/
not for lone of wynnyng: but wil
fully/ ney as hauynge lordſ
hip i ye clergye: but pat ze be
maad enſaumple of ye folk flok
of wille of ſoule & when ye
princē of ſchepherdis ſchal ap
pere: ze ſchulē reſſeyue ye cor
on of glorie. pat may neuer
falle/ also ze zonge men be
ze ſuget to eldre mē/ & alle
ſchelbe ze to gidere meknelle/
for ye lord withſtondip proude
men: but he zeuep grace to
meke mē/ ſtor be ze meked
vndir ye myzty hond of god/

pat he reple zou in ye tyme of
viſitacioun/ & caſte ze al zoure
buſynelle in to hī: for to hī is
cure of zou/ be ze ſobre & wa
ke ze. for zoure aduerſarie ye
deuel as a rorynge lioun goip
aboute. ſechinge whō he ſchal
deuoure/ whom azenſtonde ze
ſtronge i ye feip: witynge pt
ye ſame paſſioun is maad to
pilke bripode of zou pat is
i ye world/ & god of grace pat
clepide zou i to his euerlaſtynge
glorie zou ſuffrynge a litil he
ſchal perfourne & ſchal cōferme
& ſchal make ſad/ to hī be glorie
and lordſchip in to worldis of
worldis amē/ bi ſiluan feip
ful brop to zou as y deme/ y
wroot ſchortly biſechinge &
witneſſinge pt pis is pe very
grace of god i which ze ſtōde/
pe chirche pt is gadrid in ba
bilonye & marke my ſone:
gretip zou wel/ grete ze wel
to gidere i hooly coſ/ gre ye to
zou alle pt bē in cri-amē Here
bigynnep pe ſecōnde piſtle of pe

Seymoūt petre ſer
uaūt & apoſtle of
ihū cri: to hem pt
haue take wip us
pe euene feip i pe riztwiſnelle
of oure god & ſauyour ihū
cri/ gre & pees be fillid to zou:

vi pe knowing of oure lord ihū
cft/ how alle pingis of his god
lich vtu- pat ben to lift- & pitee
ben zoun to us vi pe knowing
of hī pt clepide us for his oun
ne glorie & vtu: vi wiho he zaf
to us moost precious bihestis/
pat vi pese pingis ze schulen
be maad felowis of goddis
kynde: & fle pe corrupcioū of
pat coueytise pt is i pe woxld/
& bringe ze i al bisynesse: &
inpunstre ze i zoure feip· ver
tu/ & i vtu knowing/ i kunyg
abstinence· i abstinēce pacience/
in pacience pitee· i pitee loue of
britherhod/ & in loue of britherhod:
charite/ for if pese ben with zou
& encreesse: pei schulē not unfille
zou voide· ne? wipoute fruyt
i pe knowing of oure lord ihū
cft/ but to whom pese ben not
redy: he is blynd· & gropip
wip his hond· & forzetip pe pur
gyng of his olde trespassis/
wherfor britheren be ze more
bisy: pat vi goode werkis ze
make zoure clepyng & chesy
ng certeyn/ for ze doynge pese
pingis: schulē not do synne
ony tyme/ for pus pe entrig
i to euerlastynge kingdō of
oure lord & sauyour ihū cft:
schal be mynistrid to zou
pleenteuously/ for which pig

y schal bigynne to moneste zou
euermore of pese pingis/ And
y wole pat ze be kunnynge &
confermyd i pis present treupe/
forsope y deme mysty as long
as y am i pis tabernacle to
reyse zou i monestyng/ and
y am certeyn pt pe puttyng a
wey of my tabernacle is
swift: vi pis pat oure lord
ihū cft hap schewid to me/
but y schal zyue bisynesse &
ofte after my deep ze haue
inpunde of pese pingis/ ffor
we not sunynge vnwise tales
haue maad knowīn to zou pe
vtu & pe bifore knowing of
oure lord ihū cft: but we we
ren maad biholderis of his
greetnesse/ ffor he took of god
pe fadir honour & & glorie: vi
siche maū voys sidōn doū to
hī fro pe greet glorie/ pis is
my louyd sone· i whom y haue
me plesid to me: here ze hym/
& we herdē pis voys brouzt
fro heuene: whanne we were
ren wip hī in pe hooly hil/
& we han aldddere word of
profecie: to which ze zynyge
teint dō wel· as to a derk place·
til pe day bigynne to zyue liyt·
& pe dai sterre sprynge i zoure
hertis/ & first vndirstonde

ye yiđ ying· yat ech profecie of ſcripture: iđ not maad bi propre interpretacioñ / for profecie was not brouȝt ouy tyme bi mañ? wille: but ye holy men of god inſpiríd wt ye hoolȝ gooſt ſpaken

But also faile profetis iđ were ẽ ye puple as ỉ ȝou ſchulẽ be maiſtriđ lieriđ· yat ſchuleu brynge in ſectis of perdicioñ / & yei denyen ylke lord yat bouȝte hem· & brynge on hẽ silf hasty perdicioñ / & many ſchulẽ sue her leccheries: bi wyche ye weie of treuye ſchal be blaſfemyd· & ye ſchulen make marchaũdie of ȝou ỉ coueytiſe bi feyned wordis / to wyche doom now a while ago ceeſſiȝ not: & ye perdicioñ of hẽ nappiȝ not / for if god ſparide not aungelis ſynynge· but bitook hẽ to be turmentid & to be dyuidid doñ wiȝ bondis of helle ỉ to helle: to be kept ỉ to doom / & ſparide not ye firſte world· but kept noe ye eiȝte man ye vifargoere of riȝtwiſnelle: & brouȝte in ye gweet flood to ye world of vnfeiyful men / & ye drook ỉ to poudre ye citees of men of sodom· & of me of gomor &

damnyede bi turnyng vpſedoñ· & putte hẽ ye enſaũple of hem yat weren to doynge yuele: & delyuede ye iuſt loth? oppreſſid of ye wrong & of ye letcherous coũſacioñ of cursid me / for in liȝt & herynge he was iuſt & dwellide among hẽ yt day ỉ to day turmentide wiȝ wickid werkis & iuſt soule / for ye lord kan delyne pite nouſe me fro temptacioñ: & kepe wickid me ỉ to ye day of doome to be turmentid / but more hẽ yt walkẽ aftir ye fleiſch ỉ coneytinge of vndeñelle: & diſpiſen lordſchipping / & ben bold plesinge hẽ silf: & dredẽ not to brynge ỉ ſectis blaſfemynge / where aũgels wyche ben more in ſtrẽgpe & vertu: beren not yat was ye execrable doom azen? hem / but yeſe ben as vnreſonable beeſtis kyndely ỉ to takiȝ & in to deep: blaſfemynge ỉ yeſe thingis yat yei knowen not / & ſchulẽ periſche ỉ her corrupcioñ: & reſceyue ye hire of vnriȝtwiſnelle / & yei gelden delices of defoulyng & of wem: to be vnkyndis of day / flowynge ỉ her feeſtis wiȝ delices doynge letcherie wiȝ ȝou: & haun iȝen ful of auoutre & vnceſſynge trelpaſ / diſceyuynge vnſtidfaſt

sonlig· And han pe herte efter
clid to coueytise/ pe soms of
curssing pat forsaken pe ryzt
weie: & erriden supuge pe
weie of balaam of bosor/ whi
ch loupde pe hyre of wicki
nesse/ but he hadde repuyg
of his woodnesse/ Adoun beeste
vndir zok pat spak with voys
of mañ· pat forbed pe vnwisdõ
of pe profete/ ¶ pese bẽ well
is wipoute wat[er]· & mystis dry
ñ wiy whirlyng wyndis: to
whiche pe derke myst of derk
nessis is reserued/ & per sprekẽ
i pde of vanyte: & dissepuen
i desiris of fleisshi of letchyer
ie: hẽ pat scapẽ alitil/ whiche
lyuẽ in errour/ & bihoten fre
dom to hẽ: whanne pei ben ser
uaũtis of corrupcioũ/ ffor
of whõ ony mañ is ouercomẽ:
of hi also he is seruaũt/ ffor
if mẽ forsakẽ pe vnclẽnessis
of pe world· bi pe knowlyng
of oure lord & sauyour ihũ crist·
& eft soone bẽ wlappid in pese
& ben ouercomẽ: pe lattere pin
gis bẽ maad to hẽ worse pan
pe formere/ but it was betre to
hẽ to not knowe pe weie of ryzt
wisnesse: pan to turne azen
aft[er] pe knowyng· fro pt holy
maũdemẽt pat was bitakẽ
to hem/ for pilke vp prouerbe

bifelde to hem· pe hound turnede
azen to his castyng· And a sowe
is wasshe i walewyng i fenne
o ze moost derewurp bre
peren· y wrote to zou
pis secõnde epistle· in
whiche y stire zoure clere soule
bi monestyng to gidere: pat
ze be myndeful of po wordis·
pat y bifor seide of pe hooly
profetis: & of pe mandemen
tis of pe hooly apostlis of pe
lord & sauyour/ first wite ze
pis ping pat i pe laste dayes
disseyueris schulẽ come in dis
cent[er]: goynge aft[er] her owne co
uey tingis· seynge· where is
pe biheest or pe comyng of hi/
for sipen pe fadres dieden: al
le pingis lasten fro pe bigyng
of creature/ but it is hid fro
hem willynge pis ping: pat
heuenes were bifore· and pe
erpe of wat[er]· was stondyngе
bi wat[er] bi goddis word· bi whi
ch pat pilke world demlid perne
bi wat[er] perischide/ but pe he
uenis pat nowe ben· & erpe pe
ben kept bi pe same word &
ben reserued to fier i to pe day
of doom & perdicioũ of wicke
mẽ/ but ze moost dere pis o
ping be not hid to zou/ pat o
day anentis god: is as a pou
synde zeeris & a pousynde

zeeris ben as o day / pe lord tari
ey not his bihest as sum gesse:
but he doip pacientli for zou / t
wole not pt ony men perisshe·
but pat alle turne azen to pen
ãce / for pe day of pe lord schal
come as a pef: ī wlich heue
nes wip gret bire schulê pas
se· t elemẽtis schulê be dissolued
bi heete / t pe erpe t alle pe wer
kis pat ben ī it: schulê be bre
nt / pfor wlichẽ alle pese pingis
schulê be dissolued wlat man
nẽ bihouep it zou to be ī holy
lyuyngis t pitees abidinge and
hizynge ī pe comynge of pe day
of oure lord ihũ ẽst ẽst / bi wlos
heuenys brẽnynge schulê be
dissolued: t elemẽtis schulen
faile bi brẽnyng of fier / also
we abidẽ bi his biheestis ne
we heuenes t newe erpe: ī
wlich is rigtwisnesse dwellip /
for wlich ping ze moost dere·
abidynge pese pingis be ze bi
sie: to be foũdũ to hi ī pees
wispottid t vndefoulid / and
deme ze long abidyng of our
lord ihũ ẽst: zoure heelpe / as
also oure moost dere broper
poul wroot to zou: bi wisdo
zoũ to hi / as ī and ī alle ep
istlis he spekip ī hẽ of pese
pingis / ī wlich pe sũme hard
pingis to vndurstonde / wlich

vnlerne and vnstable men dep
uen· as also pei don ope scrip
turis to her owne perdicioñ /
pfore ze britpen bifore wityge
kepe zou silf: lest ze be disseyu
ed bi errour t of vnwise mẽ
t falle awey / fro zoure owne
stadnesse / but wexe ze ī pe
grace t pe knowyng of oure
lord ihũ ẽst t oure sauyour /
to hi be glorie now t ī to pe
day of eũlastyngnesse amen /

Here endip pe secoũde pistle
of petre: and here bigỹnip
ep pe firste pistle of ioon:

That ping pat was fro
pe bigỹnyng: wlich we
herden wlich we sawen
wip oure izen / wlich we
biheelden t oure hondis
touchiden of pe word of
lif: t pe lif is schewid / t
we sawen · t we wytnessen ·
and tellẽ to zou pe eũlastyng
lif: pat was anentis pe fadir
t apperide to us / pfor we tellẽ
to zou pat ping pat we sawen
t herden: pat also ze haue fe
lowschipe wip us · t oure felo
wschipe be wip pe fadir and
wip his sone ihũ ẽst / t we
writẽ pis ping to zou: pat
ze haue ioye · t pt zoure ioye
be ful / t pis is pe telling pt
we herden of hi t tellen to

zon: þat god is liȝt & þ̄ be no
derknesse in hī / if we seien
þat we haue felouschip wiþ
hī · & we wandrē i derknesse:
we lien & don not treuþe /
but if we walken i liȝt · as
also he is i liȝt: we haue felow
schip to gidere / & þe blood of
ihū ̄ist his sone: clensiþ us
fro al sȳne / if we seien þ̄ we
haue no sȳne: we disseyuē us
silf · & treuþe is not in us / if
we knowlechen oure sȳnes:
he is feiþful & iust · þat he for
ȝiue to us oure sȳnes · & clen
se us fro alle wickidnesse / &
if we seien we haue not syn
ned: we maken hī a lier · &
his word is not in us

My litil sonȝ y wrȳte
to zou þese þingis:
þat ze synne not /
but if ony man sȳneþ: we
haue an auocat anentis þe
fadir ihū ̄ist · & he is þe forȝi
nenesse for oure sȳnes / and
not ouely for oure sȳnȝ: but
also for þe sȳnȝ of al þe wor
ld / & i þis þing we witē þ̄t
we knowen hī: if we kepē
his comaūdemētis / þ̄t is
he þat seiþ þ̄t he knowiþ
god · & kepiþ not his co maū
demētis: is a lier & treu
þe is not i hī / but þe charn

rite of god is perfit̄ verily i hī:
þat kepiþ his word / i þis þing
we witen þat we bē in hym:
if we ben perfit̄ in hī / he þat
seiþ þ̄t he dwelliþ i hym / he
oweþ for to walke as he walki
de / moost dere bretheren y wrīte
to zou not a newe maūdemēt:
but þe olde maūdemēt þ̄t ze
hadde fro þe bigynnyng / þe olde
maūdemēt: is þe word þ̄t ze
herden / eftsoone y wrīte
to zou a newe maūdement ·
þat is treuþe hope i hī and ī
zou: for derknesse is passid ·
& verī liȝt schyneþ now / he þat
seiþ þat he is i liȝt · & hatiþ his
brop̄: is i derknesse ȝit / he þ̄t
loueþ his brop̄: dwelliþ i liȝt
& skaūdre is not i hym / but
he þat hatiþ his brop̄ is in
derknesse & wandriþ i derk
nesse & woot not whidir
he goiþ: for derknesse haþ
blyndid his eȝen A litil son
es y wrīte to zou: þat zoure
sȳnȝ ben forȝouē to zou for
his name / ffadris y wrīte
to zou · for ze han knowē hī
þat is fro þe bigynnyng / zon
ge mē y wrīte to zou · for ze
han ouercomē þe wicked / y
wrīte to zou zonge children:
for ze han knowe þe fadir /
y wrīte to zou britheren: for ze

han knowe him pat is fro pe
bigynyng / I write to 30u 30u
ge me: for 3e be stronge / & pe
word of god dwelliþ in 30u: &
3e han ouercome pe wicked / ny
le 3e loue pe world: ne pe þin
gis pat be in pe world / if ony
man loueþ pe world: pe cha
rite of pe fadir is not in hi /
for al þing pat is in pe world·
is coueytise of fleisch· & coue
ytise of izen & pride of liif /
which is not of pe fadir:
but it is of pe world / And
pe world shal passe: & pe co
ueytise of it / but he pat doiþ
pe wille of god: dwelliþ wiþ
outen ende / my litil sones pe
laste our is / & as 3e han herd
pt anticrist comeþ: now many
anticristis ben maad / wher fore
we witen: pat it is pe laste
our / pei went out fro us:
but pei were not of us / for
if pei hadde be of us: pei
hadde dwelte wiþ us / but pt
pei be knowen: pt pei be not of
us / but 3e han anoyntyng
of pe hooly goost: & knowen
alle þingis / I wroot not to
30u· as to men pat knowen
not treupe: but as to men pt
knowen it / & for ech leesyng
is not of treupe / who is a
liere: but pis pat denyeþ:
pat crist ihũ is not crist / pis is
anticrist: pat denyeþ pe fadir
& pe sone / lo ech pat denyeþ
pe sone: hap not pe fadir / but
he pat knowlechiþ pe sone:
hap also pe fadir / pat þing
pat 3e herde at pe bigynyng:
dwelle it in 30u / for if pat þig
dwelliþ in 30u· which 3e herde
at pe bigynyng: 3e schulen dwe
lle in pe sone & in pe fadir / and
pis is pe biheeste: pat he bi
hizte to us· euerlastinge liif / I
wroot pese þingis to 30u of
hem pat diseyuen 30u / and
pt anoyntinge which 3e resse
yuede of hi: dwelle in 30u /
& 3e han not nede· pt ony ma
tche 30u: but as his anoyn
tinge techiþ 30u of alle þingis /
& it is treuwe: & is not leesing /
& as he tauzte 30u: dwelle 3e
in hi / & now 3e litle sones dwelle
3e in hi: pat whanne he schal ap
pere· we han a trist & be not
confoundid of hi in his comyng /
if 3e witen· pat he is iust: witen
3e pat also ech pat doiþ rizt
wisnesse· is bore of him

Se 3e what manere cha
rite pe fadir 3af to
us: pat we be nam
ed pe sones of god & ben his
sones / for þis þing pe world
knowe not us: for it knewe

not hym/ moost dere bretheu
now we be ye sones of god: &
zit it appereth not what we
shulē be/ we witen pat whā
ne he shal appere: we shulē
be lik hī· for we shulē se hym
as he is/ & ech man pat hath hī
ne: hath also wickednesse· &
synne is wickednesse/ & ze wotē
pt he appereth to do away syn
nes: & synne is not in hī/ ech m
an pat dwellith in hī: synneth
not/ & ech pat synneth: seeth not
hī· neyther knewe hī/ litil sones:
no man disceyue zou/ he pat do
ith rightwisnesse: is iust· as al
so he is iust/ he pat doith synne:
is of ye deuel· for ye deuel syn
neth fro ye bigynnyng/ in yis
ping ye sone of god appereth:
pat he vndo ye werkes of ye
deuel/ ech man pat is born of
god: doith not not synne/ for ye
seed of god dwellith in hym:
& he may not do synne· for he
is born of god/ in yis ping ye
sones of god be knowen: & ye
sonys of ye feend/ ech man pat
is not iust: is not of god/ &
he pat louep not his brother/
for yis is ye telling pat ze herd
den at ye bigynnyng: pat ze
loue ech ope/ not as cayn pt
was of ye ywele: & slowz his
brop/ & for what ping slowz

he hym: for his werkis were yuele:
& his brop̄is iust/ bretheu nyle
ze wondre: if ye worl hatip zou/
we witē pat we be translatid
fro deep to lif· for we louen
bretheu/ he pat louep not: dwel
lip in deep/ ech man pat hatip his
brop̄: is a mankeere/ & ze witē
pt ech mankeere hap not euer
lastynge lif dwellynge in hym/
in yis ping we han knowe pe
charite of god· for he puttide
his lif for us: & we owen to
putte oure lyues for oure bre
theu/ he pat hap pe catel of yis
world· & seep pt his brop̄ hap
nede & closip his entrayle
fro hī: how dwellip pe charite
of god in hī/ my litle sones·
lone we not in word neyper in tunge:
but in werk & treupe/ in yis yis
we knowē· pt we be of treupe· &
in his sigt we moneste oure her
tis/ for if oure herte repip
us: god is more pan oure her
te & knowip alle pingis/ mo
ost dere bretheu if oure herte
repip not us: we han trist
to god/ & what euer we schulē
axe: we schulē resceyue of
hī/ for we kepē his comaū
dementis: & we doū po pingis
pt ben plesaūt bifor hī/ And
yis is pe comaūdement of god:
pat we bileue in pe name of

C. viij.

hys sone yhū ẽst / t̃ pat we loue
ech op̃: as he 3af heeste to us /
t̃ he pat kepiþ his cōmāndem
entis dwelliþ in yhī· t̃ he inyhī /
t̃ in pis ping we wite t̃ pat he
dwelliþ in us: bi pe spīrit wyh
ouin he 3af to us

Moost dere bripen nyle
3e bileue to ech spirit:
but þue 3e spiritis
if þei ben of god / for many
false prophetis: ben wente out in
to pe world / in pis ping pe spi
rit of god is knowē / ech spi
rit pat knowlechiþ pat yhū
crist hap come i fleysh: is of
god / t̃ ech spirit pat fordoiþ
yhū: is not of god / t̃ pis is
anticrist · of whom 3e herden
pat he comep / t̃ nizt now he
is in pe world / 3e litle sones bē
of god · t̃ 3e han ouercome hym /
for he pt is in 30u is more: þā
he pat is in pe world / þei ben
of pe world: perfor þei speke
of pe world · t̃ pe world heriþ
hē / we bē of god / he pat kno
wiþ god: heriþ us / he pat is
not of god: heriþ not us / in
pis ping: we knowen pe spir
it of treupe and pe spirit of
errour / Moost dere bripe
loue we to gidere: for chari
te is of god / t̃ ech pat loueþ
his bropir: is borī of god / t̃

knowiþ god / he pat loueþ not:
knowiþ not god · for god is
charite / in pis ping pe charite
of auenture in us · for god sente
his oon bigetī sone in to pe wor
ld: pat we lyue bi hī / in pis
ping is charite · not as we had
den loued god: but for he firste
louede us · t̃ sente his sone forg
euenesse for our synn̄s / 3e mo
oste dere bripen if god louede
us: we oweu to loue ech oper /
no mā say eni god / if we louen
to gidere: god dwelliþ in us · t̃
pe charite of hī is perfit in us /
in pis ping we knowē pat we
dwellen in hī t̃ he in us: for of
his spirit he 3af to us / t̃ we
sawen t̃ witnessen: pat pe fa
dir sente his sone sauyour of
pe world / who eni knowlechiþ
pt yhc is pe sone of god: god
dwelliþ in hī t̃ he in god / t̃ we
han knowē: t̃ bileuē to pe cha
rite pat god hap in us / god is
charite / t̃ he pat dwelliþ in
charite: dwelliþ in god t̃ god
in hī / in pis ping is pe perfit
charite of god wip us: pat
we haue trust in pe day of doom /
for as he is: also we bē in pis
world / drede is not in charite:
but parfit charite puttiþ out
drede / for drede hap peyne /
but he pat drediþ: is not per

fit ñ charite/ þ for loue we god:
for he louyde us bifore/ if ony
man seiþ þat þ loue god· & hatiþ
his broþ: he is aliere/ for he þat
louyþ not his broþ which he se
eþ: hou may he loue god whó
he seeþ not:/ & we haue þis comaũ
dement of god: þat he þ louey
god loue also his broþer
Ech man þat bileueþ
þat iesu is crist: is borñ
of god/ & ech man þat
loueþ hi þt gendride: loueþ hĩ
þat is borñ of hi/ in þis þing
we knowe· þat we loue þe chil
dren of god: whan we louen
god· & don his maũdementis/
for þis is þe charite of god: þt
we kepe his maũdementis/ &
his maũdementis be not heuy
for al þing þt is borñ of god:
ouercomeþ þe world/ & þis is þe
victorie þt ouercomeþ þe world:
oure feiþ/ & who is he þat ouer
comeþ þe world: but he þt bi
leueþ· þt iesu is þe sone of god/
þis is iesu crist þat cam bi wat
& blood/ not i wat oonly: but
i wat & blood/ & þe spirit is he
þat witnesseþ: þt crist is treu
þe/ for þre be þat ziue witnes
sing i heuene/ þe fadir þe so
ne & þe hooly goost: & þese þre
ben oon/ & þre be þat ziuen
witnessing i erþe/ þe spirit
wat & blood: and þese þre
ben oon/ if we resseyne þe wit
nessing of me: þe witnessing
of god is more/ for þis is þe
witnessing of god· þt is more:
for he witnesside of his sone/ he
þat bileueþ i þe sone of god: hap
þe witnessing of god in hi/ he
þat bileueþ not to þe sone: mak
eþ hi aliere/ for he bileueþ not
in þe witnessing· þat god wit
nesside of his sone/ & þis is þe
witnessing· for god zaf to zou
eiþlastinge liif· & þis liif is in
his sone/ he þat hap þe sone
of god: hap also liif/ he þat hap
not þe sone of god: hap not
liif/ I þ write to zou þese þin
gis: þat ze wite þat ze haue eiþ
lastinge liif· which bileuen
i þe name of godis sone/ and
þis is þe trist which we haue
to god· þat what eiþ þing we
aseen aftir his wille: he schal
here us/ & we witen þat he
heriþ us: what eiþ þing we
aseen/ we witen þat we haue
þe axyngis: which we aseen
of hi/ he þat woot þat his bro
þer synep· A synne not to deþ:
axe he & liif schal be zouñ to
hi· þt synep not to deeþ/ þis is
a synne to deþ: not for it þ seie
þat ony man þe/ eche wicked
nesse is synne: & þis is synne to deþ/

ıbe ıbritẽ pat ech man pat is
borñ of god: ſynep not/ but
pe generacion of god kepip hi:
& pe ıbicked touchip hi not. ıbe
ıbite pat ıbe be of god: And al
pe ıborld is ſet i puel/ & ıbe ıbi
ten p^t pe ſone of god cam i fle
ſſh· & zaf to us ıbit: pat ıbe
knoıbe vp god. & enlightyng
be i pe vevy ſone of hi/ pis
is vi god: & enlightynge lif/
ny litle ſones kepe ze zou
fro mannmetis. Here en
diip pe firſte piſtle of ioon:
& here bigynep pe ſecoñde
C·p· he eldere man· to pe
dioſiñ lady & to hir
children: ıbhichey
ſone in treupe/ & not y alo
ne: but alſo alle mẽ pat kno
ıben treupe/ for pe treupe
pat dıbellip i zou: & ıbt zou
ſchal be ıbip ontẽ ende/ gra
ce be ıbip zou mcy & pees of
god pe fadir· & of ihñ crift
pe ſone of pe fadir: i treu
pe & charite. I y ioyede ful
ny pche· for y foond of pi ſon
es goynge i treupe: as ıbe
reſſeyuedẽ maũdemeñt of
pe fadir/ & now y pis pee
lady· not as ıbritynge a ne
ıbe maũdemẽt to pee: but
pat p^t ıbe hadde fro pe big-
inyng pat ıbe lone ech oper/
and pis is charite: pat ıbe ıbalke
after his maũdemẽtis/ for pis
is pe comaũdement: pat as ze
herdẽ at pe bygynyng· ıbalke
ze i hym/ for many diſſeyuer
is ıbentẽ out i to pe ıborld:
ıbhiche knoulechẽ not p^t ihñ
crist hath come i fleſſh/ pis is
a diſſeyuere & anticrist/ ſe ze zou
ſilf: leſt ze leſen pe pingis
pat ze han ıbrouzt/ pat ze reſ
ceyue full mede/ ıbityngе p^t
eche man p^t goip bifore· And
dıbellip not i pe techyng of crist:
hap not god/ he pat dıbellip i
pe techyng: hap bope pe ſone
& pe fadir/ if ony man comep
to zou· & bryngip not pis te
chyng: nyle ze reſſeyue hi in
to hous· ne ſeie ze to hi heil/
for he pat ſeip to him heil:
comyneth ıbip hise yuel ıber
kis/ lo y bifore ſeyde to zou:
pat ze be not confoundid in
pe day of our lord ihñ crist/
y hane moo pingis to ıbrite
to zou· And y ıbolde not by
perchemyn And enke/ for
y hope pat y ſchal come to
zou· And ſpeke moup to mo
up: pat zoure ioye be ful/
pe ſones of pi choſiñ ſiſter
greten pee ıbel/ pe grace of
god be ıbip pee Amen. Here
bigynne pe pridde piſtle of ioon

The eldre man to gayus
moost dere vvoꝛ̄: vvhom
y loue i treuthe/ moost de
re vvoꝛ̄ of alle thingis y
make pꝛier· that thou entre
& fare vvelefulli: as thi ſou
le doith vvelefulli/ y ioyede
greetly· foꝛ bꝛethꝛen comen &
bereñ vvitneſſing to thi treu
the: as thou vvalkiſt i treuthe/
y haue not more grace of
theſe thingis: than that here that
my ſones vvalke i treuthe/ moost
dere vvoꝛ̄ thou doiſt feithfully:
vvhat euer thou vvoꝛchiſt i bꝛith
ren/ & that i to pilgrimys: vvhi
che zeldiden vvitneſſing to thi
charite in the ſiȝt of the chirche/
vvhiche thou leddiſt foꝛth· & do
iſt vvel vvoꝛthily to god/ foꝛ thei
vventen foꝛth foꝛ his name:
& token no thing of hethene in
hem/ that foꝛ we oȝen to reſſeyue
liche: that we be euene vvoꝛ
chiers of treuthe/ y hadde
vvrite perauenture to the chir
che: but dyotrepes that
louep to bere pꝛimacie in he·
reſſeyuep not vs/ foꝛ this thing
if y ſchal come: y ſchal mone
the hiſe werkis vvhiche he do
ith chidynge azens vs vvith
yuel vvoꝛdis/ & as if theſe thi
ngis ſuffiſen not to hym: ney-

he reſſeyuey bꝛethꝛen & faꝛthoꝛ
thren that reſſeyuen· & puttip
out of the chirche/ moost dere
vvoꝛ̄ uple thou ſue yuel thing:
but that that is good thing/ he that
doip vvel: is of god/ he that do
ip yuel: ſeep not god/ vvitne
ſſing is ȝoldē to demetrie
of alle mē: & of treuthe it ſelf/
but also we beren vvitneſſing/
& thou knowiſt that oure vvitn
eſſing is treuthe/ y hadde ma
ny thingis to vvrite to thee: but
y vvolde not vvrite to thee by
enke & pēne: for y hope ſoone
to ſe thee· & we ſchule ſpeke m
ony to mouth/ pees to thee/
frendis greeten ze thee vvel/
greete thou vvel frendis bi name

Here endip the pridde pis
tle of ioon/ & here bigynnep
the pistle of iudas:·

Iudas the ſeruaūt of ihū
crist· & brop of iames to the
ſe that ben i god the fadir·
and to hem that ben clepid
& kept of ihū crist: mercy & pees
& charite be fillid to ȝou/ mo
oſt dere bꝛethꝛen· y doynge al
biſyneſſe to vvrite to ȝou of
ȝoure comyn heelpe: hadde
nede to vvrite to ȝou· & pꝛye
to ſtryue ſtrongly foꝛ the feip
that is ones takē to ſeyntis/
foꝛ ſum men vnfeithful men thuely

entryden· pat ſuffyne where
vpon wryttē i to yē doom/ and
exhorte ye grace of oure god
i to letchery· & denyen yi pat
is onely lord· oure lord ihū
cſt/ but y wole moneste you
ouyd pat wytē alle pingis/ pt
ihc ſauyde yis puple fro ye
lond of egipt: & ye ſecōnde ty
me loſte hem pat bileuedeu
not/ & he reſeruyde vndir
derknesſe angelis pat keptē
not her ꝑſthod· but forſokē
her hous: i to ye doom of ye
grete god i to euerlastyngē bo
ndis/ as ſodom & gomarre and
ye ayē coostid citees pat i lyk
nāl dyden fornycacioū· & zeden
awey aft' oy flesh: & ben ma
d ensāple· ſuffryngē peyne of euerlastynge fier/ in lyk
nāl alſo yeſe pat defoulen
ye fleſhe· & diſpiſē lordſhip
& blaſfemē maieſte/ whan
mychel archangel· diſputyde
wip ye deuel & ſtroof of mo
ſes body: he wold not gyf
vp to dampnynge i doom of blaſ
femye/ but ſeide: ye lord co
mandide to yee/ but yeſe mē
blaſfemē: what eu pingis
yei knowē not/ for what eu
pingis yei knowen kyndely
as doūbe beeſtis: in yeſe
yei ben corrupt

Wo to hem pat wenten
ye were of cayn/ and
pat ben ſhed out bi
errour of balaam for mede/ &
periſſhiden i ye azenſeyynge
of chore/ yeſe ben i her metis
feeſtynge to gidere to filpe· wip
out drede feedyng hem ſilf/ yeſe
ben cloudis wipoute wat': pt ben
born̄ aboute of ye wyndis/ her
ueſt trees wipoute frupt: twyes
ded· drawn̄ up bi ye roote/
wawis of ye woode ſee foum
ynge out her confusiōnis/ erryngē
ſterris: to whiche ye tempeſt
of derknesſis is kept wipoute
ende/ but enoch ye ſeuenpe fro
adam prophicyede of yeſe: & ſeide/
lo ye lord comep wip hise hooly
pouſandis: to do doom azens
alle men/ & to repue alle vnge
ſtful men· of alle ye werkis
of ye wickidnesſe of hē: bi whi
che yei diden wickidli/ & of alle
ye harde wordis: pat wickid
men ſynneris han ſpoke azen
god/ yeſe ben gruccheris ful of
pleyntis wandrynge aft' her
deſiris: & ye moup of hē ſpek
ynge/ wondrynge persones bi
cauſe of wynnyng/ & ze mooſte de
re britren be myndeful of ye wor
dis whiche ben bifore ſeid of apoſt
lis of oure lord ihū cſt/ whiche
ſeiden to zou· pat i ye laſte ty

mes per shulen come galowis-
ynesdrige aft hyr owne desiris-
not i pitee/ pese ben wlyche depar-
ten hē silf: beestly mē not hauy
nge spirit/ but ze moste deve
bripen· Aboue bilde zou silf· on
zoure moost hooly feip· & pie ze
i pe hooly goost· & kepe zou silf
i pe loue of god· & abide ze pe
mercy of oure lord ihū crist in to
liif euerlastynge/ & repue ze pese
mē pt ben demed: but schue
ze hē· & take ze hē fro pe fier/
& doze mercy to opre mē i pe dre
de of god/ & hate ze also pilke
defoulid coote wlyche is flesch
ly/ but to hī pt is myzti· to
kepe zou wip out synne· And
to ordeyne bifore pe sizt of his
glorie zou vnwemmyd in ful out
hope· i pe comyng of oure lord
ihū crist· to god aloone our· sauy
our· ihū crist oure lord: be glorie
& magnestynge empire & power
bifore alle worldis and now &
in to alle worldis of worldis
Amen ¶ Here bigynep
a prologe on apocalipse:-

Alle men pat wollen· ly-
ue mekely i crist· as pe
Apostel seip: suffrē per
secucioū aft pt/ pou come pt nep
zest to pe temple of god: stond
pou i rigtwisnesse & i drede· &
make redy pi soule to tēptacioū

for temptacioū is amanym? lijf: on
e pe erpe/ but pt feipful mē fayle
not i hem: pe lord comforte hem &
confermep hem i pe feip ynge/ y am wip zou
vnto pe ende of pe world: & litil
flock· wyle ze drede/ pfor god pe fa
dir seyng pe tribulacioūs· wlyche
hooly chirche was to suffre: pt
was foūdid of pe apostlis on eft
pe rood/ dispolid wip pe lorde and
pe hooly goost to schewen hem·
pat me dredde hē pe lasse/ & al pe
feipful schewed et eft in his manhed:
& eft to soon bi an aungel· & soon
to holy chirche· of wlyche reuela
cioū soon made pis book/ wherfore
pis book is seyd apocalips: pat
is to seye reuelacioū/ for pere
it is cōteynyd pat god schewed
to soon: & soon to holy chirche/
pou grete pingis holy chirche
suffred in pe firste tyme: &
now suffrep & schal suffre in
pe laste tymes of anticrist/ wha
me tribulacioū schal be so greet:
pat zif it mowe be· per pt pey
chosīn· ben meued/ & wlyche me
dis schal receyue for pese
tribulacioūs· now & tyme to co
me: pat medis pt pey bihote·
make hem glad wlyche pe tribula
cioūs pt ben teld makep afer
pfor pis book among ope scrip
tures of pe newe testament:
is clepid bi pe name of pfecie

And it is more excellent pan profe
tie / for as pe newe testament is
warpier pan pe olde: & pe gospel
pan pe lawe / so pis profecie pat
sey pe profecies of pe olde testa
ment · for it shewep sca·annen
tis pat bey wolb apparty fulfil
lid of cst & of holy chirche / or
ellis for to op is oon man pro
fecie: but to pis is pre man
ypsecie zeue to gedir / pat is
of pat pt is passid: & of pat
pt is present · & of pat pat is to
come / & to conferme pe auc
toryte of it · p conney pe aucto
rite of hi pat sendip: & of hi
pat berep · & of hi pat recey
ney / he pat sendep is pe trute:
he pat berep is pe aungel · he
pt receyney oon / but wha
ne pese pingis be shewed to
oon i vlicion · & per be pre kyn
des of vlicions: it is to seen ·
vndur whiche kynde pis be
contempd / for sii vlicion is bo
dily: as whanne we seep cuy
ping wip bodily yzen / sii is
spiral or ymagynarie: as why
anne we seen slepinge or ellis
walkinge · we biholde pe yma
ges of pinges bi whiche sii
op ping is signefied / as har
ro slepinge liz eerid of corn:
& mopsis walkinge liz pe buy
sshj breue / an op vicion is of

vnderstondinge · as whanne pou
reuelacion of pe hooly goost:
pou vndurstondist of pouzt·
ipe conceptif pe treupe of myst
ies / as oon sayh po pingis pt
bey writen i pis book / for not
onely he sauz i spirit pe figures:
but also he vnderstode i pouzt·
pe pingis pat were signyfied
bi he / oon sauz & wroot in pe
yle of pathmos: whanne he
was exiled of domycian pe
mooste wicked prince / & ano
compellid hi to write / for whi
le he was holde in out lawe
rye of domycian i pe yle of pa
thmos: i pe chirches pat he
hadde gouned p were spronge
many vices & dyuise heresies /
for p were sum heretikes pe
pat seyde: pat crist was not
to fore marie / for as muche
as he was i tyme comyn of hire:
whiche heretikes oon in pe
bigynnyng of his gospel · vnder
nymey & seip / in pe bigynnyng
was pe lone: & in pis book why
anne he seip / y am alpha &
oo · pt is pe bigynnyng & pe ende /
sum also seide pat holy chir·
che shulde ende: to fore pe ende
of pe worlde · for charge of tri
lacions / & pt it shulde not vn
derfonge hir her trauayle:
eiilastinge meede / pfore oon

wilnyng to distruye ye errou
res of yese: whelbey yat ẽst
was bigynyng & ende wherfore
yhaye seip to me was no god
fourmed: & aft' me þ shal not
be/ & þt holy chirche pozny eyev
yse of tribulacions: shal not be
ended/ but shal profitẽ: & for
hẽ receyuẽ an enlastynge mee
de/ iohn writtey to ye seuene ch
irches of Alye: & to her seuene
bishopes of ye forseid pingis
enfourmyge & techinge bi he
al ye geñal holy chirche/ & so
ye mat' of iohn i pis werk is:
specialy of ye chirche of Alye· &
also of al holy chirche what
she shal suffre i pis þleint ty
me to come/ & his entent is to
stire to pacience· whiche is to
be kept/ for ye tribile is shozt:
& ye meede grete/ ye maner of
his techinge is sih such: firste
he sette biforе a prologe and a
salutacion/ wher he makiy ye
hereres benyngе· & taking
wel teute: & whanne he hap set
te it toforе· he comey to ye tell
yng/ but toforе his telling he
shewiy: pat ẽst is eñ wiyonte
bigynyng & wiy ontẽ ende/ ye
herynge hi pat spekiy: y am
alpha & oo· bigynyng & ende
afterward he comey to his telly
ng: & departiy it i to seuene
visions and whanne per ben end
ed: pis book is ended he settey to
foꝛe ye prologe and seip: ye Apo
calips of ihũ ẽst/ vnderstonde
pat pis is as it is ĩ oper: ye vi
sioñ of yhie· & also ye parables
of salamon. ¶ Here endiy ye
prologe on ye Apocalipse:
Here bigynney Apocalipse:

C· p·

pocalips of ihũ ẽst.
which· god zaf to hi
to make open to his
seruantis: whiche
pingis it bihouey to be maad
soone/ & he signyfiede sendinge
bi his aungel to his seruant ioon
which bar witnessyng to ye
word of god: & witnessing of
ihũ ẽst i pese pingis what eñ
pingis he say blessid is he pat
redip & he pat herip ye wordis
of pis profecie: & kepip po ping
pat ben writtẽ i it/ for ye tyme
is nyz/ ioon to seuene chirchis
pat ben i Alie: grace & pees to
zou· of hi pat is· & pat was·
& pt is to comynge/ & of ye seu
ene spiritis: pat ben i ye sizt
of his trone/ & of ihũ ẽst pat
is feipful witnesse: ye firste
bigetẽ of deed mẽ· & ꝑince of
kyngis of ye erpe/ which lo
ued us & waischide us fro
oure synn i his blood: & made
us a kyngdom & ꝓstis to god

And to his fadir / to hym be glorie
& empire: i to worldis of world
dis Amen ¶ lo he comeb with
cloudis · & eche ize shal se hi · And
pei pat prickiden him / & alle pe
kynredis of pe erpe: shulen
biweile hem silf on hi · zhe Amen
y am Alfa & oo · pe bigynnyng &
pe ende seip pe lord god: pat is
& pat was · And pat is to com
ynge Almyzty / ¶ y ioon zonne
broper & partener i tribulacion
& kyngdom & pacience i ihu
crist: was in an ile pat is clepid
pathmos · for pe word of god · &
for pe witnessing of ihu · y was
i spirit i pe lordis day / And y
herde bihynde me a greete vo
ice as of a trumpe seiynge to me /
write pou i a book pat ping
pat pou seest · & sende to pe se
uene chirchis pat ben i Asie ·
to efesin · to smyrnen · And to
pergamy · & to tiatiren & to sar
dis & to philadelfien · & to loadi
cen / & y turnede pat y shulde
se pe voice pat spak with me /
& y turnede & y say seuene ca
ndilstikis of gold · & in pe mydd
dil of pe seuene goldin candil
stikis: oon lijk to pe sone of
man clopid with a long gar
ment · & gird at pe tetis with
a goldin girdil / & pe heed of
hi & his heeris · weren white ·
as wolle: and as snow / &
pe izen of hi as flawme of fier:
& his feet lijk to latun as in a
brennynge chymeney / & pe voice
of hi: as pe voice of many wa
tris / & he hadde in his rizthond
seuene sterris: & a swerd sharp
ou ei3 side veinte out of his
mouy / & his face: as pe sunne
shynep i his vertu / & when y
hadde seyn hi: y felde doun at his
feet as ded / & he puttide his rizt
hond on me: & seide / nyle pou
drede / y am pe firste · & pe laste:
& y am alyue & y was ded / & lo
y am lyuynge i to worldis of
worldis / & y haue pe keyes of
deep & of helle / & write pou
whiche pingis pou hast seyn:
& whiche ben · & whiche it bihoo
uep to be don aft3 pese pingis /
pe sacrament of pe seuene ster
ris · which pou sezest in my rizt
hond: & pe seuene goldin candil
stikis / pe seuene sterris: pe
aungels of seuene chirchis / &
pe seuene candilstikis: ben
seuen chirchis

And to pe aungel of pe
chirche of efesin: write
pou pese pingis seip
he pat holdip pe seuene ster
ris i his rizthond: which walk
ip i pe mydil of pe seuene
goldin candilstikis; y woot

pi werkis and trauel· and pi
pacience: & pat pou maist not
suffre yuel me/ and pou hast a
sayed hem pat seien pt pei ben
apostlis & ben not: & pou hast
foundn hem lieris/ & pou hast
pacience: & p hast suffrid for
my name· & failidist not/ but
y haue azenȝ pee a felwe pin
gis: pat pou hast left pi firste
charite/ pfor be pou mydefil·
fro wher̃enȝ p hast falle: & do
penaunce· & do pe firste werk
is/ ellis: y come soone to
pee· & y schal meue pi candil
stike fro his place: but pou do
penaunce/ but pou hast pis go
od ping· pat pou hatidist pe
dedis of nycholaitis pe wich
che also y hate/ he pt hab eer
is here he· what pe spirit se
ip to pe chirchis/ to hi pt ouer
mey y schal ȝiue to ete of pe
tre of lijf: pat is in pe para
dijs of my god ¶ and to pe
angel of pe chirche of smyr
na write p/ pese pingis seip
pe firste & pe laste: pt was de
ed & lyuey/ y woot pi tribula
cioun· & pi pouert: but pou art ri
che/ & p blasfemyd of hem
pat seien· pat pei ben iewis &
ben not: but ben pe synagoge
of sathanas/ drede pou no
ping of pese pingis which p

schalt suffre/ lo pe deuel schal
sende sum of ȝou i to prisoun: pt
ȝe be tempt/ & ȝe schulen haue
tribulacioun: ten dayes/ be pou
feipful to pe deep· & y schal ȝiue
to pee a coroun of lijf/ he pat
hab eris here he: what pe spi
rit seip to pe chirchis/ he pat
ouercomey: schal not be hirt
of pe secounde dey/ & to pe an
gel of pe chirche of pergamy:
write pou/ pese pingis seip he:
pat hab pe swerd sharp on
ech syde/ y woot where pou
dwellist: where pe seete of
sathanas is/ & pou holdist my
name & denyedist not my feip/
& i po dayes was antipas my
feipful wytnesse pat was sla
yn at ȝou: where sathanas
dwellip/ but y haue azens pee
a felwe pingis: for pou hast pe
men holdinge pe teching of ba
laam/ which taujte balaac:
forto sende skaundre bifor pe
sonys of israel/ to ete of sacrifices
of idols· & to do fornicacioun/ so
also pou hast men holdinge pe te
ching of nycholaytis/ also pou
penaunce/ if ouy ping lesse y
schal come soone to pee/ & y schal
fyȝte wip hem: wt pe swerd of
my mouy/ he pat hab eris here
he: what pe spirit seip to pe
chirchis/ to hi pat ouercomey: y

do

shal zme aungel mete hid / And
y shal zine to hi Albiist stoon:
& in pe stoon anelde name
writtn / which no ma knowip:
but he pt takip And to pe
aungel of pe chirche of tyatira:
write pou / pese pingis seip pe
sone of god · pat hap izen As
flawme of fier · & his feet
lijk latoun / y knowe pi werk
is & feip & charite · & pi sepuyce
& pi pacience: & pi laste werk
is mo pan pe forme / but y
hane azens pee a felwe pingis /
for pou suffrist pe womman
iesebel which seip pt she is a
prophetesse: to teche & disseyue my
sepuauntis / to do letcherie: &
to ete of pingis offrid to ydols /
& y zaf to hir tyme · pt she
shulde do penaunce: And she
wolde not do penaunce of her
fornycacoun / & lo y sende hir
i to bed / & pei pat doun letche
rie with hir · shulen be in mooste
tribulacoun: but pei doon pen
aunce of her werkis / And y
shal sle her sonys in to dep /
& alle chirchis shulen wite:
pat y am serchynge reynes
& hertis / & y shal zine to ech
una of zou aft his werkis /
& y seie to zou & to ope pt be
at tiatire · who eu han not
pis teching · & pat knowen
not pe hizuesse of sathanas ·
hou pei seien y shal not sende
ou zou anoy charge / nepeles
holde ze pt pat ze han: til y co
me / & to hi pat shal ouercome ·
& pat shal kepe til in to pe ende
my werkis: y shal zyue power
on folkis · & he shal gouerne hem
in an yrn zerde / & pei shulen
be brokn to gidere: As a vessel
of a potter / as also y resseyuede
of my fadir / & y shal zine to
hi A morgenstar / he pat
hap eris here he: what pe
spirit seip to pe chirchis

And to pe aungel of pe
chirche of sardis:
write pou / pese pin
gis seip he pt hap pe seuene
spiritis of god: & pe seuene
spiritis steruis / y woot pi
werkis · for pou hast a name
pt pou lyuest: & pu art
deed / be pou waky nge: And
conferme pon ope pingis
pat weren to dyynge / for y
fynde not pi werkis fulle
bifor my god / pfor hane pu
in mynde hou pu resseyuedist
& herdist: & kepe & do pen
aunce / pfore if pou wake not:
y shal come As a pyzt pef
to pee / & pou shalt not wi
te in what our y shal come
to pee / but pou hast a felwe

names in sardis: which
haue not defoulid her clopis/
& þei schulē walke with me ī
white clopis: for þei ben
worþi/ he þat ouercomeþ: schal
be clopid þus with white clo
þis/ & y schal not do awey
his name fro þe book of li
fe: & y schal knowleche his
name bifor my fadir· and
bifor his aungelis ¶ he þt
hap eris here he: what þe
spirit seiþ to þe chirchis //
¶ & to þe aungel of þe chirche
of filadelfie: write þou/ þe
se þingis seiþ þe hooly and
treuþe· þat hap þe keie of
dauid/ which openeþ: & no
man closiþ/ he closiþ: & no man
openiþ/ y woot þi werkis/
& lo y haue yifun bifor þee a dore ope
nyd: which no man may clo
se/ for þu hast a litil vertu: and
hast kept my word· & denyed
est not my name/ lo y schal
yiue to þee of þe synagoge
of sathanas: which seien
þat þei ben iewis & ben not:
but lien/ lo y schal make hem:
þat þei come & worschipe bi
for þi feet/ & þei schulen wite·
þat y louyde þee· for þu kept
ist þe word of my pacience/
& y schal kepe þee fro þe our
of temptacioun· þt is to comyng

ge in to al þe world to tempte
men þt dwellen in erþe/ lo y
come soone/ holde þat þat þou
hast: þat no man take þi corouñ/
& he þat schal ouercome: y
schal make a pilere in þe temple
of my god· & he schal no mo
re go out/ & y schal write
on him þe name of my god·
& þe name of þe citee of my
god/ of þe newe ierusalem þat
comeþ doun fro heuene of
my god· & my newe name/
he þat hap eris here he· wh
at þe spirit seiþ to þe chir
chis ¶ and to þe aungel of
þe chirche of laodice: write
þou/ þese þingis seiþ amen/
þe feiþful witnesse & treuþe:
which is biginnyng of god
dis creature/ y woot þi wer
kis· for neiþer þou art cold neiþer
þou art hoot/ y wolde þat
þu were cold eiþer hoot/ but for
þou art leuk· & neiþer cold neiþer
hoot: y schal biginne to caste
þee out of my mouþ/ for þu
seist þt y am riche & ful of go
odis: & y haue nede of no
þing/ & þou woost not þat þu
art a wrecche· & wrecchefful
& poore & blynde & naked/ y cou
sele þee to bie of me breut
gold & fyred: þt þou be ma
d riche/ & be clopid with

clopis: pat pe confessiõ of pi
naknesse be not seene/ And
anoynte pin izen with Acolleyre:
pat pou se/ p. y repente & chas
tise: whom y loue/ Be fore hie p'
goode mē: & do penaūce/ lo y stō
de at pe dore: & knocke/ if ony
mā here my voys: & openeth
pe zate to me· y shal entre to
hī· & soupe with hī· & he with
me/ y shal zeue to hī pat shal
ouercome: to sitte with me in my
trone/ as also y ouercam: & sat
with my fadir in his trone/ he
pat hap eris here he: what
pe spirit seip to pe chirchis

Ftir pese pingis y say:
& lo a dore was openyd
in heuē/ & pe firste vo
is pat y herde: was as of a
trūpe spekinge with me· & sei
de/ stie p'vp· hidir: & y shal
shewe to pee· whidre pingis
it bihoueth to be don soone af
ter pese pingis/ anoon y was in
spirit/ & lo a seete was sett in
heuene: & vpon pe seete oon
sittyng/ & he pat satt· was
like pe sizt of a stoon iaspis &
to sardyn/ & arcyuboue was
in cūpas of pe seete: like pe sizt
of smaragdyn/ & in pe cūpas
of pe seete: were foure and
twenti smale seetis/ & aboue
pe trones foure & twenti el
dere men sittyng clopid about
with white clopis: & in pe heedis
of hē goldin coroūs/ & leitis &
voices & pūdryngis came out
of pe trone/ & seuene lanpis
brēnyng bifore pe trone: whi
che ben pe seuene spiritis of
god/ & bifor pe seete as a see
of glas like a cristal And in
pe myddil of pe seete & in pe cūp
as of pe seete: foure beestis ful
of izen bifore & bihynde/ & pe
firste beeste like a lioū/ & pe sec
ūde beeste: like a calf/ & pe prid
de beeste: hauynge a face as of
a mā/ & pe fourpe beeste: like
an egle/ & pe foure beestis had
dē· eiy of hē like wyngis/ &
alaboute & with yne pei were
ful of izen/ & pei haddē not reste·
day & nyzt seiynge· hooly hooly
hooly· pe lord god almyzti/ pt
was & pt is: & pt is to comynge
& whanne pe foure beestis zaue
glorie & onour & blessyng to
hī pat sat on pe trone· pat ly
uep in to worldis of worldis:
pe foure & twenty eldre men
felden doū bifor hī pat sat in
pe trone· & worshipiden hī
pt lyuep in to worldis of worldis
& pei casten her coroūs bifor pe
trone: & seidē/ pou lord oure
god art worpi to take glorie
& onour & vertu: for pou ma

oiſt of nouȝt alle þingis / & for
þi wille þo were þei: and ben
maad of nouȝt
And I say þe riȝthond
of þe sitte on þe trone: a book writtin wiþ
inne & wiþ out · & seeled wiþ
seuene seelis / & I say a strong
aungel: þcrienge wiþ a greet
voiz / who is worþi to opene
þe book: & to vndon þe seelis
of it / & noon in heuene · neiþer
erþe · neiþer vndir erþe myȝte
opene þe book: neiþer biholde it
& I wepte myche: for noon
was foundun worþi to opene
þe book neiþer to se it / & oon of
þe eldre men seide to me / wepe
þou not / lo aliown of þe lynage of iuda · þe roote of dauid:
hap ouercomun to opene þe bo
ok / & to vndon þe seuene seelis
of it / & I say & lo in þe myddil
of þe trone · & of þe foure be
stis · & in þe myddil of þe el
dre men a lomb stondynge as
slayn · þat hadde seuene hor
nes & seuen izen: whiche ben
seuene spiritis of god · sent
in to al þe erþe / & he cam and
took of þe riȝthond of þe sit
tere in þe trone: þe book / &
whanne he hadde openyd þe
book: þe foure beestis · & þe
foure & twenti eldere men
felden doun biforn þe lomb / &
hadden eche of hem harpis · &
goldun violis · ful of odours:
which ben þe þieris of seyn
tis / & þei singen a newe song.
& seiden / lord oure god þou
art worþi to take þe book:
& to opene þe seelis of it / for
þou were slayn · & ayenbouȝt
us to god in þi blood: of
eche lynage & tunge & puple &
nacioun: & madist us a kyng
dom & prestis to oure god · and
we schulen regne on erþe / &
I say & herde þe voiz of many
aungels al aboute þe trone:
& of þe beestis & of þe eldre
men / & þe noumbre of hem was
was þousyndis of þousyndis:
seiynge wiþ a greete voiz /
þe lomb þat was slayn is
worþi to take vertu & godhed
& wisdom & strengþe & onour
& glorie & blessing: & eche cre
ature þat is in heuene · & þat is
on erþe & vndir erþe / & þe
see: & whiche þingis ben in it /
I herde alle seiynge to hym þt
sitt in þe trone: & to þe lomb
blessyng & onour & glorie &
power in to worldis of worldis /
& þe foure beestis seide amen /
& þe foure & twenti eldre men
felden doun on hir faces: and
worschipide hym þat lyueþ in

to ꝟ worldis of worldis
And y sai þat þe lorde
hadde opened oon of
þe seuene seelis: & y her
de oon of þe foure beestis seyn
ge as a voys of þunder/ comm
& se/ & y sey/ & lo a white hors:
& he þat sat on hi hadde arc
us/ & a corouñ was ȝouñ to
to hi/ & he went out ouercom
ynge þat he schulde ouercome/
& whanne he hadde opened
þe secounde seel: y herde þe
secounde beeste seyinge/ com
e þou & se/ And anoþer reed
hors went out/ & it was
ȝouñ to hi þat sat on hym:
þat he schulde take pees
fro þe erþe· & þt þei sle to
gidere he silf/ & a greet sw
erd was ȝouñ to hi/ And
whanne he hadde opened
þe þridde seel: y herde þe
þridde beeste seyinge/ come
pou & se/ And lo a blak hors:
& he þt sat on hi hadde aba
launce in his hond/ & y herde
as a voys i þe myddil of þe
foure beestis: seyinge/ A
bilibre of whete· for a peny:
& þre bilibris of barly for
a peny/ And hirte þ̄ not
wiþ ne oyle/ And whanne
he hadde opened þe
fourþe seel: y herde a voys
of þe foure beestis· seyinge/
come þ̄ & se/ & lo a pale hors:
& þe name was deeþ to hi
þat sat on hi· & helle suede
hi/ & power was ȝouñ to
hi on ou foure partis of
þe erþe: for to sle wiþ swerd
& wiþ hungur & wiþ deeþ & wt
beestis of þe erþe/ And whan
ne he hadde opened þe fyuepe
seel: y sai vndur þe autev þe
soulis of men slayn for þe wo
rd of god & for þe witnessyn
g þat þei hadde/ & þei crie
den wiþ a greet voys: And
seide/ hou long þ̄ lord þat
art hooly & treuþe demeste
not: & veniest not oure blo
od of þt dwellen i þe erþe:/ &
white stoolis for ech soule a
stoole were ȝouñ to hem/ & it
was seid to hem þt þei schulde
reste· ȝit a litil tyme: til þe
noumbre of her felowis and
of her britheren ben fulfillid/
þat ben to be slayn· as also
þei/ & y sai whanne he hadde
opened þe sixte seel: & lo a
greet erþe mouyng was
maad/ & þe sunne was maad
blak as a sak of heyre· & al
þe moone was maad as
blood/ & þe sterris of heue
ne felden doun on þe erþe: as
a fige tre sendiþ his vnripe

figus: wh ſaue it is mouyd
of a greet wynd/ & heuene
wente awey as a book wlap
pid in: & alle mũteyns & ilis
were mouyd fro her placis/
& kyngis of pe erpe & pũcis &
ſchiues & riche & ſtrouge· and
ech hoond mã & fre mã· hid
deu hem i dẽuys & ſtoonys
of hillis: & pei ſeiden to hillis
& to ſtooups/ falle ze ou vs &
hide ze us fro pe face of hi
ſittip on pe troue: & fro pe
wrappe of pe lomb· for pe
greet day of her wrappe cõ
mep: & who ſchal mowe ſtõde/

Aftir peſe pingis y
ſay foure aũgels ſto
ndyuge on pe foure
corneris of pe erpe· holdyuge
foure wyndis of pe erpe: pt
pei bleiden not on ony tre/
& y ſay anopir aũgel ſtiyuge
fro pe riſyuge of pe ſũne:
pat hadde aſigne of pe lyuy
uge god/ & he criede wip a gre
et voys to pe foure aũgels·
to whiche it was 3omẽ· to
noye pe erpe & pe ſee· & ſeide/
ny̆le ze noye pe erpe· & ſee
ne3 treeȝ: til we marken
pe ſeruaũtis of oure god i
pe forẽhedis of hẽ/ ¶ And y
herde pe noũbre of mẽ pt
were marki· An hũdrid
poulynde and foure & fourty
poulynde marki: of eiy
lynage of pe ſones of iſrael/
of pe lynage of ũda: twelue
poulynde marki/ of pe lyna
ge of ruben: twelue poulynde
marki/ of pe lynage of gad:
twelue poulynde marki/ of
pe lynage of aſer: twelue
poulynd marki/ of pe lyna
ge of neptalỹ: twelue pou
lynd marki/ of pe lynage
of manaſſe: twelue poulynde
marki/ of pe lynage of ſy
meon: twelue poulynd mar
ki/ of pe lynage of leuy:
twelue poulynd marki/ of
pe lynage of yſachar: twel
ue poulynde marki/ of pe
lynage of zabulon: twelue
poulynde marki/ of pe lynage
of ioſeph: twelue poulynde
marki/ of pe lynage of
beniamyn: twelue poulynde
marki/ ¶ Aftir peſe pingis
y ſay a greet puple: whom
no mã myzte noũbre· of
alle folkis & lynagis & pu
plis & langagis ſtondinge
bifor pe troue· i pe ſizt of pe
lomb/ & pei were clopid wt
white ſtoolis: & palmes we
rẽ in pe houdis of hẽ/ And
pei crieden wip greet voys:
& ſeiden/ heelpe to oure god

pat sittip on pe trone: & to pe lomb & alle angels stode abowte pe trone & pe eldre men & pe foure beestis & pei felden doñ on pe sizt of pe tone on her faces: & worshipid de god & seide amẽ blessing & clerenesse & wisdom and doing of pankyngis & honour & vtu & strengpe to oure god i to worldis of worldis amẽ/ And oon of pe senyoris answeride: & seide to me who ben pese pat bẽ clopid wip white stoolis: & fro whens camen pei; & y seide to hi my lord pu woost & he seide to me/ pese ben pei· pat camẽ fro greet tribulacioñ: & waschi den her stoolis & maden hẽ white i pe blood of pe lomb/ pfor pei ben bifor pe trone of god: & seruen to hi dai & nizt i his tẽple & he pt sittip i pe trone: dwellip on hem/ pei schulẽ no more hungur ne per pirste: ney sunne schal falle ou hẽ· ne ony heete/ for pe lomb pat is in pe myddil of pe trone: schal gouerne hẽ· and schal lede forp hem to pe welles of watris of lif/ and god schal wipe awey ech teer: fro pe izen of hẽ

And whanne he hadde openyd pe seuenpe seel· silence was maad in heuene as half an hour· & y sai seuene angels stondyng i pe sizt of god: & seuen trũpis weren ziuen to hẽ/ And an oper angel cam & stood bifor pe auter: & hadde a gold̃n cẽser & many encensis weren ziuen to hi: pt he schulde ziue of pe preyris of alle seyntis on pe gold̃n auter· pt is bifor pe trone of god/ & pe smoke of encensis of pe preyris of pe hooly men stiede up: fro pe angels hond bifor god/ & pe angel took pe censer: & fillide it of pe fier of pe auter· & caste i to pe erpe/ & pũdris & voicis & leitpngis weren maad: & a greet erpe mouyng/ & pe seuẽ angels pt hadden seuene trũpis: made hem redy pt pei schulden trũpe/ & pe firste angel trũpide: & hail was maad/ & fier meynd to gidere i blood: & it was sent i to pe erpe/ & pe pridde part of pe erp was brent: & pe pridde part of trees was brent· & al pe green gras was brent/ & pe secoñde angel trũpide: & as a greet hil brennynge wip fier· was cast i to pe see/ &

pe pridde part of pe see was
made blood: & pe pridde part
of creature was deed pt had
den lyues in pe see & pe pridde
part of shippis perisshide //
And pe pridde aungel trupp
ide: & a greet sterre brennynge
as a litil brond felde fro hyen
ene & it felde into pe pridde
part of floodis: & into pe wel
lis of watris & pe name of
pe sterre is seid wormod & pe
pridde part of watris was
maad into wermod: & many
men weren deed of pe watris
for po were made bittir &
pe fourpe aungel trupide: &
pe pridde part of pe sunne
was smyten & pe pridde part
of pe moone: & pe pridde pa
rt of sterris so pat pe pridde
part of hem was derkid: & pe
pridde part of pe day shynu
ede not & also of pe nyzt &
y say & herde pe voys of an
egle flyyng bi pe myddil of
heuene· & seiynge with a gre
et voys wo· wo· wo· to men
pat dwellen in erpe of pe opir
voices of pre aungels: pat
shulen trumpe after
And pe fyuepe aungel
trumpide & y say pat
a sterre hadde falle doun
fro heuene into erpe: & pe kei

of pe pit of depnesse was
zouen to it & it openyde pe pit
of depnesse: & a smoke of pe
pit stiede up· as pe smoke of
a greet furneis & pe sunne
was derkid & pe eir· of pe smo
ke of pe pit & locustis weren
out of pe smoke of pe pit into
erpe: & power was zouen to
hem· as scorpiouns of pe erpe han
power & it was comaundid
to hem: pt pei shulden not hirte
pe gras of erpe· neper ony
grene pyng· neper ony tre but
onely men: pt han not pe signe
of god in her forheedis & it was
zouen to hem· pt pei shulden not
sle hem: but pt pei shulden be
turmentid fyue monepis & pe
turmenting of a scorpioun·
whanne he smyteth a man & in
po dayes men shulen seke dep:
& pei shulen not fynde it & pei
shulen desire to dye: & dep shal
fle fro hem & pe likenesse of
locustis: be like horsis maad
redy into batel & on pe heedis
of hem as coroun like gold: & pe
faces of hem as pe faces of men
& pei hadden heeris as heeris
of wymmen: & pe teep of hem
weren as teep of lioun & pei
hadden haburiouns: as yrn ha
buriouns & pe voys of her
wengis as pe voys of charis

of many hoꝛſis vēnynge i to
batel / & pei hadde tailis lik
ſcoꝛpiouſ: & prickis weren
i pe tailis of hē / & pe myzt of
hē was to noye mē fyue mo
neþis / & pei hadde on hem
ſkyng pe aūgel of depneſſe.
to whō pe name bi ebreiſ.
is Abbadon / but bi greek
Apollion · & bi latyn he hab
name exterminans / bi is ad
ſtreine / o wo is pat: & lo
zit comē tweyn woos / aft
peſe pingis also pe ſixte aūg
el trūpide / & y herde a voic
fro foure cornerис of pe gol
dē aut pt is bifoꝛe pe izē of
god · & ſeide to pe ſixte aūgel
pt hadde atrūpe / vnbynde
pi foure aūgels · pt bē bounden
i pe greet flood eufrates / &
pe foure aūgels were vnbo
den: whiche were redi to
our & day & monepe & zeer
to sle pe pridde part of mē
& pe noūbre of pe oost of ho
rſe mē was tweuti pouſynd
de ſipis tou pouſynde / y her
de pe noūbre of hē / & so y
ſay hoꝛſis i viſioū / & pei pt
ſaten on hē: hadde firy hab
uriouſ & of iacynct · And of
brymſtoon / & pe heedis of
pe hoꝛſis were as heedis
of liouſ: & fier & ſmoke and
brymſtoon comep̄ forp of pem
oup of hē / of pese pre plagis:
pe pridde part of mē was sla
yn · of pe fier & of pe ſmoke
& of pe brymſtoon pat camē
out of pe mouþ of hē / for pe
power of pe hoꝛſis is i pe mu
ouþ of hē: & in pe tailis of hē /
for pe tailis of hē ben lijk to
ſerpentis · hauynge heedis:
& in hē pei noyen / & pe toþe
mē pt were not slayn i pese
plages · neþ̄ diden penaūce
of pe werkis of her hondis:
pt pei worſchipiden not deuelis
& symylacris of gold & of
ſilu & of bras · & of ſtoon and
of tre / whiche neþ̄ moun se:
neþ̄ here · neþ̄ wandre / and
diden not penaūce of her mu
rtheris: neþ̄ of her witche
craftis neþ̄ of her fornycacioū ·
neþ̄ of her peftis: weyē ſlayn:

And y ſay anoþ̄ strouge
aūgel comynge doun
fro heuene clopid with
a clowde: & pe reyn bowe on his
heed / & pe face of hī was as
pe ſunne: & pe feet of hī as a
piler of fier / & he hadde in his
hond a litil book opened / & he
ſette his rizt foot on pe ſee:
& pe left foot on pe erpe / & he
criede with a greet voys: as
a lioū whanne he roꝛip / and

whanne he hadde cried· ye seuene
eue pũdris spaken her voicis
& whanne ye seuen pũdris had
den spoke her voicis· y was
to writynge/ & y herde a vo
ice fro heuene· seiynge/ mark
ke pou what pingis ye seuẽ
pũdris spaken· & uple pou
wrote hẽ/ & pe aũgel whom y
say stondynge abone pe see·
& abone pe erpe· lift up his
hond to heuẽ/ & swoor bi hym
pat liuey i to worldis of wor
ldis· pat made of nouzt heu
ene & po pingis whiche ben
ĩ it/ & pe erpe· & po pingis
pt bẽ in it/ & pe see· & po ping
is pat bẽ in it/ pat tyme sch
al no more be/ but i pe dayes
of pe voys of pe seuẽpe aũg
el whanne he schal bigynne to
trũpe· pe mystrie of god schal
be eudid· as he ꝑchid bi his
seruaũtis prophetis/ & y her
de a vois fro heuẽ· eftsoone
spekynge wip me & seiynge/
go pou & take pe book pat is
openyd fro pe hond of pe
aũgel pat stondip abone pe
see· & ou pe lond/ & y wente
to pe aũgel & seide to hĩ· pat
he schulde zyue me pe book/
& he seide to me/ take pe bo
ok & deuoure it· & it schal ma
ke pi wombe to be bittir·
but in pi mouy it schal be swe
te as hony/ & y took pe book of
pe aũgels hond & deuouride it·
& it was in my mouy as swete
hony/ & whanne y hadde deuo
uride it· my wombe was bit
tir/ & he seide to me/ it bihoueþ
pee eftsoone to profecie to heþe
ne mẽ· & to puplis & langagis
& to many kyngis
And a reed lijk a zerde
was ziuẽ to me· & it
was seid to me/ rise
pou & mete pe temple of god
& pe aut· & mẽ pat worshipẽ
in it/ but caste pou out pe ou
zerd pat is wip out pe tẽple/
& mete not it· for it is ziuẽ
to heþene mẽ/ & þei schulen
defoule pe hooly citee· bi fou
rty monepis & twey ue/ & y schal
zyue to my twey wytnessis·
& þei schulẽ profecie a pousid
dayes two hũdrid & sixty· &
schulẽ be clopid wip sackis/ pese
ben twey ue olyues· & twey
candilstickis/ & þei stondẽ in
pe sizt of pe lord of pe erpe/
& if ony mã vole anoye hẽ·
fier schal go out of pe mouy
of hẽ & schal deuoure her enu
myes/ & if ony wole hurte hẽ·
ping it bihoueþ hi to be slayn/
pese han power to close heue
ne· pt it reyne not i pe dayes

of hev prophesie and yei han
power on watris to turne hē
i to blood & to smyte ye erye
wip eury plage: & as ofte as
yei wolē & wyllāne yei schulē
ende hev witnessing: ye beeste
pat stiep up fro depnesse schal
make batel azeyn hem & schal
ouercome hē: & schal sle hē & ye
bodies of hē schulē ligge in ye
stretis of ye greete citee pat
is clepid goostly sodom and
egipt: where ye lord of hem
was crucified & sinne of hym
kyngis & of puplis & of langa
gis & of hepene mē: schulen
se ye bodies of hē bi yre da
ies & an half & yei schulē not
suffre ye bodies of hē: to be
put i biriels & mē enjoyinge
nge ye erye schulē haue ioye
on hē & yei schulē make myr
ie: & schulē sende ziftis to gi
dere: for pese tuei profetis
tormentiden hem pat dwell
en on ye erye & aftir pre da
es & an half: ye spirit of lif
of god entride i to hem & yei
stoden on her feet: & greet dr
eed felde on hē pat sawen hem
& yei herden a greet voys fro
heuē: seiynge to hē come up
hidur & yei stieden i to heuē
i a cloude: & ye enemyes of
hē sawen hem & ni pat our a
greete erye moonyng was ma
ad: & ye tenpe part of ye citee
felde doun & ye names of men
seuene pousynde weren slayn
i ye erye moonyng: & ye toper
weren sent i drede & zauen glorie
to god of heuene ye secounde
wo is gon: & lo ye pridde wo
schal come soone & ye seuenpe
angel trumpide: & greete voicis
weren maad i heuene & seiden
ye reelme of pis world is ma
ad oure lordis & of crist his sone
& he schal regne i to worldis of
worldis amē & ye foure and
twenty eldre mē pat saten in
her seetis i ye sizt of ye lord:
felden on her faces & worschipi
den god & seiden we don panck
yngis to pee lord god almyzti
which art & which were and
which art to comynge: which
hast taken pi greete vertu & hast
regned & folkis ben wrooy
& pi wrappe cam & tyme of
dede mē to be demyd & to zelde
mede to pi seruauntis & profe
tis & halewis & dredyuge pi
name to smale & to gweete & to
distrie hē pt corrūpiden ye erpe
And ye temple of god
i heuene was openyd:
& ye arke of his testa
ment was seyn i his temple
& leytyngis weren maad: and

voices & þundris and erþe moving & grete hail & agrete ligne aperide i heuē & a wōman clop id wiþ þe sunne & þe moone vnd ur her feet & in þe heed of hir a coroun of twelue sterris/ and she hadde i þe wombe & she criep travailyinge of child & is turmentid þt she bere child & anoþ dragoun was seyn i heue ne & lo agrete reed dragoun þt hadde seuene heedis & ten hor nes & in þe heedis of his seue ne diademes & þe tail of his drouh þe þridde part of sterr is of heuē & sente hē in to þe erþe & þe dragoun stood bifor þe wōman þat was to bery uge child þat whanne she had de born child he schulde deuo ure hir sone & she bare a knu ane child þat was to reuly uge alle folkis i a yrun zerde & his sone was vanyschid to god & to his troue & þe wōman fley i to wildirnesse where she hap a place maad redy of god þat he fede hir þere a þousynde daies two hundrid & sixty & agrete batel was ma ad i heuene michel & his aungels fouzte wiþ þe dragoun & þe dragoun fauzt & his aug elis & þei hadē not myzt nei þe place of hē was foundoun more in heuene & þilke dra goun was cast doun þe grete elde serpent þat is clepid þe deuel & sathanas þt disseyuiþ al þe world he was cast doun i to þe erþe & his aungels weren sent wiþ hi & þ herde agrete voys i heuene seiynge now is ma d helpe & vertu & kyngdom of oure god & þe power of his crist for þe accuser of oure britheren is cast doun which accusid hem bifor þe sizt of oure god day & nyzt & þei ouercam hi for þe blo od of þe lomb & for þe word of his witnessyng & þei louyden not her lyues til to dey þ for ze heuenes be ze glad & ze þat dwellen in hē wo to þe erþe & to þe see for þe feend is comen doun to zou & hap greet wraþþe wityinge þat he hap litil tyme & aft þe dragoun say þat he was cast doun to þe erþe he pursuede þe wōman þat bare þe knaue child & tweyn wengis of a greet egle weren zouun to þe wōman þt she schulde fle in to desert i to his place where she is fed bi tyme & tymes & half a tyme fro þe face of þe serpent & þe serpent sente out of his mouþ aft þe wōman watir as a flood þat she schulde make hir to be drawn of þe

flood/ And ye erpe holpide ye
wõmañ/ & ye erpe openyde his
mouþ: & swolwe· ye flood þat
ye dragoñ sente of his mouþ/
& ye dragoñ was wroþ azens
ye wõmañ: & he wente
to make batel wiþ oþer of hir
seed/ þat kepen ye maũdemẽ
entis of god· & han ye wit
nessing of ihñ crist· And he sto
od on ye grauel of ye see
And y say aweste stry
nge up of ye see: hab
uyng seuene heedis·
& ten hornes/ & on his hornes
ten diademys: & on hise he
edis ye names of blasfemye
& ye beeste whiche y say: was
lijk a pard/ & hise feet as ye
feet of abere: & his mouþ·
as ye mouþ of alioñ/ & ye
dragoñ 3af his vtm & greet
power to hĩ/ & y say oon of
hise heedis: as slayn i to dey
& ye wouñde of his dey was
cured: & al erpe wõdride af
& ye beeste/ & yei worschipi
den ye dragoñ: þat 3af powe
er to ye beeste/ & yei worschi
pidẽ ye beeste: & seidẽ/ Who
is lijk ye beeste: & who schal
mowe fizte wiþ it/ & a mouþ
spekynge gretc þingis And
blasfemyes was 3ouñ to it/
& power was 3ouñ to it: to
do two And fourty moneþis/
& it openyde his mouþ in to
blasfemyes to god: to blaspe
me his name· & his taberna
cle· & hem þat dwellen i heue
ne/ & it was 3ouñ to hĩ to ma
ke batel wiþ seyntis· & to ouer
me hẽ/ & power was 3ouñ to
hĩ: i to ech lynage & puple &
langage & flo; folk/ & alle mẽ
worschipiden it· þat dwellen
i erpe: whos names ben not
writtñ in ye book of lijf of ye
lomb· þat was slayn fro ye
biginnyng of ye world/ if ony
man hab eris: here he/ he þat
lediþ i to caitifte: schal go i to
caitifte/ he þat sleeþ wiþ swe
rd: it bihoueþ hĩ to be slayn
wiþ swerd/ þis is ye pacience
& ye feiþ of seyntis/ & y say
anoþer beeste stryngc up fro
ye erpe/ & it hadde two hor
es lijk ye lomb: & it spak as
ye dragoñ/ & dide al ye power
of ye formere beeste: i his sizt
& it made ye erpe· & men
dwellynge i it: to worschipe
ye firste beeste· whos wouñde
of deþ was cured/ & it dide
greet signes: þat also it ma
de fier to come doñ fro he
uene i to erpe· i ye sizt of alle
mẽ/ & it disseyuede men þat
dwellẽ in erpe: for signes

Whiche ben ȝouñ to it to do in pe
liȝt of pe beeste/ seiyuge to men
dwellyuge i erpe: pat pei make
an yuage of pe beeste· pat hap
pe woũde of swerd· & lyuyde/
& it was ȝouñ to hĩ: pt he schu
lde ȝiue spirit to pe yuage of
pe beeste/ & pat pe yuage of
pe beeste speke/ & he schal ma
ke pt who eũe honourẽ not
pe yuage of pe beeste: be sla
yn/ & he schal make alle smale
& greete· & riche & pore· & fre
men & bonde men: to haue ac
rect in her riȝthond· eþ i her
foreheds/ pat no man may bie
eþ sille: but pei pat pe caract
er eþir pe name of pe beeste·
eþ pe noũbre of his name/
here is pe wisdom/ he pat
hap vndirstondynge: acoũte
pe noũbre of pe beeste/ for
it is pe noũbre of nañ: & his
noũbre is· sixe hundrid sixty
and sixe

And y say: & lo a lomb
stood on pe mouñt of
syon/ & wip hĩ an hũ
drid pousynde & foure & four
ty pousynde hauyuge his na
me: & pe name of his fadir·
writtñ in her forheds/ and y
herde a vois fro heuene· as
pe vois of many watris:
& as pe vois of a greete tũdir

And pe vois which y herde:
was as of many harperis
harpynge i her harpis/ & pei
siñgen as a newe song· bifor
pe seete of god: & bifor pe foure
beestis & seniours/ & no mañ
myzte seie pe song: but pei
an hũdrid pousynde & foure
& fourty pousynde pat ben
bouȝt fro pe erpe/ pese ben
pat bẽ not defoulid wip wym
mẽ/ ffor pei bẽ virgyns/ pese
suen pe lomb: whidir euere
he schal go/ pese bẽ bouȝt of
alle mẽ pe firste fruytis to
god & to pe lomb: & in pe mouþ
of hem is not foũdñ/
for pei ben wipout wem: bifor
pe trone of god And y say
anopr aungel flyynge bi pe mydd
dil of heuene· hauynge an
euerlastynge gospel: pat he schu
lde prche to mẽ sittynge on
erpe/ & on ech folk & lynage
& langage & puple: & seide wt
a greete vois/ drede ȝe pe lord:
& ȝiue ȝe to hĩ onour for pe our
of his dom comep/ & worschipe
ȝe hi pat made heuẽ & erpe:
pe see & alle pingis pt ben i hem·
& pe welles of watris/ & anopr
aungel suede seiynge/ falle
greete babiloyne feldoñ feldoñ:
which ȝaf drynke to alle fol
kis of pe wyn of wraþe

of hev formacoñ / And pe pr
idde Aungel suede he: & seide
wip a grete voiz / if ony man
worshipe pe beeste & pe pum
ge of it · & takip pe carect in
his forhed ep̄ in his hond: pis
schal dryuke of pe wyn of
goddis wrappe / pat is meynd
wip clere wyn: in pe cuppe of
his wrappe / & schal be turm
entid wip fier & brymston in
pe sizt of hooly Aungels: And
pe fum of pe lomb / & pe
smoke of her tur mētis: schal
stie vp in to pe worldis of world
dis / ne-y pei han reste day &
nyzt: which worshipid pe
beeste & his ymage · & if ony
man take pe carect of his na
me / here is pacience of seyn
tis: which kepe pe maūde
mentis of god And pe feip
of ihū / And y herde a voiz
fro heuene: seiyng to me /
write · blessid be deed men
-t dien in pe lord / fro hēnes forp
now pe spirit seip: pat pei rest
fro her trauelis / for pe wer
kis of he suen he / & y say &
lo a white cloude: & aboue pe
cloupe a sittere lijk pe sone
of man / hauyng in his heed
a golden crowñ: & in his hond
a scharp sikil / & anop Aungel
went out of pe tēple: And
criede wip grete voiz to hym pt
sat on pe cloude / sende pi sikil
& repe: for pe our comep pt it
be ropñ · for pe corn of pe erpe
is ripe / & he pat sat on pe clou
de: sente his sikil in to pe erpe ·
& rap pe erpe ¶ And anoper
Aungel went out of pe temple
pt is in heuē: & he also hadde
a scharp sikil / & anop Aungel
went out fro pe Alt: pt hadde
power on fier & wat / & he cri
ede wip a grete voiz · to hym
pt hadde pe scharp sikil: & seide
sende pi scharp sikil: & kitte a
wey pe clustris of pe vynezerd
of pe erpe · for pe grapis of it
ben ripe / & pe Aungel sente his
sikil in to pe erpe · & gaderide gra
pis of pe vynezerd of pe erpe:
& sente in to pe greet lake of god
dis wrappe / & pe lake was trod
dyn wip out pe citee: & pe blo
od went out of pe lake til to
pe bridels of horsis · bi furlo
ngis a pousynde & sixe hundrid
¶ And y say anop signe
in heuene greet and
wondirful: seuene
Aungels hauyng seuene pe
laste veniaūcis / for pe wrappe
of god is endid in he / & y say as
a glas ſ̄ see meynd wip fier:
& he pat ouercam pe beeste and
his ymage & pe noñbre of

hys name standynge above
pe glasiñ see· hauyñge pe harpis
of god & syngynge pe song of
moyses pe seruañt of god· &
pe song of pe lomb & seiden
gvete & wondurful bē pi wer
kis· lord god almyzti: pi weies
bē iust & trewe lord kyng of
worldis· lord who schal not dr
ede pee: & magnifie pi name:
for pu aloone art hooli· for al
le folkis schulē come & worschi
pe i pi sizt: for pi domes bē ope
ne· & aft pese pingis y say: &
lo pe tēple of pe tabernacle of
witnessing was openyd i hye
neue· & seuene aungels hauyñge
seuene plagis: weren out of
pe tēple· & were clopid with a
stoon clene & white: & weren bi
fore girid with goldin girdils a
bouten pe breestis· & oon of pe
foure beestis· zaf to pe seuene añ
gels: seuene goldin violis ful
of pe wrappe of god· pt lyu
ep i to worldis of worldis· &
pe tēple was fillid with smok
of pe mageste of god: & of pe
vertu of hym· & no man myzte en
tre i to pe tēple: til pe seuene
plagis of seuene aungels were
fulfillid· & y herde a gret voys fro heue
ne: seiynge to pe seu
ene aungels· goze & schede out
pe seuen violis of goddis wrappe:
i to erpe· & pe firste aungel went
& schedde out his viol i to pe erpe
& a wel ouide sore & worst was
maad on alle pat hadde pe carect
of pe beeste: & on hem pat worschi
piden pe beeste & his ymage·
pe secounde aungel schedde out
his viol i to pe see: & pe blood
was maad as of a deed ping
& ech man lyuynge: was deed
i pe see· And pe pridde aungel
schedde out his viol on pe flo
odis· & on pe wellis of watris:
& seide iust art pu lord: pt art
& pt were hooly: pt demest pese
pingis· for pei schedden out pe
blood of halewis & profetis:
& pu hast zouñ to hem blood to
drynke· for pei ben worpi· And
y herde anoper seiynge· zhe lord
god almyzty: trewe & iust ben
pi domes· And pe fourpe añ
gel schedde out his viol i to pe
sunne: & it was zouñ to hym to
turmēte men with heete & fier·
& men blasfemyden pe name of
god hauynge power on pese
plagis· nep pei diden penañce:
pt pei schulden zyue glorie to
hym· And pe fifte aungel sch
edde out his viol: on pe seete
of pe beeste· & his kingdom
was maad derk· & pei eeten

to gadere hyer tungis for sorcerye: & per blaskemyde god of heue ne for sorceries of hyer woun gis · & per diden not penaunce of hyer werkis / & pe sixte aungel schedde out his viol · i pat ilke greet flood eufrates · & driede de pe wat of it: pat were pe re made redy to kyngis fro pe liue risynge / & p fals pe vn dene spiritis bi pe mouth of froggis go out of pe mouy of pe dragoun · & of pe mouy of pe beeste · & of pe mouy of pe fals prophete / for pei ben spiritis of deuelis: makynge lignes / & pei goon forp to kin gis of al erpe: to gadere hem i to batel to pe greet day of almyzty god / lo y come as a pyzt peef / blessid is he pat wakip & kepip his clopis: pt he wandre not nakid · & pat pei se not pe filpyed of hym / & he schal gadre hem in to a pla ce: pat is clepid in ebreu hey magedon / & pe seuenpe aung el schedde out his viol i to pe eir: & a greet voys went out of heuene fro pe trone · and seide / it is don / & leytingis were made · & voices & pun dris / & a greet erpe mouyng was made: whiche mans neuer was · sipen men were

ou erpe · liche erpe mouyng so greet / & pe greet citee was maad i to pre partis: & pe citees of hepene men felden doun / & grete babiloyn cam i to mynde bifor god: to zyue to it pe cuppe of wyn of pe ire uacioun of his wraype / & ech yle fley awey: & hillis ben not foundun / & greet hail as a talent: cam doun fro heuene i to men / & men blaskemyden god for pe plage of hail: for it was ma made ful greet

And oon of pe seuene aungels cam · pt hadde seuene viols: & spak wip me & seide / come pt · y schal schewe to pee pe damp nacioun of pe greet hoore · pat sit tip on many watris · wip wh iche · kingis of erpe diden for nicacioun / & pei pt dwellen i pe erpe ben maad dronken of pe wyn of hir letcherie / & he tok me i to desert i spirit / & y sai a womman sittynge on a reed beeste ful of names of blaskemye: hauynge seuene heedis & ten hornes / & pe wo man was enuyroun d wip pur pur & reed · & ourgild wt gold · & precious stoon & peerlis · hauynge a golden cuppe i hir hond ful of abhominacions · and

vncleñesse of her fornicacioñ/
& aniaine vbrithi iñ pe forhed
of hiñ: mystrie/ babilon pe gr
eet modir of fornycacioñs: &
of abhominacioñs of erpe/ &
y say awomañ drunkñ of pe blo
od of seyntis: & of pe blood
of martris of ihñ/ & whañe
y say hiñ: y wondride whi
greet wondrynge/ & pe añg
el seide to me/ whi wondrist
pou/ y shal seye to pee pe sacra
ment of pe womañ· & of pe be
este pat berip hiñ: pt hap sen
eue heedis & ten hornes/ pe
beeste which pou sezest: was
& is not/ & shal stie fro pe
pnesse: & shal go i to per
dicioñ/ & inè dwellynge i erpe
shulê wondre: whos names
bê not writtñ i pe book of lyf-
fro pe makyng of pe world/
seynge pe beeste pt was: & is
not/ & pis is pe witt: whi pt
hap wisdom/ pe seuene heed
is bê seuene hillis: on whiche
pe womañ sittip/ & kingis se
uene bê/ fyue han feld doñ:
oon is· & anop comep not zit/
& whañe he shal come· it bih
ouep hi to dwelle a short tyn
e/ & pe beeste pt was & it not·
& she is pe eiztpe: & is of pe
seuene· & shal go i to perischyp
ng/ & pe ten hornes: whiche

pou hast seyn: ben ten kingis·
pat zit han not take kyngdo/
but pei shulê take power as
kingis: oon our aft pe beeste/
pese han acoñseil: & shulê bitake
her vtu & power to pe beeste/
pese shulê fizte whip pe lomb:
& pe lomb shal ouercome hê· for
he is lord & lordis· & king of ky
ngis/ & pei pat bê whip hi: ben
clepid chosin & feipful/ & he seide
to me/ pe watris whiche pou
hast seyn· where pe hoore sit
tip: ben puplis & folkis & lang
agis/ & pe ten hornes pt pou
hast seyn i pe beeste: pese shu
len make hir desolat & naked/
& shulê ete pe fleischis of hir
whip fier/ for god zaf i to pe her
tis of hê: pat pei do pt pat is ple
sant to hi/ pat pei zeue her king
dom to pe beeste: til pe wordis
of god bê endid/ & pe womañ
whom pou hast seyn: is pe greet
citee pat hap kingdom of ky
ngis of pe erpe

And aft pese pingis y sa
w an opr añgel comynge
doñ fro heuene hauy
nge greet power· & pe erpe was
liztned of his glorie/ & he criede
whip strong voic: & seide/ greet
babilon felde doñ felde doñ:
& is maad pe habitacioñ of de
uelis/ & pe keping of ech vndeue

spirit· And pe keping of ech
vnclene foul & hateful: for
alle folkis drunken of pe wyn
ape of fornycacioũ of hir: &
kingis of pe erpe & marchaũ
tis of pe eupe: dide fornyca-
oũ wip hir/ & pei be maad ri
che of pe vtu of delices of hir
& p herde anoy voys of heuene:
seiynge/ wy puple go ze out
of it· & be ze not parceneres of
pe trespassis of it: & ze schule
not resseyue of pe woũdis of
it/ for pe synes of it ataue til
to heuene: & pe lord hadde my
nde of pe wickidnesse of it/
zelde ze to it· as she zeldide to
zou: & double ze double pyngis·
after her werkis/ in pe cuppe
pat she medlide to zou: wipu
ge ze double to hir/ as myche
as she glorifiede hir silf and
was i delices: so mychel tur
ment zyue to hir & wepyng/
for i hir herte she seip/ y sitte
a queen & y am not a widewe:
& y schal not se wepyng/ and
þer i o day hir woũdes schule
come· deep & mornyng & hũgur:
& she schal be brent i fier/
for god is strong: pat schal
deme hir/ & pe kingis of pe
erpe schule biwepe & biwaile
hẽ silf on hir· wiche diden for
nycacioũ wip hir & lyueden

in delices: wipaue pei schulen
se pe smoke of pe brẽnyng of
it/ stondyng fer for drede of
pe turmentis of it: & seiynge
wo· wo· wo· pilke greet atee
babilon· & pilke stronge atee:
for i oon our· pi doom comep/
& marchaũtis of pe erpe schule
wepe on it & mourne: for no mã
schal bie more pe marchaũdise
of hem/ pe marchaũdies of gold
& of siluer & of þeonsle stoon & of
peerl & of bies & of purpur and
of silk· & coctyn/ & ech tre scynt.
& alle vessels of yuer & alle ves
sels of þeonsle stoon· & of bras
& of yrn & of marbil/ & canel·
& amome & of swete smellyn
ge pyngis & oynemẽtis & encẽs
of wyn & of oyle & of flour &
of wheete & of werk beestis· &
of sheep & of horsis & of cartis
& of seruaũtis & oy lyues of mẽ
& pin applis of pe delite of pi
lif went a wey fro pee: &
alle fatte pyngis & fair clere
pere schidẽ fro pee/ & marchaũ
dis of pese pyngis schulẽ no m
ore fynde po pyngis/ pei pat
ben maad riche of it: schulen
stonde fer for drede of turmẽ
tis of it· wepynge & mournynge
& seiynge/ wo wo pilke greet
atee· pat was clopid wip lyn
& purpur & reed scarlet & was

on gild wiþ gold and þat ouerle stoon & margarite: for þi oon our lo many richesse ben desolate & eche gouernour & alle þat sailen by schip i to place & marynerie & þt worchen i þe see: stoden ber & criedeu / seynge þe place of þe brennynge of it: seiynge / what is lyk þis greet citee / & þei caste poudur on her heedis: & criedè wepynge & mournynge & seiynge / wo wo þilke greet citee i wlich alle þat haue schippis i þe see bè maad riche of prices of it: for i oon our it is desolat / heuene & hooly apostlis & profetis· make ze feiste ouer it: for god hap demyd zoure doom of it / & o strong aungel took up a stoon as a greet mylne stoon: & keste i to þe see· & seide / i þis biue þilke greet citee babilon þe schal be sent: & nouþ it schal no more be foundè / & þe voys of harpis· & of mè of mu sik· & cytygynge wiþ pipe and trumpe: schal no more be herde i it / & eche craftyman· & eche craft: schal no more be foundè i it / & þe voys of mylne stoon schal no more be herd i þee: & þe liȝt of lanterne schal no more schyne to þee / & þe voys of þe holebonde & of þe wijf schal no more ȝit be herd i þee· for þi marchaundis were þoruè þe erþe / for i þi witchecraft· alle folkis erreden: and þe blood of prophetis & seyntis is foundè in it· and of alle men þat ben slayn in erþe //

Efter· þese þingis i herde· as a greet voys of many puplis i heuene: seiynge alleluya / heriynge & glorie & vertu is to oure god· for trewe & riȝtful ben domes of hi· wlich demyde of þe greet hoore þat defoulide þe erþe i hir leccherie / & veniaunce of his seruauntis: of þe hondis of hir / & eft þei seiden alleluya / & þe smoke of it stiep up: i to þe worl dis of worldis / & þe foure & twenty seniours· & foure beestis felden doun· & worschipiden god sittynge on þe trone· and seiden amè· alleluya / & a voys wente out of þe trone: & seide / alle ye seruauntis of oure god seie ze heriynge to oure god: & ze þat dreden god· smale & grete / & þe herde a voys of a grete trumpe: as þe voys of many watris· & as þe voys of grete þundris seiynge alleluya: for oure lord god almyȝty hap regned / ioye we & make we myrþe: & ȝiue we glorie to hym / for þe weddyngis of þe lomb

amen: And pe wif of hi was
de redy hir silf / & it is zouī
to hir: pat she kepe hir wip
white bissyn schynynge / for
whi bissyn is iustifiyngis
of seyntis / & he seide to me /
write pou. blessid be pei pat
ben clepid to pe soper of wed
dyngis of pe lomb / & he seide
to me / pese wordis of god
be trewe / & y felde doū bifor
his feet: to worschipe hym /
& he seide to me / se pou pat
pou do not / y am aseruaūt
wip pee & of pi britheren: hauy
nge pe witnessyng of ihū /
worschipe pi god / for pe wit
nessyng of ihū: is spirit of
profesie / & y say heuene ope
nyd: & lo a white hors / & he
pt sat on hi was clepid feiy
ful & sopfast · & wip riztwis
nesse he demep & fizti / & pe
izen of hi were as flawme
of fier: & in his heed many
diademys / & he hadde a na
me writū · which no mā kn
ew: but he / & he was clopid
in a cloy spreynt wip blood: &
pe name of hi was clepid pe
sone of god / & pe oostis pt be
i heuene: suedē hi on white
horsis · clopid wip bissyn wh
ite & cleue / & a swerd scharp
on ech side cam forp of his
mouy: pt wip it he smyte folwis /
& he schal reule hē wip an yrū
zerde / & he tredip pe pressour of
wyn of strong vēgaūce of pe
wrappe of almyzti god / & he
hap writū in his clop & in pe
hēme: kyngis of kingis and
lord of lordis / And y say an
aūgel stondyng i pe sunne: & he
criede wip greet voys / & seide
to alle briddis pt flowē bi pe
myddil of heuene / come ze & be
ze gaderid to pe greet soper of
god: pt ze ete pe fleisch of king
is · & fleisch of tribunes · & fleisch
of strōge mē & fleisch of horsis
& of po pt sittip on hē / & pe fleisch
of alle fre mē & bonde mē: & of
smale & of grete / & y say pe beeste
& pe kingis of pe erpe · & pe oost
is of hē gaderid: to make batel
wip hi pt sat on pe hors & wip
his oost / & pe beeste was cauzt:
& wip hir pe false profete · pat
made signes bifore hir / in wh
che he disseyuede hem pat to
ken pe caracte of pe beeste: and
pat worschipiden pe ymage
of it / pese tweyne weren sent
quyke: i to pe pool of fier brē
nyngе wip brymston / & pe oþe
rē slayn wip pe swerd of
hi pat sat on pe hors · pt comep
forp of pe mouy of hi · & alle br
idis were fillid wt pe fleisch
of hem

And ꝑ ſaiꝫ an angel comꝑ
uge doñ fro heuene·
haueꝫge ye keie of
depneſſe: & a gret chayne ũ
his hond / & he cauzte ye dragoñ·
ye elde ſerpent·pat is pe deu
el & ſathanas: & he bond hĩ &
ꝑuſyude zeeris / & he ſente
hĩ ũ to depneſſe & cloſide ou
hĩ: ꝑt he diſſeyue no more pe
folkis· til a ꝑuſyude zeeris
be fillid / aft ꝑeſe ꝑingis it bi
houep hĩ to be vnboñdñ a lit̃l
tyme / & y ſay ſeetis: & pei ſatẽ
ou hẽ· & doom was zoñ to hẽ /
and pe ſoulis of mẽ biheedid
for pe witnelyinge of ihũ: &
for pe word of god / & hẽ pat
wor-ſchipidẽ not pe beeſte· ne
per pe ymage of it: nei toke
pe carect of it i her foreheedis·
nei ũ her hoondis / And pei
lyuedẽ: & regnedẽ wiꝫ crift
a ꝑuſyude zeeris / oꝫ of deed
mẽ lyuedẽ not: til a ꝑuſyde
zeeris ben endid / pis is pe fir
ſte azenriſyinge / bleſſid & hooly
he pat hap ꝑart i pe firſte
azenriſyinge / i peſe mẽ: pe ſecõ
de dep hap not power / but
pei ſchulẽ be ꝑſtis of god & of
crift: & pei ſchulẽ regne wiꝫ hĩ
a ꝑuſyude zeeris / & whanne a
ꝑuſyude zeeris ſchulẽ be en
did: ſathanas ſchal be vnboñ
dñ of his ꝑiſoñ / and he ſchal go
out & ſchal diſſeyue folkis· ꝑt
bẽ on foure corneris of ꝑe pe
erpe· gog & magog / & he ſchal
gadere hẽ in to batel: whoos
noũbre is as pe ſaundi of pe
ſee / & pei ſtiedẽ up· on pe brood
nelle of erpe: & enuyrounede
pe caſtels of ſeyntis & pe loued
citee / And fier cam doñ of god
fro heuẽ: & deuoride hẽ / And
pe deuel pat diſſeyuede hem:
was ſent i to pe pool of fier &
of brymſtoun / where bope pe
beeſte & falſe ꝓpetis ſchulen
be turmẽtid day & nyzt: ũ to
worldis of worldis amẽ / &
y ſay a gret white troue· And
oon ſittynge on it: fro whoos
liꝫt erpe fled & heuene & pe place
is not foũdñ of hem / And y
ſay deed men gret & ſmale
ſtõdynge i pe liꝫt of pe troue:
& bookis weren openyd / And
deed men weren demyd of
peſe ꝑingis pat weren writẽ
i pe bookis aft pe werkis of
hem / And pe ſee zaf hise deed m
en: pat weren i it / And dep
& helle zauen hise deed men:
pat weren in hem / And it was
demyd of ech: aft pe werkis
of hem / And helle & dep weren
ſent i to a pool of fier / pis
is pe ſecõnde dep / And he pat

was not foūdē writtē i pe book
of liif: was seint i to pe pool of fier
And y say nelbe heuene
& nelbe erpe/ for pe fi
rste heuene & pe firste
erpe weente awey: & pe see is
not now/ And y toon say pe ho
ly cite ierlū· comynge doū
fro heuene made redi of god·
as awijf ourned to hir· holebo
unde ¶ And y herde a gret voic
fro pe trone: seiynge lo pe tab
ernacle of god is wip men: &
he shal dwelle wip hē/ And pei
shulē be his pople: & he god
wip hem shal be her god/ And
god shal wipe awey eche teer
fro pe izen of hē/ And dep shal
no more be· nep mornyng nep
cryng· nep sorewe shal be ouer:
for pe firste pingis weenten
awei/ And he seide pat sat in
pe trone/ lo y make alle ping
is newe/ And he seide to me/
write for pese wordis ben
moost feipful & trewe/ And he
seide to me/ it is doon/ y am
alfa & oo· pe bigynyng & ende/
y shal zyue freely of pe welle
of quyk watir: to hym pat pur stip/
he pat shal ouercome: shal welde
pese pingis/ And y shal be god
to hym: & he shal be sone to me/
but to cowardis mē & vnbileue
ful & cursid & mānquelleris &
fornycatours· and to wicchis· &
worshipers of pools & to alle
liēris: pe part of hē shal be
i pe pool brēnynge wip fier &
brymstoon· pat is pe secunde
dep ¶ And oon cam of pe seue
ne aungels hauynge vials fulle
of seuene pe laste veniāūces &
he spak wip me & seide/ come
pon & y shal shewe to pee pe
spousesse pe wijf of pe lomb/
And he took me up i spirit: i to
a gret hil & hiz/ And he shewide
to me pe hooly cite ierlū comy
nge doū fro heuene of god: hā
uynge pe clerete of god/ And pe
liȝt of it lijk a precious stoon: as
pe stoon iaspis· as cristal/ And
it hadde a wal gret & hiz:
hauynge twelue zatis/ And in
pe zatis of it twelue aungels: &
names writtē in· pat ben pe
names of twelue lynagis of
pe sones of israel/ fro pe eest
pre zatis· & fro pe nozp pre za
tis· & fro pe soup pre zatis· &
fro pe west pre zatis/ And pe
wal of pe cite hadde twelue
foūdemētis: & in hē pe twelue
names of twelue apostlis &
of pe lomb/ And he pat spak
wip me hadde a goldē mesure
of arcded: pat he shulde mete
pe cite & pe zatis of it· And pe
wal/ And pe cite was set in

ſchare / And ye lengþe of it is so
myche · as myche as is ye brede /
And he mat ye citee wiþ ye reyed
vi furlongis twelue þousyndis /
And ye heizþe & ye lengþe & bre
ede of it : ben euene / And he m
at ye wallis of it of an hundrid
& foure & fourty cubitis : bi me
sure of mā þt is of an Angel /
And ye bildyng of ye wal þ of
was of stoon iaspis / And ye ci
tee it silf was clene gold like
clene glas / And ye foundement
is of ye wal of ye cite : weren
ourned wiþ al þe manere stoon
ye firste foundemēt : iaspis / ye
secounde : saphirus / ye þridde :
calcedonyus / ye fourþe : sinis
ragdus / ye fyfte : sardonyn /
ye sixte : sardius / ye seuenþe :
crisolitus / ye eiztþe : berillus /
ye nyntþe : topazius / ye tenþe :
grisopasius / ye elleneþe : ia
cynctus / ye twelfþe : ametis
tus / And twelue zatis ben
twelue margaritis · bi ech / &
ech zate was of ech margare
te ¶ And ye stretis of ye citee
were clene gold : as of glas
ful schynynge / And y say no
temple of it / for ye lord god
almyzty & ye lomb : is temple
of it / And ye citee hab no nede
of sunne neþer moone : þat þei schy
ne in it / for ye clerete of god
schal liztne it : And ye lomb is ye
lanterne of it / And folkis schulen
walke in lizt of it : & þe kingis
of erþe · schulen bringe her glorie
& onour in to it / And ye zatis of
it schulen not be closid bi day /
And nyzt schal not be þe / And þei
schulen bringe þe glorie & onour
of folkis in to it / neþer ony man
defoulid & doynge abhominacī
oun & leesyng : schal entre in to it /
but þei þat ben writun : in þe
book of lyf of þe lomb
And he schewide to me
a flood of quik watir
schynynge as cristal :
comynge forþ of þe seete of
god & of þe lomb / in þe myddil
of þe street of it / & on ech side
of þe flood · þe tree of lyf bryn
gynge forþ twelue fruytis : zel
dynge his fruyt bi ech moneþ /
And þe leeuys of þe tree : ben
to helþe of folkis / And ech cur
sid þing schal no more be / but
þe seetis of god & of þe lomb
schulen be in it / And þe seruauntis
of hym : schulen serue to hym / And
þei schulen se his face And his
name in her foreheedis / And
nyzt schal no more be · & þei
schulen not haue nede to þe lizt
of lanterne : neþer to lizt of sunne /
for þe lord god schal lizthe hem ·
& þei schulen regne in to worldis

of wordis / And he seide to me/
pese wordis be moost feiþful
& tr·e·we / And pe lord god of
spiritis of profetis · sente his
angel: to schewe hise seruanti
tis · what þingis it bihoueþ
to be don soone / And lo y come
swiftly / blessid is he: pt kepiþ
pe wordis of profecie of þis
book / And y am joon: pat her
de & say pese þingis / And aft
ward pt y hadde herd & seyu·
y felde doũ · to worschipe bifor
pe feet of pe aungel pat schy
wide to me pese þingis / and
y seide to me: se pou pat pl
do not / for y am seruaũt wt
pee · & of yi breþren profetis ·
& of hem pt kepe pe wordis
of profecie of þis book / wor
schipe pl god / And he seide to
me / seele pou not pe wordis
of profecie of þis book / for
pe tyme is nyz / he pat noyep·
noie he zit / and he pt is filþy
is: wexe foul zit / And a iust
man: be iustified zit / And pe
hooly be halewid zit / lo y come
soone · & my meede wiþ me:
to zelde to eche aſt hise wer
kis / y am Alfa & oo: pe firste
& pe laste · biginnyng & ende /
blessid be þei pat waischen
her stolis: pat pe power of
he be in pe tree of liif · And
entre bi pe zatis in to pe citee /
for wiþ outen forþ · hoũdes &
wicchis & vnchastnes & man
quellerie · & seruynge to idol
& ech pat loueþ & makiþ leesy
ng / he & / ihc sente myn aungel
to witnesse · to zou pese þingis
in chirchis / y am pe roote &
kynde of dauiþ: & pe schynynge
morewe stere / and pe spirit
& pe spouselle: seiþ · come pl /
And he pat herip: seie come
pou / and he pat þirstip come /
and he pat wole: take he fre
ly pe watr of liif / and y witn
esse to eche man: herynge pe
wordis of profecie of þis bo
ok / if ouy man schal putte to
pese þingis: god schal putte on
hi: pe veniances writtin i þis
book / And if ouy man do awey
of pe wordis of pe book of þis
profecie: god schal take awey
pe part of hi fro pe book of
liif / and fro pe hooly citee: &
fro pese þingis pat ben writtin
i þis book / he seiþ pat berip
witnessing of pese þingis:
zhe Amen / y come soone Amen
come pou lord ihũ / pe grace
of oure lord ihũ crist be wiþ
zou alle Amen //

Huy derewarpe lyve
per · if pou coueitist
for to wite pouȝ p
wite not / pou it is
moost parfit & moost ful virtu
ilnesse for to loue god of al pe
herte / for to clene to hym wip
al pe wille / whiche is pe moost
souereyn good / ffor3ope for to
loue soueyneest good: is moost
soueyn vlisse / he pat louep
god: is good / if he is good: p
fore also he is vlissful / whom
bi pou mychе aman louep
more brēnyngly: bi so muche
he shal be mad bete / mi de
re brop · wip eche dayes pier
is · & hool desir of herte pouȝ
p be wi vn worpi · p studie for
to herteli pie hym which is
moost soueyn good: pat he
make pe plentenous i pe mo
ost vlissful good / but moost de
re brop vnderstonde pou · pt
bi counseil of pe holy ghoste · & bi
pe werk of goddis magestе p"
art mad of nouȝt / and of
pe first honour of makyng
vndirstonde p" pou muche p"
owest to pi maker: while pe
eu lastyng maker zaf auoo
n to pee i pe makyng so muche
p'uilege of digute / pat bi so
muche p" shuldest loue hym
more fernētly: bi pou muche
p" vnderstoudest pee for to be
mad more wondirful / wey
only pis p' wip counsel of pe
holy ghoste p" art mad so excе
llently or worpily of pe maker:
but also pilke maker of nouȝt
of alle pingis / made pee of
nouȝt to his ymage & likenesse /
whiche ping he graūtide to
none oy of creatures: but to
man aloone / and pis is pe ym
age & likenesse of vnite & trin
te of al mȝti god whiche pi
soule hap i rt self / pe firste:
for bi pe zifte of god · pi soule
hymep & vnderstondip / pe seco
ūde: for it is formed to pe ym
age of his forme or maker of
nouȝt / pe pridde · pouȝ p" be de
ped oo man: nepeles p" hast
pre dignitees graūtid of pe
fadir & of pe sone & of pe holy
goost / pat is to sey · vnderstoud
ing / will · & mynde / pe whiche
same ping is signifyed in pe
gospel pouȝ it be bi ope wordes ·
whāne it is seid / p" shalt loue
pe lord pi god of al pin herte ·
of al pi soule · & of alle pi streu
gpis / forsope i pese pre · oure
ȳner man pat is pe soule: ber
ep wondirfuly i oure kynde pe
ymage of oure maker / of pe
whiche · as of more passinge
dignitees of pe soule: we bē

not eche mā
yt seip to me
lord lord: bnt
he pt dop ꝑ c.

no pnig kele
pi lone

conmañdid for to lone one ma
ker/ pat as muche as he is vn
derstonden of me: he be loned
And poo pinges pat he comā
ñdide: be pei had ī mynde e
ner more/ it sinffisep not oo
nly to me for to vndirstonde
god: bnt his will be mad
one ī lone/ Bnt nep pis sin
ffisep: bnt wip mynde ꝑ will
werk be put to/ Sopely to
pm yed moost dere broper
grace of gostly vndirstondig
be grañtid: pe whiche lizte
pi lonle ꝑ bringe to eñ lasty
nge lyf as y desire/ ffor wip
al pe lone of myn hepte y co
neite ꝑ hertely pie god: pt p"
ene strecche pee to henēly pin
ges· til p" come to pe hy3 crow
ne of eñ lastinge blis/ and
bi no cōseils of frendes bi
no coneitise of worldli deliv
es: suffre not pe nobley of
pin ꝑwitt whiche y knowe
best ī pee· for to be chañged
fro pe lone of cst/ nile pou m
ake derk pi goodnesse wip
wickidnesse of ope mē bnt en
lyghere as muche as pou ma
yst: appere worpi to be loned
biforе god ꝑ al pe puple/ pe gr
ace of god ꝑ helpinge shal n
ot faile to pee: if will of hooly
amonestinge shal be to pee·

whiche pe nuynde of pi goodn
esse hap pauceyued ofte ī pe
writinges of god/ y biseche
pou3 p" be lewid· be p" redi to
ech werk of god· pitous to poze
me ꝑ to like· cōfacto" of pe
mourny3/ hampinge cōpassi
oñ to pe myseles of alle men/
large ī almesdedis· hampinge
mynde of pe gospel wideme
wip tuey mynistes/ and on pe
ꝓphet pat seip· breke pi breed
to pe hungri/ and be war seyn
ge biforе pe disheriōn of alm
es: so pat it be solace of boye
pe zifer ꝑ pe taker/ and so pe
nile not oonly of pin helpe:
bnt also of profit ꝑ prosperi
te of manye/ chese to pee pe
beste cōsolacioñ dredinge
god: ꝑ lopinge trewpe/ ffor
whi flatires ofte bi glosinge
cheer· disseyuē pe soulis of m
en hevinge hem: ꝑ sleen bi
pe snares of eñ lastinge dey/
for of sicke pe ꝓphet seip·
forsope god stant abwood pe
bones of hem: pat plesen to
mē/ pei ben confoñdid: for
god hap forsake hem/ and pe
postle seip· if y plesid to mē:
y were not pe seruañt of
cst/ eche man plese his nei3
boze to edificacioñ: ꝑ not to
destruccioñ/ for eche frend

may not be acoũselour to pee·
sip pe scripture seip / many
frendis be to pee: but oo coũ
selour / forsope pouz dwelly
ng chaũged haue take me
for frozon i bodi: but neye
les no maner i charite / for
charite pat mai be lefte:
was neue tweye / perfore
bi mooste pinard charite
of frenschipes as miche as
we mowũ: be we ioyned to
gidere i pe lord ẽst / for he se
ip·ze ben my frendis: if ze
willen do poo pinges whic
he p comaũde to zou / and ef
te he seip to his disciplis / u
ow y shal not sey zou seruã
tis: but my frendis / and
if we wolen pneye pe med
is of eue lastinge luf: bisie
we us wip alle strengpes·
for to kepe his comaũdemẽ
tis / forsope his comaũdemẽ
tis ben grenous to mẽ not
willynge: yei ben esy / as
he hym silf seip· for my zok
is softe: & my burden esy / &
eft he seip / on whom shal
p reste: but on pe meke and
restful & dredinge my word
is / forsope pe frendschip of
pe world stondep eiþ i benefi
ces: eiþ i dwerse honouris /
but pe frendschip of ihũ ou
re sauyour: is i lonynge hym
& oure neizboris / perfore hou
ofte eũ we don i goode dedis
pe comaũdemẽtis of ẽst: so
ofte we ben clepid pe frendis
of ẽst / he clepep vs eue to his
frendschip: & pe deuel hatyn
ge enuye· sekep forto dwelle
in i helle / hiñ pe sauyour lo
ney us: & pe traitour pe deuel
hatep us / perfore leeue we not
pe azenbieyer: neper sue we pe
robbere / he pat restorep us to
fredom be more derewarp to us·
pan he pat made us captif· and
vndirputt us to bondage / eue
lette þ̃ god bifore pe izen of hym
herte: þt cũpaigne of frendes·
ney multitude of pi meynee·
neyer gaderyng of gold & of
siluer / ne litle stones schynyn
ge of gẽmes· ne plentee of pe
fruyt of vynes: ne pickenesse
of cornes· ne myrpe· ne streeth
ing forp of medewes / moũ
bringe oup help to pe soule
goynge out of pi bodi: but
raper pei mournen more· þt
loneu hem / þfore pe very frend
oure lord ihũ ẽst is to be loued:
whiche zuey to us welsiinesse
now & eũlastinge welsiinesse
after / for whi he is seid oure
azenbieyer: for he bouzte us
azen fro captiuitee of pe deuel

but to mẽ
willynge

al pis helpip
not i pe day
of dep

And he is seid sauiour: i sauy
nge us fro oure synes / & helpere: i helpynge us i couenablete es i tribulacoũ / And he is seid defendour: i defendinge us pat we dwelle vnhurt among oure enemyes / & he is seid vptaker: i takynge us up ito euerlastinge tabernacle / Forto fulfille we pe heestis of charite & loue we oure swete afrend · & kepe we us pe nobley of his ymage / pape like we ene hon noble & ful glorious is pis emperour & oure frend / he seker noon of zifte of us: but spirituall zifte / be we war as miche as we mowe: lest he fynde ony ping which offende his ize u / And if peraunture as pe condicoũ of mañ frelte is woont pe wicked spirit bringey ins ony spott of ñligence: anoon bi knowlechig & penaũce of teeris · haste we us al studie forto waisshe it away / lest we dwelle longe: wt oute vndrynge of oure frend / ffor he is more redy to resseyue us: pan he is to lese: if we oonly tarien not fro day to day · forto turne azen to hym / ffarsope al myzti god hatey pese tuey yueles i alle men pat is to sey ñligence of turnyng azen to hi: & dilpeu of helpe / pese pinges be pei onely fer fro oure pouzti: & pañe he wole be mz to oure sonlis / y biseche pt we glorifynge of erpely wel sũnesse triste we nat pynne: but do we pankynges to hym / pe whiche lord whyle he wolde pt we weren resonable men: pide us bi meknesse & not bi pride · to sue hym

Preie what myzt be more glorie to us or hier honour: pan forto be freendes of pilke emperour · whiche is above alle emperours / And bi as miche he is hier bi al myzthede i vtu: bi so miche we owen forto be more dilige nce i riztwisnesse & i mekenesse · & kepige of his mañde mẽtis ¶ Sopely holynesse stondey i werkis of riztwisnesse / And riztwisnesse is fulfillid on tuey maneres / pat is pat we do not poo pinges pt ben forbodñ of hi: & also pat we do po pinges pat ben comaũdid of hi / after pe prophet pat seip · turne pu awey fro puel: & do good / ffor sope alle pe ordres of hooly bokes ben writen to oure heelpe · & pis sowney mooste to oure eend ·

and eft & efte reherſyp what
is to be eſchewed of eche mañ
or what pũig is to folowe/
in whiche boke pi worpin
elle wexinge: be it moneſt
id i pe beſte wiſe/ for bi hem
owre lord god ſpekip: & ſhe
wep to us pe deſtr of pito
us will/ knowleche we azẽ
& bipenke we wt what ma
nere honour his meſſage
is to be veſſeyued/ what if
a meſſage come to us fro pe
kyng: whep we woldẽ not a
noon putte ope biſyneſſe bi
lyude· & wt avedi will· & wt
al deuocioñ take pe letteris·
& redinge hem we ſhulden
enforſe us to fulfille it:/ lo
pe kyng of kynges· & lord of
lordis· zhe & owre azenbier:
vouchide ſaaf for to dreſſe
fro heuene his lettres bi pro
phetis & apoſtles/ not pt he
comaũde to us ony ſeruyſe
pat is nedeful to hi ſilf: but
pat he make po pinges kno
wñ to us· pt moñ profite to
owre helpe & owre glorie/ pfore
if we deliten to haue ony pp
ing i pis world: haue we god
wt avedy ſoule· whiche wel
dey alle pinges & made hem
of nouzt/ And i hi we han wh
at pinges ene we deſiren

wellñly & hoolily/ but for no m
an hap god· but oonly he pt is
had of god: be we us ſilf maad
pe poſſeſſioñ of god· & god wo
le be maad pe poſſeſſour of us/
and what may be moze welfñ
i pe world: pan is to hi· to whõ
his emperour & azenbier is
made vente· & pe godhed it ſilf
deyned to be maad his herita
ge/ for of hi· alle we taken fir
ſtis· i hi & of hi we lyuen ene/
what ping y pie ſuffiſep to
anã: to whom pe maker ſuf
fiſep not:/ what ſeiep he mere
oñ: to whõ his azenbier owep
to be al iope & alle pinges/ alas
hou ſutely pe ilke olde bigilour
diſſeyued us· & bringep blynd
neſſe bifore pe veſoñ of oure
ſoule: pt we moñ not diſtryne
pe ioies of pis world· & pe ioies
of eũlaſtinge kyngdom/ for whi
it is good to iope/ but who ſo
ioiep· if pt he ioie not per of·
wher of he owep to ioie: it m
ay not be good pt he ioiep/
an ervely knyzt ioiep at pe
honoures of pis world pat ſchal
ſone periſſhe/ at fair clopis
& ſhaply· pe armes ygon aboute
wip hes/ he ioie at pe croune
ſett on pe hed/ And ſiche ioie is
not eũlaſtinge: but to periſſh
inge/ Also a vanqueynour ioiep:

for

Whãne he hap vanyſhed pynges
pat he deſirde / A drũkelewnes
ioiep: Whãne he hap foũden oc
caſioũ of drynkyng / A nowtrer
ioiep: Whãne he hap wone to
his delityng vſſ of A ſtrũpetis
bodi / A forſworn man ioiep:
if he hap geten pe welſũnes
ſes of pis world i ſwerynge
pe wrapful man ioiep: if he
hap parfourmed his wrap
pe / And my dere broper
many oper pynges ꝑben: pe
whiche pe mynde of pi good
nesse may cõprende / nevepeles
it is good for to ioie: but it is
ful greet ynel for to ioie of
ſiche pynges / & ledynge to dep
of ſỹne / nep per is noon of
alle so hynge & abhõynable
treſpaſſe bifore god: as to
eche of us for to ioie in herte
& glade i ontward ſignes:
i bipenkyng of ſỹnes ꝑt bẽ
paſſid / & to ligge longe i hem
peſe pynges it ben whiche
we ſeiden aboue whych of pe
world wole ꝑt we ioie: ꝑt we
periſhe wip pe loue of pis
world / forpi we owen to for
ſake peſe ioies as veniymes
of pe deuel: for pei hasten for
to ſle not onely pe body: but
also pe soule euerlastinge / I
biſeche my broper y biſeche
pat pou hurtle peſe arowes of pe
deuel: at pe noon pat is ẽſt / and
take pe ſheeld of feip / i whiche
ꝑ̃ muſt quenche alle pe fyrie
dartis of pe deuel / And ioie we
of pe goodes of pe lord & of clene
cõſcience & of vray cõfeſſiõn and
wopi penaũce of mourynyng
& ỹp ſerowis / pe whiche up god
& nat up pe world: worchip eũ
lastinge helpe / forpi pe ilke
heipnelle pat is up pe world:
pe poſte forbedep ſtedefaſtly &
ſeip / unleze make forewhil pe
hooly ſpirit of god i whom ze
ben marked i pe day of azen
bying: but al bitternelle & wrap
pe & indignacioũ & cryng & blaſ
femye be don awey fro zou wt
malice: & beze beynghe to gi
dere / maſtful forzeuynge to gyue
as god i ẽſt forzaff to zou / And
as miche as we moũ: wip buſy
ſtudie amẽde we oure perdes
& haſte we to gete vtues of alle
goodes / ꝑt we moũ wynne pe
pitee of god & mep i conenable
tyme: & ioie we gretly ꝑt may
not be told of pe biheeſt of pe
ilke kyngdom to comynge / peſe
ben pe armures pat armen
us azens aſſaylyng of pe deuel:
& piſen & bitaken us i kepyng
to god / peſe ben pe armures
pat coũforten oure ẽwittis &

kepen us noble ¶ be vese ar-
mures wt ỹne us & wiþ oute us
of goddis ziftes / vese ben oure
vyp richesses / for vch chastite
makep us chaste & ryztwisnes
se makip us ryztful / pitee ma
kep us pitous: & meknesse me
ke / myldenesse makep us mylde.
& ỹnocence makep ỹnocentis /
symplenesse makep us sỹple:
& dẽnesse makep deue / & pru
dẽce makep prudent · & tempe
rãce makep us tẽperaũt: &
charite makep dere wozpe to
god and to men

¶ Alle þeg vese gode þ-
uges ben of god: and
yet ben fourmed of
gode god / and þfore if we wo
len be ihũ pt pt we owen for
to be: as seynt iohn weynt seyp
as he zede: hit for to dispise
so go we goostly ¶ what is
it forto go as crist zede: but for
to dispise vanytee & welslinne
sse of þis world / & not forto
drede to suffere aduersitees
for his name / hope we poo
ynges pat he hap bihizt: &
sine we wlndir he zede bifore /
pe riuetnesse of þis wrecch-
id world: departe us not in
oup name / fro pe lone of cri-
ney ofcrisyng of wiif · neyer
lone of childrẽ / neyer delityng
of gold & silu & of possessiõs:
si pe seint ion apostle wytnessip
ferdfully to us seynge on þis
wise / nyle ze lone pe world ney
poo þinges þat ben i þe world
nile ze lone for al þing þat is
i þe world: is concupiscẽce of fle
shche & concupiscẽce of izen · & þde
of pe world / vese it ben þat cal
ten out adam & eue fro para
dis of delices: ĩ to þis wrecched
outlawyng / for but pe lone of
god hadde failed fro hem: pei
schulde nenne haue bigunne for
to lone pe counsel of pe ymel tily
nge serpent / ney pei hadden
vilened to hĩ / and concupiscẽce of
flesch was fulfillid of hem:
for pei tasten of pe forbodẽ
appel / & also pe concupiscẽce of izen:
for pei concupiscẽde for to opene
pe izen of hẽ silf / and concupiscẽce
of pe world was fulfillid ỹn
of hem: for pei vilenedẽ hem
silf for to haue be maad þat
þing þat is god / and þerfore
pe postle willinge alle us to
be war of vese pre kyndes of
dep: seide / al þing þat is ĩ pe
world: is concupiscẽce of flesch:
& concupiscẽce of izen · & þde of pe
world / and my broper þat þi
goodnesse mai pe liztlier vn
derstonde · hou oure firste el
des synneden so greuously a-

þat þe g̃ce of oure lord ihū c̃st
gyuē þee for to be war þ̄of
ene/ for ihem tweyne al mā
ukynde was groūdly or first
dāpned/ for þi þei hadden
not ete of þe forbodē tre: if
þei hadden not coueitid/ nei
þei hadden coueited: but if
þei hadde be tēptid/ nei þei
hadde be tēptid: but if þei ha
dden be forsaken of god/ nei
þei hadde be forsaken of god:
but if þei hadde forsake god
first/ nei þei hadde forsake
god: but if þei hadde be pro
ude/ & so dāpnably hadden
dispised þe likenesse of god· to
whiche likenesse þei were ma
d/ ffor whiche þing þe like
bodies of hē drowde dep to hē/
And aft þe sentēce of god þei
ben trowid deed i þat day: i
whiche þe nede of peynful
dying is maad i hē/ Alitel
bifore we seide þes þinges
of þe firste eldres· þt we m
oū askape þe clydīng awai:
& ensaūple of her dāpnyng/
for þoū we bē bore fleischly
of adam· nepeles we schulē
not sue hī: but we schulen
sue oure lord ihū c̃st/ bi þe whi
che lord we bē borū azen bi ba
ptym & i hī we lyuen/ what
is it for to sue adam: but for
to be clayn wiþ eū lastīge dey
þorouz coueitises & delites of
þe fleisch/ & what is it to sue
blessidly c̃st: but for to sle ines
fleischly coueitises & delites &
to regne blissidly wiþ hī: þe
whiche hey bouzt us azen wt
þe priis of his blood/ & þouz
we for þt tyme þt we were
i adam felden doū mysī: nouz
for þt we han bigūne to be i c̃st
rise we azen goostly wt hī/ &
zut more oū þt þ sey al: adam
took awey fro us paradijs: &
ihū c̃st zaf þe kīgdom of heue
nes/ & he zaf his owne bodi:
for us dyneris/ for c̃st was ded
for oure synne: & not for his ow
ne/ forþoye ech of us schal not
die for synnes of alle mē: but
for to dāpne alle wickide we
kes in us· & for to sle þis wrecch
world/ as anoū deed bodily i
sepulcre· bacbitep no mā· nei
is violent to ony mā· he falsel
chalengep no mā· nei he oppr
essep ony mā· ne he hap not
enuye to goode mē· nei dispi
tously doþ schenschip to ynel m
he seruep not to leccherie of
his fleisch/ he kendelep not
prist ī hī undōīnge more &
more/ he brēnep not i flawm
of hatīs/ he flatterep not þe
riche mē of þis world/ he is

† but for his owne/ what is it for to dye to synne:

not vanysshed wip vnrestful cur
ionste·he dop nat his cause bi
greet cupeme stondinge upz to
hi/ he bigon avonte w̄ gold &
silu oz p̄cious naintel: is not
proud p̄ off/ he delitep not i sa
intacions of mypti mē· neper
of fadir & modir/ he is not fe
blid i his soule bi wrongis oz
despites/ p̄de makep not hym
greet: & coueitise of pis wo
rld sleep hi not/ vepn glorie
makep not hi to booste fonli
gold oz silu & alle pe falle rich
elles of pis world: enflawm
en not hi to coueityng of he/
pe mad wildenesse of wood
nesse dryuep not hi/ neper
fatnesse oz lone of hozsis: no
nep auzt hi/ and pe faireft
schap of wymen zeldep not
hi to weritous of lustes/ pe wo
rdis of wrecchid iogelers oz
bourdiours: monē not hi i to
leizyng/ pe stryues of pis woz
ld: disto rblē not hi/ hardine
sse enhaūsep not hi/ pe ioies
of pis world: delitē hi not/
boldenesse makep not hym
wrapful/ weriwardnesse m
akep hi not suspicions/ vany
tee makep not hi a iangeler/
pnel wildenesse makep not
hi astozne/ turnyng lone of
pis world: makep not hym

nonable & vnstidefast And hane
drawe along i noūbre pese pp
uges: p̄t pi fulfilwete prophede
vnderstōde· p̄t anā deed i fleisshe·
nep̄ man do pese puges wlyche
y hane seid/ nep̄ suffre he/ & p̄t
we be not slowe bi ony sichc
puges: but studie we as mychc
as we moū wip goddis help for
to make deed oure bodies wt
vices & coueitises/ & wip pat
we be clopid p̄t is to sey· be we
maad gostly a newe ma· pe
wlyche is formed after god i
rigtwisnesse & hoolynesse of
treupe/ nep̄ delite we i mēupe
pilyngis: nep̄ gladly zine we
oure eere to bacbiteres/ nep̄
bilene we to oure flateres/
nep̄ be we out of recoord: but
rap̄ stire we to a worde hem:
wlyom we moū/ for bi pe wo
rd of pe gospel· bisiful ben pe
feet p̄t reūen to pees/ neper
be we lymynge fleischli ūi pis
world/ for pe postil seip/ if ze
schulē lyue aft̄ pe fleisch: ze
schulen die gostly/ pe lyuep
aft̄ pe fleisch: p̄t lyuep after
hi silf/ p̄t is to sey/ he goip
whidir he wil· he slepip wha
ne he wil· & hou longe he wil·
he spekep wh̄t pūg he wil·
& etip what eū & wh̄ane he wil
& where he wil/ & also he pat

210

he pat lyuep aftir pe fleiſhly: dryſkep whanne he wil & hou miche he wil / he leuep & is myrie vnhoneſtly among whom he wil · & whanne he wil at pe laſte he pt lyuep aft pe fleiſhly: ſekep what eñ is ſwete to pe noſe · & what eñ is blañ diſhynge i touchynge · & whit eñ is delitable / to pe izen / & ſo what eñ is acceptable to his bodi: he haūtep & liep hou he wil & whanne he wil / for he willep fleiſhli alle pinges bo pe leueful & vnleueful / he delitep hi in moſt faire clopis & hozſes & armure as he wil & whanne he wil / & ſo he leuep not aftir god: but fleiſhly he delitep hī & fulfillep pe deſiris of his fleiſh as he wil & whanne he wil ¶ wherfore moost dere broþ i crſt we owen forto pie hertily goddis merci: pt gooſtly delitinge ma he leſſe pe flechly deſiris & pt pitee i us wip ſtonde pe cruelte of wrappe / & patien ce refreyne puel willy neſſe: & chaſtitee ouercome lecchirie / & pe ſiblete do away fool ho oldenelle / & meſurable ſtille nelle: ſtaūche harlatrie and iangelyng / pt gooſtly ſtudie i wakinges & pieris & alme dedis: pitt out cruelte / ſobre nelle: daūte drunkenelle / pat mylde nelle be lord to wraþe & woodnelle / vtrage ſadnelle: goſtly lyztnelle / & pp chaſtite: ſchitt out lecchirie / pe chaſtite of god & of neizbore: refreyne pe coueitiſe of pis world deep mekenelle: defoule hooſt & pde / for mekenelle makep me lyk to hooly aūgelis: and pde makep denelis of aūgelis

And pt y ſchewe opēly pde is bigynnyng · pe ende & pe cauſe: of alle ſynes / forwhi pde is not onely ſynne it ſilf: but alſo · no ſynne myzt be · or may be · or ſchal mowe be wip oute pde / forſope eny ſynne is noon op pyng: but deſpit of god · bi whiche we deſpiſen his comaūdemēt & noon op pyng but pde: coūſeilep pis to ma / forſope pde & coueitiſe i ſo miche ben oon puel: pt nep pde mai be foūde wip oute coueitiſe · nep coueitiſe wip oute pde / forwhi · of pde ben bronzt forp & diſcenciouns · backbitynges · enuees · wrappis · chidinges · diſordes · ſtyrynges · fool hardynelles · coueitinges of worſchip · hi pocriſies · ſuperciouſ · boaſt · iangleyng · vaintee · vnreſte ·

lesyng · forliuerynge · & liche ope-
ye wlyche it is longe forto non
bre ech bi hi lif / & coueitise ma
kep mẽ glotoñe · vntẽperaũce ·
driñkeleiue · delicepinge mychę-
nauaynonris · lechonris · spou
se brekers · defoulers of maí
dons · & of kynel wymen · ful
of gvete tvelpallis · & ope vno
ũbveable syñes · bi wlyche pe
deuel is wont to forto caste
don mãkynde / cst wiþ meke
nesse seiþ / my soule is mekid
i eerpe / pe deuel seiþ bi þde
& coueitise · y shal be lyk to
pe hyest god / cst wlyãne he
was i enemyed to god : bi me
kenesse lorde hi self takiñ
ge pe fozm fourme of seruaiñt-
he y maad obedient to pe dep:
mekide hi silf to pe fadir / pe
deuel seiþ bi þde & coueitise / y
shal reise up my seege abone
pe sterres of god / cst seiþ bi
mekenesse · lerne ze of me /
for y am mylde & meke of her
te / pe deuel coueitous & pvond
spekep bi pharao & seiþ pus /
y knowe not pe lord : and y
shal not delyñe israel / cst cst
seiþ bi mekenesse · if y shal
sey · pt y knewe not pe fadir :
y shal be aliere lyk to zou :
but y hane knowe hi & y kepe
his maũdemẽtis / pe deuel pr

ond & coueitous seiþ · flodes ben my
ne & y made hem / cst wt mekenesse
seiþ / y may not of my silf make
ony þing : but pe fadir dwelliñge
ĩme he doiþ pe werkis / pe de
uel proud & coueitous seiþ · alle
verynes of pe wœld ben myne
& pe glorie of hẽ · & y zine hem to
whõ y wole / cst wlyãne he was
riche : was maad pore forus /
pt bi point : we shulde be zolden hie
riche / pe deuil proud & coueitous
seiþ · as euen pt ben forsaken
ben gederid : so y gaderide al eer
pe · & noon was pat moyde a
feper & openyde a monp / cst seiþ
bi mekenesse · y am maad lyk
to pe solitarie pelican · y wakide
& am maad as a solitarie spar
we ĩ pe roof / pe deuel bi þde &
coueitise seiþ · y hane maad drie
bi pe step of my feet : alle vpnes
of watris / cst bi mekenesse seiþ ·
wher y may not þie my fadir & 11
he shal zine to me mo pan twelue
legiouñ of aungelis : / and at pe
laste y shal close to gidere pe
deuel wt gret fallyng bi
þde & coueitise · is cast doũ to helle :
& cst wt mekenesse is reisid to
heuenes · forpi deie bysy
y hane destryed to pee a ferye
snares of pe deueles gile · & step
pes of hooly mekenesse : pt þ
moue liztlier teche pi singeris

hon per shulen shape pese grieð
& wolen bi mekenesse welde pe
kingdom of heuene / & if we wo
len parfourme pe coms of on
re lif & fulli come to ene las
tinge blisse: shonpe we firste
puel conentise & pe deueles pride
& wip al mekenesse enforse
we ns for to folowe pe steppis
of cest / & if ony mañ seruynge
to an erpely emperour stry
ep for to obeie to ech comañde
ment of hi: hou myche more a
man seruynge to pe heuenly
emperour owep to kepe alle
heuenly comañdements / & ny
brop stire pi soule for to wake
pat no slep of sinne make it
heny / an erpely knyzt is redi
& wilful: whider-eñ he is se
nt / nep he shal nouse be ex
cused bi loue of his wif or
of his children / mychel more
a knyzt of cest owep to obeie
wip oute lettynge of pis world
to his emperour pe lord ihū
cest: whiche azenb ouzte hi wt
his precious blood & pi erpely
knyzt goist azens pin enemy
pat may be seie to batel / but
pe enemy vnable to be seie
ceesseþ not to fizte azens cestis
knyzt ech day / pou vnderstondest
bodily armures stryngest to
fizte azens pe body of pin en
emy: but his wrastelyng is
azens pe deuel wip spirituel
armures / pi berist i batel an
d̄ helm i pe heed: but cest is
pe helm of hi / pou closist pee
wip an habuniõn left pou be
woundid / but hers closid for pe
habuniõn wip charite of cest /
pi sendest out speres & arowes
azens pin enemy: he studieþ
for to dresse mekenesse & hool
si wordis azens his enemy /
pou cristen not alday pin ar
mures · til pi hame parfourm
ed pe batel: lest pi be woundid
of pin aduersarie / he shal ne
ise be vnarmed: for his ene
my is more fel wisse pan pin /
fforsope pin enemy fizteþ for
a tyme: but pe enemy of hi
as longe as he is i bodi ceesseþ
not to fizte wip hi / pin armures
ben trauelous & hemy to bere:
but his armures ben softe &
lizte / pi ceesseþ not for erpely
trauel: wœldly zifte / but he
shal receyne for spirituel
trauel: heuenly meede / pou
maiest fair pin armes wip
ourniyng of vies: he takeþ of
cest wt ornement of vertues
fairnesse of his soule / for he
abideþ eke heuenly zift of cest.
whiche castep awey erply po
mpe of pis world & wo to pis

if we casten awey pe softe 3ok of
cst: & vndirputtē us to bere wh
at euē so greuous is & chargeo
us to oure soule/ and whyle we
lonē pe perel: we fallē i to dey
Therfore brop biholde we
who it is pat azenbouzte
us wip his & þcious blo
od: & what we owen to
hi pat azenbouzte us wt
so gweet mysshees/ sip we sh
so gweet will louen erpely
fadir & modir pat a litel tym
e suffreden trauelid for us:
wher we owen not moze to
lone oure heuēly fadir pat
for us was fichid on pe crosse:
forwhi what eni seruyse of
oure fadris & modris was a
boute us: it is pe ordynaūce
of hi/ pe whiche made redi to
us bi his purueyaūce fadris
& modris: bifore pt we weren
i pis world/ bi pe seruyse of
who we weren norisched & he
fillide wip mylke/ þfore lone
we moze oure azenbier: pan
alle oþe þuges/ whiche wip
his owen hondis: fourmede
bope us & fadris & modris/ &
rette we to his name & not to
oure fleschis: alle goodes pt
ben don eche day meenis us
for holy writt comaūdep
us to lone oure fadris & mod
ris as oure owne entrailes:
out take whanne pei forbeden us
for to neize to pe seruyse of cst/
fforlope if pei wolen forbede us
pt: we ben not comaūdid to birie
hē/ for cst is to be loued: Abone
oure fadris & modris/ for fadir
& modir 3iuē not to us poo þin
ges: whiche cst hi silf doip/ for
he seip i pe gospel· he pat louep
fadir or modir· or children moze
pan me: is not worpi of me/
bi hou miche oup maī louep hi
moze: bi so miche he shal be
maad moze at ese & moze blis
ful/ for he louep us so miche;
pt he vouchide shar for to die
for us/ & his hondis pat diden
moost vtilis: were pricid wt
naylis for oure azenbiyng/ &
vnpitousle mē dressiden galle for
mete to his hony swete mouþ:
of whiche mouþ flowide out
ful helful doctrine/ and he pat
hurtide us maī: was sore betī/
And he pt curside us maī: suffe
ride for us schewschipes & wan
þuges/ he sufferide alle pese
þuges: for to 3iue to us euerlast
inge lijf/ & þouz he 3iue to us
so many benefices: 3it he axip
no þing of hi us but pat we
lone hi & kepe to hi oure soulis
& oure bodies vndefouled/ pt
he dwelle eue i us: & we perfitly

dwelle wt hī / sopli he ax̄ip not
gold of us · ney silū · ney mant
els ne p̄cious clopis / ney bies ·
for armes · ney feeldis ney siche
op̄ pinges / but he spekey us silf
he conentey to reste ī us / p̄foze
go we to hī: pat we haue eue
lastige liif / haue we ī us pe lo
ne of god & of oure neizbore /
for he pat loney his neizebore ·
hap fulfillid pe lawe / but aze
ward · he pat hatep hī: is a
man cleer / pe herte of hī pat
loney his broper: is ī pesible
nesse / for pe man hatige his
neizboze: is bigon abonte wip
tepest / a mylde man is bemy
ngne · zhe pouz he suffre pnel
is: he rettiy it for nouzt / but
a wicke man herynge a shr
ewid word of his neizboze: de
mey dispisyng / he pat is ful
of charite: goiy foz wip pe
sible p̄witt & ful cleer cheve /
a man ful of hatevede: goiy
wrapful / but p" deuelwarpe
brop̄ move not shamdre to
ony ma ī pi liif / and do not
pat pt profitable oonely to pe:
but pt pt is plesinge to hī / and
what eū p̄ng not be don to
pi silf: comette p" not pt it co
me to pi neizboze / if p" seest
hī lynynge ī goode dedis: pou
ke pon god to grdere wip hī.

and sey p" his rope pm / and if
he suffre ony adūsitee: rette
p" his heynesse as pm owne
f lone p" neue pi neizbore wip
feyned herte / for ī pese p̄nges
god is cwid to wrappe / sopeli
he pat wicliapey pees: makep
dwellyng wedi to cst ī pe hous
of his soule / for cst is pees: f
he wole veste ī pees / but i all
mans · god wlatep a ma pt is
wrapful · envyous · bacbite ·
liere & proud / sopeli an envy
ous man is lyk to a shyp pat
is p̄voked wip wawes of pe
see · & is eue ī disturblyng / de
a ranyschynge woolff he wey
ip wood · he is holden p̄deli m
pe wrecchidnesses · & he fail
nge at pe laste is drynen to
nouzt / & eue ful of woodnesse
he is mad felowe of fendes
a pesible ma weldep a shū
soule / he is a place wardid
of cūpenye of aūgels · & he is
fulfillid wip fruyt of myrp
ioynge & delitinge ī pe lord /
alle his pinges lynen ī pees ·
drynep awey discord · he liztne
pny pines of his soule · he shal
lerne felouschip of aūgels: t
shal gete wtoute ende pe kīg
of euer lastinge blisse
) wopey p̄ biseche de
pon not pe heestis of

god fille of fablis oz AB pei
weren maad of me: while pei
be sprungen ont of pe welle pt
is onre sustenour / nep ony adn
sitee breke pi soule / eip prospe
ritee of pe world fro pe biddig
es of god & fro charite pat is
i cst ihū onre lord / ffor whi v
tu of pi soule is: for to lone
god & for to hate woo pinges wh
ich god louep not / soplych ver
tu of pi soule is for to use pa
cience: & for to bowe awey fro
al impacience vtu of pi soule
is for to kepe chastitee bope
of bodi & of soule vtu of pi
soule is for to dispise veyn glor
ie of pis world & defoule alle
fallynge pinges & for to fiele
while p" liuest i bodi: for pe lo
ue of ihū pat azenbouzte pee /
vtu of pi soule is for to studie
to mekenesse & wiate pde / vtu
of pi soule is for to forbede &
bete doū wrappe & woodnesse
vtu of pi soule is for to bowe
awei fro al folie: & bidiffe pe
wisdom of god / vtu of pi soule
is for to ingete al delityng of
flesh: & for to reise pi mynde
to cst / pfore p" maist liztli and
fulliztli gete pese vtues: if p"
wilt eschewe cure of worldly
pinges / euelp & fallinge / & ha
ddist pitt no ping bifore pe

lone of cst / To my broy lone p"
god of al pi myde: pt in alle pi
dedis p" plese hi / sopely he pat
is wuplid i mariage: haftep to
for to plese his wif / michye more
a soule azen bouzt wip cstis blo
od: owep to plese his spouse cst
for god hi silf wole not pt he
be loued onely i wordis: but
wt clene herte & mist werkis /
for he is not herer & bihalder
of wordis: but of pe herte //
¶ my broy y biseche pt fleischly
lone pitte neie awey hertili
lone fro pee / y biseche pe flow
ynge & careful swetnesse of
pis world take pee neie / ne
fairnesse of bodi disseyne pee:
lest dep entre i to pi soule bi wy
ndowes of pin yzen / my broy
sei p" to me y biseche what pro
fit is i fairnesse of fleisch / whep
it dripep not as hep pat sumte
wip heete of somer: & litel & litē
lesep pe firste fairnesse / and
whanne dep schal come y biseche
sey p" to me hou greet fairnesse
schal dwelle pānne i pe bodi / pānne
schalt p" knowleche pt pt is ve
yn: pt p" lonedist bifore veynli /
whanne p" schalt se al pe bodi
for to swelle & to be turned into
stynk / where p" schalt not close
pi nose purlid · lest p" suffre no
ost foul stynk / y biseche pee

wher shal be pāne pe swetnesse
of lecherie & plenteuous metis
of feestis / where bē pe wordis
of glosenis pat maden ueilde
pe hertis of pe heerenis / wher
re bē pe swete wordis pat led
den / yn vnthankfulnesse to pe lordes
wher is pe vnmesurable le
tyng & foul plei / where ben
pāne pe vnrefreyned & vnpr
ofitable gladnesses / pis is
pe ende of vanitee & of
fleischli delitinge for whi pe wo
rld schal passe & his coueitise / o
hou miche ful blisful good is it
& hou miche moost blisful for
to loue pe schynyng fairnesse
of crist & hi forto schyne to on
re brestis wt bemes of his
schynyng & forto putte awei
al derknesse fro us / sine pu
not pe eeris to perseyue pe
wordis of backbitees: lest pou
receyue ded i pi soule / for to
pe backbite & herer backbityng
is mete of ded to eneip / and pt
y conclude schortly a backbite &
wilful herer beriñ pe deuel i
tuge / y biseche eschewe fro
pine pe sinaris of backbitingis:
bi whom pl herest ful many
tallen / ase to pe aprudēt her
te of pe lord & ful wakinge
witt: pt pl moue wiseli deme
pe wordis of backbitees / pat pl

vnknowe not pe sectis dilleritis
& aspies of hē & in to pe nettis
of hē: come not pi foot alle
yuel vices schulē be aliene fro
us: whyle crist wole be oure he
ritage / pfore for we bē vncleyn
of liche: caste we doñ us silf
meekely i pe sizt of oure fadir
& bringe we forp oure sinnes
pere bitwene us pt he pt is
oure heuenli fadir to do hem
awey / and whanne we han
knowleched pus: mistrie we
not us silf prynge left as pe
ilke fariseo we go awei dāpn
ed / hanne we mynde of pe ilke
publican: & so pie we pat we
dilleer ne forto haue forzinen
esse of trespassis / pe cry of
oure herte knocke at pe eeris
of al myzti god for i acleue
soule he schal be pleesid / in ty
me of pier caste we awey al
malice of herte fro us & forz
yne to mē sympnige azens us
sothly pis is almynde of serpent
pe whiche serpent whanne it
schal bigynne forto go to drīke
watr: bifore it comep to pe welle
it casteb out al venym folowe
pl pis serpent i pis partie of
pe gospel word of oure lord ihū
crist wher he seip be ze prudēt
as serpētis and caste pl out al
bittir venym of wrappe: and

forzine yon to pñ euen seruñ
ñtñs pt pi lỹnes be forzinè to
pee/ as ye gospel ꝛeherñdiþ
forzine ze: & it shal be forzon
ñ to zon/ zine ze: & it shal be
zonen to zon/ wyat mañ yon
comertist pt god be meenis
pee: be p" pi silf sich/ wt pi ser
uañt & to ech werk wyat eñ
p" shalt bigỹne to do: first ñ
clepe god & do pañkigis to hi/
and wyhãne p" hast fully end
id pt werk: do p" on ye same
mañe/ judepe yon god of al
pñ herte: & p" shal fynde hi/
& wyhãne p" hast foñdñ: leue
not hi pt pi soule be ioyned ĩ
his loue/ my brop studie yon
pis i pi lif: & offre pi clene
pier to ye lord cst/ leste suber
flu yonztis of pis world distrw
ble pi herte/ ney pi mynde be
rampshid i to diuise pinges/ for
hope bryngke yee to stonde ñ
pe sizt of god yat beholdep
pe hid pinges of herte & kno
wep pe pup pinges of pi my
nde/ p forze wakynghi & bisily
stonde yon wyz i pe sizt of god
i tyme of pier: pt yon mowe
fle liztlier pe wyz coupinge
tẽptacioñ of pe fend/ for if pe
yuele yonztis & soule of pis
world troubleu pñ herte &
cõstreiñ yee for to do wickidly
ony vnleneful ping: bicleue pie
ris & holy wakigis pei shilde
be pitt awey fro pi soule/ for
wyh pier is a greet wardiug
of pi soule/ bi moost clene pieris
alle pinges pt be profitable to
us bẽ zoñ of pe lord: & alle
nopful pinges bẽ dryuẽ awey/
& pt p dispute not longe of pis:
as pe fleisly is norischid of fle
isshly metis: so owre gner mañ
pat is pe soule: is norisshed &
fed of goddis spechis And of
pieris ¶ y biseche fede p" pi
soule wip goostly metis· pt is·
ypt feip· hope & charite· & ope
vtues: bi wyche vndirstõde
yon for to loue god & kepe his
heestis/ pt wyhãne ye laste
day shal come: aungels of pe
es vessepue yee· & delyuie yee
fro power of pe fend· & pt p"
disserue for to fully vse pe cñ
peine of seyntis i eñlastige
reste· & to welde eñlastige lif
ypt alle seyntis/ forwyh yon
woost moost ctenly pt ye poss
ession of pe kingdom of heue
ne is bihizt to yee: but loke pt
p" be not mad straunge yer fro
I biseche my broper y bise
che telle p" to alle pt ben
vndir yee· & of god will
n pñ hous fro ye moost to pe
leeste/ shierue p" pe lone & pe

swetnesse of heuenli kingdom & pe vertuelle & drede of helle / & pe pilgrymage & walkinge of pe helpe of hē / for pu shalt zelde riken ynge to pe lord for alle pat ben vndir pee i pin hond / shewe pu bidde · counsaile · cōforte pu hē pt pei kepe hem silf fro pde- fro backbityng · fro drunkenesse · fro leccherie / fro wrappe · fro mysswerynge · fro couetise pe whiche is rote of alle yueli / for a couertous man hap his soule sett to sale / in pe tyme pat he coueite ony mānys gold or silu̅r or faire clo pis · or also if he coueite ony mānys wyf fair i face: for u onyt he doip man sleynge / And as a mā chargip not to helde watir i to pe erpe: so it is to hi̅ for to shede out pe blood of his neizbore / forpope ful ma ny soulis han falle i to perel of dey: for couetise / And many mē for pat synne were stoned to dey: as pe lord comaūdide / forpope saul was maad alie ne fro god · for couetise / & at pe laste he was cast out of pe kingis hey nesse: & was slayn of his enemyes / And of ful many mo y myzte sey many pinges: but to a wijs man fewe ben y nowe / A treuli on pe lord & oure sauyour wolde ha ne cast awei pe loue of riches- is: fro hertis of pe farisees / but for pei were moost couet ous: pei stoppiden pe helful wordis of pe lord / for whi pe lo ue of richessis sufferide not pe ilke riche mā for to entre: whō pe lord clepide to pe kyngdom of heuenes / but also pe heete of co uetise brente pe herte of iudas: pt he betrayde pe lord pat is zin of alle goodis · i to pe hondis of dispitouse mē / forsope couetou sis mā is lijk to helle / for helle shal neuer sey · it is ynow: hou many euer it shal deuoure / so ponz alle tresouris shulde flo we i to an auarous mā: he shal neuer be fulfillid y of Therfore ony brop comaūde alle pat bē i pin hous: forto be war of pis vice / for it is bete pat a man zine intel of his point to nedy men: pan to zine many pinges of vn rizteful getyng / eche mā after pt he hap: dredle he fayl / for so mychel god axip of eche man: hou mich pt he hap zouē to hi̅ almes pt is getē with wickednesse: is abhominable bifore god And pat pyng is plesynge to hi̅: pt was vrtfuly geten / sopeli pei ben sinnē vnpleynge opere mēn pingis: whiche seynen

pe

hem for to do almes / And whanne
per robben ope me: per feynen
he to do mcy to ope / forlope if
per zauen of her owne trauele:
it shulde be pauchful & accepta
ble to god / And pie p'' hem pat in
alle her werkis per do mykely
biforе god: what ping ene is to
be don of he / for what ene auñ
doip wip pde: it shal not be pau
chful to god / pat ping pt is don
mekeli: is plesynge to hi / in al
le her werkis be per meke: for
mekenesse is pe hienesse of ver
tues / nep' oup man shal come
to pe kingdom of heuenesse: but
bi mekenesse / forlope pe trau
lis of longe tyme & pieris and
almesdedis · fastiges & wakiges ·
if per shulē haue an ende wip
pde: be acquitid for nouzt biforе
god / but a meke man is accept
to god · & verip god i hi silf / n
ow we han alitil declarid of
pe ynel of pde: but for me vn
dir pee p fonde pis place nede
ful / pat azens pe fendis arow
es per serue for to reise pe shie
el of mekenesse / forlope a pro
ude ma is hatefil to god: & a
meke ma is ferdful to pe fend /
a meke ma pouz he be foul in
doping: nepeles he is glorio
wip vtues biforе god / but a
proude ma & fair · pouz he be
seen cleer i biholding: anetis
god he is vile pozou wickide
werkis / And ene his pde & his
vnstableuesse: is knowin i woz
dis & ver pinges / & in cheer & i
gopnge / he coueitep hi silf for
to be pisid of me: & he willep hi
silf for to be pchid i goodis to
whom he is alien / he sufferip
not hi silf for to be suget to ony
man / for ene among his peeres.
he coueitep to holde pe dignitee ·
& for to stie i to maze degree / &
pat pt he may not gete bi disser
tis: he wole vanysshe bi flater
ping & bacbitting / And as a shipp
pat is wip oute gouernour whan
ne it is proubn wip wawis:
vizt so a proud ma vizt & vnsta
ble is born aboute bi alle his
dedis / but a meke ma demep
hi silf pe laste / And he biholdip
nge wip fair cheer: apeerip
hiz biforе god / And whanne he
hap don alle pinges wel: zit
he seip y am an vnprofitable
seruaunt / & he witnesseth hym
silf for to haue don no ping:
& god puplischip his werkis ·
& brigep he fozp in to pe mynd
of / And makep his dedis wo
ndirful · & euhanlip hym And
makep hi cleer / And i tyme
of his pieris: pat ping pat
he axep · he may gete biforе

god / Al oone mekenesse getey
pese pinges & ope lisk to pese
Aneints god for it is pe liftinge
& pe delitable couche of oure
lord ihū cst · pat seip / on whō
shal y reste: bint on pe meke
man · & restful · & dredinge my
wordis / And este · ler ne ze of
me · he seip / for y am mylde &
meke of heerte / y bisechc shewe
p' Also to pine · & ley to hō · pat
god wipstondey pe proud / & pe
wr Appe of mā worchip not pe
rightwisnesse of god / god hymu
silf shal wisseli deme for mych
ries & Anowtreris in pe day
of doom / ley p' Also of mysdy
erige mē / A mā mychc swer
inge shal not Astape fyne: n
ep̄ vengeAūce shal go Awey
fro his hous / bAchbitinge is for
mychcioū of pe soule / pe prop
het seip / pe mā bAchbitige pine
in his neyḡbore: hi y pursuede /
Also god hatip distrod / salomō
seip · god hatey sixe pinges: &
his soule wlatey pe seuēpe / &
pis seuēpe is he p' sowey disso
rdes Among bripen / pese bē
metis & drinkes of dey to zoure
soule / pe prree of oure lord ihū
cst delyne us fro pese: & zine
he hi silf to us for to ete · pat
seide / y Am quik breed pt cām
doū fro heuene / he pt etip

my flesh & drinkey my blood:
hAy eūlAstige liif i hi silf / bint
ech mā bifore p' he resseyue pe
bodi & pe blood of oure lord ihū
cst: proue hi silf · & Aftir pe
biddig of poul pe posse · so ete
he pe ilke breed · & drinke of pe
cuppe / for he p' etey & drinkey
vnworpili hope pe bodi & blo
od: etip & drinkey doun to hi silf ·
not wisseli distreynyge pe bodi
of pe lord / forsope whāne we
shulē ressеyue hī: we owen
to knowlechc bifore · oure sy
nes · & do fruytful penAūce /
& to exAmyne more curiousli
Alle oure dedis / & if we shulē
fele i us noyful synes: Anoon
hAste we us for to waische hem
Awey bi trewe knowlechig
& veri penAūce / left w' ūndas
pe tītour we hidige pe deuel
wip̄ pine us perische / hidige &
drAwynge oure syne fro day
i to day / And if we hAn pouzt
ouy ping ynele or weiwardly:
p̄of do we penAūce · & swiftely
hAste we for to caste it out of
oure herte / nep̄ sey we · pis is
not greet syne p' y pouzte in
myn herte

Alas why we vnwise·
vndirstonde not · pat
oure pouztis bē ope
ne i pe sigt of pe lord & pei bē

F

knowen to yi: bifore pei gon
foꝛy i to dede/ foꝛlope danuy nu
pe lantē leiꝑ/ god is lekige pe
hertis & reynes/ & eft he leiꝑ/
pe loꝛd knowiꝑ pe ponꝛtis of
mē/ & in an oꝑ place he leiꝑ to
god/ pⁱ hast vndiꝛstonde my
ponꝛtis fro afeꝛ: & pⁱⁱ hast con
ꝛt my pay & my litel coꝛde/ y
bisechē luffre we not smytew
ed ponꝛtis ī us: left we charge
hē as leest synes/ foꝛ he pat
is diligent of pe left pinges:
bi litil he falley adoñ/ charge
we not litil pe bityng of a ser
pent: left his venym be spwey
it i to oure hertis/ foꝛ ponꝛ
venym is lijf of pe serpent:
neyeles it is dey to mā/ kitte
we aiwey tendre spwynges
of poꝛnes fro pe feeld of oure
herte: leste pei kecche ī us de
ep wotis/ foꝛsope we wite pt
oure herte is pe feel of oure
loꝛd ihū cꝛist/ tile we it wiꝑ he
nesly disciplynes: & suffere
we not dauntis foꝛ to be sow
ñ i pe feeld of so greet an em
peroiꝛ/ but make we it fair
wiꝑ alle flouris of vtues/ foꝛ
almyꝛti god delitey i pese. as
i shold write it is red. y. flour
of pe feel & lilie of enene vale
is. y fairnesse of pe woꝛld &
ingrinyte of meke mē/ ene and
ene be oure fleisly liggert to pe
soule/ & as an hand maide serue
it to her lady/ left we ziue vile
nefful strengyis to oure body: pt
it ioyne bataile azens oure spir
it/ but ene be pe fleisshe liggert.
pt it obeie to pe heestis of pe spi
rit/ ney suffre we pe hand ma
ide foꝛ to be maad fatt. left she
dispise her lady: but be she bou
dī to alle hir comandemētis &
seruyses/ foꝛ as bridelis ben to be
put on hoꝛsis: so oure bodies be
to be bridelid wiꝑ fastinges and
pieris/ foꝛwhi as cartis ben
led bi fallinge doñ if pei slake
pe bridelis: riȝt so pe soule wt
pe ille bodi slidey to pe fallinges
doñ of helle if we wole not putte
a bridel pey to/ & foꝛe be we goode
& wise cartes to oure bodi. pat
we mow go be pe riȝt wey/ foꝛ
ou mychē of metis harme not
oneli oure soulis: but also oure
bodies & brigen yn sikenessis/
pe strengye of stomak is wowed
foꝛ to be broken. bi ou mychē
gredinesse of metis & vntēper
aūce of drinke/ and so habūdaūce
of blood & coler & ful many like
nessis ben gendrid bi largenes
sis of metis/ foꝛsope as pese be
contrarie boye to bodi & to soule:
so tēperaūce of fastyng is medi
cyn to ech eiꝑ/ and ponȝ we mow

not bi al tyme · namely bi moost
hooly dayes of fastinges as myche
as we moun wip goddis help: fle
we delices of pe worlde & plentee
of metis/left oup tyme we tour
mentid in flawme: leke adrope
of watir & gete not oup helyng/
whiche ping god turne awey/
fle we drunkenelle: left we re
ne in to synne of lecherie/ for pe
postil comaundip to nat fille us
oun mesure wip wyn: in whiche
is lecherie/ for god zaf to us
wyn to gladnelle of herte: not
to drunkenelle/ pfore drinke we
not hou myche foul lust axip:
but hou myche pe feblenelle
of kynde axip/ pfore left we sette
to dey pt ping pt is comun to medi
cyn: p biseche yee brop shewe
p" to pi singectis in pin houp · pat
manp me bi wyn pan don ma
sleynges & forpyncciouns · neyer
pei forsoken dey it silf/ ope me
bi wyn ben take bi fendis/ ney
drunkenelle is op ping: pan a
moost open fende/ a drunkelew
man gesseth hi silf to do sun good
ping: whanne he is ouercome
bi casting doun/ porouz drunken
esse of wyn he is armed to wra
pynges & dispispyngis of neizb
ours/ & his mynde is chaungid &
his tunge blaberip/ forsope sich
a man whanne he gesseth hi silf to
drinke wyn: he is drunken of pe
wyn/ for whi fiftl many me bi
wyn: han drawe to gidre moost
febleuelle · nep pei myzte eu aft
gete pei vnp helpe/ for pei tepide
not pe brennynge lust of gloto
nye/ for as a filthe hastep wip
gredi iowis for to swolowe met
& sodeynly fynden pe hoost wippin
pe iowis: so a drunkelew man resse
pnep wippine hi wyn his enemy
pat drynep hi as dep to al per
moost vnleueful werk/ and so
vnresonable man is takin as an
vnresonable beest/ but comaunde
p" my brop to al pin houshold
meynee & singectis to pee: pt pei
shewe hem silf sobre/ and efte re
ste pei not hem silf to pide for alsty
nesse: but pt pei do alle pinges
mesurably · vigtfuly · pitously ·
& religiously for eft shedde his
blood not onely for us clerkis:
but also for al mankynde pat ben
bifore ordeyned to blisse/ neyer
pe kingdom of heuene is onely
bihigt to us clerkis: but also to
alle lewid men pat kepen of al pe
herte estis comaundementis/ for
whi it is agreet confusioun to lew
id men pat seyn pus/ what parte
pnep it to me forto here i redinge
pe bookis of hooly scriptures:
to lerne or ofte vsene to pe pestis
or to churchis of seyntis: whanne

y am mad a clerk per sepn· y shal do poo pinges whiche it vihon ey a clerk to do/ wh vndirston dip he not pat he wil take euen part of mete & drike & of alle pe goodis of pis erpe/ & also pe blis se of heuenli kigdom: & wil not bere wip euen trauel pezok of ẽst/ what profitep it to liche men i oo party to be lyc i pe world: & i an oper parti to be proud ad ũ/ in oo parti for to shyne wip gold & p̃cious clopis: & in an oper parti to be occupied wip wrecchi dnellis of pis lyf i derkenelle of vices/ no vilynelle be to pee i herte· for pou art a persoone of lewid cloping: for auentis god is noon out taking of persoon es/ ffor on lyk mane· heueli pa leis is open to lewid me kepige goddis comaũdemẽtis· as it is to clevkis & nonnes ouerued wt hooli habite/ pe while y is not now iew ne greek· ney pral ne fre man to be out taken: but ẽst is alle pinges i alle pin ges/ who eu is i pe bodi of hi: he is greet/ p̃foze sette pou pi silf i to his hooli bodi: pt pou be amẽbre of pat mooste noble hed/ of al pin herte loue pou pin hed· pt is ẽst: & alle pe m embris of pt hed/ hou mai pe hond be enemy to pe hond/ or pe foot hate pe foot: if oỹe men bring ioien to gidere to her iopn ture· & ouzen to wexe i to a par fit man to encresyng of ẽstis bodi/ ech clerk & lewid man pt is azenbouzt wip ẽstis p̃cious blood· pe whiche is dipped i ẽstis baptym: ouzep foz to lyue foz p mekeli & to laste i pe hooli gooste// ffor it is nouzt wozp foz to mis were hi silf bi wordis to be a ẽsten man: & deme it bi dedis· pe while he is occupt i myde & spirit/ of liche me ẽst bry tre nye hi silf: seip i pe gospel/ not ech ma pt seip to me lord lord· shal entre i to pe kigdom of heueues: but he pat doip pe will of my fadir pt is i heue nes/ and i an oỹ place pe pro phet i blamyng liche me seip pus/ pis puple honourip me wip her lippis: but pe herte of hẽ is fer fro me/ foz whi if a citee shal be wel wardid i oo parti· & i an oỹ parti be dested: it ziney entryng to enemyes/ and if a shyp shal be mand sad wip vyndigis to gidere· & hane oo bozd hoolid: it shall ben drenchid bi wawis of wa ter i to pe deppe/ forsope it accz dip eueli to alle lewid men· to clerkis & mũkis also· foz to hane feip· hope & charite· &

mekenesse & for to lone god of
al pe herte to make very knowl
leching of oure synes & to do
worpi penaunce / for pe moost
mercyful lord forgyney to men
fleynge to penaunce / but be
we not so muche sikir of god
dis mercy: pt we encresse synne
to synne / ney sey we while pe
wexynge age pryney hastip
we oure lustis: & i pe laste ty
me i pe eelde do we penaunce
of oure pnelis / for pe lord is
pitous & mercyful: & he wil not
penke more of oure wickide
werkis / p biseche pt we pēke
not pus: for it is foly3u folie
to penke pese pinges / And it
is vnpitous ping· ony mā for
to wille to axe sich licēce of
god: pe bigynnyng of wlsiche
ping· is to departe us fro god /
perfore penke we not siche
pingis: sip we wite not i wlh
at day we shulē die / for no
man woot pe day of his laste
passyng / alle mē dien not i hev
oolde age: but i dyuerse ages m
en passen hēnes / And i wlhat
manre dedis ech mā shal be fo
undē: i pe same he shal be dem
ed wlhānne pe soule shal passe
out of pe bodi / forsope pe pro
phet i pe sautē seip / lord no m
an i helle shal knowleche to pee

Perfore hastip we us to be cō
uertid to penaūce: & pe lastē
day be ofte turned bifore
oure yen / And whānne we
shulē lie doū i oure bed: & ste
we us not to comme to pe liȝt
of day / And pus we shulē mo
ost liztly refreyne oure body
fro vices & pinel coueitises /
penke oure herte eiſe on heuēly
bihestis / here we on alle erpeli
pingis pt we welden i to dwel
lynges of heuene to mynge:
pt whānne we shulē be born
pidir· we may vse eiſe heuēli
goodis / for whi we bileuē· pt
whānne oure bodi shal be vn
boundē fro bondes of feelsh· if
we han lyued wel & rizth bifo
re god: A noon pe cūpeny of
Aungelis & of alle sepintis shulē
be ioyned i to oure comyng &
i to oure victuryes / And pei
shulē fully lede us: for to wor
shipe pe verey nige / if we don
po pinges while pt we lyuen
i body as we p seide: pat ben
pleasaūt to god / pānne pees shal
be to us al aboute· & soūeyn si
kirnesse: ney we shulē pānne
drede more pe firi darts of
pe deuel: ne ony wyu enemy
of alle pise pt coueiten now to
smyte oure soulis / ney pruī
ney fier· ney pe foule face of

tour nūcōtour · ney hūger ne pri
st · ney ony likenesse of fleisshe/
ye fleish shal no more be admīs
trē to ye spīrit: ney we shulē
drede ony perel/ but whāne we
shulē caste awey ye heuynesse
of fleish: thāne ye hooli goost
shal zyue to us aduertīsīge pla
ce i heuēli pīngis/ to whō alitil
biforе we haddē maad aduert
yng wt̄ yne ye ostage of our
body/ and now glad & ioyīge
we shulē abide ye day of doom
to comynge: i whyche doom ye
soulis of alle mē shulē resseyv
ne meritis of her dedis/ and
azenward · tyneris & vnpito
us mē: shulē perische for euer/
but raney nouris & gredi mē/
pronde mē · & auowtreris · wr
aþful mē & coueitous · wari
ous & forswornē men: ī wepyng wey
shulē most bittirly wepe/ and
yet shulē not haue wipontē
ende forzyuenesse of her yuelis/
alle yei yt̄ fleddē pe lustis of
her fleisly: shulē be wipholde ī
ful greet mourningg/ yei shu
lē be ī sorowe of herte & i ete
lastīge weilyng: ye whyche le
uyden to vices & vnskilful de
sires/ and whāne alle yese
shulē be yutt ī ye fires of hel
le for synnes & grete trespassis:
we shulē resseyue euerlastīge

mede wip reyntis · if we plesen
god whyle we ben ī pis bodi/ ver
fore dispise we alle pingis yt̄ bē
veyn & fallīge: yt̄ cōst doynge mā
to us · we mai differne so greet
glorie/ ene vowe we awey fro
vices: & go we to vertues/ ney in
perfitnesse wardis come forp of oure
mony/ for whi we bē for to zelde
reson for oure yuel wardis: pat
i pe day of doom/ ney wone we
oure tunge to curse ony mā: whi
che tunge is maad to blesse and
herie god/ ney haūte we wicke
customes ī oure doynge ei pei
oure wonyt/ for a custom pat
shal be drawē along & cōfer
med: is not cast out wipouten
gret trauel/ be we litil ī malice:
& parfit mē ī wit/ in sūme pīn
gis zyue we us as olde men:
ī sūme pingis as zynge/ for it
longip to a litil child to pleie:
sopeli to a perfit mā it longip
for to weile/ for weilyng now:
getip euerlastīge gladnesse aftir/
forsope al ping yt̄ is out of go
od mesure: makip dissolucioun
of soule · & sīligent auētis pe
comaūdemētis of pe lord/ ney
he mai lizteli azenclepe to mys
de his trespassis: & so he forze
tip po pingis yt̄ shulde stire
him to penaūce/ & so litil & litil:
he falley fro alle goodis //

cõpunccioñ of herte shall not hane
ony entree pere: where vnmeth
rable viæs & yuel conceitiges sh
uld be hauntid/ but where teeris
shuld be: pere goostli fier is
kyndelid· pat lizthep pe þuytees
of soule/ no lone of pe world de
parte us fro pe lone of crist: but
alle oure pouzts go to pe mee
dis of pe cõtree pt is conyge-
& peuke pei of heuenli þuigis/
pis is pi glorie· pis is pi per fec
cioñ of vẽquyng of pi stryf/ he
is seid perfit· not whiche is per
fist in age: but whiche is parfist
in witt/ nep childis age anoiep
ony man: if pt he be parfit in
soule/ nep oolde age shal pro
fite: if pt he be litil in witt/ for
whi damp whanne he was ach
ild hadde a sad soule: & þfore he
was resid into a kyng/ & saul
whanne he was in olde age· for
he hadde in hi weiwardnesse:
was cast out of pe kingis heyn
esse/ ffor pope oure lord & saueour
was crucified of eldre mẽ: & he
gon in to ierusalẽ was heried
to gidre of litil children/ ffor a
tree if it be vnfruytous of ma
ny zeeris: is kitt doũ/ sopeli if
it shal be neuue & fruytous it
is tilid: pt it bringe forp more
plẽteuouser fruyt/ þfore y set
te pese licnellis: pat nep zoũge
ne olde man in pin hous: hane
ẽst of his helpe· eper of his wer
kis/ but he pat lopep: loue he in
pe lord/ but hauite pt pe cũpeny
of parfist mẽ: & turne pou not
awey pin eere fro pe wordis
of hẽ· & delite pi soule in her cõ
sel/ for pe wordis of mẽ dredige
pe lord: ben wordis of lijf/ and
helpe of soule to hẽ pt gladly
here & take teut to hẽ/ as pe
sũne risynge dryuep awey
myst: so pe techyng of hooli m
en castep out derkenesse of on
re wittis/ y biseche eshenesse pt
prouide mẽ· enyous· bacbitis·
lieris· forswom mẽ· & dispisige
her owne helpe of soule/ whi
che ben deede to vtues· & gladẽ
in her fleischli lustis: pt pei wa
nte goodis lopes/ y sey not one
li pt pt hane not in pin hous oon
lich: but also wher elle pt shalt
here siche mẽ to be· eshenesse hẽ/
no homelynesse be to pee wip
siche manie men/ nep wole pt
speke wip hẽ: if pt mist not
wip pe nicy of god· azen clepe hẽ
fro her errour/ ffor whi ofte bi
oo stabbid schep: al pe flok is de
foulid/ & a litil part of galle:
turnep greet swetnesse in to
bitternesse/ ffor pouz sich anim
be seen to pee cleer outward
& noble in habite· & bringe forp

to yee lyvete wordis: neveles
if ye doy wip yee contrarie in
werkis/ his teynyg noiey moze
pan ye schap plesip of wordis/
forlope anim is proued not of
wordis: but of vtnes/ rizt lo
be p̄ued anētis god: & suffre
gladly alle pinges/ for pe lone
of gode crist/ & be not pī inwitt
brokū wip fleischli pingis wh
anie yei comē: ney worldly
pingis p̄t bē fallīge doū ma
ke neithe ye strengpe of yi pa
cience/ but vay drede p̄ god·
yonz p̄ schalt tarie fro yi pur
pos/ And whanne eū p̄ schalt
fele yee gilti of sy̆ne: be you
not cōfoūdid to turne to pena
ūce/ for he p̄t schal do penaūce
heeve: he schal not do penaū
ce i pe laste tyme. ¶ In alle
yi dedis & ponztis plese p̄ to
god: ney studie p̄ to plese ony
oy ma· but to edificacioū of
soule/ And i ech werk pat pou
penkist to do· first penke on
god/ & examyne diligentli if
pat ping p̄t p̄ penkist is plesy
nge to god/ And if it is riztful
bifore god: pan fourme it/ soyli
if it schal be foūdid cōtrarie:
litt it awey fro yi soule/ And
do p̄ alle pinges bi cōsel and
wisdom: p̄t yi werkis & yi pa
yis be dressid after pe will of
ye lord/ in ech yier & bilechyng·
yie p̄· pe will of pe lord to be ma
ad i pee: & not yin owne will/ &
after pe comaūdement of pe postil/
it bihoney to yié wip oute ceesl
yng· & to reise hooli hondis to
god wt oute wrappe & strijf
e lord is mankful & myey miy
to mē hopinge in hī/ ma was
not nedeful to hī p̄t hadde not
oup sy̆ne· whiche made aūgels
and sette bifore arkaūgels: but
pat we gete mā of hi/ hezak al
mes· but almes was not nede
ful to hi· whoos ben alle kīgdoms
of heuenes/ whiche ordeynede
dompnacioms· principatis· vtnes·
potestatis: but p̄t he schulde ma
ke us parteūs of pe kīgdom of
heuenes bi oure almesdedis/
pe lord is pacient & pesible: p̄t bi
his pacēce & his pees· he wolde
reconsile al pe world to god/ pt
was punt i wickidnesse/ & also
be we pacient & pesible wip oute
wrappe & strijf: if we wollen
fulli come to god/ & to alle men
do we good/ y sey not onely to
sūme parties· not to oon or to
tweyne or pre: but to alle mē/
soyly cit suffride not onely for
seyntis: but also for synful m
en & vnpitousse & grete trespas
sours he hiede on pe crosse: &
bi his passioū he azenclepide

ns alle to lyf / not oneli to ley
nis god 3af sinne & mone &
veyn · & alle growynge yn
gis of erpe pat springen i
erpis: but i comune he 3aaf
he to alle me / whiche mak
ip his sinne to springe on
goode me & yuele: & veynep
on nist me & vunst / pfore he
3aaf it i comune to alle me:
pt oure good & almesdedis ·
& oure charite & oure pacie
nce & oure mekenesse be de
lid i comyn to alle me / but
moost to pe houshold meyn
nee of pe feip: & pie we for
oure enemyes · & zelde we
good for yuel / honoure we
pore me: & resseyue we eft
i he · pat seide hi silf · hou lo
nge ze haue don to oon of pe
se my leeste bripren i my na
me: ze diden to me / and pus
we shulen be sones of god ·
& also eiris of god / forsope
euene eiris wip eft / and we
shulen be partyns of his kig
dom: where we shulen ne
uer die · & we shulen not we
xe oolde / where many cozru
pcioun is not nep ony sozowe ·
nep ony heynynesse of herte
aftir ioye · nep lizt of sinne ·
nep shynyng of mone and
of sterris / but oure lord ihu

eft shal be lizt & helpe · lyf &
charite · pees & ioye · & he sh
al be all good ping to alle m
en vilenyng i hi / pere is pe
loud of me lyuynge: pe whi
che loud pe prophet pside i
his long seiynge pus / pat vile
ne to se pe goodis of pe lord
i pe loud of me lyuynge / he
signifiep hi silf for to se pe
same heuenli meede · & for to
regne wip eft wip oute ende:
where nep ony nizt nei3ep
nep day shal be endid · nep
nyp seisse shal be seen · nep
coueitise shal appere / but eu
lastinge ioye & eu lastinge
gladnesse / pese be pe vilyzt
pingis of mist me: & pese be
pe vilyetingis of he / for pe whi
che hooly me trauelideu
& hastide & ceside not to re
ne i goode werkis · as longe
as pei were i pis world · in
fastingis · i almesdedis · in
chastite · i cotynence · i longe
abidinge · i pacience · i swet
nesse · i wel willynge · in
nyche fuel · i pieris · i perse
cucionis · i hungir & pirst ·
i cold & nakidnesse · i many
wakingis for crist is loue / &
bi alle pingis pei esthewe
den vnprofitable walkingis /
forsope vnprofitable walky

uges ben: wh̄ne ony man
shal walke aboute in any po
uert̄e & foule/ or to do ony cō
trarie thing· or vnleuefful/
hooly eschewed̄e liche walk
yngis/ liche mē despisen ye
world pat now is: p̄t pei mo
ñ wyne ye kingdom to com
inge/ pei token not heede bi
heestis or wrecchid richessis
of ye world: whiche leden
mē into vtyngre hē doñ to
hellis but pei forsakinge pis pre
sent cūtree: settid̄e bifore ye bi
holding of her pnytt to heue
ly cite· whos crafti man and
maker is god/ pei eschewiden
syne i word· i dede· in pouȝt· i
siȝt· i lesynge lesynge· in ser
ving· i bekenynge wip ȝen·
i hondis· i feet· i wrappe· in
chidyng· i woodnesse· i dissen
cioñ i veyn glorie· i pride· i hiȝ
herying· i couetise· keppynge
awey hē silf fro syne/ for pei
fastiden to gidedere twei fa
stingis· pat is fastig of bodi &
of soule/ for pei abstenyneden
hem silf fro wrappe & wood
nesse· & fro backbityng & blas
femye· & fro chidig & liche o
pere/ for as we shewiden
bifore· pese bē metis herige
dep of soule· pe whiche fedē
it to pitel & sleen bi euerlastige
deep/ and pese ben metis of
bodi & of soule to gidere· glato
nye· nyche sleep· fornicacioñ·
or vnclennesse· filnesse & swetn
esse i lustis· & manquellyng/
pese bē metis of bodi & soule
to gidere: whiche feden pe bo
di & greuen & sleen pe soule/
p̄fore eschewe we pese metis:
but desire we heuenly metis·
pat drawen us to heuene &
leden us to goddis wisdom·
to strong feiȝ i crist· benygnip
te· wel willyng· pacience· m
eknesse· goddis vtu & gladn
esse/ gode wordis & profitable
cume forȝ of oure mouȝ sa
ered wip goddis salt· pat is
wisdom to edificacioñ of m
en herīge. Lete we make we
i mynde pe lone of god & of
neiȝbore· i whiche hangep
al pe lawe & prophetis· And
p̄fourme we hē i werk/
pese bē pe comaundementis
of crist: whom he comaundip
us forto do/ & if we wolen
do hē: we shulē be parteins
of his kingdom· & we shulē
regne wip hi m blisse/ sopeli
if we shulē not do hē: neper
he wole pāne ȝyue to us his
kingdom/ if we denyen hym:
Also he wole denye us/ if we
bileuē not: he wil dispise

ferfful hȳ silf for ech vnbilen
eful man dop vnferyfully wh
ile it is vice of mā · bope to
bilene alle ynges · & to bile
ne no ȳng wiȳ sotyn studie
& walkige we owen to haue
cure: þt we here not of crist
deme of alle ī þe dai of doom
þat ȳng þt ſyneris ſhulē
here · go ze ī to eue lastinge
fier / forsope helle is vrily
mad redi to þe deuel & not
to alle mē · if þei don not þe
deueliſ werkis / wo to hē to
whom þe gnawyng of wor
mes is mad redi · & brēnyn
g of flawme / þirſt wonte
queuchig · wepyng & betyng
to gidre wiȳ teȳ · teeris of
izen · vtule derkenessis wiȳ
outē liȝt · peyne wipouten
ende / where is noon hono
r knowyng of neiȝbore :
but eue dinige sorowe and
weylyng / where dep is desi
rid · & it ſhal not be zouñ /
where noon hono is of eldre
mē · ne of kyng · ney lord abo
ue seruant · ney modir louey
sone or doȝtir · ney sone lyou
ouriȝ fadir / where al ynel
& al īdignacioū · stynk & bitt
irnesse is plēteuous / Just
mē dreddē yis & fleddē þese
ȳngis / þ þie þ bisechē & eft

mooſt dere brop þ gretli þie
þat bope we lone & drede god
& flē þese ȳnges : for eue last
inge dep is to oure soule · if
we lasten in þese

Forsope þese ȳnges ī þis
world ben worse þan al
ynel / þe soule of alȳne
dwellinge alle ī ſyne · þat is
blacker þan acrowe & yuele
aungelis þat rauyſhen it / &
helle whidir it is led / forsope
worse ȳngis þan ben þese
þre : bē þei not / þe ſame soule
also dredīge þe beer of þe do
om þt is to come · & biholdīge
his rott : seiȳ þus · inȳn oolde
wodīdis han woxe rotī & bē
corrupt of þe face of inȳn vn
wisdom / efte þ ben þre ī þis
world · & noon bete þan þei
an hooly soule lastīge ī gode
werkis · þat is brizte þāne
þe ſūne · & hooli aungelis þat
taken it up · & paradis ī to
whō it is led & abidige þe blis
se of heuene / þei bē not bete
þan þese ȳngis ī þis world /
forsope hooly aungelis deliten
þe soule wiȳ goostli song as
damp seiȳ ī þe ſaute lord blis
ful is he whō þ hast chosī &
hast takī to : he ſhal dwelle
ī þi tabernacle / we ſhulen
be fillid wiȳ goodis of þin

hous: pi tẽple is hooli wondir-
ful i eueuelle ¶ dere brop pen
ke we pese pingis holde we
stideliestli pese i oure pinwitt.
& be we war of edje sine &
wickidnesse i word i dede · in
pouzt i hondis · i feet i sizt in
hering · & kepinge oure bodi
& oure soule ¶ ffor cst oure
lord pat is god & soule of god
man don fro heuene i to erpe.
pt he shulde bere us wt hym
fro erpe to heuene for us sy
neris he stiede on pe crosse:
pt he wolde delyuie us fro to
urmẽt of pe deuel / he ressey
ued pepne of enemyes: pat
he wolde delyuie us fro euer
lastinge pepne / he resseyued
dep: pt he wolde delyuie us
fro dep / he roos azen fro dede
men: pt we rise azẽ in soule
& bodi i pe greet dai of doom /
pfore while we han tyme wor
che we: & eke studie we for to
do gode werkis & plesynge to
god to gidere wip goddis help /
lest sudeynli we bifore ocupi
ed wip pe dap of dep: leke sp
ace of penaunce & moũ not fy
nde it / pe while we bẽ i pis
tyme: it bihoueip us for to serue
for i pis tyme pat is aftir dep
or doom: we shulẽ repe pat
ping pat we shulẽ haue in
euerlastinge liif / forsope trueie
we here: & here we to gidere
oure birpeus for whidir pe
hed went bifore: pidir shulẽ
ope membris sue / holde we as
it is seid bifore: riztful feip
certeyn hope · & parfist charite /
for pe feip is as oure witt · &
charite as oure helpe / feip bi
leuep / charite worchip · & hope
strengpep / and pouz dyuise mẽ
bris han diuise offices: nepeles
if alle membris bẽ holdẽ in
vnyte of charite · pãne pei shu
lẽ discerne for to go aftir pe
hed / sopely oure hed is i heue
ne / & pe ilke treupe oure lord
ihũ cst seip pus hi silf of his
ferpful membris / if ony man
serue p to me · sue he me: and
where y am · pe also my ser
uaũt shal be / be we war-
& bi alle pingis be we war:
left bi ẽnye · hate · & backbitig ·
wrappe or chidyng: we be
kitt awey fro oure hed ihũ
cst & what eũ ping we ozon
re neizboris shulẽ suffre for
cristis loue: suffre we it to gi
dere bi delir of charite / and
what eũ good ping ony over
mã hap resseyued: ioye we
p of · as we hadden resseyu
ed it / and do we pankis for
hi pat hap resseyued ¶ lo now

as we seide bifore · þi mã suffi-
eþ tribulacõn or harm of þis
world · or for his giltis is cloþid
i ꝑson bi þe comaundemẽt of þe
emperour / or he is maad sor-
wful bi dey of fadir & modir ·
or of frendis / if we also sor-
wen for hi : we bẽ pãne ordi-
ned i bodi of þe chirche / if
we sorowẽ not : pãne bẽ we
kitt awei fro þe bodi of cha-
rite · þat gaderiþ to gidere &
myngeþ alle membris of þe
chirche / if god se us to haue
ioye of an oþis falling : and
on he kittiþ us awei fro þe
bodi / ꝑfore bi hap we sorowẽ
not of þe falling of oure neigh-
boris : for we bẽ kitt awei fro
þe bodi / for if we weren pere-
wiþ oute doute we haddun sor-
owed / deue brooþ biholde we ·
& diligently persey ue we þt
so longe · a membre is soor : þou
longe it is holdẽ to gidre in þe
bodi / sopely if it schal be kitt
awey : neiþ it schal mowe be
soor ne oust fele / for whanne
þe hond or ony membre schal
be kitt awey fro þe bodi : þo
ugh al þe bodi be departid þan
ne i many parties : þe ilke ho
nd þat is now departid fro felo
wschip of oþe membris · felip no
þing / lich is ech ẽtẽ mã : þat

sorowiþ not of an oþis harm
or torment · or also of deþ / but
þat is worse · i hap he ioieþ of
pese / & now for he is alien fro
þe bodi : ꝑfore he holdeþ not þe
loue of charite i herte / þe whi-
che mã · þe apostel comaundiþ
for to ioie wiþ mẽ ioiynge · &
wepe wiþ mẽ wepinge · seiinge
to gidre þe same þing ¶ And
salomon moost opinly amones
tiþ · þt we haue not ioye of
þe falling of oure bripen / so
þely nyy brooþ if we willen
kepe ꝥ bey charite & parfit :
studie we for to loue alle mẽ
as us silf / þt for ẽst is oure
hed : we diserue for to be men
bris of hi / þat whanne ẽst oure
glorie schal appeue : we mowe
disserue to appere wiþ hi i ioye
in aꝛeiing of charite · þat is lo
ue of god & of neigbore · as bry
& parfit membris of hi / longynge
alle mẽ as us silf : wt outen
ony þing. grile of malice or en
uye / for soþe he seiþ hi silf i þe
gospel · i þis þing alle mẽ schu
lẽ knowe þt ze bẽ my disciplis :
if ze schulẽ haue loue to gidre
for þe loue of neigbore wherby
ze neuer fuel

my dere worþe brooþ.
sip oure lord & oure
sauyour þat hadde

no ſȳne · ȳ vouchy ſaaf vs ſo
greet loue & delīr forto loue us
ſȳneris · pt we vitruelliȳ lyym
ſilf to ſuffre yat pūg pt we
ſuffren: wlȝ loūē we not hī
vs ſo parfit loue · ſiȳ we ben
not wiȳ oute ſȳne · & moū aȝe
wlē oure ſȳnes vs charite / pe
wlyle he lonyde us ſo myche:
pt alſo he ȝaf his owne ſone
to dep for us / & ſiȳ he ȝaf ſo
myche benȳgnite & mā to us:
wake we vtuelly · left we le
ſe ye good yat he ȝaf to us / &
alſo left we leſe ye ſacrement
of oure baptym · i wlyche we
bihiztē to forſake ye deuel and
alle his pōpis & ſȳnes / & if
we entren i to ony ſȳne aftir
oure baptym: merciful lord ha
ȝonn to us ye ſecōnde baptȳ
pt is welle of teris · & ordey
ned to us penaūce · for oure
freelte / pfore we owen to kn
owleche vily oure ſȳnes & to
do worpi fruytis of penaūce
aftir ye maūdemēt of a pest
diedīge god / for a pest owey
firſt to kīme heele his owen
ſȳnes as a wiſe & parfit lec
he: & aftirward to wipe a
wey & heele oȳ mēnes woū
dis · & not puplilhe / parfitly
loke we pese · if we moū fy
nde hē · & take we coūſel of

ome helpe wt liche pestis / pt
we leſe not heuēli heritage:
ye wlyche god hap maad redi
to us fro bigȳnyng of ye wor
ld: if we ſerue hī in riztwiſ
nelle & hoolynelle & clēnelle
of herte · i & in charite wiȳ
oute feynyng / & crie wiȳ ye
poſtil / wlo ſhal departe us
fro charite of crīſt / wlyeper
tribulacioū & angwiſhe · wlyer
perſecucioū or hūger · or nu
ed · or oȳe pūges yat suē
it is ſeid aftir / pt ney dey
neper liſe · ney angels · ney
principatis · ney pūgis yat
bē nowe ne to comynge · ney
ony creature: ſhal mowe
departe us fro charite of god ·
yat is i crīſt ihū oure lord / ſope
ly it is ſeid of ye firſte chirche
yat to hē wnāȝ oon herte &
oo ſoule i ye lord / & oo will
was to hē & oon vnwill: for
crīſtis charite hadde coūplid
hē in to oon / but azenward
fleiſhli mē & loūs of yis
world · bē departid azens
hē ſilf & vnioyned · monȳge
ſhaūdris ech to oȳe · ſtrynyn
ges · wrappis · chidīges · diſcē
cioūs · māquellinges · myſſiv
ernges · peſtis · vanteynes ·
& alle pūges yat yis world
loney & delitey ymme / ech mā

seiyng yus i ihs herte / y shall
do yat ying yt y wille & may /
y shall fille my pouzth & liky
ngis of bodi / my cũseilis he
lpe me· oz ye cũseilis of my
myzth̃ frendes· oz of fadir &
modir / gold & silner is plete
nous to me / seruaũtis and
mayd maidens bẽ to me / feld
es & many possessiõis of pis
world· mantels & pcious clo
pis: wher of y mai araie
me / y shall fille my will:
god wil zine me space of lif
& penaũce / alas wh dreden
we not yt yat ye gospel dred
fulli sowney seiyuge yus· y"
fool pis nyzt shulẽ deneiis
axe yi soule of yee: whos shy
lẽ po yingis be yãne: ye wh
iche y" hast maad redy / kno
we we us lik to be mẽ: & be
we not so proude azeus ye
lord: yt we performe oure
yuel willes· & putte so god
bihynde / & left we enforce us
afturward to bowe ye good
will of ye lord: to oure yuel
willes· & þe we be necligẽt
to amẽde oure shrewid will·
at ye will of ye lord eue bey
nge riztful / but wher eue it
delitey us: we wollẽ venge
oure wrõges· seiyuge ou yis
maue / y wole do mãquellig·

peruerse· a wowdẽ fornicacioũ:
& afturward y wil zine myn
azenbiyng to ye lord / wh vndir
stondẽ we not· while we seyn
so hardily suppositge yt god
may be paied wip ziftis: yat
yãne unpeise more we terren
hi to wrappe yan to ina / for
god delitey not i gold oz silu·
ney he seki opir ying of us:
yan oure diene soulis to be
plentid i his sizt / forzope god
coyney not hi silf to ye cũse
lis of seyneris / but he wan
ney us eue of oure helpe: &
zuey holsũ cũsel / for he hym
silf is cũselour of oure helpe·
as ye prophet seip / & his na
me shall be clepid a wondirful
cũselour / & eft it is seid of
hi i a psalm: blisful is ye mã
yat weute not i ye cũsel of
unpitouse mẽ / & eft / for wick
idnesse is not in hi / & i hap
yt· yt we gessen to do i alm
es for us· eip of lordshipes
of dede mẽ· eip of raneynes
of poze mẽ: is not seen to be
almes / for what almes is it·
yt oon be cloyid: & an op be
unmaistly robbid / & yt oon be
fed unmaistli: & an op be tour
mẽtid vn riztli / y dar sey· god
sekey not pese yingis of us /
al myzth̃ god hatey pese pingis /

here hi pt seiy bi pe ꝓphet on
pis wise/ he pt offrip sacrifice
pat is almes or sich oy ping-
of raneyn or of catel of pore
me: is as he pt sleep pe child
i sizt of his fadir/ god seiy bi
ysaie/ p shal not take pese pyn
ges of zoure hondis: for zo
ure hondis be ful of blood/
and an oy prophet seiy/ pe
wed of nedi me: is pe lyf of
pore me/ he pt bigiley hi per
of: is anm clees/ forsake we
to do vnrizt almes: if we wo
len do riztful & goostly alm
es dedis/ do we almes dedis
of oure riztful tieilis · not
of raneynes ey of multipli
ed fruptis of oy mēuy ping-
is/ eiy of vnconenable mar
chandisis: left bi hap per re
ne i to pese many sacramen
tis/ or also pt is worse· for co
neitise or drunkenesse blood
be shed out/ & pe voices of
hē pt bē tourmētid wt myche
tiel: crie to god azens us/ w
herfore pe ꝓphet seiy of a vizt
wis man· pe whiche zaf not
his money to vsure: & took
not ziftis vpon innocent me/
And oye pingis whiche ben
seid bifore i pe same salm m
oñ make amā herīge bilen
ynge & lyngynge: ful vnlik

il/ as also pe same salm coud
udiy/ he pat doy pese pingis:
shal not be moued wip outē
ende ¶ And for pe maker of
alle pingis shewep ī tellīge
to his resonable creature si
che pingis & link to hē: bilene
we pt pe maker of nouzt lou
ep pt ping pt he made of no
uzt/ he pursuep no mā: if pe
mā pursue not hī silf first/
god goy not awey fro ony mā:
but pe man hī silf go first fro hi/
& nep he hatep pe kynde of us:
but he hatip pe vice pt we han
drawe to gidere/ and it profi
tep not to us· to be azenbouzt
wip ēstis blood: & wilfully to
be subgectis to pe deuel/ ꝑfore
pēke we & azen penke we· pat
we bē not maad ēstē mē for er
pely blisfulnesse· nep for rich
essis of pis world· nep we wor
shipē ēst onely for pis lif: as
pe postil seiy/ if we i pis lif
onely hopen ī pe lord: we ben
more wrecchid pan alle mē/
forsope left we woldē lone go
lō: ēst tauzte us to despise zift
is profeyd to us/ left we shul
den drede hungir: he hī silf fas
tide fourti daies/ left we shu
ldē drede nakidnesse: out tak
en oo coote· he forbede his dis
ciplis to haue an oy/ left we

shulde drede tribulacions: he
suffride alle pingis/ left we
shulde drede dep: also hi silf
suffride it/ & whanne he tau3
te us alle pese pingis: not on
eli bi word· but also bi ensam
ple he weute biforе/ þfore
brēne vis swetly i oure her
tis· pe fier of pe hooli goost
make vis to brēne i us/ þat
we sue his steppis· left we de
sire to dwelle stille i vis world
& left we perishe wt vis world/
alas hou myche wrecchis bē
we· if we wolē not bileue
vis/ & if we azenclepē not on
re soule fro pe loue of vis wo
rld: whyle we moun not hol
de pese ensamplis lastingly/ and we
bē sikir to lese hē/ what shu
len we do/ it is to weile to us·
if we lesen pe kyngdom of go
d· & sudeynly it be seid to us/
a ze lowes of pe world· go ze
azens pe housbonde· þat is
pe domes usē· & come ze to hi·
whō ze woldē not se: for ze hab
put bihynde his heestis/ for
ze shulē se pe ilke woundis:
þt he suffride for zou in his
bodi/ what shulē we sey þānne
weilynge & sorowynge/ & what
for oure vicis shulē we suf
were to hi: pe whyle we her
en ofte & dispisē þt· þat pe pro

phet seip/ what shal y zelde
to pe lord: for alle pingis þt he
hab zoue to me/ y shal take
pe cuppe of helpe: & y shal in
clepe pe name of pe lord
Holde we stidefastly þt
pe hope of goode ping
is is not put in vis
world: pou3 it seme to be wa
ldly hope· whiche is turned i
to bitternesse/ & pe world it
silf birlip abitter drynkyng
to his lowes/ & treupe hi silf
þt is god spekip to hē seyn
ge vus/ where is þat ping
þat ze lowedē· where is þat
ping þt ze heldē for greet/ a
ny broper wher oure flesc
his den of prē þt pei trēble
not to gidve: or also oure wit
is hard as ston of adamaūt·
þat it were neiche or also wa
re not at so grete wordis of
god/ whi seyn we not wip pe
prophet· who shal 3iue water
to oure hed· & to oure izen a
welle of teris: þt we biwe
pe nyzt & day pe woundis of
his of oure puple/ pe izen of
hē failē i wepinge· pe whiche
biholdē not onely pe dedis of
bodies· but also of soulis of
ēstē mē/ what morenyng is
more conenable· what weil
ping may be soudū more certe

yn: yAn wh\ane eche mā mor
ney of ye lonle lost· & so he sor
owep w^t ye postil\ yat seide/
who is maad sijk: & y am not
maad sijk also/ who is shamd
vid: & y am not brent/ & eft
i Am oy place hAuyge cōpAssi
oū to lone of neijbori\s he seip
on pis wise/ y desiride to be
departid fro \ct for my bri\per
en/ Clerne we i so gret apos
tel of \ct to brēne wip so gret
charite of god: ye while he
wiste p^t he sparide not to his
ouli\ sone but 3af hi\ for us
alle/ he seip· for us alle/ p\
ye no lewide· ne clerkis· no
ne halowide vgynes/ ne wi
dewis owen to dispise ye hel
pe of her owne soulis: ye w
hile it is open knowen· pat
ye prijs of so gret blod is shj
ed for us/ p\ foze alle we pat
be\ left on erpe knowe we
oure sy\nes· lest we perisshe
wip vnpitouse me\: ye while
we plesen not soone hi\ bi w
orpi satisfaccioū/ how swet
li\ plesside ye prophet his wr
Appe p^t seide/ y 3ineve my
sy\ne: & y hidde not my vur
3twisnesse/ y seide y shAl
telle foy Azens me my vur
3twisnesse to ye lord/ And lo
what sizede Aftir/ And pon

hAst fazoned ye vnpite of my\
herte/ god is e\n redi to forzine
oure sy\nes: if we wole\ not
tarie to turne Azen to hi\/ for if
we schulle\ tarie: drede we lest
he brijge yn on us his wrAppe/
for sopeli he bifore ordeyned
si\nne to tormet\: & sopeli to
si\nne he 3Af gret benefice/ but
nepeles not vnri3tfulli he
ordeyned pis: but i his hij
doom/ for whi\ cayn dide fully
mAnsleyng· & iob worpid is
maad goddis frend/ & Abel
y\nocent was slayn of
his brop\/ nepeles· nep\ iob su
ffride lengre tormet\· nep\
he 3Af place to Amende to for
3ine/ nep\ he forsook poul but
fetid· whō he made strong
bi his grAce/ nep\ he velleyn
ede ma\As doyngc penAnce:
nep\ he forsook petre wepy
nge/ And so ye pitous & mAr
ul lord bi his hij doom depAr
tip\ vessels of wic\/ & if we
persey\ē wrecchid ma\As si\
tyme Apartit vessel brou3t
fulli i to dā\nacioū/ he my3te
not bere vtu of ye hooli goost·
whom Anoon As he hAdde
taken: he brAste/ & so he Al
brokū: was profitable to no
ping/ dredig\e yis be we cō\
tid to god: while tyme is/ for

ye prophet seip/ seke ze ye lord
while tyme is/ & ye ze mand
lad: seke ze his face alwey/
for tyme is pat we be mand
clene & if we be brokñ i to
ony sýne: we han al myzti fa
urine & crafti mā/ bilene we
for he is myzti to restore pug
es pt bē lost: ye which ma
de of nouzt alle pese þingis
hole/ for he seip hi silf ze bē
i myn hond: as ye cley of a po
tte i his hond/ þfore mek we
us vndir ye hond of al myzti
god: pt he enhaūce us i tyme
of visityng at pe dom/ penke
we us to stōde alwey i pe lizt
of god: & knowe we what
we bē/ knowe we pt we bē
ashe & erpe: while pe prophet
seip azens us on pis maner/
what art p" proud erpe and
ashe/ pt if we knowe nōt us
silf: verily we wollē enhaū
ce oure hedis/ sip god wipstō
dip proude mē: & zifip grace
to meke mē/ be ze meke mē
cōfortid seip ye lord zoure
god/ be ze cōfortid pt bē of li
til spirit/ be ze cōfortid & ny
le ze drede now/ lo zoure god
shal zelde dom: he shal come
& make zou sauf/ ye lord is
nyz: be ze no þing careful· pt
ye vnblesfulhed of ye world
reve zou nōt/ for if alle holi
mē haddē dred pis waeldli
vnblisfulhed: pei shuldē not
haue had eūlastīge blisfulhed
if we shert passynge blisful
hed of pis world is loued here:
pe eūlastīge blisfulhed is not
fōndē after/ sopli if eūlastīge
blisfulhed is souzt pe whiche
is not fōndē here: go we to
eūlastīge blisfulhed· where
we han cūtree & oure fadir &
modir/ suffre we most pacientli
alle þingis of pis world for
crists name Thy pie what is it
pt is suffrid of us: azens pt· pt
is bihizt to us/ pe passe seip
pe suffrīgis of pis tyme ben
not euen worpi to pe ioye pt
is comyng pt shal be shewid ī
us/ þfore noon oppressyng here
us· ne ouy wrecchidnesse bre
ke oure trist of pe lord/ for pe
lord is nyze· oure shepherde
is avontē us· what shulē we
drede/ & if we dredē: crie we
to oure shepherde· pt he here
us/ crie we ī sorowīge of herte
seiynge þus/ y haue erred as
a shep pt hap perishid: lord
azen seke pi seruaūt/ crie we
& sey· lord delyne my soule fro
lyers· & myn herte· fro pe pow
er of pe hond/ shine me fro
pe lioūs mouy/ crie we & sey/
fleyng alwey hap perishid
fro me: & noon is pt azēsekip

my soule / shal vnholde to ye
left half: lo a wolf as ye den
el he rory as a lioñ he gnasst
ip / lo a wolf as an hond ber
key azens me / lord y criede to
yee · y seide · þu art my hope ·
my portioñ is i ye lond of mō
lyuyng / delyne þu me fro ye
hondis of my enemyes & of
hē þt pseuē me / where onre
good shepherde pt hap put his
liif for his sheep · if we criē
to hī shal suffire us to erre le
ngre: or to be drawē of wyl
de & vnresonable beestis & to
be wastid: god forbede it but
þapir ye myuti & myne sheep
yleft: he wēte to seke o she
ep þt was lost / nep for he he
rde ye sheep cryng · þfore he
wēte: but bifore it criede he
wēte / for ye gospel seip · myn
ti & myne sheep left: he wē
te to seke oo sheep þat hadde
perishid / ye wlyche sheep
whāne he hadde foūdē and
was maad wery & feynt:
he puttide it upon his shul
dris & bronzte it azen to ye
folk / ye shepherde vonchide
shal to bīge it azen on his
shuldris: & bi his nicy to a
zenclepe it fro errour / soye
li for as myche pt ye lord hap
bronzt azen to ye flok þis

sheep þus part on his owne
shuldris: hou many þankyn
gis bē to be don to his mcy-
pt so muche mekide hī silf &
bowide doū to his us / he berip
us & repeuailep us · he gouē
nep & kepip us / we þien gre
ti ye good lord souereyn &
best shepherde · pt ye sheep
perishe not · fille þu ye office
of ye mooste souereyn shepherde
pseue þu ye lioñ þat rauyshide
ye sheep of þi flok / ye lioñ
be slayn & ye sheep be dely
ued fro his chekis / for þu
art ye shepherde of alle she
ep & onre kīg myzti to trede
sathanas vndir onre feet &
now lord onre shepherde &
onre kyng so many sheep bē
rauyshid ech day of þi flok:
& why art þu so myche stille
answere why art þu stille lo
þi sheep bē rauyshid bi diuīse
maistrīs adoū: & þin enemyes
þat hatyn pee · reisen her hed
azens pee & þu art stille o lord
god why art þu so longe stille
o pese þingis ye lord
criep bi ye whet & sey
þ was stille: but þ
shal not eū be stille / myn hond
dop doom / þfore þu lord ihū
onre shepheyde & onre kīg:
take þi armes & go forp þat

yon fyte azens ye lion̄ owre
adu̅sarie / wlyche c̄ passūy se
lyge to dewowre us / lord be þ̄
to us A towr of strengpe fro
ye face of ye enemy / we axe
yᵗ þ̄ delyne us / for ye world
is sett i wickidnesse / to pneles
wexe̅ grete: & lones of ye w
orld perishen / per blasfeme̅
per wexe̅ woode & per gruc
chen azens pee / & not oneli
per þien not þi nam: but also
per repne̅ þi doom / wlyo wo
rchip sichse pingis i hē: but
ye auctour of pnel ye proud
aūgel lost & owentige to lese
alle me̅ lord god delyne us fro
al pnel: & be owre part wip
ech good / we be̅ delyned fro
ech pnel: wlyanne we be̅ depa
rtid fro ye denel & hise aūge
ls / forsope per be̅ hise aūgels:
pat don his will no part be
to us wip sichse pat don ye de
uelis will: but wip hi̅ yᵗ seide
if ony ma̅ shal do ye will of
my fadir: he is my brop̄ sist
ir & modir / soply we be̅ azen
bouzt wip pris of hi̅ / fle we
ye felouschip of pnel me̅ · seke
we goode pigis · cleue we to
ye mooste soneyn good / serue
we to hi̅ · do we his wille: yᵗ
also we be ye aūgels of god /
of wlyche aūgels ye pphet

ye

ley blesse ze to ye lord · alle his
aūgels his mynistris pat doy
his will / for ye will of owre
fadir is as ye gospel seip · pat
not oon of hise litle perishe &
pat we perishe not & be dra wn̄
out of ye vizt wei: do we a
wey ye werkis of derknesse ·
& be we clopid wip armes of
lizt / & ye mynist of nyzt y cast
out · & ye rootis of derknesse
pdynaū Awey: ye ben of vry
lizt shyne i owre hertis / in
ye nyzt do we not ye werkis
of nyzt · pat is werkis of sy̅
ne: but do we werkis of day ·
pat is vtues: for we be̅ clepid
goddis sones / nep̄ owre witt
were slowe bi liki̅g of sleep ·
nep̄ bi veyn fantasies enclose
owre soulis / nep̄ veste bowe
doū ye ilke bodies pat ben
yprist adoū i deep slompe: bi
heete of ye beddis / but i wa
kinge · pinge · fastinge · & seynge
salmes / fyte we azens ye de
uel owre aduersarie: & sele we
greet lizt held̄ yn to owre her
tis / & i ye nyzt do we perfitly
ye wewis of god / for wlyat
ping owen we to do i ye derk
nyzt of pis world: but to dryue
awey ye deuel: & bringe yn
lyst / wlyat owen we to do in
vlyndenesse of pis nyzt; but

to ſmyte make cantif · ye cantif
maker: & to ſue ye delyuer/ w
hat owen we to do i ye nyzt:
but to ſmyte out of oure hertis
ye deuelis derkenellis þt is ſyn
ne: & to drawe out bi ye roote
þde · & brīge yn meknesse/ wh
at owen we to do i nyzt: but to
caſte out fro us ye þuce of alle
vices: & to reſſeyue ye welle
of alle goodis/ moost dere bro
per reſſeyue we hī: þt we moū
be reſſeyued of hī/ & ſe we wh
at goodis/ we han maad redi
of hī: þat clepiþ us ech day/ &
reſſeyue we his liȝt zok · & his
ſofte birþen þt releeuey ye bur
þen of oure ſynnes/ put we a
wey ye werkis of derkenellis.
& be we clopid wt armures of
liȝt/ forſope what is it to putte
awey werkis of derkenellis:
but to forſake pōpis of ye deu
el · þt is þde & his aūgels/ and
what is it us to be clopid wiþ
armures of liȝt: but to bileue
i to god ye fadir al mizti/ ye
which liȝtneþ ech mā comyge
i to þis world · & þt ſeide alſo/
while ze han liȝt · bileue ze i to
liȝt: þt ze be ye ſones of liȝt/
firſt nepeles moſt loued brop
if þ" wilt diſtrifle wel & wiſely:
deme we & ſeie we who is ye
deuel · or what þig he is ¶ ſope

li ye deuel is an aūgel de partid
fro god bi þde · which ſtood u
ot i tweye/ & he is a techer · &
fadir of leſyng: for leliȝ was
firſt foūdū of hī/ as ye mooſt
ſopfaſt oure lord ihū cſt ſpeker
i ye goſpel of ion/ for he is hed
& ende of leſyng/ he diſſeyued
of hī ſilf: hastep to diſſeyue us
alſo/ he is maad aduerſarie of
mānis de · fider · of dep · azeyn
our of þde · roote of malice · he
ed of gweet treſpaſſis · þuce of
alle vices: alſo entiſer of foule
luſtis/ þfore whāne ye biſelde
ye ille firſte mā maad of god ·
þat is adam ye fadir of us
alle · as þ" maiſt ofte vndirſtōde
bifore: & he ſay ye ille mā ma
ad of ſlym of erþe to goddis
ymage/ ourned wt chaſtite ·
maad fair wt tēperaūce/ cūp
aſſid wip chaſtite · cloped wip
vndedlynelle/ he enemy & en
mpous · þt an erþeli mā hadde
take ſo myche blifulhed · þat
he while he was an aūgel is
knowū to haue loſt bi þde: an
oon ye gredi māſmelleþ not
wipſtōdinge þt zit he hadde en
uye to oure fadir · & robbide us
& oure fadir & modir also of
ſo greet goddis · & oū þt killide
us/ for whi & i ye firſt frōt
ye deuel robbide us of many

goodis · þat is to write chastite
continēce · pacience · mylde nesse
charite · & vndedlynesse / & so he
lefte vs naked & wrecchid · & iop
ep þt we bē wlappid i his clopis ·
& bē bonden to his lordshyp / &
of þat bond · he bonde to hī silf
al oure generacion / he robbide
us of chastite : & girde us wip
vnchastite / he robbide us of te
nperaūce : & made us vntēpe
raūt / he robbide us of charite :
& clopide us wt malice / he rob
bide us of vndedlynesse : and
birlide dep to us / also he wlap
pide us & oure aftir comeris
i pese foulefte & moost stynky
nge clopis : & lefte us half qm
yk / & for pe moost cruel ene
my hap don so wrecchedly abo
ute us · zhe for he hap don so :
so my moost derewurpe bropir
so · forsake we pis hatmful
heritage / we ben maad fa
dirles & modirles : bifore þat
pe wrouge after of so miche
wurst heritage come / forsake
we alle pinges þt bē his / & so
if ony wole dispise to forsake
pis heritage · i wlyche pe den
elis clopis bē · þt is pōpe and
his aūgels : wlyāne pe domes
mā shal come as pe gospel spe
kip · he bepnge dettour shal
be take to pe wrong after /

for lope pe wrong after shal clo
le pe dettour i to plon / lopli y
lep to zou seip pe lord : þ'' shalt
not go pēnes · til þ'' zelde pe laſt
ferpng / treuly goddis sēpture
takep i to kepīg to god al man
kynde · as poze & fadirles & mo
dirles / & pe sēpture seipnge þ'
pe poze man is left to pee : þ''
shalt be helpere to pe fadirles
& modirles / and pe sēpture shy
wynge his aduersarie pe denel
oynede to pis sentēce / al tobre
pe arm of pe sīne & of pnel
willnge / oure lord ihū cst
be nyz pitous & mercyful : þt he
zyue sū mercy to pis poze & fadir
les & modirles / for he suffrip
a fel aduersarie & moost feerd
nouw also pe fadirles & modir
les fallip i his cause : wherfor
pis aduersarie hastep to dissepu
hī bi shrewid craftis / lord
ihū cst be þ'' a wedi defender t
pis fadirles & modirles / stou
de pon i his cause : whiche co
mādidist to pe lones of mē to
deme vpright ly / Reise pou ar
& to gidre breke pe arm of pe
shyner & of pe pnel willid / pou
hast knowe best pe cause of
pis poze & fadirles & modirle
þt is makmde / for he is endet
tid of fadris obligacioū he is
foūdū gilti / & he streynied on

ech side is holdñ of pe aduersa
rie noon op̄ pinge is hon help
schal come to us: bint of pi
cōseil & pi help is ful needful
lord deme oure cause & defen
de: for pou art myzti
ny deve brop̄ hou
blisful is pe soule pt
hap sich a defender/
wherfore now p biseche ech
of us wake: lest i pe day of
doom pe deuel knowe his clo
pis aduersis hi & bigynne to
be holdñ gilti eñe: whō crist
wolde to be delyuered bi his
grace/ nep̄ state pei pnele to
hē silf: whiche wolden not
be amēdid after grace relley
ned· & efte turnē azen to pe
ilke her fourme lustis/ for pe da
y of doom is abiden/ pānne sch
al pe ilke moost enemie nige
come· pe whiche schal not out
take pe persone of ony myzti
mā/ whos paleis no bischop
nep̄ abbot nep̄ eerl schal mowe
ourrūpe bi gold & silū/ Alle sou
lis schulē stonde nyze· pat ech
telle up· pt ping pat it hap do
n i bodi: eip̄ good eip̄ pnel/ for
sope & pe deuel aduersarie schal
be redi· & oure professiouns
schullē be rehersid: & he schal
caste azens us i to pe face· wh
at eū ping we han don· and i
what day we schineden & i what
place & what of good werk we
oizten hane do i pat tyme/ &
if we schullē be foūdñ sicke.
pe ilke aduersarie schal ioye ful
oft i pe siz̄t of pe moost pito
us mige· crynge hi silf to be
hier pan we· doynge sich a cau
se Aneritis amige/ for pānne pe
ilke aduersarie pe deuel hap to
sey pus/ moost enemie mige de
me p" pis man to be myti for
schyne: whiche wolde not be pū
bi grace he is pūn bikynde: he
is mysn bi wreechidnesse/ he
is pūn for passiōn: mysn for en
tisyng/ vnobedient to pee: obe
dient to me/ of pee he relleyn
yde pe stole of vndedlynesse:
of me he relleynyde pis soule
coote i whiche he is clopid/ he
loste pi clop: he cam hidir wt
my clop/ lo what ping vnchal
lite dide Aneritis hym what
vntēperaūce· what coueitise
dide· what wrappe dide· what
pde dide wip̄ ope mēbris/ he
forsook pee: he made fleyng
to me· y se my sistris to folowe
wip̄ hi/ what perfore dide he
pat dispntide wt pde/ pt was
wood wt ire/ he tweloumide ire
to hi m pe day of ire/ he schal
sei pus pānne/ moost enemie mi
ge deme pow: for riztwisnesse

& doom is pe making ved of
yi sete deme yⁿ yi to be myn
& to be dampned wip me/ Alle
pese pingis pat pe bronzte
hidir y knowe to be myne/
pe wolde be myn· & pe wnei
tide my pingis· wip me pe
schal be pepned/ ffor whō yⁿ
vouchidest schaf to delyne vi
so greet prijs: pe wolde Afti
ward wilfuly bynde yi silf
to me/ Alas alas moost dere
broy· wher sich Aman schal
mowe opene pe mouy yᵗ is
foūdū pere sich· yᵗ iustly pe
be demed wip pe denel/ se we
what we don· se we hou we
schulē be delyned fro hī· se
we & be war left we haddē
resseyued goddis grace ī ve
yn/ bint vi hool herte & pav
fijt fery venoūse we & dispise
we so harmful heritage of
pe denel: left we dwelle fa
dirles & modirles & poze/ pe
dredful sentense of seint po
il· & dredfuly bronzt forp be
vehersid ī pe myddil of us:
wlyche make oure hertis &
Also oure bodies to tremble/
ffor he seip pus/ A sacrifice
for synes is not now left
to us wilfuly syngynge· Af
tir we han resseyued knowy
ng of pe tweipe/ soply per
is A dredful abidyng of do
om & fiyng of fier which

schal waste Aduersaries ony
man makinge voide pe lawe
of moises: diep wipouten
mercy bitwepne ij or pre witnes
sid/ hou muche more gesseze
hī to dissevne waxse turmēt
tis: wlyche schal defoule god
dis sone & schal lede pe blood
of testamēt defoulid ī wlyche
ze vē halewid/ & pt schal do
dispijt to pe spirit of grace/
soply we witē· Who seide
to me vengeaūce: & y schal
zelde it/ And eft it is seid/ for
sope pe lord schal deme his
pnple/ for it is grisely pig
to falle ī to pe hondis of lyu
yuge god/ And Agein Aftir
it is seid pus And souple ze
lese zoure trist pat hap gret
rewardyng/ pacience is ne
deful to zou· pt ze doynge pe
will of god brige yu pe bihe
eft/ ffor zit is A litil tyme: &
he pat is to comynge schal
come/ And he schal not tarie
for to zelde to ech mā Aftir
his werkis/ pese wordis hau
not flotū out of me: bint out
of seint poul pat seide pus
wher ze seken experience of
yi pat spekip ī me yᵗ is crist:
stretche we out pe yuward
siȝt & se we/ & ley we to pe
eere of herte to biholde and

enserche so dredful sentēce
of pe postle / make we clene pe
ye of herte · pe pilke liȝt pat
we desiren to se: clanse oure
herte · pat it be clanslid fro der-
knessis of synes · wt his mā
for he seiȝ / blisful ben men
of clene herte: for pei schulē
se god / vnprofitable travel
to dep ward be not here to us:
but travel profitable to helpe /
pēne we while we han liȝt: lest
derknesse cacche us / and eft
pe postle monestip us ful dilig-
entli seiynge pus / Reise ȝe up
slowe hondis & knees vnboñ
diñ: & make ȝe vijtful pays to
ȝoure feet / pat no man haltinge
erre but rapir be heelid / sue
ȝe pees wt alle mē & holynesse:
wip oute whiche no mā schal
se god / biholdinge lest ony m
an falle to goddis grace / lest
ony roote of bitternesse spryn
ge vp ward & lette it: & many
mē be defoulid per bi / & after
after it is seid / se ȝe lest ȝe for
sake pe lord spekinge to ȝou /
for if pei pat weren vnbilen
eful to goddis word astapidē
not: forsakinge hi pat spak
on erpe: mychе more we pt
heeren pe lord spekinge fro he
uene to us · & ȝut turneu aw
ey / whos voys moupde pe
erpe: now sothly he bihetip se
ynge pus ȝit onys & y schal m
one · not onely pe erpe: but
also heuene / soplī pt he seiȝ-
ȝit onys: he declarep oiturnuy
ng of moueable pingis · as
of maad pingis · pat po ping
es perischen pat ben vn moue
able / And so we takinge kyng
dom vn moueable: han grace
bi whiche serue we plesynge
to god wip drede & reuerence
for whi oure god is fier wa
stinge pat schal waste adnīsa
cies / go we nyȝ to hī: bifore
pt we be wastid of hi / ax-yn
ge hi to brēue oure herte &
oure reynes / And eft it is se
id / ffor p'' god hath proued us:
p'' hath asayed us bi fier · as
silū is asayed / sothly moost
opnly it is playn · for if we
ben not brent heere of hī:
trewli we pat ben his adnīsa
cies schulē be wastid pere /
ffor pe postle seiȝ / forsope
no mā bigile hī silf · no man
disseyne hī silf bi veyn wor-
dis / ffor what ēn pingis a
man sowip now: pe same
he schal ripe after / speke
we not op̄ ping i tunge: & op̄
ping i herte / lest we be lik
as herodians / op̄ men i
perdicioñ · op̄ mē in knowle

dyng / or̄ mē i fey̆nyng: but
be we or̄ men i meknesse of
treupe / p̄for we v̄rey herte
i plentee of feiṽ hafte we yt
oure hertis be sprynged fro
yuel cōscience / holde we pe
cōfessioñ of oure hope vnto
we able / And desire we not on
ely pe bigy̆nyng of good wer
kis: as it is of custom of sū
me mē: but also cōtynuynge
to pe ende / And bi so myche
pe more: pat we seen pe day
of doom neiz̄ynge / breke we
pe p̄de of oure fleisly for it is
pe fleisly yt lesep pe soule And
bringep to al p̄de / And he pat
sowep i fleisly as pe postle seiṽ:
Also he shal ripe corrupcioñ
of his fleisly / it is pe fleisly
pat vellepuep pe deuel / forso
pe pe deuel sowep i oure flei
sly his sedis / pat is mansley
nge · fornicacioñ · couetise ·
foul lust · wrappe · chidyng ·
drunkenelle · pde · pefte · & al
yuel suggestioñ / for pe postle
seiṽ / wrastelyng to gidere
is not to us azens fleisly And
blood: but azens spiritis of
pis eir · azens spiritual wic
kidnesses i heuenli pingis / he
seiṽ pis of pe deuel · pat is
an yuel spirit & is not seen /
And he pat wost spirit is

mast doñ fro heuene wip his
angels / of whiche spirit it
is seid i pe Apocalips / lo pe
Accuser of oure bripen is cast
doñ / whiche Accuside he nyzt
& day: & pei ouercamē hi for pe
blood of pe lomb / of whom
pe postle seiṽ / A pricke of my
fleisly · An angel of sathanas
is zomē to me · pe whiche buf
fetip me / wherfore prieb y
priede pe lord yt it shulde dep
rte fro me / And he seide to m
my grace is ynow to pee for
vtu is parfourmed i sikenesse
eft he reherside seiṽ / y se an
op lawe i my mēbris repug
nynge to pe lawe of my soule
And makynge me cap̄tif i
to pe lawe of sinne / pat is in
my mēbris / eft poul seiṽ / op
ly bi my soule y serue to pe la
we of god: but my fleisly ser
uep to pe lawe of sinne / And
eft he seiṽ · no ping of damp
nacioñ is to hem pat ben i
crist / it is pe fleisly pat vel
sepuep pe deuel / & pe deuel
hap pe fleisly i his power · &
not pe soule / p̄for pe postle
seiṽ a pricke of my fleisly is
zomē to me / he seiṽ not of my
soule: but of my fleisly · an
angel of sathanas / soply iol
was tēptid in his fleisly of pe

deuel: as ye lord seiȳ And power
is ȝonē to hī ñ ye ateel of iob
And eft god seiȳ to ye deuel y
shal ȝiue hī to yee ī to power:
out taken his soule
ȳ flesh coueitep azens
ye spirit· soply ye spirit
coueitep azens ye flesh
forsope pese bē aduersaries
azens hē silf: pat not wlt
eñe pinges ze willē ze do hē
ye flesh is a wrecchid beest:
pat greuep ye soule as ye po
ple seiȳ yei pat ben ī flesh:
moñ not plese to god also ye
like treuye oure lord ihū cst.
seiȳ of hī silf soply ye spirit
is redy: but ye flesh is sijk
treuli oure flesh wole eñe
be myzti ī malice it keepiep
it silf to be sijk ī abstynēce,
pt is ī fastiȝis ꝑ pieris· ꝑ goo
de werkis ꝑt is oure flesh pt
dreuchiȳ us ī to ye diche, ye
postle seiȳ, ble ze ȝoure meiu
bris pat ben on eerpe· pat is
fornicacioñ· vnclēnesse· ire·
chidingis· ꝑ op pingis pt sien
And eft he seiȳ, do ze not cure
of ye flesh ī ȝoure coueitingis
is, And so sle we oure flesh
yi abstynēce· yi fastingis· wa
kyngis ꝑ pieris: lest it brīge
to us ye deuel yi pnel coueiti
sis, soplī ye flesh is ȝonñ to
us as batel of soule· wlych
flesh if it be slayn: ledip to
lijf if it be nurisshed: it make
ep redi it silf to batel azens
ye soule, soply y ꝑise hī pt mañ
haue power of his flesh, ye
while we dreden ye likenesse
of oure flesh: we dispisen
ye heelye of oure soule, a wr
eechid soule what seist ꝑ: who
ye flesh greuep so strongli
as salomon seiȳ, ye flesh pt
is corrupt: greuep ye soule
And eft he reherseiȳ ye mony
pt liep: sleep ye soule wo wo
to ye wrecchid soule: whom
ye flesh pursuep, oure flesh
fiztep eche day azens ye soule:
ꝑ we owen to fizte ech day az
ens ye flesh· as ye postle co
maundip, if ze shulē lyue af
tir ye flesh: ze shulē die eop
eli· if ze shulē sle ye dedis of
ye flesh yi spirit: ze shulen
lyue, ye flesh delirep ꝑ shew
ep al pnel suggestioñ, ye flesh
coueitep al pnel, ye flesh stirep
venenouse dedis· ye flesh ter
rep ire· ye flesh stirep mau
leping· ye flesh stirep anoy
trie ꝑ chidingis, ye flesh brin
gep in drunkenesse, ye flesh
berip al coueitise of pis world:
ꝑ ye flesh delirep alle pnelis,
a flesh cruel beest what hast

p' what greuest pou pe soule
pat no pyng hadde desirid but
to serue god: if she hadde not
ioyned hir silf to pee/ but p'
wrecchid fleisly not oneli sle
est pi silf: but also pou sleest
pe soule pi dampnacion suffrip
not to pee: but zit pou willist
pi soule to be drenchid in to
helle/ pou soule wo to pee pt
hast take pe fleisly contrarie
azens pee. whiche nep it eut
rip. nep it suffrip pee to eut
re i to pe kingdom of heuenes/
a wickid fleisly what sekist p'
what desirst p'/ pou wilt not
susteyne trauel/ pou vnrestf
ul wilt not reste to gidere p'
strangilest pe soule: pt azenus
rid pou be lad i she handm
aide/ p pie why greuest pou
pe soule. pat is not greuous
to pee/ nep pou shalt a schape
peyne: pe while she suffrip
helle/ nep she shal mowe be
demed wip oute pee i pe day
of doom/ why assentist p' not
to oure spirit i soule/ as pe
gospel monesti pee. seiyng
ying/ be p' conselinge to pin
aduersarie anoon: while pou
art wt hi in pe wey/ pt is i
pe world: lest i hap he bitake
pee to pe iuge. pt is crist/ i pe
iuge bitake pee to pe mynist'

pat is pe deuel to yuel aungels
and pe mynist's schide pee in to
pe p'ploñ. pat is i to helle/ pou
shalt not go penes: til pou zel
de pe laste ferping. pt is pe
leeste fyne/ what art p' and
what zmest p' to me: but pein
ying of oure soule/ he pat nur
ischep pee: nurischep pee to pe
do yuel/ for pe soule fyne not
but bi fleisly/ as it is writi
pe soule pt schal do fyne: pe
ilke schal dye/ in ensaumple p'
seist/ hou may pe soule fyne:
sip it is not seen/ what mai
it drede: whanne it is not hol
den/ pe ilke fleisly fynep: pat
greuep pe soule/ and pe soule
ouercomen of pe fleisly: consentip
to pe fleisly i fynes/ for pe fleisly
is heedlyng to soule lustis/ vn
ceesable to glotonye/ ofte stir
ynge to lecherie. vnschamefast
to fornicacion/ it pintip ech
day blame vpon blame. fyne
up fynes/ it ceesip not to io
yne to gidre woxle pinges
to al pe waste/ cruel i will
veyn i vnwijs. eu redy to
yuel. lekinge excusinis/ and
slowest to good/ gruft to dep
hard to lijf/ to whom pe werk
is of lizt ben hateful: and pe
werkis of derkenesse moost
loued/ for it lonep to falle.

dispilep to rise/ heely is bittir
to it: & perfeccioũ lweete/ eũe fal
lynge woorse ĩ to yuelis/ and
fro woorse pingis kletige ĩ to
al ꝑ woorste/ it is vurestful vn
pacient ĩ flawme of helle cũ
pallynge pe soule/ castige yu
among hem biuriowrpgis
of couetise & gredynesse of
vaunte & ꝑde/ of iye & vnpa
cience & of oꝑe wickidnessis/
it castiꝑ doñ it silf ĩ to superf
lu pingis & vnhoneste/ drawy
ynge it silf awey fro heuenli
pingis· & delitinge ĩ euyely
pingis/ it forsakip tweye· it
hastiꝑ to drawe vanyte and
wordis of lesyng/ and what
no pingis zit/ as amonzte den
ouriꝑ wolle· & as fier wastiꝑ tve
es· stre· & stubbil: so yis pe vebel
fleisly & delicat wastiꝑ & brẽep
pe soule/ what seist pou soule
to pese· what answeriste ꝑn to
pese/ sche seiꝑ pus/ ꝑ schal sey
to myn azenbier bifor ꝑat ꝑ be
delyuered of fleisly/ what schal
ꝑ answeue to pese/ and to wh
at good ꝑ wolde stire pe bodi
wiꝑ whiche ꝑ dwelle/ lord ꝑ
biseche pee/ pe coueityng of
lecherie be not ĩ me: but pe
lone of cleenest chastite dwe
lle ĩ me/ be ꝑ slow to here yu
el· hastinge to yi word· rẽny
nge to performe it/ be y besy
ĩ yi drede/ parfit ĩ yi lone/ sta
ble ĩ feiꝑ· no ping doutynge ĩ
hope· brẽne y ĩ lone of neiꝑbore/
be y not breut wiꝑ heete of
hate/ neꝑ wexe y leen ĩ wanne
sse of ẽuye/ eũe brepe pou ũn
me ꝑat ꝑ penke hooli werk/
constreyne me ꝑt ꝑ do it· counse
le me ꝑt ꝑ lone pee/ conferme
me ꝑt ꝑ drede pee/ kepe pou
me ꝑat ꝑ lese not pee/ pe foot
of ꝑde entre not ne reste ĩ myn
hous: where yi dwellyng ow
ep to be/ neꝑ couetise of glotu
nye· neꝑ forsyckcioñ· neyer
gredynesse· neꝑ ẽuye· neꝑ ire·
neꝑ heuynesse· neꝑ veyn glorye
but ꝑ axe deep meknesse of
pee· ꝑat seidist/ on whom
schal ꝑ reste· but on pe meke
& restful & dredinge my
wordis/ zyue ꝑn to me deep
meknesse: bi whom pe hyz
nesse of pe prond fleisly ꝑt
strangley me· be borwed/ zyue
pou mesurid abstinẽce: bi
whom pe superflu gredynes
se of pe wõbe ꝑat lesip me
be refreyned/ zyue pou chas
tite of herte: ꝑat may zelde
me vndefoulid/ zyue pou
clennesse of spirit: for vnclene
lecherie of fleisly drenchip
me/ zyue pou will to zyue
large almesses: bi whiche

ye hard holdinge couetise be for
sake / zine þ' lone of charite : bi
which ye brēnynge of euuye
be quēchid / graūte yon pacie
nce of suffrynge : bi whō ye
cruel veest · ire · ouercomē : may
faile / zine þ' hope of euūlastīge
ioye : bi whō ye bitternelle of
heynelle be swagid / zine þ'
me to glorie i pee wirpine in
soule of good werk : where
veyn glorie be out of me · &
boost come not forp / also zine
þ' to me i alle pingis to hol
de rightwisnesse / gostli hardy
nesse · & tēperaūce / and make
me wip sypleuesse to be pru
dent : þat also y lede vlisful
lyf cleuly / & þt y fle warli yu
el · & þat y may vndirstonde
ye gileful & dissey uable felne
sse of ye deuel · lest he dissey
ue me bi likenesse of good / &
þat y may deme resonably · &
bifore se what good y shal do
and what yuel y shal fle
ftir · pese pinges ma
ke me mylde of good
will · pesible · deboneire ·
manerelich wip oute feynyg
to be acordige to alle goode þi
ngis / in walkingis · i fastīgis ·
i þieris stedefastly strong / zi
ne þ' also to gete ameliurable
word i mildenesse / zine stille
nesse : þat y speke þat þing þt
bisemep / and þat y holde stille
þt þing · þat it bihoueþ not
to speke · or what eū þing þ'
shalt vouchse saaf to zine of
fruytis of vtues / zine yon to
kepe to pee feip vnwēmyd wt
outē oup errour · & of feip up
werkis to be worpi · & þat y
defoule not rigt feip bi shire
wid werkis / and þat y denye
not pee i yuel lyuyng : whom
y knowlechе i wel bileuynge /
and þat y offende not pee bi
werkis of filigence : whom y
fine bi strong feip / make me
lyuynge i hooli purpos to fie
rigtwisnesse · to lone mā and
preupe · & forsake lesyng · to pe
nke not or speke ony fals þig /
to drede pee wip outē ceesing /
to clepe forto lone pee to kepe
yin hestis · to hōlde pees wip
wip alle mē wip outē trechе
rie · to clepe disordinge men
to acord wip outē feynyng · to
offre charite to alle mē vnfey
ned · to schaūdre no mā · to sette
me bifore no mā / but to deme
me lowest yan alle mē · to zine
reuence & honour · not for di
ede of myzti mē : but for hi þt
is most hiz / to offre obedīence
to eldre men / & charite to pe
ers · to shewe grace of best

lone to ȝongre men · to ſuffre
enenly bripen charges · to pro
fite to gidere to alle mē & not
to harme / to nope no mā · to
be aduſarie to no mā · to do
falſ chalenge to no mā / to pu
tte hurtyng to no mā / to de
me no man · to bachite no m
an · to ſclaūdre no mā · to be
wrongful to no mā · to take
no mānȳ luſt · to aſpie no mā
ūȳ pap / but onely to be beſi
of my ſilf / neue to zelde yuel
for yuel / nep to be myndeful
of my wrongis / nep i ony
maner to ſeke vengeaūce / but
i al goodneſſe to ouercome mali
ce · to make redi bleſſyng to
pe curſynge / lone pe enemy
as frend · to ſuffre ſchrewidnel
ſe & diſpiſingis of wrappynge
mē · not to zelde wrongis / lone
to forzite hem · to forzine offen
cions · eū to be redi to graūte
forzifneſſe / not to coueite
ope mēnȳ pingis / nep bi ony
occaſioū to take hē awey / to
zine mirfully my pingis to m
en pat han not / to holde aue
tīd me for pee pat azenbouȝ
tiſt me / to fille ꝑoff pe hūgry
nge / to ȝine drīke to pe pūſty
nge / to gadre to herboze pe he
wozeleſ / to hile pe naked / to
viſite pe ſike / to ſeke pe ꝑſon

ned / to coūforte pe ſorowful / to
hane cōpaſſioū to pe tormētid
& to pe mourynge / to zine nedef
ul pingis to hī pat hap not / to
departe liſtlode & cloyng wip
pe nedi / to helpe pe poze born
i pe lond / to nuriſſhe pe homeli
of pe hous / to lone pe pilgrym /
to azenbie pe captif / to reſſeyue
pe comelyng / to defende pe mo
dirleſ & fadirleſ / to helpe pe
widewe · & releeue pe oꝑſſid ·
to zine helꝑ to pe diſtoūſortid /
to breke dyuiſeli pe byndyngis
to gideue of vnpitee / oz what
eū pingis pe vechyngis of pi
heeſtis declaren: diligently
to bileue hem · & here to ſeke
it wip brēnynge deſir to knūe
it prudētly · to hauīte it haſtily ·
to fulfille it deſirynghy · & eūe
to be meke bifore pee ꝑt y riſe
& be not caſt doū / ꝑt y be reiſid
& falle not / yat y go up & not
doū / for pe fleiſh wip whiche
y dwelle: wole eūe lede me
to ſynne / it wole be a corowm
ed wip me: but it wole not
trauele wip me / y ſuffre no
worſe enemy: than pe bodi i
whiche y dwelle / forwhi aū
acioū he iū deſtrier i myn
hous on ech ſide / waſtīnge
& to rendinge me wip dedly
bityng / ꝑfore y drawynge a

long grouyngis shal sey m
ofte cryynge/ y am vnbliſful
mā: who shal delyue me of
pe bodi of pis dep: pe grace
of god/ bi whom: bi ihū crist
our lord/ A ihū good lamp
our· pis y wole pou best aze
nbier· pis y wole pat hidir
to now hstily y p̄iede ī bisech
inge/ and pis y hertily p̄ie/
for why pi moost p̄cious blo
od y am azenbouzt: pat y
perishe not wip outē ende
for pe corrupcioū of fleisch/
come y not ī to pe secōnde
dep· nep ī to pe lond of forze
tyng pis/ my voys sowe m
pe eeris of pi mcy: pt y do
not pe will of pe fleisch/ t
al my mynde bipenke on
pee t delite ī pee/ liue pee t
knowleche pee/ ffor ī azen
bying me pi mcy is wip ou
ten ende: t m pi mcy y pt
was lost lost ī synes lymyde
azen/ and y ros azen fro dede
men: for p̄ hast departid
me fro synes of my zonge
wexynge age/ and y do pen
ance bifore pee: for p̄ hast ke
pt to me tyme of turnyng
to pee/ for y biholdynge my
synes am confunct: t wt pin
vnspirynge y dide penaūce
bifore pee/ now y glad zilde
alwey pankingis to pee wip
oute noūbre/ for first p̄ zongtist
me: pt y shulde synde pee/ p̄
cōstreyuedist me: pat y shulde
turne azen to pee/ p̄ biheldist
me as a meke fadir: pat y shu
lde be troublid for my synes/
p̄ wrontist· pt y shulde kno
wleche/ and p̄ hast zoūn to
me repn of grace: pat pou
woldist knowleche me/ lord
puttē p̄ my teeris ī pi siht:
t myn herte p̄ier fully come
to pee ī to heuene/ y p̄ie come
pou t helpe: t relleyue my
silf bitaken to pee ī pin hon
dis/ pou shal delyue me fro
pe mouy of pe feers dragoū
t fro pe hond of moost cruel
helle: whāne p̄ shalt relley
ne· t shalt take awey fro pe
mydil pe shadowe of dep/
zhe p̄ shalt lede me forp m
to pe paype of liht· t m to pe
most deer cūtre of mē lyuy
nge/ sett me ī most siker fool
dis of pi flockis/ for pou art
a good shepherde· pt azensek
ist t azenbryngist lost pingis
defendist t sauest pingis fo
uōn/ nurischist t heelist sike
pingis/ and pou art mychtful
lord: pt confoūndist not men
hopynge ī pee· forsakist not
me azensekynge pee/ but m

ful out ioyfuge pon reſſeyneſſ:
And grauntiſt hem to regne
wip ouren ende in enlaſtinge
bliſſe to gidere wip pin ſeyn
tis & cholin/ ffor to pee wip pe
fadir and pe holy goſt o god
hed in glorie· vertu· lordſchip
and power: in to worldis of
worldis Amen:

MS Richardson 3
THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY
*50M-258